





*Conservation of this  
volume was made  
possible through the  
generous support of  
PETER WARRIAN  
and the Friends  
of the Library*

**PIMS**

PONTIFICAL INSTITUTE OF MEDIAEVAL STUDIES

Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
University of Toronto



39 PATERNOSTER ROW, LONDON : *March*, 1858.

In course of publication, in royal 8vo. price 8s. 6d. each volume, half-bound,

THE  
**CHRONICLES AND MEMORIALS**  
OF  
**GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND**  
DURING THE  
**MIDDLE AGES.**

Published by the Authority of Her Majesty's Treasury under the direction  
of the Master of the Rolls.

THE materials for the history of Great Britain from the Roman invasion to the end of the reign of Henry VII. are extensive and valuable. They consist of chronicles, biographies, letters, state papers, historical and political poems, proceedings of councils and synods, partly derived from contemporary, partly from later authorities. The greater portion of these, notwithstanding the labours of scholars, still remain in MS. ; while others have been carelessly or injudiciously printed, and are only to be found in costly and rare collections. From a conviction of the desirableness of an accurate, cheap, and uniform edition of these works, too gigantic to be undertaken by private individuals, the Master of the Rolls was induced in the spring of 1857 to submit a proposal to the Treasury for the publication of the *Chronicles and Memorials of Great Britain and Ireland*. He suggested that all works to be printed should be selected for publication under competent editors, without reference to periodical or chronological arrangement, without mutilation or abridgment, preference being given, in the first instance, to such materials as were most scarce and valuable.

He further advised that all Historical documents should be edited without note or comment, except what might be necessary to place a readable text in the hands of the student, and that the editor should confine his labours exclusively to the Chronology of the work submitted to his care, to a critical review of its historical importance, and a biographical sketch of its author.

He considered that a grant from the Government, exclusively devoted to the payment of Editors, would enable him to produce twelve volumes 8vo. in the course of every twelve months. And he anticipated that within a limited period he would be enabled to place before the nation all that was most valuable, and most worthy of preservation, of its National Chronicles.

The Lords of Her Majesty's Treasury, after a careful consideration of the subject, expressed their opinion in a Treasury Minute, dated 9th February 1857, that the plan recommended by the Master of the Rolls was well calculated for the accomplishment of this national object in an effectual and satisfactory manner.

In a notice of this national undertaking in the *Athenæum* of January 30th, it is remarked that—"The number of our histories is endless, the variety immense, while the real original matter in them deserves Bacon's stigma of poverty and indigence ; and the general body of English history has remained stationary for a century and more." The reviewer goes on to say that "If the materials for the history of this country had been the most barren in the world, instead of being, as they are, the most rich and varied, we could not have

treated them with greater contempt and indifference." The writer expresses his opinion that the plan of the Master of the Rolls was sketched out with great ability and judgment, and adds that "For the first time since our existence as a nation, a great and rational effort has been made for placing the materials of our history not only beyond the reach of danger (no small object to be accomplished, considering how much loss has been entailed already by accident and neglect), but in the hands of all those who are willing and anxious to draw that history from authentic materials. The first step has been taken towards collecting the facts of history, without which all speculations about its principles and its philosophy are futile and premature."

The following are now published :—

### **THE CHRONICLE OF ENGLAND.**

By JOHN CAPGRAVE. Edited by the Rev. FRANCIS CHARLES HINGESTON, B.A. of Exeter College, Oxford. Pp. 524; with illuminated fac-simile page, historical Introduction, Glossary, and INDEX. Royal 8vo. price 8s. 6d. half-bound. [The author continues his Chronicle to the year 1417.

#### *Extracts from the notice in the ATHENÆUM.*

"In many respects this edition of Capgrave will be read with interest,—as a popular digest of current history by a scholar and ecclesiastic of no mean reputation in his own days,—as an illustration of the legends and stories prevalent among his contemporaries, many of which have since totally disappeared,—and as a short remembrance of 'elde stories' (histories) not to be found in other writers. . . . We have stated that Capgrave was a native of Norfolk. The notices found in his work relating to his county and the traditions there are not without interest. But it is as a contribution to English provincial philology that 'The Chronicle of England' will hold a very important position. A glimpse at Mr. Hingeston's Glossary will show how much he is indebted to Forby's 'Vocabulary of East Anglia' for his illustrations of the obscure terms occurring throughout the volume. It is, at the same time, a gratifying confirmation of the sagacity and industry of that diligent and ingenious antiquary. There is scarcely a peculiarity in this writer which may not be explained by the fact of his East Anglian origin."

### **CHRONICON MONASTERII DE ABINGDON.**

Edited by the Rev. JOSEPH STEVENSON, M.A. of University College, Durham; Vicar of Leighton Buzzard. Vol. I. from the Foundation of the Monastery until the Norman Conquest; pp. 528, with illuminated fac-simile page and a bibliographical Preface. Royal 8vo. price 8s. 6d. half-bound.

"We cannot understand any one who takes the least interest in historical literature reading such a programme as this, without coming at once to a determination to study these remarkable pages for himself. It will not diminish the eagerness of such persons to be told of the perfect guarantee of the faithfulness and honesty of the writer which is afforded to us by the very circumstances under which he wrote." GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE, *February*.

#### *Extract from the notice in the ATHENÆUM.*

"Mr. Stevenson's volume of 'The Abingdon Chronicle' is about as distinct in character from Mr. Hingeston's as it is distant in the time of which it treats. It is scarcely possible at this stage of his labours to pass a fair judgment upon his work. This is only the first portion of it, and, in many respects, the least interesting. The concluding portion, with Index and Glossary, has yet to come. But Mr. Stevenson's own account of his labours, so far as they

have proceeded at present, is worth perusal. As the work descends to so late a period as that of the year 1189 in unbroken succession, we should be willing to plead for it even a greater dignity and importance than Mr. Stevenson claims. The history of this and other great fraternities is the history of Europe for at least ten centuries. What was the influence of the Papal See or its disputes with national sovereigns—what of the sovereigns themselves—little more among their nobles than *primi inter pares*—compared with the unintermittent activity of great bodies like the monks, friars, and schoolmen, who concentrated within themselves all those powers to which the mind yields its implicit homage, comprising within their own bodies the philosophy, the literature, the arts and sciences of the age? The great problem which harassed mankind from the days of monk Benedict to the Reformation is the problem of fraternity, not paternity—how races and nations shall dwell together on terms of equality and brotherhood. This is the shadow cast on every institution of the Middle Ages, be the secondary object of them what it may, learning or war, handicraft or trades, the labour of this world or the world to come. Of the state of life and its peculiarities, out of which so much has grown that is important to modern civilisation, Mr. Stevenson's volume furnishes abundant notices; and we should have desired nothing more for popularising his work, and showing its value, than a simple introduction, bringing these passages into juxtaposition and serving to mutual illustration. Like Mr. Hingeston's work, Mr. Stevenson's has its peculiar local value for the antiquary; but, as the history of a monastery is in a great degree the history of a universal Order established throughout Christendom, it affords many glimpses into the condition and aspirations of a body of men of the highest importance to the historian."

## BOOKS IN PREPARATION.

1. *La Vie de St. Edouard le Confesseur*, en vers français. A valuable MS. in the Public Library, Cambridge.

*Vita beati Edwardi regis et confessoris*. From two MSS. in the Bodleian Library.

*Vita Edwardi Regis qui apud Westmonasterium requiescit*. Unprinted, and in MS. in the British Museum. Edited by the Rev. H. R. Luard.

2. *Epistolæ Adæ de Marisco*. From an unique MS. in the British Museum. These epistles contain valuable materials for the history of England hitherto unpublished. Edited by the Rev. J. S. Brewer.

3. *Ric. Cirencestr. Speculum*. From A.D. 449 to 1318: in four books. This valuable MS. formerly belonged to Matthew Parker, Archbishop of Canterbury, and is deposited in the Public Library, Cambridge. Edited by the Rev. J. E. Mayor.

4. *Eulogium &c. in quinque libros*. From the Creation to A.D. 1413. MSS. in the British Museum; Trinity College, Cambridge; Trinity College, Dublin; and Lincoln's Inn. Edited by the Rev. F. S. Haydon, Esq.

5. *Liber de illustribus Henricis*. Auctore Johanne Capgrave. From MSS. in the British Museum, and Corpus Christi College, Cambridge, valuable and hitherto unprinted. Edited by the Rev. F. C. Hingeston.—Of this work an ENGLISH TRANSLATION is in preparation, which will appear simultaneously with the original.

6. *Henrici Quinti illustrissimi Anglorum regis historia*. Roberto Redmanno auctore. From an unique MS. at Cambridge, which has never been printed.

*Versus rhythmi in laudem regis Henrici Vti, ubi multa habentur contra Lollardos*. From a MS. in the British Museum; together with other unprinted Memorials relating to Henry V. Edited by C. A. Cole, Esq.

7. *Fasciculi Zizaniorum*. Written by Thomas Walden, confessor of King Henry the Fifth, and the ablest writer on the Catholic side in the Lollard controversy. From an unique and valuable MS. in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. Edited by the Rev. Walter W. Shirley.

8. *The Repressor of overmuch Blaming of the Clergy*. By Reginald Peacock. Written about the middle of the fifteenth century, and preserved in an unique MS. at Cambridge. This important work throws great light upon the Church history of that time. Edited by the Rev. Churchill Babington.

9. *Historia fundationis et donationis Abbatie S. Augustini Cantuar.* From an unique and valuable MS. (in Trinity Hall, Cambridge) prepared in the period between 1430 and 1450, and containing a history of the foundation in verse, and another in prose. Edited by the Rev. C. Hardwick.

10. *Recueil des Croniques et Anchiennes Istories de la Grant Bretagne a present nomme Engleterre*. Par Jehan de Wawrin, Seigneur de Forestal. This curious contemporary chronicle is an unique MS. in the Bibliothèque Impériale: it comes down to the return of Edward IV. to England after the second deposition of Henry VI. Edited by W. Hardy, Esq.

11. *Chronicon de vita atque gestis Henrici VII. ad captionem Perkini Warbeck*. Together with other matters relating to the same Reign. From MSS. in the British Museum. Edited by James Gairdner, Esq.

12. *Chronicle of Scotland, in Scottish verse*. In the Public Library, Cambridge, compiled by command of Margaret, mother of James VI., for the King's use. Edited by William B. Turnbull, Esq.

*Chronicon Monasterii de Abingdon*. Vol. II. Edited by the Rev. J. Stevenson.

*Extracts from an article in the SPECTATOR newspaper, Feb. 13, 1858.*

"It may startle some of us to find that Her Majesty's Government of this present day are, consciously or unconsciously, carrying out, in an improved form, the details of a plan which was for a long time the darling ambition of EDWARD GIBBON while projecting the history of his own country. . . . Of the two remarkable works which lead off so distinguished an assemblage, let us assure our readers that their scope and the execution of them are of vital service both towards understanding that highest form of social life (till the period of the Reformation), the life of a great religious house, abbey or monastery, and towards comprehending the mind and thoughts of the scholar and the ecclesiastic of the thirteenth century, when he sat down to present a summary of the trials, fortunes, and greatness of his own country. The *Chronicon de Abingdon*, being the history of a monastery, is in a great degree the history of a universal order established throughout Christendom: it extends from the arrival of the Anglo-Saxons in England down to the year 1189, and thus its history is the history of Europe for at least ten centuries. It is printed from a MS. in the British Museum. John Capgrave's *Chronicle* extends from the Creation to the year 1417. It is now printed for the first time from the author's autograph preserved in the University Library at Cambridge. The writer, an Augustinian friar, and in all probability Provençal of the order, was born at Lynn in Norfolk, 1393, and died there in 1464. His work breaks off in the year 1417. . . . *Well begun is half done*; and if the whole programme presented to the public by the Government through their honourable coadjutor the Master of the Rolls be only carried out according to the deserts of the works specified, as well as with a proper regard for the reputation of several of the editors whose names have a deserved honour throughout their native country, the old adage will never have been more truly verified. Let these books go forth to the whole world—to the libraries of Paris, Berlin, Vienna, St. Petersburg, Copenhagen, and Rome, and to those of the vast continents where our English tongue is spoken, as evidence of what Great Britain has been, is, and will be. Let them redeem us from the reproach among foreigners of needlessly and uselessly storing up national archives, such as even the proudest of the Roman, Assyrian, or Egyptian dynasties never possessed: let them show to the empires of both sides of our globe, that here is the emphasis of our civilisation, our progress, and our liberty, brought forward and published with an honest pride, that all who share those blessings may understand how they have been achieved, why they have been clung to, and why prayed for, why fought for, and how won."

"It would be ungracious to conclude without saying something of the style in which these handsome volumes are got up. We have already alluded to the first-rate character of the facsimiles, and we are bound to say that the printing, paper, and binding of the books themselves are on a par with them; and when the extremely low price at which they are sold is taken into consideration, we may fairly say that nothing is left for the most fastidious student of history or book-fancier to desire. Most heartily do we again congratulate the Master of the Rolls on the complete success which has attended his first issue, and we rejoice to hail it as an earnest of what we may expect from him for the future." GENTLEMAN'S MAGAZINE.

"The Master of the Rolls has done a very admirable thing in printing these volumes; he must do another in fixing a price for them within the limits of the ordinary purchaser. The nation has paid for them already in the sums voted for their publication from the national Exchequer,—the best repayment that can be made will not be in the pecuniary profits which they yield, but in the many and more potent inducements they will present for a sound and enlightened study of the history of the nation."

ATHENÆUM.

London: LONGMAN, BROWN, and CO., Paternoster Row.







RERUM BRITANNICARUM MEDII ÆVI  
SCRIPTORES,

OR

CHRONICLES AND MEMORIALS OF GREAT BRITAIN  
AND IRELAND

DURING

THE MIDDLE AGES.



MAY 17 1961

22441

**THE CHRONICLES AND MEMORIALS**  
OF  
**GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND**  
DURING THE MIDDLE AGES.

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHORITY OF HER MAJESTY'S TREASURY, UNDER THE  
DIRECTION OF THE MASTER OF THE ROLLS.

---

ON the 26th of January 1857, the Master of the Rolls submitted to the Treasury a proposal for the publication of materials for the History of this Country from the Invasion of the Romans to the Reign of Henry VIII.

The Master of the Rolls suggested that these materials should be selected for publication under competent editors without reference to periodical or chronological arrangement, without mutilation or abridgment, preference being given, in the first instance, to such materials as were most scarce and valuable.

He proposed that each chronicle or historical document to be edited should be treated in the same way as if the editor were engaged on an *Editio Princeps*; and for this purpose the most correct text should be formed from an accurate collation of the best MSS.

To render the work more generally useful, the Master of the Rolls suggested that the editor should give an account of the MSS. employed by him, of their age and their peculiarities; that he should add to the work a brief account of the life and times of the author, and any remarks necessary to explain the chronology; but no other note or comment was to be allowed, except what might be necessary to establish the correctness of the text

The works to be published in octavo, separately, as they were finished; the whole responsibility of the task resting upon the editors, who were to be chosen by the Master of the Rolls with the sanction of the Treasury.

The Lords of Her Majesty's Treasury, after a careful consideration of the subject, expressed their opinion in a Treasury Minute, dated February 9, 1857, that the plan recommended by the Master of the Rolls "was well calculated for the accomplishment of this important national object, in an effectual and satisfactory manner, within a reasonable time, and provided proper attention be paid to economy, in making the detailed arrangements, without unnecessary expense."

They expressed their approbation of the proposal that each chronicle and historical document should be edited in such a manner as to represent with all possible correctness the text of each writer, derived from a collation of the best MSS., and that no notes should be added, except such as were illustrative of the various readings. They suggested, however, that the preface to each work should contain, in addition to the particulars proposed by the Master of the Rolls, a biographical account of the author, so far as authentic materials existed for that purpose, and an estimate of his historical credibility and value.

In compliance with the order of the Treasury, the Master of the Rolls has selected for publication for the present year such works as he considered best calculated to fill up the chasms existing in the printed materials of English history; and of these works the present is one.

*Rolls House,*  
*December 1857.*

---

THE  
BUIK OF THE CRONICLIS OF SCOTLAND;

OR

A METRICAL VERSION OF THE HISTORY OF  
HECTOR BOECE;

BY

WILLIAM STEWART.

DP

52

158









THE  
BUIK OF THE CRONICLIS OF SCOTLAND;  
OR  
A METRICAL VERSION OF THE HISTORY OF  
HECTOR BOECE ;  
BY  
WILLIAM STEWART.

EDITED  
BY  
WILLIAM B. TURNBULL, ESQ.  
OF LINCOLN'S INN, BARRISTER-AT-LAW.

PUBLISHED BY THE AUTHORITY OF THE LORDS COMMISSIONERS OF HER MAJESTY'S  
TREASURY, UNDER THE DIRECTION OF THE MASTER OF THE ROLLS.

VOL. I.

LONDON:  
LONGMAN, BROWN, GREEN, LONGMANS, AND ROBERTS.

---

1858.

Printed by  
EYRE and SPOTTISWOODE, Her Majesty's Printers,  
For Her Majesty's Stationery Office.

## PREFACE.

---

IN submitting the claim of "The Buik of the Cro-nichis of Scotland" to be included in the series of works, hitherto inedited, now in course of publication under the direction of the Right Honourable the Master of the Rolls, the Editor was influenced by the consideration that, while England possesses the volumes of Langtoft, Robert of Gloucester, Harding and others, the present, with the exception of the invaluable chronicle of Wyntown, is the sole metrical narrative of her early history to which Scotland can point.<sup>1</sup> And although, apart from the fact of the present chronicle being a translation, it by no means merits to be placed on the same level with the labour of the Prior of S. Serf, nevertheless, as a monument of the vernacular language, and a reflection of the manners,

---

<sup>1</sup> The "Bruce" of Barbour, and the "Wallace" of Blind Harry, do not fall within the special category.

sentiments, and character of the age in which it was composed, he deemed it in every respect desirable that it should be rescued from comparative obscurity and made accessible to the public. An opinion of its value, differing widely from that of its editor, may perhaps be entertained by the fastidious balancer of mere facts; but the philologist, and the philosophic student of the past of a once independent nation, will not underrate even its mythical exaggerations or rude imageries.

The original and, so far as is known, the only MS. of this chronicle is preserved in the Public Library, Cambridge, and bears the press-mark K. k. ii. 16. It is a volume in folio, written on paper in a character sufficiently indicative of the first half of the sixteenth century, even if the precise date of its execution were not set forth by its scribe. The number of its folios was two hundred and seventy; but of these the first and twenty-first have been lost; and of those which remain, the first five and the last have been misplaced by the binder; while several, particularly those at the beginning, are much soiled and mutilated. The folios also after f. 165 have been erroneously numbered. The most infelicitous dilaceration is that of its colophon, where the injury occurs at the precise spot whereon the name of the author had been recorded. From sundry nearly-coeval marginal scribbles, it appears at one time to have belonged to Hew Crawford of Cloverhill, or Cloverhill,<sup>1</sup> (a Renfrewshire family extinct

---

<sup>1</sup> About the middle of the sixteenth century Hew Crawford married Giles, daughter of Thomas Kelso, of Kelsoland, co. Ayr. Another Hew, either his son or grandson, was served heir of his father on 22d August 1616. George Craw-

ford was served heir of his father Hew on 3d July 1640; and another Hew was served heir of his father, also named Hew, on 8th February 1668. Beyond this cannot be traced by the Editor.

about the end of the seventeenth or beginning of the following century); and thereafter to Bishop Moore, with the rest of whose MSS. it passed, by gift of George I., to the University of Cambridge; where it has been generally understood that the book was written by command of Margaret Tudor, sister of King Henry VIII., and widow of King James IV. of Scotland, for the instruction of the youthful sovereign, her son James V. This supposition is maintained, among various incidental allusions, by the arguments employed by the allegorical personage of the imperfect "Prologe," to induce the translator to undertake his task of rendering into the vulgar tongue the history of Hector Boyis,

"Maister in art, rector in theologie;"

which, as he informs us in the following lines, was commenced on the eighteenth day of April 1531, and ended on the twenty-ninth of September 1535:—

"Thankit be God now and his moder deir,  
 My lang laubour at this tyme endis heir;  
 Quhilk wes begun richt mony da ago  
 With greit travell, syne endit wes also,  
 Quhen of oure Lord completit wes but weir,  
 Ane thousand threttie and fyve hundreth 3eir,  
 And ane also for to subscribe thairtill,  
 The auchtane day quhilk wes of Apryle,  
 That samin tyme this ilk wark I begould,  
 And syne proceidit dalie as I could;  
 Quhill efterwart the fyve and threttie 3eir,  
 Completit wes this wark present heir,  
 Of September the nyne and tuentie day."

Thus far as regards the manuscript. Of its Author's name, as already stated, we have been most tantalizingly deprived; yet, very fortunately, he himself sup-

plies sufficient *data* from which we are enabled both to ascertain that, and to identify his individual position, although not to trace with certainty the specific family of which he was a member. This the defective condition of the Scottish records altogether prevents us from supplementing; but regal blood, as will be seen, flowed in his veins.

In the sixteenth Book of his Chronicle, when narrating the incineration of Elgin Cathedral by the "Wolf of Badenoch," in 1390, he thus expressly tells us that this savage nobleman, Alexander Stewart, first Earl of Buchan of that name, and fourth son of King Robert II., was his paternal great-great-grandfather, and that George, tenth Earl of Dunbar and March, was related to him in the same degree maternally.

"This Alexander, as that sun man sais,  
 Of Badzenoch wes callit all his dais  
 The vorax wolf, becaus all tyme that he  
 Vsit oppressioun with crudelitie.  
 Ze sall nocht fynd in no storie men reidis,  
 Ony gude said of him or zit his deidis;  
 Of my father thoct *proavus* wes he,  
 Of him I think nocht to fenze nor lie;  
 Suppois fra him I knaw I am discendit,  
 The veritie thairfoir beis nocht offendit:  
 In all this world is no sic friend to me,  
 I knaw richt weil, as is the veritie.  
 At tyme and place as ze hard of ane vther,  
*Proavus* alass siclike wes to my mother,  
 The Erle of Marche, callit George of Dumbar,  
 As of befoir, suppois it be nocht far,  
 I schew to zow how he at Otterburne  
 Come sa gude speid, quhair mony ane did spurne."

We thus learn that his name was Stewart. The Earl of Buchan had no legitimate issue, but left five



natural sons, from whom several families of the name of Stewart descend; with none of these, however, can the author be connected; but, the name being found, a few lines farther on guide towards his identification. While recording the foundation of the University of St. Andrews, he says:—

“Myself was ane, quha lykis for to heir,  
 Studeit thairin the space of fourtene zeir  
 In the Colledge, quhair that I did apply  
 Logik, phisick and philosophy,  
 And theologie, that tyme as it nicht be;  
 Suppois I brocht richt litill awa with me.”

Now, among the early Scottish poets, who flourished at the court of James the Fifth, Sir David Lyndsay, in his Prologue to the “Complaynt of the Papingo,” written in 1530, mentions two of the name of Stewart in the following terms:—

“And Steward, quhilk desyrith ane staitly style,  
 Full ornate warkis daylie dois compyle.”

And again,—

“Stewart of Lorne will carpe richt curioslie.”<sup>1</sup>

Of these, in the first-mentioned, there seems to be little doubt the author of the Metrical Chronicle may be recognized, since various payments made by order of the Sovereign, in addition to the fact of his having been educated at St. Andrews, as stated by himself, make it almost a matter of certainty that this translator of Boece’s History was MR. WILLIAM STEWART.

---

<sup>1</sup> Works, ed. Chalmers, vol. i. p. 286.

It is necessary, however, to keep in view that there were two persons of the same name educated at St. Andrews, both of whom were connected with the court of the Scottish monarch at nearly the same period. Among the Determinants, in the year 1494, the first name in the list is "Wil. Stewart;" and in the following year it occurs as second in the list of Licentiates, "Mr. William Stewart." This may have been William, son of Sir Thomas Stewart of Minto, by his wife Isabel, one of the daughters and co-heirs of Sir Walter Stewart of Arthurly; who is said to have been born in 1479; and is known subsequently to have filled several places of distinction both in Church and State. He was Doctor of Laws, and was successively parson of Lochmaben, rector of Ayr, and a prebendary of Glasgow. In the year 1527 he was preferred to the deanery of Glasgow, and in 1530 became Lord High Treasurer, and Provost of the Collegiate Church of Lincluden. He was afterwards appointed one of the Lords of Session and promoted to the episcopate of Aberdeen. He died on the 17th of April 1545, and was interred in the Cathedral church of his see.<sup>1</sup>

His namesake, the poetical chronicler, who does not seem to have been oppressed by the weight of similar preferments, was probably born about 1481. In the Registers of the University of St. Andrews, "Wil. Stewart" is found among the Determinants in 1499, and "Magr. Wilhelmus Stewart" stands at the head of the Licentiates in the year 1501.<sup>2</sup> That he was educated

<sup>1</sup>Keith's Catalogue of Scottish Bishops; Brunton and Haig's Senators of the College of Justice; and Registrum Episcopatus Aberdonensis, *preface*.

<sup>2</sup>In another Register of the University, entitled "Acta Rectorum,"

among the *Incorporati* under the year 1496 occurs "Wil. Stewart, nac. Alb." (Nationis Albanie.) The students were classed in four nations; according to the district of country to which they belonged.

for the Church may be inferred from the lines just quoted; while one or other of the preferments assigned to his namesake the Canon of Glasgow, afterwards Bishop of Aberdeen, may have been conferred on him. His name first appears shortly after James V. assumed the reins of government, and in the accounts of the High Treasurer, Archibald Douglas of Kilspindie, from 15th October 1526 to 29th August 1527, it occurs among those of the King's attendants who received "leverays (or dresses) at Yule:"—

Fo. 20. "Item to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, ane steik of brown chanelot tane fra James Bassentyne to be him (Stewart) a gown, price, xiiij<sup>li</sup>."

"Item iij. ellis blak veluot to be him a dowblet, price el lv<sup>s</sup>. - - - - summa, viij<sup>li</sup>. v<sup>s</sup>."

Fo. 31. Under the head "Pensiouns and Feallis,"<sup>1</sup>  
"Item to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, for ane terme within the tyme of the said compt, - - - - xx<sup>li</sup>."

Again, in those of High Treasurer Robert Bertoun, 1529-1530, we find:—

Fo. 30. "Item to Maister William Stewart nyne eln of taffateis, price eln xl<sup>s</sup>. - Summa, xviiij<sup>li</sup>."

"Item tua eln and half tanny satyne to him, price eln xxxiiij<sup>s</sup>. - - - - Summa, iiij<sup>li</sup>. v<sup>s</sup>."

Fo. 31. Under the head "Fealis and Pensiouns,"  
"Item to Maister William Stewart, - xl<sup>li</sup>."

The Treasurer's accounts during James's reign are only partially preserved: Stewart's name is to be found in the following extracts, but those under the date of

---

<sup>1</sup> Salaries, or wages.

January 1533-4 undoubtedly refer to the Bishop elect of Aberdeen, who was sent as one of the Ambassadors for a treaty of peace with England; as we learn from the safe-conduct printed by Rymer, and from letters included in the collection of State Papers *temp.* Henry VIII.

“*Compotum Wilehmi Electi Aberdonen. Thesaurarii, &c.*” 6 Sept. 1531 to 22 Aug. 1532.

Fo. 40. “Item the penult day of Januar, to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, - - - - - xx<sup>li</sup>.”

“*Compotum W<sup>m</sup>. Episcopi Aberdonen.*” 22 Aug. 1532 to 26 Sept. 1533.

Fo. 39. “Item the v. day of December, to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, xx<sup>li</sup>.”

Fo. 41. “Item the xvij. day of Julij to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, - xx<sup>li</sup>.”

“*Compotum Will<sup>m</sup>. Ep̄i Aberdonen.*” 26 Sept. 1533 to 2 Oct. 1534.

Fo. 33. “Item to Maister William Stewart, be the Kingis precept, for ane lifray - - xx<sup>li</sup>.”

Fo. 39. “Item (the 28 day of January) be the Kingis command to Maister William Stewart at passing to Lundone, ane gounne of Damas, xxij<sup>li</sup>. xij<sup>s</sup>. vj<sup>d</sup>.; ane riding coit of Pareis blak, vi<sup>li</sup>. ij<sup>s</sup>. vj<sup>d</sup>.; ane hugtoun with lumbertis,<sup>1</sup> ane doublet, and blak veluot to begary his gowne and riding coit, xxvij<sup>li</sup>. x<sup>s</sup>.; Scottis blak to lyne his hugtoun, xlviij<sup>s</sup>.; and ane bonet and a pair of hoiss, xxxvii<sup>s</sup>. vj<sup>d</sup>.”

At the same time Rothesay Herald received a gown of “pareis blak” “at his passing to Lundone with the Ambassatouris, - - vij<sup>li</sup>.”

---

<sup>1</sup> “Hugtoun with lumbertis,” a cassock or short jacket, with skirts.

Fo. 46. "Item (the 3<sup>d</sup> January) to Maister William Stewart be the Kingis command - xx<sup>li</sup>."

Fo. 47<sup>b</sup>. "Item the xvij. day of September, to Maister William Stewart be the Kingis precept in pairt of payment of xx<sup>li</sup>. - - - iij<sup>li</sup>."

As Stewart's name, after an interval of some years, appears only incidentally in the accounts of the Treasurer, James Kirkealdy of Grange, under the date of June 1541, when there was "gevin to Maister William Stewart to be gevin to ane Frenche preist at the Kingis command, vj<sup>li</sup>. xij<sup>s</sup>," it may be concluded that he had obtained some preferment.<sup>1</sup> How long thereafter he may have survived is quite uncertain. Rolland, in the prologue to the "Seven Sages," written in 1560, and first published in 1578, thus commemorates, as his masters, Stewart, with three others, then dead; but this term, "Master" probably only meant familiarity with their writings, rather than any personal acquaintance:—

"In court that time was gude David Lyndsay,  
In vulgar toung he bure the bell that day  
To mak meter, richt cunning and expert;  
And Maister Johne Ballentyne suith to say  
Mak him marrow to David weill we may;  
And for the thrid, MAISTER WILLIAME STEWART,  
To mak in Scottis, richt weill he knew that art.  
Bishop Durie, sum tyme of Galloway,  
For his plesure sum tyme wald tak thair part."

<sup>1</sup> While this volume was passing through the press, the Editor's friend Mr. David Laing acquired, at a sale in Edinburgh, a copy of Polydore Virgil's treatise *De Inventoribus Rerum*, &c., Paris, 1528, 4to., on the title of which is written, in a contemporary hand, "*Wilhelmus Steward, Rector de Quodquen*,"

and on the last leaf of the Index, "*Ex libris (M.) Wli. Steward, Rectoris de Quodquen*," and he suggests the possibility of this person and the chronicler being identical. The parish of Quodquen, or Quothquhan, is in the deanery of Lanark, and was annexed to that of Liberton in 1660.

In the well-known collections of poetry by George Bannatyne and Sir Richard Maitland, there are several poems subscribed *Quod* STEWART, and some of them have been printed by Lord Hailes and other editors. Only one of these, a poem addressed to the king, beginning, "*This hinder nicht, neir by the hour of nyne,*" has the name of William Stewart affixed. Lyndsay's mention of Stewart in 1530, before he had commenced his *Metrical Chronicle*, is sufficient evidence of his having written much that has not been preserved. The preceding is all the scant knowledge of him that can be found.

That Stewart and John Bellenden, the Archdean of Moray, were both by royal command engaged simultaneously in translating Hector Boece's *History*—the former in verse, the latter in prose—is proved by the same accounts to which reference has been made. The former, as we know, commenced his task in 1531; and, at the beginning of that year or the end of the preceding one, payments to "Master John Ballentyne, be the kingis precept, for his translating of the *Cronykill*," in sums varying from £30 to £6, down to July 1533, are entered by the Treasurers.

The first edition of Boece's *History* was published at Paris in 1526-7; and the estimation in which his labour was held by his Sovereign—who, although apparently ignorant of the language in which it was composed, was the earliest regal fosterer of learning in Scotland,—is proved by an entry in the Register of the Privy Seal of the following year, conferring upon him a pension of £50 Scots yearly, and the royal commissions to Bellenden and Stewart, to make a double translation of it for the special use of His Majesty. That by Bellenden was printed about 1540, and went, it is supposed, through two editions, besides being reprinted in 1821; this, by Stewart, is now, for the first time, published,

Such might not be deemed undeserved neglect by those who were wont to vilify and ridicule the narrative of honest Hector, making no allowance for the period when he wrote, and the scanty materials and loose traditions on which he constructed it; and probably a larger amount of contempt would have been bestowed by them upon William Stewart who, in some portions of his version, does, as it were, *out-Hector Hector*. But such denunciators are probably few in number at the present time, when the minutest contribution to historical science is duly appreciated. Besides, as will be seen, there are circumstances and observations in the Chronicle of Stewart that are not mentioned in the work of Boece or his clerical translator.

Before pointing out some of these more noticeable matters, it may not be amiss to offer a specimen of the two versions in juxta-position with the original passage. When, in the seventh year of the reign of "Gracious Duncan," Scotland is invaded by Sueno, King of Norway, with his fierce Danish soldiery, who lay siege to the Castle of Perth; Duncan, while offering to surrender that fortress on condition of assurance to its inmates of life and property, devises a scheme whereby he may in an easy manner free himself from these unpleasant visitors. He accordingly, with much courtesy sends a supply of provisions to the Danes, whose stores he understands to have been for some days exhausted, taking care that the liquids shall be thoroughly impregnated with the juice of nightshade; so that, when the lethiferous decoction has taken effect, he may order Macbeth to knock them on the head. The measure is attended with complete success; and is thus described by Stewart, with whose version of the "uncouth slicht" it may be interesting to compare the quaint and faithful prose of Bellenden and the original of Boece:—

“ Ane herb in Scotland growis heir at hame,  
 Quhilk callit is the mukilwort to name,  
 Is of sic kynd, quha lykis to tak keip,  
 Quha previs it so saddie garris thame sleip,  
 Quhilk puttis thame in perrell of the deid,  
 Without richt [sune] that tha get sun remeid ;  
 And als thairwith this herb is of sic kind,  
 It makis men as tha war by thair mynd.  
 This ilk Banquho, the quhilk the aill gart brew,  
 Of thir herbis, quhair of he had anew,  
 In sindrie partis growand quhair he gat,  
 Among the aill gart tume thame in the fatt ;  
 Ac leit it stand at greit laser and lenth,  
 Quhill that the aill tuke all the jus and strenth  
 Out of that herb, and wes of that same kynd,  
 To gar men sleip or than go by thair mynd.  
 Of tha herbis also richt mony one,  
 He hes gart bra into ane mortar stone,

---

 BOECE.

“ Interea vinum ac cerevisiam Solatro amentiali  
 (herba est ingentis quantitatis, acinos principio virides,  
 ac mox ubi maturuerint purpureos et ad nigredinem  
 vergentes habens, ad caulem enatos et sub foliis laten-  
 tes seseque quasi retrahentes, vimque soporiferam, aut  
 in amentiam agendi si affatim sumpseris habentes,  
 magna ubertate in Scotia proveniens) miscent, ac in ex-  
 ercitus magno studio apertis portis convehunt. Itaque  
 leti ea copia milites sese ingurgitant avidi, ac de ma-  
 joribus poculis certantes invicem invitant. Nec dux  
 ipse abstinere suetus aut aliud quam milites agebant,  
 simulare, certatim quoque cum suis vinum, cerevisiam-  
 que promiscue haurit, donec impletus in somnum solu-  
 tus est, maturante ipsius herbae vi ac somnum advo-  
 cante. Panes quoque coctos magna copia convehunt,



And throw ane claith drew all the jus out syne,  
 And in the tunnis gart put amang the wyne ;  
 Quhairof the wyne tuke all the nature hail  
 Of that same herb, siclike as did the ail.  
 This wyne and aill syne haif tha maid till go  
 Abundantlie unto this king Sweno ;  
 New baikin breid, and beif that wes rycht salt,  
 Quhairof the Danis had that tyme greit falt,  
 And all sic thing micht gif thame appetyte,  
 Thairof to drink and for to tak delyte.  
 This king Sweno quhairof he wes richt glaid,  
 And courtaslie to the servandis he said :  
 ‘ Of my behalf,’ he said, ‘ gude friendis, thank  
     your king,  
 ‘ The quhilk to me so glaidlie send sic thing,  
 ‘ Abundantlie of so gude meit and drink,  
 ‘ The quhilk I traist that he sall nocht forthink

---

 BELLENDEN.

“ Incontinent, the Scottis tuk the jus of mekilwort  
 beryis, and mengit it in thair wine, aill, and breid ;  
 and send the samin, in gret quantite, to thair enni-  
 mes. Sueno and his army, rejosing of this fouth of  
 vittallis, began to waucht on thair maner, and to have  
 experience quha micht ingorge thair wambe with  
 maist voracite, quhil at last the vennoun of thir  
 beryis was skalit throw all partis of thair bodyis ;  
 throw quhilk thay war resolvit in ane deidly sleip.  
 Than Duncane send to Makbeth, commanding him to  
 invaid his ennimes with al diligence ; for thay war at  
 ane esy point to be vincust. Makbeth, but mair tary,  
 com with his folkis to the tentis of ennimes ; and  
 first he slew thair wache ; and the remanent of thame,  
 sowpit with sleip, war al murdrest in thair beddis

' Within schort quhile, and I be for to trow :'  
 Quhilk wes richt trew suppois he wist nocht how.  
 That samin day quhair tha sat at the dyne,  
 Tha eit and drank bayth of the aill and wyne,  
 Richt mirrely ay wauchtand round about ;  
 At euirilk draucht tha playit ay cop out.  
 Sweno himself, with all his strenthis strawe,  
 In his drinking for till exceid the lawe ;  
 So did tha all, quhill tha war als bout fow,  
 And also slepie, as wes ony sow.  
 The fair wordis tha gat with sic effect,  
 It causit thame to hold no man suspect ;  
 Traistand that tyme all sould have bene thair  
     awin,  
 So greit kyndnes to thame that tyme wes  
     schawin,  
 So thankfullie and hartlie with gude will.  
 Greit folie wes to gif sic traist thairtill,

---

 BOECE.

ne quid deesset ad gulam excitandam, aut quo minus largiter sese explerent. Nec minus quam oppidani optarant, faciunt ; infunduntque quoad venter potuit sustinere, debellatum jam existimantes. Convectores quoque nequid suspicionis insit, hostibus præbunt, eos ad potandum largiter invitantes. Interea Duncanus misso fidei ad Maccabæum nuncio, ut extemplo cum exercitu adesset, quæ cogitarat, perfecta esse indicat. Itaque quam potest maxime clam Maccabæus exercitum, trajecto Tao flumine per ligneum pontem, ducit in Bertham, ac inde adversa porta egressus, quæ ad stationes Norwegorum opposita erat, ducente Banquhone ad castra hostium perveniunt. Tum maximo edito clamore ad terrorem, si qui fortassis adhuc vigiles supererant ac sobrii, cædem ingentem edunt, alios

And of thame selffis to tak sic litill keip,  
 That lang or midnycht fell rycht sound on sleip:  
 Throw greit exces tha tuke of aill and wyne,  
 That all that nycht tha sleipit still like swyne.  
 This king Duncane all that caus weill knew,  
 To Makcobey he send richt sone and schew  
 Alhail the fassoun that tyme les and moir,  
 Ilk word be word as ze haif hard befoir;  
 Commandand him in all the haist he ma,  
 To Bertha toun to speid him lang or da,  
 With all his oist se that it sould be done,  
 And tak the tyme sen it wes oportune.  
 This Makcobey, in all the haist he mycht,  
 Come to the toun lang or it wes midnycht;  
 Syne throw the toun all passit in array,  
 On to the place quhair that the Danis lay  
 All sound on sleip, drunken as ony swyne,  
 So greit exces tha tuke of aill and wyne.

## BELLENDEN.

Sueno was brocht, with few nowmer of his folkis, to  
 the schippis, quhare he pullit up salis, and returnit in  
 Norroway. Of all this army eschakit nane bot Sueno  
 and x. personis with him, by the marineris. Mony  
 yeris efter, na knichtis war maid in Norroway, quhill  
 thay war sworne to revenge the slauchter of thair  
 freindis in Scotland. The remanent schippis, quhilkis  
 war left behind the Danis, in the Scottis Firth, with-  
 in thre dayis efter thair departing, raschit ilk ane  
 on othir, be violence of ane eist wind, and sank  
 doun in the Firth, quhare thay ly zit, to the gret  
 dangeir of all other schippis that cumis in the  
 samin, for quhen the see flowis, thay ar coverit with  
 watter, and quhen it ebbis, thay appeir sum part

The tentis all quhair that the Danis la,  
 Richt sone tha smytit the cordis all in tua,  
 And leit the tentis fall abone thair heid,  
 Syne in thair beddis dang thame all to deid.  
 Or tha walknit, as my author did sa,  
 Rycht mony thousand war slane quhair tha la ;  
 And tha that walknit that tyme out of sleip,  
 Tha war als blait and basit as ane scheip ;  
 And other sum war of ane vther kynd,  
 Richt mad and mangit, wod out of thair mynd.  
 Without defence sua war tha all ilkone,  
 Quhill all war slane, rycht few or none wer tone,  
 Exceptand ten that nycht that tuke na sleip,  
 The quhilk war maid that nycht the king to keip,  
 And for that caus drank nother wyne no aill,  
 Into thair cuir in dreid that tha suld fail.  
 Thir few feiris, first quhen tha hard the fray,  
 Tha passit all to Sweno quhair he lay,

## BOECE.

in cubilibus cædentes, quos non clamor, non tantus tumultus, non mors ipsa excitare oppressos veneno potuit. Alii in amentiam acti quid agerent, aut quid fieret non satis intelligebant. Quidam, quod dona hostium suspecta habuissent, integri a pharmaco ac sobrii ad regem accurrunt, nomine eum invocant, verberant, premunt, quicquid ad excutiendum somnum posse videbatur, adhibent, nec tamen excuti somno poterat, veneno potionis jam vires sumente. Tandem velut exanimem capiunt per noctem, unus caput, alter pedes, alii brachia, pars ipsum corpus sublevantes, atque ad Tai ostia, ubi navium statio erat, scapha piscaria deferunt. Sed ne nautæ quidam se in navibus continuerant, ubi de potus in castris audivissent copia. Pauci ergo relictæ in singulis navibus, ubi quod factum fuerat vident in unam omnes navem delatis quæ

To walkin him that tyme quhair he did ly,  
 Quhilk for thame all, nother for schout nor cry,  
 He walkin wald, or zit ane word wald heir,  
 Or for na stryking fit or hand wald steir;  
 Bot sleipand la, ay snorand lyke ane sow,  
 Of aill and wyne wes fillit than sa fow.  
 Than up tha tuke him sleipand in that steid,  
 Sum be the feit and sum als be the heid,  
 And buir him sleipand evin on as he la,  
 On till ane boit wes neirhand by on Ta;  
 To Tayis mouth, quhair all thair schippis raid,  
 Tha rowit syne richt bisselie but baid.  
 Syne on the morne passit to Norrowa,  
 All in ane schip was left levand that da,  
 Of the greit oist king Sueno with him brocht,  
 Fra Norrowa sa far was put to nocht.  
 The schipmen als come to the camp alhail,  
 To get their part of that gude wyne and aill,

---

 BELLENDEN.

above the samin, callit yit be the pepel, Drunlaw  
 Sandis." <sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Bellenden, Hystory and Croniklis of Scotland, vol. ii. p. 257, ed. 1821.

Quhair of tha had greit falt that tyme befor ;  
 Qubilk efterwart tha mycht forthink euirmoir,  
 The Scottis countit thair lawing so deir :  
 That samyn nycht that I haif said zow heir,  
 Exceptand ten thair king awa that hed,  
 For thair lawing held all the laif in wed.  
 The schipmen als of thame wer left so few,  
 And in that tyme the wynd so heich it blew,  
 Tha war so scant, as my author did sa,  
 Tha passit all into ane schip awa,  
 And king Sweno also with other ten.  
 Thir schippis all, without victuall or men,  
 Tha left on Tay rydand neirby the cost,  
 Within schort quhile quhair tha war ilkane lost.  
 On the third da, as my author me schew,  
 So stiff ane storme into the se thair blew,  
 Withoutin gyde quhair that tha war alane,  
 Furth befor Tay tha drownit thair ilkane ;

## BOECE.

usui esse poterant, se transferunt, ac vela ventis dan-  
 tes in Norwegiam cum rege ; nec alii ulli quam qui  
 regem eripuerant (qui fere ad decem fuere) præter  
 nautas effugerunt. Maxima ea Norwegis clades fuit,  
 vel ipsis fatentibus. Nam quisquis exinde eques auri-  
 tus factus est jusjurandum dedit, eam Scotorum con-  
 tumeliam, quantum in se esset, vindicaturum. Sed  
 naves in æstuario vacuæ nautis relictæ post triduo  
 Euro vehementius flante, invicem collisæ, fractæ, ac  
 submersæ sunt, fundoque hærentes affluente arena,  
 aggeribus accumulandis cum maximo illuc annavigan-  
 tium atque illinc enavigantium periculo initio præbu-  
 ere, qui sub aqua modo latentes ut pleno æstu mari  
 teguntur, ita refluxente mari nonnihil extant ; vulgo  
 Droumlou, id est montes mergentes, appellitantur.”<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Boethii Scotorum Historia, p. 248, verso, ed. Paris. 1575. folio

Within tua myle and les to the se bank,  
 Into ane place togidder all tha sank.  
 Syne with the passage inwart of the flude,  
 And outward als, in that place quhair tha stude,  
 As that the flude came rynnand by the land,  
 Amang the schippis warpit on the sand,  
 The quhilk remanit ay still in that place,  
 Ay moir and moir onto so lang a space,  
 With sic abundance on everilk hand,  
 Quhill that it grew in ane greit bed of sand.  
 Quhair efterwart schippis and bottis baith,  
 Sailland thairby gat mekle harme and skayth;  
 Quhair perrell is zit for to sail or row,  
 And for that caus it callit was Dround-low.  
 Lang efter that in Norrowa I trow,  
 The new maid knychtis maid ane solempnit vow,  
 For to revenge, with all power tha ma,  
 Their freindis deith that slane was at Bartha.”<sup>1</sup>

It is observable that in several instances our chronicler notices occurrences to be found neither in Boece nor in Bellenden; and that some minute points omitted by the latter in his translation are preserved by Stewart, and *vice versâ*. As an illustration of the first, take (in the present vol., p. 100) his account of the extended distance of the Isle of Man from the main land, through the influence of the ocean, and of its encroachments by the Solway Frith on the coast, the effects of which he himself had “sene within thir zeiris ten.” And, connected also with the Solway, when, in the sixteenth Book, he narrates the loss of the English there, he states that he has several times witnessed the dangerous operation of its quicksands. So also the *sobriquet* of his ancestor, “The Wolf of Badenoch,” is not given by Boece or by Bellenden.

---

<sup>1</sup> Lib. xii., fol. 185. col. 2.

Neither do they record the place of Edward the First's death: this Stewart does "unto the toun hecht Brouch" (Burgh-on-the-Sands). The agency of a friar in the murder of Douglas by Lord Clifford "on the brig of Danskin" (Lib. xvi.) is another statement peculiar to Stewart: as is the report that the name of John Lyon, son-in-law to King Robert II., was, prior to the rise in his fortunes, John Myll. Of omissions by Bellenden, the mutual chivalric generosities of Lyndsay and Redman after the battle of Otterburn may suffice for an example.

Among other personal traits interwoven with his translation, Stewart informs us that he was acquainted with an aged woman who had known the unhappy Duke of Rothsay, so cruelly starved to death by Albany, and who always descanted on his virtues (not usually ascribed to him) with tears. As the Duke died in 1401, Stewart must have been more advanced in life than is suggested in p. x., unless his informant had attained to upwards of one hundred years of age.

Stewart seems to have been familiar with, and makes reference to, the works of John Mair, Blind Harry, and Froissart. With Fordun he must have been equally acquainted, since the particulars which he gives (Book xv.) of the drowning, in their passage across the Forth, of the English soldiers, who had been obliged to abandon Coupar Castle for want of provisions, are manifestly derived from that author; neither Boece nor Bellenden showing the cause that induced the calamity. The passage may, not improperly, be inserted in this place:—

"The Inglismen, as my author did tell,  
Had Coupar castell in keeping that da,  
In falt of victuall on the nycht awa,  
Richt quyettlie out of the houss tha stall,  
That samin nycht on to ane ferry all,



Quhilk Donybrissis callit than that wes,  
 In that purpois attour Forth than to pas.  
 To that same ferry syne quhen tha come till,  
 The ferriar, in magir of his will,  
 Out of his bed at midnycht gart him ryis.  
 The ferrear that subtill wes and wyiss,  
 Quhen that he saw that na better nicht be,  
 With thame richt sone he passit to the se.  
 In mid water at thame he askit fraucht ;  
 Said ane, ‘*Ȝow sall haif all that euir we aucht ;*’  
 And with his fist vpoun the face him smet.  
 And he agane, ‘*Gramercy, gentill met !*  
 ‘*Haif Ȝe na fraucht vther to gif me ?*  
 ‘*Gif it be so, the laif sall all be fre.*’  
*Ȝ*it nevirtheles he thocht rycht sone to haif  
 Ane trew mendis for him and all the laif.  
 And so it wes, as Ȝe sall efter heir,  
 Of that ferrie the fraucht was than our deir.  
 On the southsyde, ane grit space fra the land,  
 Thair lysis thair ane mekle bed of sand,  
 At the law water wil be hard and dry,  
 On euerie syde lettand the flude go by ;  
 Syne at the flowing of the sand richt hie,  
 The water growis to ane deip mane se.  
 The se that tyme begynmand wes to flow ;  
 This ferriar, quhilk did baith sail and row  
 With all his speid quhill he come to that sand,  
 Syne said to thame that that wes the mane land :  
 Out of the boit quhair tha passit ilkone.  
 The ferriar, quhen he saw tha war gone,  
 Turnit his cours and left thame on the sand ;  
 Syne in all haist come hame to the north land.  
 Syne efter that tha sleipit all unsound,  
 Lang or da lycht thair war tha ilkane dround.”  
 (Book xv.)

The style of Stewart, though in many respects pedantic, and—in consequence of the confusion of tenses,

the indiscriminate use of the singular and plural numbers, and the involved arrangement of his sentences, which make proper punctuation a matter of no small difficulty,—somewhat rugged, is relieved by many truly graphic sketches. Such, for instance, his account of the deathbed of Edward I. and relative vision of Sir William Bannister (Book xiv.); the capture of Edinburgh Castle by Sir William Douglas (Book xv.); and the boastful behaviour of the English Earl Marshal, with his flight before Robert, Earl of Fife, the then Governor of Scotland (Book xvi.) In the thirteenth Book, the story of Earl Gilchrist, brother-in-law of King William the Lion, is told with much pathos.

The pages abound with proverbial expressions, and a quiet stroke of dry humour every now and then enlivens the ordinary march of the narrative. When King David is captured by Sir John Copeland at the battle of Durham, the circumstances are thus pleasantly detailed (Book xv.):—

“The king David with him or he wes tane,  
 In his handis quhill waponis had thane nane,  
 Soe manfullie into the feld befor  
 Fechtand, he brak thame ilk ane les and moir:  
 Quhen Cowpland said, ‘Schir, ze man zoldin be;’  
 Said he agane, ‘That will I nocht to the.’  
 And with his neif syne tuke him sic ane blaw  
 Vpoun the moult, quhill in his throt thair flaw  
 Tua fordert teith lowsit out of his heid:  
*Sensyne with thame he eit bot litill breid.*”

So also, the well-known taunt addressed by Black Agnes, Countess of Dunbar, to the Earl of Salisbury:

“Beware Montagow,  
 For farrow shall thy sow!”

is thus amplified:—

“Tak in this sow, gude erle of Salusbery,  
 Befoir hir tyme our lang hes gart ferry;

Tak ȝow the grysis to thi self and eit,  
 Tha will nocht gane for Scottis mannis meit,  
 So delicat all tyme ar of thair mow,  
 Tha luif na grysis of ane Inglis sow." (Book xv.)

As the chronicle advances, passing from the more fabulous and traditional to the authenticated period of history, the interest of course becomes greater; and no one—certainly no Scotsman—can fail to derive both pleasure and satisfaction from a perusal of the last six, of the seventeen books, into which, following the division of Boece's original work, the translator has apportioned his own.

That work of Boece, as is generally known, embraces the history of Scotland from the remotest period, where truth is lost in mythology, until the death of James the First in 1436. An eighteenth and part of a nineteenth book, written by himself, were added to the second edition of his history, which was published in 1574, about forty years after his death; and with them a continuation by Ferrerius to the end of the reign of James the Third. But ere this second edition saw the light, Stewart must have been in his grave.

The historical value of a translation must necessarily be equivalent to that of the original which it represents; and the merits of Boece have been unsparingly assailed, not only by strangers, but by his own countrymen, who have charged him with inventing what it is rather to be presumed he found recorded,—as he expressly states he did,—in the writings of earlier annalists. Credulity may, no doubt, be ascribed to him; yet it is to be remembered that he lived in an age when legend was received as fact, and men had not begun to apply critical sagacity to the investigating of long-current and obscure traditions, and the "Art of Verifying Dates" was alike unthought of and

unpractised. Dr. Johnson has righteously observed, in regard to Bocce, that "his credulity may be excused in  
 " an age when all men were credulous. . . .  
 " The contemporaries of Boethius thought it sufficient  
 " to know what the ancients had delivered. The  
 " examination of tenets and of facts was reserved for  
 " another generation."

No liberties have been taken with the MS. beyond substituting correct words for others obviously erroneous,—in every such instance noticed at the foot of the page,—and supplying within brackets palpable clerical omissions of letters and words. With these exceptions the orthography of the MS. has been strictly preserved. This it is necessary to state, lest the variety in spelling the same word, *e. g.*, *tha*, *thai*; *thame*, *thaim*; *wer*, *war*, &c., should be attributed to typographical inaccuracy or editorial oversight. The Editor is aware of the objections that may be advanced against this course, a deviation from which would have occupied infinitely less time and required less strict attention; but he has deemed it his duty to observe the instructions prescribed to him, in following the text of the original as narrowly as possible, so as to make the *book*, so far as practicable, a representation of the *manuscript* itself.

With regard to the Glossary, it has been formed for the convenience of the reader and not for the philologist. To have made it the vehicle of etymological speculation would have been to overstep the bounds of an editor's duty, however much inclined personally to such researches.

The correction of many singular misnomers, both of persons and places, such as Planctus for Plautius, Caraccone for Caractone, &c., has been reserved for the Index, where, under the erroneous designations, the proper ones are given. With these the scribe has made sad havoc.

The Editor has to return his thanks to the Syndics of the University of Cambridge for their liberal loan of the MS., and to the Rev. Churchill Babington, B.D., for his courtesy in procuring that favour; and he is particularly indebted to his old and esteemed friend David Laing, Esq., so conversant with all that relates to Scottish literary history, for making those searches which have enabled him to assign the author to his work.

For his own part as Editor he may be permitted to say that, while doubtless many more competent to the work might have been found, he cannot charge himself with any want of care or anxiety in his endeavour to produce a faithful text. They who are familiar with such labours can best determine how far he has succeeded; he will, therefore, for any defects which may be found, appeal to his critics in the words of the "Excusation of the Prentar," prefixed by Davidson to his edition of the translation by Belenden:—

"And in this wark that I have heir assailzeit  
 To bring to lycht, maist humely I exhort  
 Ȝow nobill reders, quhare that I have failzeit  
 In letter, sillabe, poyntis lang, or schort,  
 That Ȝe will of Ȝour gentrice it support.  
 And tak the sentence the best wyse Ȝe may,  
 I sall do better (will God) ane othir day."

W. B. TURNBULL.

Lincoln's Inn, June 1858.

---



---

**THE**  
**BUIK OF THE CRONICLIS OF SCOTLAND.**

---





THE BUIK OF THE CRONICLIS OF SCOTLAND,

[HERE BEGYNNIS THE BUIK OF THE CRONICLIS OF  
SCOTLAND.]

[THE PROLOGE.]

. . . . .	ris as the ald cok crawis,	1	
. . . . .	wes quhen other prince or kyng,		Lib. 1, f. 1.
. . . . .	rewling of his ring.		Col. 1.
. . . . .	and dalie dois his cuir,		
. . . . .	and pleis both riche and puir.	5	
. . . . .	as pride and hie ambitioun,		
. . . . .	and that ar of euill condition.		
. . . . .	trew ay sen the warld began,		
. . . . .	sayis, sic maister ay sic man.		
. . . . .	said I, now ansuer to this thing,	10	
. . . . .	ig sall ze be rebell to the king.		
. . . . .	ng, scho said, for my cousing Discretioun,		
[Hes ga]ttin me leve now laitlie at the sessioun			
. . . ntir thame say I can nocht tell how lang,			
On to the court that I ma cum and gang;	15		
And for to mak no tarie in that place,			
Bot schaw my erand to the kingis grace,			
With him till commoun so is my condition,			
Quhill I haif gottin ane respett or remission,			
And I have brocht my mater for till meis,	20		
Ane nobill buke his princeheid for to pleis.			
The quhilk contenis mony nobill storie,			
Lang tyme befor tynt out of all memorie,			

<sup>1</sup> The beginning is lost ; the portions of the pages torn away are indicated by dots, and all words, letters and passages within brackets have been supplied by the Editor.

Of eldaris deidis preceidand him beforne,  
 Fyve hundret zeir or Jesu Christ wes borne; 25  
 Thair nobill deidis, and of thair ring the space,  
 Ay lyneall descendand to his grace.  
 I traist, scho said, fra that his grace hes sene  
 Sa nobill kingis befor his tyme haif bene,  
 Will he consider the rycht ay as he reidis, 30  
 Thair nobilnes and als thair douchty deidis;  
 Thair sall he find als nobill and als fyne,  
 As euir wes ony of the nobill nyne.  
 And fra his grace consider weill sic thing  
 How that he wes predestinat to ring, 35  
 Siclike as tha, into thair settis suir,  
 I traist he suld do diligence and cuir,  
 To follow thame with possibilitie,  
 So like with poettis for to prysit be.  
 In to this buke also heir ma he find, 40  
 How appetite maid resson oft syis blind  
 In mony kingis, throw our greit libertie,  
 Throw persuasioun of sensualitie,  
 Lawand resson and his hevenlie indyte,  
 Affaminait with fleschlie appetyte; 45  
 Nocht dreidand God, and neglectand their cuir,  
 Haitit tha war thairfoir with riche and pair.  
 And, as the storie makis cleirly kend,  
 Oftymes thairfoir tha maid ane full ill end.  
 Heirby he ma, pleis it his grace to dude, 50  
 Till tak exempill baith of ill and gude,  
 For till fle vice, and vertew for till vse,  
 That euerie man sould him commend and ruse.  
 For euerie man desyris laud and gloir,  
 And for till haue his gude name in memor, 55  
 And naturallie abhorris ay with blame  
 As till vmschew fra selander, lak, and schame.  
 The haill storie at lenth now quhen he seis,  
 Col. 2. Bayth ill and gude, quho thinkis tyme or eis,  
 In fayth of him, als far as I haif feill, 60  
 I traist to God his grace sall don rycht weill.

Bot 3it, scho said, I dreid in my intent,  
 That to his grace it be our eloquent.  
 For-quhy the termis poleist ar perfyte,  
 Of eloquence in rycht plesand indyte, 65  
 In Latein toung sententiouslie and schort,  
 Quhilk for to heir is plesand and confort.  
 Madame, I said, quha wes it drew that storie?  
 Ane man, scho said, of sic hie laud and glorie,  
 In Albione, sen storeis wes begun, 70  
 Wes neur nain sic amang our poetis fun?  
 Madame, I said, quhat is that mannis name?  
 Ane Hector Boyis, said scho, of nobill fame;  
 Maister in art, rector in theologie,  
 In all science ane profound clerk is he. 75  
 Madame, I said, now tell me or 3e ga,  
 Quhat is the caus that 3e commend it sua?  
 That sall I do, quod scho, and thow will heir:  
 Our ald storeis befor thir mony 3eir,  
 Tha war distroyit all with Inglismen, 80  
 In Wallace weir as it is eith to ken;  
 Syne efterwart, quhen that tha wreit the storie,  
 Ald eldaris deidis to put into memorie,  
 Tha maid thair<sup>1</sup> buikis thair tractatis and thair tabillis,  
 Part be ges, and part be fen3eit fabillis; 85  
 Part tha fand in ald broades of bukis,  
 Part in lous quarris liand wer in nukis.  
 Tha take sic cuir sic thingis to consider,  
 Syne in ane volume pat thame altogidder,  
 Without ordour, fassoun, or effect, 90  
 Mekill wantit and all the lave suspect.  
 Madame, said I, now gar me vnderstand,  
 Into quhat place that he tha storeis fand.  
 That sall I do, than said scho, with gud will;  
 Intill ane place callit Ecolumkill, 95  
 Ane abbay sumtyme of authoritie,  
 In Iona yle within the occident se,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *tha*.

Quhilk oft sys had of kingis corps the cuir :  
 Lang of the ald thair wes thair sepultuir ;  
 And thair wes keipit thair storeis and bukis, 100  
 As in this libell thow sall se quhen thow luikis.  
 And in that place thair wes thir storeis fund,  
 Sum in lowss quarris and vther sum weill bund ;  
 As Beid, Torgot, and Weremund alsua,  
 Corneill, Campbell, and mony vther ma ; 105  
 All till ane fyne, ane fassoun, and effect,  
 In ornat spech and nothing to suspect ;  
 And for this caus I haif socht to the heir,  
 Hartlie as now thairof I the requair  
 Translait this libell in our mother toung, 110  
 And preis the nocht my purpois till impu[ng].  
 The kingis grace I knaw is nocht perfite  
 In Latyn toung, and namelie in sic dyte  
 It wilbe tedious, that dar I tak on hand,  
 To reid the thing he can nocht vnderstand. 115  
 War it translatit in our vulgar tung,  
 Out throw the realme the rumor wald [be rung].  
 Lib. 1, f. 1b. Then euerie man would preis, haue thow na wer,  
 Col. 1. Other to reid the storie or till heir.  
 Thair is nothing moir gudlie to avance 120  
 Na auld storeis put in remembrance.  
 Heir I beseik ze, hartlie with gude will,  
 Now at this tyme my askin to fulfill.  
 Madame, I said, forsuith I can nocht dude ;  
 For-quhy my langage is both gros and rude. 125  
 In vulgar toung I vsit neur to mak,  
 And knawes no cullour bot other qubit or blak.  
 Went to the court quhair makaris ar anew,  
 And kennis cullouris of mony diuerss hew,  
 And thair I wat ze will get zour desyre. 130  
 Ceis man, scho said, I se ze do bot tyre,  
 And wax lidder lang or ze [the] werk begin ;  
 Thairfoir lat be thi dirdum and thi din,  
 And grant my asking now or we disseuer,  
 Or than, scho said, adew kyndnes for cuer. 135

Madame, I said, forsuith that war I laith,  
 Your kyndnes tyme or zit with zow be wraith;  
 And thought zour asking be waill honorabill,  
 Zit to my power it is rycht importabill.  
 For thought I do the best way that I can, 140  
 I wil be prysit, I wait, with mony man,  
 Quhilk ar mo lynit erar to lak nor ruse;  
 And be this way, Madame, I me excuse.  
 I zou beseik Madame, gif that ze can,  
 Commit this mater till sum other man. 145  
 Lat be, scho said, for that sall nocht prevail,  
 Thair is no caus quhairfoir that ze suld fail;  
 For thocht thi langage be bayth rouche and rude,  
 Zit neurtheles the sentence is richt gude;  
 And thocht it be nocht full of eloquence, 150  
 So that it be substantious of sentence  
 In plane termis, thairof haif thow no weir,  
 Bot it wil be richt pleasand for to heir;  
 For plane langage is eith to vnderstand:  
 Thairfoir, scho said, mak me no moir demand. 155  
 Gif thow thinkis to haif kyndnes of me,  
 Pas to thi purpois and lat sic talking be.  
 Madame, I said, ze ar inoportune,  
 And sen alway that ze will haif it done,  
 Now for zour saik I sall do as I can: 160  
 Thairfoir of gentres I beseik ilk man  
 My ignorance in this mater excuse,  
 And lak me nocht suppois ze can nocht ruse  
 And thocht ze do, thairof I gif no taill,  
 Sen kyndlie is all man sum tyme to fail. 165  
 Thocht weill I wait I can nocht pleis all man,  
 Zit neurtheles I sall do as I can  
 For to reduce this mater in memorie;  
 Schirris tak tent, for heir begynniss the storie.

HEIR ENDIS THE PROLOGE AND BEGYNIS THE  
HISTORIE.

	In Grece sumtyme into Achchaya land,	170
	Redand ane storie thairin my self I fand ;	
	Quhair duelt ane king, the quhilk hecht Nealus,	
Col. 2.	Ane sone he had . . . . .	
	Rycht fair of face and . . . . .	
	Lustie he wes and larg . . . . .	175
	Strang of nature, cor . . . . .	
	Most lyke to Mars the . . . . .	
	I list nocht now at this . . . . .	
	The nobill deidis he did . . . . .	
	Thairfoir this tyme I draw . . . . .	180
	For first to lufe and syne . . . . .	
	All man thairof wald speik sui . . . . .	
	Thairfoir as now thairof I hald . . . . .	
	And to my purpos quhair I first [began],	
	Tell furth my tail the best way that [I cau].	185
	This Gathelus, of quhome before I spak,	
	As that my author did me mention mak,	
	Throw rage of youth and wanton insolence,	
	Ay till his nichtbour oft syis did offence.	
	In Macedone, and vther landis ma,	190
	He sparit nother for to burne and sla.	
	Quhair of his freindis thoct mekill lak,	
	And schupe thame scharplie alway to corrack.	
	For dreid of thame right far awy he fled	
	Vnto Egipt, and als with him he had	195
	Ane cumpany of siclike as him sell ;	
	For so the storie trewlie dois me tell.	
	Into Egipt thair rang into tha dayis	
	Ane king hecht Pharo, as my author sais,	
	Quhilk of his cuming blyth and glaid wes he,	200
	And him ressaut that tyme tenderlie.	
	Mister he had of mouny sic as tha,	
	For to defend him fra his fellow fa.	
	His landis than war waistit all with weir,	
	The Ethiops dalie did him so deir,	205
	With greit power on him bayth da and nycht,	
	Waistand his land and birmand in his sycht.	

Bot fra the king beheld this Gathelus,  
 Strang of nature, corsie and corageous ;  
 With visage large, and ene baith grit and reid, 210  
 Quhilk lyke tua sterris schone untill his heid ;  
 With schoulderis braid and armis grit and squair,  
 With cumlie craig that wes bayth greit and fair,  
 With corpolent corce and middill that wes sm[all],  
 With hanchis braid proportionnat weill with all. 215  
 Lustie and large and rycht lang wes his theis,  
 Big in the brawnis and lenze in the kneis ;  
 Of mid stature wes baith his fute and hand,  
 He semit weill to weir ane buirlie brand.  
 Sen he wes borne zit saw he neur a deill, 220  
 Ane man he thocht wes liklie to do weill.  
 Of him that tyme the king sic curage tuke,  
 For saik of him all sadnes he forsuk.  
 In that beleif to wyn that he had lost,  
 He maid him than lieutenant of his host ; 225  
 And he agane rycht manlie tuke in hand,  
 Other to de or to reskew his land.  
 Syne tuke his leve and furth with thame he gais,  
 For to revenge the king thair of his fais.  
 And how it hapnit tak tent and ze sall heir. 230  
 . . . . .  
 [S]eigit and . . . also thair principall toum, Lib. 1, f. 3.  
 Brynt it in as, syne caist the wallis down. Col. 1.  
 Fortoun gaif neur zit to na levand man,  
 Moir victorie nor scho gaif to him than,  
 Quhilk he fra Memph<sup>1</sup> with greit honour and gloir 235  
 Come hame agane this nobill king befoir,  
 Quhilk of his cuming wes rycht blyth and glaid,  
 And freindfullie oft syis to him he said,  
 " We thank zow, Sir, forsuith ane thousand syis,  
 " For all our wit and wisdom in zow lyis ; 240  
 " Blist be the tyme," he said, " that ze come heir,  
 " In all Egipt to me his nane so deir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hunjf*.

“ For-quhy, he said, rycht weill I wnderstand  
 “ Ze be the hail reskewar of this land,  
 “ And put ws out of servitude alsua, 245  
 “ And me revengit of my felloun fa.”  
 For the honour and victorie he wan,  
 He wes allouit than with euerilk man  
 As tenderlie as he had bene thair bruther ;  
 Wes none of him that tyme that demit vther. 250  
 This king he had ane dochter than that wes fair,  
 And sum man said that scho suld be his air,  
 Anc virgin elene, ryght fair of nobill fame,  
 And Scota als scho callit wes to name.  
 This king gaif hir, with giftis that wer large, 255  
 To Gathelus as wyfe in mariage,  
 For the greit honor, laud, and hie renoun  
 That he had wyn to him and to his croun ;  
 And he agane hes thankit him thairfoir,  
 With greit blythnes the langar ay the moir. 260  
 Syne efter this, rycht sone, as I hard tell,  
 Rycht perelus plaicis into Egipt fell,  
 Quhair throw tha said that mony sufferit deid ;  
 Thair wes no man that tyme mycht mak remeid ;  
 The hand of God, it smytis with sic pith, 265  
 Thair is no stait hes strenth to stand thairwith.  
 The caus quhy that thir plaigis all fell,  
 For the oppressioun of the pepill of Israell,  
 Quhilk wes committit be this cruell king,  
 And God<sup>1</sup> wald nocht lang suffer sic ane thing ; 270  
 Of him and his sic vengeance than he tuke.  
 Quhome lykis moir of this mater go luke  
 Of Exode the buke, and he sall find  
 To reid at lenth bot gif that he be blind.  
 Fra Gathelus sic cruell takyins saw 275  
 Fall fra the hevin, therof he stude grit aw  
 Into Egipt langar for to remane.  
 On to the se he bownit sone agane,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *gold*.



With bark and boit, barge and ballingar,  
 With tow and takill, anker, sail, and air ; 280  
 Of Grece and Egipt ane greit multitude  
 Weill furneist wes to fair attour the flude.  
 Scota his wife, till him that wes so deir,  
 Zeid with him als that tyme as ze sall heir.  
 Fra Nylis mouth thair passage that tha maid, 285  
 Syne laid thair schipis reddie in the raid ;  
 Bayth tow and takill all wes red and clair,  
 With mansaill, musat, anker als and air.  
 Tha buklit bowsplatis for to beir the blind,  
 Syne all that nycht lay waittand on the wynd. 290  
 I . . . . .  
 By . . . . . Col. 2.  
 Set sch . . . . .  
 That pl . . . . .  
 Of perverse . . . . . 295  
 That in that p . . . . .  
 Bot to the se he bownit . . . . .  
 And in that se lang saling the . . . . .  
 For it wes large of lenth and als rycht . . . . .  
 And in thair passage mony perrell fand 300  
 Quhilis on craig and vther quhilis on sand,  
 Quhilis in wynd and vther quhilis in wall ;  
 Sic wes thair grace zit haif tha chapit all.  
 Rycht lang saling thai maid bayth day and nycht,  
 Quhilis in mirknes and quhilis in mvne lycht, 305  
 In mony flag that furius wes and fell :  
 Of thair trubill quhat suld I to zow tell ?  
 For in this ward ze wait thair is no pane,  
 Nor zit na joy at all tyme will remane ;  
 Bot at the last it will cum to ane end. 310  
 So hapnit tham throw aventure to wend  
 Out throw ane firth endlang ane cragie cost,  
 Quhair that tyme almost tha had all bene lost,  
 Throw wan tydis so stark ran by the land ;  
 Bot at the last tha saw evin at thair hand 315

Ane he[r]bering place that wes baith lang and braid ;  
 Sone tha let saill and straik into the raid,  
 And ankeris caist to hald thair schipis fast,  
 Syne in thair boitis all to land tha past.  
 That land that tyme, as my author did sa, 320  
 Callit to name it wes Yberia ;  
 Now Portingall is callit be name,  
 Quhilk is ane realme of greit honour and fame,  
 And for this caus, as I rycht vnderstand,  
 That Gathelus in that place first tuke land. 325  
 Throw lang saling that tyme in wynd and waw,  
 Thair victuallis haill wer consumit aw ;  
 Quhairfoir als fast as tha come to the land,  
 Tha maid forra about on cuerilk hand ;  
 In euerie part greit spulze that tha maid, 330  
 Syne to thair camp tha brocht rycht mony laid ;  
 Wes na thing fre that tyme that tha mycht get,  
 As it had bene thair awin of proper det.  
 The toun men that tyme on fute and hors,  
 Gatherit all haill for to resist thair force, 335  
 And followit fast becaus that tha saw thame few,  
 Traisting rycht weil the spulze till reskew.  
 Bot Gathelus, that wes sa wys in weir,  
 Of all tha folk he tuke bot litill feir.  
 He put his men in gude ordour full sone, 340  
 Syne gaif command how all thing suld be done ;  
 Syne fuir on thame with sic ane felloun force,  
 Quhill to the ground he drave bayth men and horss ;  
 The cuntrie men rycht sone tha tuke the flycht,  
 To fecht that tyme tha had no langar mycht. 345

Lib.1, f.3 b. . . . . u  
 Col. 1. . . . . ut  
 . . . . . find out  
 . . . . . eist be  
 . . . . . libertie 350  
 . . . . . gane rycht sone  
 . . . . . till be done

. . . . . all vpone this mak  
 . . . . . haist with Gathelus to tak,  
 [And] lat him dwell that tyme amang thame fre 355  
 Into that land at his awin libertie,  
 Quhilk efterwart that tha mycht gudlie ken  
 The stait, conditioun, and fassoun of the men.  
 Quhat thai mycht do in pece and als in weir,  
 Syne efterwart gif tha mycht do thame deir, 360  
 To wait thair tyme and tak it quhen tha list,  
 The hail consall thocht that that wes best.  
 To Gathelus sone haif tha send ane syer,  
 The quhilk to him hes schawin thair desyir.  
 Quhen he hard pece, thairof he wes content, 365  
 But contrapleid tharto gif his consent ;  
 For of that place he thocht him weil applesit,  
 And of that wayis that malice all wes mesit ;  
 With ferme faith and mony aithis deip  
 Both the parteis war sadlie sworne to keip. 370  
 All thing wes maid that tyme bayth ferme and stabill,  
 So wald gude fayth tha wes so ressonabell,  
 Thai oblist wer neur other till inuaid ;  
 Betuix thame thus that tyme the pece wes maid.  
 Syne sone efter brak that pece agane ; 375  
 Fra Gathelus schupe still to remane,  
 To big ane toun wallit for his defence,  
 For dred it sould do thame greit violence,  
 Grit diligence tha haif done da and nycht,  
 To stop that werk tha haif done that tha mycht. 380  
 And quhen thai saw that thai culd nocht preuail,  
 And of thair purpois the farrer ay did fail,  
 And that thair laubour lang tyme sa wes lost,  
 Incontinent thai gatherit ane greit ost  
 On Gathelus in felloun feir of weir, 385  
 With bow and brand, buklar, scheild, and speir.  
 Bot Gathelus, that wes bayth wiss and wicht,  
 Rycht suddanelie hes consaut thair slicht,  
 Arrayit hes his men vpone ane plane  
 And schupe in haist to gif thame field agane, 390

And baldlie thair he maid him for till byde.  
 The Eberiens<sup>1</sup> than vpone the tother syde,  
 Quhen thai persauit that he dred thame nocht,  
 Amang thame self greit farlie that tha thoct;  
 Of strang men 'intill ane vncouth land 395  
 So hardelie to tak sic weir on hand,  
 And tha sa fell that vnder speir and scheid,  
 Col. 2. To fecht with y . . . . our gre . . .  
 For tha had preuit of thair tre[ssoun] befoir,  
 And for that caus tha dred thame [a]ll the moir; 400  
 Therfoir tha thoct at that tyme and tha nicht  
 But ony battell for to debait thair richt.  
 Than trewis tha tuke withoutin tarie that tyde,  
 And causit the captans on euerilk syde  
 To cum and commoun for gude pece and rest; 405  
 Than bayth the parteis thoct that that wes best.  
 And on this wyis accordit than war tha,  
 That Gathelus out of that place suld ga  
 On to ane feild rycht far on the north hand,  
 Lay on the north syde than of Yberia land, 410  
 With fair forrest, with firth and mony fell,  
 Quhair he and his in pece and rest mycht dwell.  
 Be prophisie tha gart him vnderstand  
 That strang men suld inhabite that land,  
 And bruke it als in heretage for euir; 415  
 Syne tuke thair leve, and thus tha did disseuer.  
 Thus Gathelus passit to that land,  
 Quhair men or beistis rycht few thairin he fand,  
 Thai callit it that tyme Cantabria,  
 That now with ws is callit Gallatia. 420  
 On euerie syde tha socht bayth vp and down  
 Quhair tha mycht find ane strenth to big ane toum,  
 Thairin to rest and saiffe do thair euir,  
 Fra feid of fais and all misaenture.  
 And als rycht weill he hes considerit this, 425  
 The world wes ay, and zit rycht so it is,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *tabernis*.

Men had leuer haif all tyme to eik his pelfe,  
 His nyctbouris roume far erar nor him self.  
 And thus tha war aduisit lang at lentht,  
 Quhill at the last than haif tha fund a strenth, 430  
 Besyde ane watter on ane plesand plane,  
 Thair tha thoct best to big and to remane.  
 Tha fundit thair ane citie of defence,  
 For weir or wrang, or 3it for violence,  
 Of nyctbour men that duelt than neirand by, 435  
 Tha wer so rude for malice and invie.  
 Als bissie than that tyme as ony beis,  
 Sum brocht stanis and vther sum brocht treis ;  
 This wes thair labour lang and mony da.<sup>1</sup>  
 And for na sleuth that tyme tha faillit nocht, 440  
 Quhill all that bigging till ane end wes brocht ;  
 Syne forcit it with fowseis mony one,  
 And dowbill dykes that stalwart wer of stone.  
 It stude rycht quhair it had strenth aneuche  
 Of wod and watter, and of craig and cleuch. 445  
 Quhen thai had biggit this citie of sic fame,  
 Brigantia tha callit it to name.  
 Then Gathelus, that wes rycht circumspect,  
 Knew be the caus quhat follow wald in effect.  
 And all his folk, for mair affinitie, 450 Lib. 1, f. 2.  
 Callit thame Scottis all of ane clan to be, Col. 1.  
 Efter Scota, quhilk wes his wyfis name,  
 Out of Egipt he brocht with him fra hame.  
 And als at that tyme he ordand hes greit lawis,  
 Be the decreit of wysmen and thair sawis, 455  
 To stanche thift and weir, and wrang gare seis,  
 And put down pley that men mycht leue in eis.  
 Lang efter that this toun changit the name  
 To Cambustell, quhair now duellis Sanct Jame.  
 Eberiens quhen tha this citie saw, 460  
 Quhilk wes so strang of watter and of waw,

---

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

Full sair thai dred that it suld do thame wrang ;  
 That causit thame all to counsall for to gang,  
 For to devyis quhat wer the best remeid ;  
 And suddanelie tha tuke [it] in thair heid 465  
 To lay ane seig rycht sone about the toun,  
 Birg all the bigging and cast the wallis down ;  
 And sla thame all within, baith man and wyfe,  
 Without pietie and leue neur ane on lyfe.  
 With lang prouision, and with mekle bost, 470  
 To Brigant toun tha brocht ane mekill ost,  
 And in ane vaill that is besyde the toun,  
 Eberiens stentit thair palzeonis down.

HOW YBERIENS KEIPIT THE TOUN OF BRIGANCE ;  
 AND HOW GATHELUS WAN THAME IN FEILD.

Than Gathelus, quhen he considerit sua  
 Tha folk all quhilk wes his mortall fa, 475  
 He left the toun, and come furth on the plane ;  
 And schupe to fecht and gif thame feild agane.  
 Syne thus he said, in presence of his men,  
 " My knightis kene, I traist rycht weill ze ken  
 " How that thir folk wer fals to ws beforne, 480  
 " And now agane ze se tha ar manesworne ;  
 " The fals tressoun to ws that tha haif wrocht,  
 " Till God I traist it salbe deirlie bocht ;  
 " Or that this battell be brocht till ane end,  
 " Traist ze rycht weill thair falsheid salbe kend. 485  
 " As for the caus lat God be the judge,  
 " Quha fleis heir he gettis no refuge ;  
 " Tyne we the feild this da into this place,  
 " Traist weill to ws that thai will do na grace,  
 " Better it is, I say for me 490  
 " Fechtand in feild with sic honoris to de,  
 " Or tak the chance God will send ws till,  
 " Nor for till fle and syne be in thair will.  
 " Hartlie," he said, " I zow beseik thairfoir  
 " That euery man wald think of his awin gloir ; 495

“ Fecht for 3our gude, 3our barnis, and 3our wyuis,  
 “ 3our land, 3our law, 3our libertie, and lyuis.”

Be this wes said, withoutin ony moir,

The bowmen bald hes tane the feild befor :

Fra euerilk syde the fedderit flañis flaw, 500

Scharpe as the hail, and thik as ony snaw.

Syne men of armes gaif mony stalwart strak,

That contering gart mony cowart quaik ;

Scheildis wer schorne with scharpe swordis in  
 sunder,

Helmes wer hewin, and heidis [that wer under] ; 505 Col. 2.

Mony throw force war feblit in that [feild],

Mony lay woundit bleiland vnder scheild ;

Bristis war brissin bayth bludie maid and bla,

Schulderis wer schorne and sched the bodie fra.

The Scottis than sa worthie war and wicht, 510

Eberiens agane thame had no micht ;

Of thair dyntis thai wer so gritlie dred,

Turnit thair bak out of the feild and fled.

In that congres wes mony nobill slane,

On both the sydis la deid vpon the plane : 515

3it harme it wes sic duchtie men suld de,

Wes in that tyme of sic nobilitie.

Eberiens that da war all slane doun,

Worthy it wes, tha wrocht the hail tressoun.

Tha brak thair aith as it wes rycht weil kend, 520

Falsheid come neur 3it till ane better end.

Quhen tha had gottin the skayth, and als the lak,

Than war tha fane trewis agane to tak ;

And Scottis als to haif both les and moir,

Tha landis all quhilk thai had befor. 525

Greit bandis than on euerilk syde wes maid,

Neur on of thame ane vther till invoid.

Fra that tyme furth tha weiris all did ceis ;

The hetter weir, oft syis the sonner peis.

So mycht be said of thir Eberiens ; 530

Fra tha of Scottis gat sic experiens

Of strenth, maneheid, of wisdome into weir,  
 Fra that [tyme] furth tha did thame no moir deir.  
 Sone efter that fra weir begouth to ceis,  
 Thai multipleit so in the tyme of peice, 535  
 That thair landis mycht nocht thame all sustene,  
 Qubairfoir thair mister wes the moir to mene.  
 Thus Gathelus he hes tane in his heid,  
 For thair mister sum for to find remeid.  
 Spysis he send about on euerilk [hand], 540  
 Gif thai culd find ylis or zit waist [land],  
 Qubair his pepill mycht still in pece r[emane].  
 Furth that tha fuir and sone tha come ag[ane],  
 And schew to him that tha had fund rycht [far]  
 Furth in the north, law vnder the laid st[a]r, 545  
 Ane plesand yle of wod, watter, and land,  
 Bot rurall folk nane vther thair tha fand.  
 This Gathelus had that tyme sonis tua,  
 Gottin with his wyfe that<sup>1</sup> callit wes Scota,  
 Ebar the ane, the vther Emecus; 550  
 Na ma he had, the storie tellis thus.  
 Thir tua he furneist reddie for to far,  
 With schip and bot, with bark and ballingar,  
 With men and meit, and all thing that [wes neid],  
 Tha tuke thair leve syne to the se tha ze[id]; 555  
 With wyfe and barnis as tha sould ay . . .  
 At thair departing men mycht se greit . . .  
 To se the dochter fra the mother t[wyn]  
 [The weip]ng soir and sorrow thai war in,  
 Lib. 1, f. 2b. [Qubhen] euerilk freind fra vther did depart 560  
 Col. 1. [With weiping, wringing, sad and sorrofull hart.  
 Freindlie affectioun causit thame to greit,  
 In hoip agane that tha sould neur meit.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *and*.



HOW EBER AND EMECUS THE SONIS OF GATHELUS  
PASSIT THE SE FOR TO SEIK NEW YLIS OR  
WAIST LANDIS.

To schoir thai ran as bissie as ony be,  
For to behald thair passage to the se ; 565  
Full will of wane than weipit mony wycht,  
Quhen euerilk freind take leve and bad gude nycht.  
And syne to schipburd quhen tha war brocht all,  
Thai drew ankeris and saillis down leit fall ;  
Tow and takill and all wes reddie at rycht, 570  
Befoir the wynd tha salit out of sicht.

THE LAMENTATIOUN OF GATHELUS QUHEN HE  
DEPARTIT WITH HIS TUA SONIS.

Quhen Gathelus saw his sonis war gone  
Out of his sycht, murnit and maid greit mone.  
On to him self than prevalie said he,  
“ O ze, my sonis, sall I zow neur se ? 575  
“ Quhair wes my wit that leit zow fra me fair,  
“ Wittand sa weill I had na vther air ;  
“ Fair weill,” he said, “ for we will neur meit.”  
With that the teiris fell down to his feit.  
With siching, sobbing, and with greit hart sair, 580  
Turnit his bak, zeid hame, and said na mair.  
No moir of this ; as now I will lat be,  
And speik of thame wes passit to the se.  
The wynd wes fair, the wedder wes at will,  
Betuix tua scheittis thai salit lown and still, 585  
Ay be ane burd fyve dais and fyve nycht ;  
Quhill at the last tha haif gottin ane sicht  
[Of] ane hie land far furth befoir thair ee,  
[Li]ke till ane yle within the occident se ;  
[We]ill culd tha nocht at that [time] vnderstand 590  
[Qu]hat at it wes, the mist or the mane land :  
[Sum] said it wes the cludis of the sky,  
And gart men pas on to the meris and spy.

Quhen tha saw land than war [tha] all full blyth ;  
 The langer ay the better it did kyth. 595  
 The wynd blew fair the langar ay the moir,  
 Syne at the last it brocht thame till ane schoir.  
 Endlang ane cost tha salit by the land  
 Tua dayis or thrie, till at the last tha fand  
 Ane firth full fair that wes bayth lang and braid : 600  
 Thair tha streik sail and maid thame to the raid.  
 . . . ters tha schot, and send on euerie hand  
 [Sp]yand the cost quhair tha mycht pas to land.  
 [Quhill] at the last, full laich vnder ane law,  
 Within ane nes ane rever mouth tha saw, 605  
 Rycht deip and wyde, with schoir on euerilk hand ;  
 [Syne] thair tha passit all saillie to the land.

Col. 2.

HOW EBER AND EMECUS ENTERIT INTO YBERNIA  
 AND SUBDEWIT THE PEPILL THAT HE FAND  
 THAIR BIFOIR.

The puir pepill that wer inhabitouris,  
 Hes left all waist thair bigging and thair bouris ;  
 Fast to the hillis with tha folkis fled, 610  
 For strong men so soir that tyme tha dred.  
 This Yber send efter thame in hy  
 Lycht leuer men, and bad thame pas and spy,  
 For to consider the fassoun of the land ;  
 And so tha did, and sone efter syne tha fand 615  
 Hirdis with hirdis liand in ane glen.  
 Tha left the gude, and brocht away the men  
 On to Yber that tyme that wes thair lord,  
 And till him hes maid ane rycht record  
 Of thair fassoun and febilnes in weir. 620  
 Quhen Yber knew tha mycht do him no deir,  
 Tretit thame weill and held thame still that da ;  
 Syne on the morne he lute thame pas ther wa,  
 Sayand to thame he come thair for thair gude.  
 Than all the laif, quhen that tha vnderstude 625  
 He schupe nocht to do thame skayth nor ill,  
 Tha come ilkone and pat thame in his will.

He welcunit thame with wordis wyss and warne,  
 Bad thame nocht dreid, he suld do thame no  
 harme.  
 Than furth with thame he passit into hy, 630  
 On till ane hicht the land quhair he mycht spy;  
 And tha till him discryuit all the land  
 Endlang the costis, the cragis, and the sand;  
 The wood, the watter, the hillis, and the hewis;  
 The mos, the mure, the craigis, and the clewis; 635  
 The firth, the fell, the montane, and the mayne;  
 The feild, the flude, the pasture, and the plane;  
 The hart in hillis, the foullis in the firth;  
 The blumand bewis abundand with sic birth.  
 Quhen tha considerit that land so plenteous 640  
 Of corne and cattell, and so commodeous  
 Of wod, watter, firth, forrest, and fell,  
 Chesit ane strenth quhair [tha] thoct best to duell;  
 Pleasand for corne of all thair lyvis,  
 And syne sat down thair bayth with thair barnis 645  
 and wyvis.

HOW YBER PASSIT AGANE IN BRIGANCIA, AND LEFT  
 HIS BRUTHER EMECUS TO BE GOVERNOUR IN  
 THAT NEW FUND YLE, AND OFF THE DEITH OF  
 HIS FATHER.

Quhen this wes done and all thing put to rest,  
 To boun him hame than Yber thoct it best;  
 And left his bruther Emeclus in that steid,  
 To be thair lord the law to thame to leid.  
 Quhen this wes done, and all man wes content, 650  
 He tuk his leve and syne to schipburd went.  
 Heir will I stand ane quhile and lay ane stra,  
 To Gathelus agane than will I ga. Lib. 1, f. 6.  
 This Gathelus quhilk murnit da and nycht Col. 1.  
 For his sonis so far out of his sycht, 655  
 And quhair tha war that tyme he culd nocht tell,  
 Levand or deid, in bevin or zit in hell,

Slane on the land, or drownit in the fame,  
 Full soir he dred that tha sould neur cum hame.  
 For siching sad all solace he forsuik, 660  
 Weipand for wo the lang nycht all he wuk ;  
 With murning maid so mynglit wes his mude,  
 That meit nor drink, nor sleip did him na gude.  
 With deidlie face discolorat of hew,  
 Like till ane schadow of his schap he schew : 665  
 With visage pale and lippis law as leid,  
 His cristell eyne wes suckin in his heid ;  
 His buirle bodie, that wes bayth strang and stuir,  
 Wes pynit than rycht peteouslie and pur :  
 Thocht he wes stout sum tyme to stryk and stand, 670  
 Now is he wallowit and waik as ony wand.  
 The perelus poysoun, mortiferus melancolie,  
 That horribill edder with vipros invie,  
 That restles revar but reuth or zit remeid,  
 That dullie dragone that dois men to deid, 675  
 With forcieful furious infirmitie  
 In that distres hes done him for to de.  
 No moir of this: heir will I hald me still,  
 And onto Eber turne agane I will,  
 Quhilk wes the sone of Gathelus the gude, 680  
 With all his men that tyme vpoun the flude.  
 Tha salit fast that tyme befor the wynd  
 With fuksaill, topsaill, manesall, musall, and blynd.  
 Lord Eolus and fortoun so thame tretis,  
 That all that tyme tha salit betwix tua schetis ; 685  
 Into thair gait no perrell that tha fand,  
 Quhill that thai come till Cantabria land.

HOW YBER COME HAME TO BRIGANCIA, AND OF  
 THE LAMENTATIONE HE MAID QUHEN THAT HE  
 FAND HIS FATHER DEID.

Blyth war the pepill this Yber quhen tha saw  
 Bayth haill and feir, thankit tha Goddis aw.  
 Greit blythnes wes quhen ilk freind met vther, 690  
 The father the sone, the sister with the bruther.

Thai tuke blythnes the langar ay the moir,  
 Quhill thai forzet all travell maid befor.  
 Quhen Yber hard that his father wes deid,  
 Wailland in wa he wallowit as ane weid, 695  
 With trigland teiris kindlit fut and hand,  
 Suapit in swoun and mycht na langar stand.  
 With that his men that stude him neirhand by,  
 Tha huit him vp and had him hame in hy;  
 On to his place with force tha him led, 700  
 Tuke of his claythis, syne did him in his bed;  
 Doand ther cuir till him with all thair mycht,  
 Bot still he lay, spak nocht ane word that nycht.  
 Syne on the morne, sone be day beg[an], Col. 2.  
 To his bed syde come mony gudlie m[an] 705  
 Till confort him with wordis warm . . .  
 Quhill at the last tha maid him for to . . .  
 And causit him to slaik of all his sor[rowe].  
 Brycht wes the sone, and weill fair wes the [morrowe];  
 The daplit sky wes lyke the cristell clei[r], 710  
 The birdis sang that hevinlie wes till hei[r].

AS YBER WAS CROWNIT ON THE MARBELL STONE  
 EFTER THE DEID OF HIS FATHER GATHELUS.

Furth in the streit with hym syne ar tha go[ne],  
 And set him down vpon the marbell stone,  
 Arrayit him in rob royall of reid,  
 Subbit him dig with diademe on heid, 715  
 And gaif him syne ane sceptour in his hand,  
 To be thair lord and leidar of that land.  
 And sua it wes, the suith gif I sall sa,  
 He wes thair lord and duke rycht mony da;  
 And maid his folk alway for to leif fre, 720  
 With law and laud keipand ay libertie.  
 In stait royall heir I leif him thus,  
 And turne agane to tell of Emecus,  
 And talk of him I will ane litill quhile,  
 Remanand wes than in the new fund yle. 725

EMECUS GYDIT THAT YLE ALL HIS TYME, AND  
CALLIT IT YBERNIA EFTER THE NAME OF HIS  
BRUTHER YBER, QUHILK CALLIT IS YRLAND.

He gydit weill that land ane rycht lang space,  
In pece and rest with mony poleist pl[ese];  
And all the folk that duelt into that [land],  
Reddy tha wer all tyme at his com[mand],  
And leill to him the dais of thair [lyfe]; 730  
Weill wes he louit bayth with man and [wyfe].  
Efter his bruther as my author dois [sa],  
Callit that land be name Yberni[a],  
For loue of him wes of sic nobill fame;  
Quhilk Yrland now it callit is to na[me]. 735  
Lang efter syne that Emeeus wes de[icid]  
Amang thame self thair raiss greit [feid];  
The perverst pepill that duelt first in that [land]  
Agane the Scottis rebellit in ane band,  
Chesand ane chiftane borne of ther awin blude, 740  
Quhair the Scottis and thair lawis ganestude.  
The Scottis als vpoun the tother side,  
Chesit ane chiftane for to be thair gyde.  
In batell ost tha met efter but baid,  
On enerie syde greit slauchter that tha [maid]. 745  
The Scottis seand that tha culd nocht preva[il],  
Bot da be da feblar and lyke to fail,  
And to thair purpois no way culd app[ly],  
[Ambass]atouris than haif tha send in hy,  
Lib.1, f.6b. . . . thame, syne gaif thame command 750  
Col. 1. . . . haist into Cantabria land,  
. . . . friendis and ask at thame supple;  
[Thai tu]ke their leif and syne went to the se.  
[With]outin tarie our nycht our day,  
[To] Spanze lande tha tuke the narrest way. 755  
[Qu]hen that tha come to Brigans that toun,  
[Thai] war ressaut with honour and renoun.  
[That] tyme Metalleus wes thair lord andking,  
[Of] Yberis seid succaidand to his ring;

[Of] thair desyir rycht blyth and glaid wes he, 760  
 [An]d sone he set ane armye to the se ;  
 Syne send with thame, for to defend their rycht,  
 His thre sonis quhilk war bayth wyss and wycht ;  
 Ybert the tane, and Tholome the vther,  
 Emeneus that wes the 3oungest bruther. 765  
 Than furth tha fuir with mony courtas knycht,  
 And tuke na sugeorne outhur da or nycht,  
 Ay saland furth our salt se and our sand,  
 Quhill tha wer brocht sone into Yber land.  
 Fra tyme tha come the Scottis wan the feild, 770  
 The tother part wer baneist all and keild.  
 Into that land tha wald nocht lat thame dwell,  
 Quhat word of thame efter I can nocht tell.  
 Quhen thir brethir had discroyit all the land,  
 The wod, the watter, the se, and als the sand ; 775  
 The fische in flude, the hartis on the hicht ;  
 The foule in firth, quhair falcone mycht haif flycht,  
 The growand treis, with mony gudlie grane ;  
 The lustie aik, with mony plesand plane ;  
 Than tua of thame that tyme hes tane on hand 780  
 For to byde still, and duell into that land.  
 . . . . Tholone and Ybertus his bruther,  
 [Th]a baid still and syne send hame the vther ;  
 [Keip]and gude reule and gart all thing ga rycht,  
 [With bl]is and blythnes mony da and nycht. 785

HOW THAT THE SUCCESSIOUN OF THIR TUA  
 BRETHER EFTERWART STRAIFF FOR THE SU-  
 PERIORITIE.

[In p]eece and rest that land wes mony da,  
 [Lang] efterwart as I sall to 3ow sa ;  
 . . . . y and efter that tha war deid,  
 [Bet]uix thair barnis rais greit stryfe and feid,  
 Quhilk of thame tua suld sen3eour be and syer, 790  
 Contendand ilk day bayth with blude and fyre.  
 In[to] that tyme thair duelt amang thame than  
 [Ane] hecht Thanas, that wes ane nobill man,

- [Of] werk rycht wyiss, and als of consall gude ;  
 [By] apperance rycht weill he vnderstude 795  
 [That] that discord wald bring that land to nocht ;  
 [And] he for concord mony wayes hes wrocht.  
 [Th]e langar ay that he laborit thairin  
 Col. 2. He fand thair wit the langar ay in cheyne ;  
 And quhen he saw that na better mycht be, 800  
 Befoir thame all than rycht plane said he :  
 “ My friendis deir, na ma ze wnderstand  
 “ The greit discord that now is in this land,  
 “ With the presumptioun of the pairteis bayth,  
 “ Quhilk is apperance of rycht mekle skayth ; 805  
 “ For sic diuisioun may nocht lest rycht lang,  
 “ But weir and wrak and mekle opin wrang.  
 “ Sen our God hes sic grace to ws schawin,  
 “ Makand ws fre to lief within our awin,  
 “ But outward weir of ony erthlie wicht, 810  
 “ Quhairfoir in fayth I hald it greit vmricht  
 “ Amang ourself thus dalie till discord.  
 “ Bot weill I wat, had we ane king or lord,  
 “ He wald nocht suffer sic thing amang ws be,  
 “ Than mycht we leif in greit tranquillitie. 815  
 “ Quhen ony land is in the self deuidit,  
 “ On verra force it man be rycht euill gydit ;  
 “ With stouth and reif and mekle wrang abusioun,  
 “ Syne finallie brocht all to confusioun.  
 “ Tak tent to this now that ze heir me tell, 820  
 “ Or dreid we mak exempill of oursell ;  
 “ For and we do, it wilbe our deir<sup>1</sup> bocht ;  
 “ Be war in tyme or ony wrang be wrocht.  
 “ Rycht as ane man hes ma heidis nor tua,  
 “ Is meruelous, and for ane monstour ta ; 825  
 “ So is ane realme into the self devydit,  
 “ Without ane king quhome with it sould be gydit.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *deid*.



“ My counsall is thairfoir to cheis ane king,  
 “ And mak ws all vnder ane heid to ring.”  
 Quhen this was said, than all the pepill by, 830  
 Rycht clamorous kest vp ane suddand cry,  
 And thankit him with wordis rycht benyng,  
 That he for thame devysit had ane kyng;  
 And bad him cheis quhome that he thocht maist meit,  
 And thai sould stand ilkone at his decretit. 835  
 Than this Thanas, quhilk wes ane nobill man,  
 Thame to perswade on this way he began.  
 “ Lordis,” he said, “ze ma rycht weill consider  
 “ Tua equale partis that hes bene lang togidder,  
 “ And nane of thame hes had autoritie, 840  
 “ Bot euerilk ane within him self ay frie,  
 “ Neuir ane of thame will consent na accord  
 “ To mak the tother his king our zit his lord;  
 “ And thocht sua be, ze may knaw and ze will,  
 “ Sone efterwart aperance of greit ill; 845  
 “ Malice, discord, pryde and comparesone,  
 “ Haitrent, invie, pomp and presumptione,  
 “ Quhilk wilbe caus of mekill bost and schoir,  
 “ And mak it war nor euir it wes befoir.  
 “ All for the best sic thing to zow I sa, 850  
 “ To cheis ane vther nor ony of thir tua.  
 “ I knaw ane man of greit honour and fame,  
 “ Quhilk Symon Brak is callit to his name.  
 “ The kingis sone als [of Spanze is he], Lib. 1, f. 4.  
 “ Of blude royall is his [genelogie], Col. 1.  
 “ And of oure kin ane nobill man . . . 1 855  
 “ All my counsall with hartlie my[nd and will]  
 “ To cheis him king, quhat sa ze all [thair till]?”  
 The counsall all thocht weill that that w[es best].  
 Without delay, respekt, or [any] rest, 860  
 Than haif thai chosin ane messinger to ga  
 In Spanze land intill Brigantia.

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

HOW THE MEN OF YBERNIA SEND TO SPANZE FOR  
SYMON BRAK TO BE THAIR KING.

To schipburd syne than ar tha went but tary,  
 And throw the se thai set thair cours to cary.  
 The wynd was fair and thai salit rycht fast, 865  
 To Brigant toun quhill thai come at the last ;  
 To Symon Brak thair credens syne tha schew.  
 He wes content the cace quhen that he knew  
 Of thair desyir, that was so honorabill  
 To him and his, and also proffittabill. 870  
 With thame to pas he wes rycht glaid and blyth,  
 And to the se he bownit him rycht swyth,  
 With men and meit, and artalze for weir,  
 With hors and barnes, and all vther geir.

HOW SYMON BRAK COME IN THAT LAND, AND  
BROCHT WITH [HIM] THE CHAIR OF MARBELL.

His leue he tuke, syne furth with thame is gone, 875  
 And brocht with him the chair of marbell stone.  
 Tha drew ankeris, and salis down leit fall,  
 Syne salit furth but other wind or wall.  
 That tyme Neptunus wes rycht amiabill,  
 And Eolus rycht dulce and delectabill. 880  
 Rycht plesandlie tha salit nycht and da,  
 Quhill that thai come intill Ybernia.  
 Off his cuming glaid wes the pepill than,  
 At that meting wes mony nobill man ;  
 Greit joy it wes that tyme to se thame meit, 885  
 With salussing that sober wes and sueit,  
 Welcumand him than of ane humill wyss.  
 He thankit thame agane ane thousand syis,  
 Syne with consent of all the pepill ilkone,  
 Tha set him down vpoun the marbell stone, 890  
 Out of Brigans thair with him he brocht.  
 In rob royall that worthelie wes wrocht,  
 With croun of gold syne set vponc his heid,  
 Tha maid him king into that samyn steid.

Sex hundreth 3eir nyntie and sevin beforene, 895  
 Or Jesu Christ wes of the Virgin borne,  
 Symon Brak that tyme wes crownit king  
 Into Yrland, and first gydit that ring.  
 Ane better king wes nocht into his dais,  
 Or 3it sensyne, as that my author sais ; 900  
 And fourtie 3eir in stait royall he rang,  
 . . . . . Col. 2.  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . . 905  
 . . . . . wa . . . . .  
 . . . . . he tuke purpos . . . . .  
 Thair he duelt rycht lang . . . . .  
 Syne callit it to name B . . . . .  
 The Yle of Bute, as my author [say], 910  
 Efter his name gart call it Ro[thissay].  
 In this same tyme thair com fra Yberla[nd],  
 Ane messinger quhilk gart thame vnderstand,  
 That his father Metaselus wes deid.  
 But ony rest than has he tane to reid, 915  
 To Yberland in all the haist he ma ;  
 He tuke his leif and syne went on his wa.  
 Efter his fader crownit syne wes king,  
 In pece and rest syne all his tyme did ring.  
 Still efter that, rycht lang and mony da, 920  
 The Scottis all duelt in Brigantia ;  
 Ay quhill thai grew into sic multitude  
 Of corne and cattell, and of all vther gude,  
 That force it wes to thame to skail and [thyn]  
 And vther land to labour and till wyn. 925  
 And so tha did, seikand be the se syde,  
 Towart the north quhill tha thoct tyme to byde,  
 In Carrik, Kyle, and als in Cuninghame,  
 Quhilk efterwart syne had ane vther name.  
 The Lennox, Lorne, Lochquhaber, and Ergyle, 930  
 Endlang ye cost bezond that mony [myle].

That tyme the south pairt of this yle [Albione],  
 Callit Britaine rycht lang befor ago[ne],  
 Thair duelt the Britis, as my author [sais],  
 Now Ingland it callit is in thir dais. 935  
 Tha held the north part, ay endlang the se,  
 Into the plane vnder the hillis hie.

HOW THAT THE CLANIS BEGOUTH FIRST IN  
 SCOTLAND EFTER THE AWAY PASSING OF  
 ROTHISSAY.

Lord no king was nane amang [thame than],  
 Quhairfoir thai haif creat of eueri [clan]  
 Ane principall to gar the l . . . . 940  
 That thai may leif in pece . . . .  
 And honour him intill all ky . . . .  
 With all seruice siclike as to . . . .  
 Lang war tha sa but ony king or . . . .  
 In pece and rest without stryfe and . . . . 945  
 Lang efter syne, as my author did [tell],  
 Harkin and heir sic aventure [befell].

Lib.1, f.4 b. . . . .  
 Col. 1. . . . . 950  
 . . . . .  
 . . . . . intill Yber . . . .  
 . . . . . wes cuming to the cost  
 . . . . . ors with ane greit royall ost,  
 . . . . . baith bodin with bow and brand,  
 . . . . . part than durst nocht tak the land, 955  
 Quhill that tha send ane messenger to the king,  
 On humill wayis rycht lawlie and bening,  
 Askand at him ane place quhair tha mycht hyde  
 That wes vnpleneist be ane watter syde,  
 Vnder his grace to leue in seruitude. 960  
 Schortlie, he said agane, he wald not dude ;  
 And quhen tha hard sic ansuer to thame maid,  
 Thai tuke thair leve withoutin langar baid.

Saland rycht lang by Albeoun the cost,  
 Towart the north quhill tha war neirhand lost 965  
 On the cragis that la foirgane the land,  
 Quhile on the schald and quhile on the sand;  
 Amang the ylis for stremis and wan tyde  
 Tha fand na place that tyme quhair tha mycht byd.  
 Sua throw the se salit rycht mony da, 970  
 Quhill at the last thai come in till Orkna;  
 Syne in thair boittis passit to the land,  
 Rycht few or nane into that place tha fand.  
 Tha thocht that place wes our far fra the south;  
 Tha sailit syne on till ane rever mouth, 975  
 Betuix the landis for stormes to tak girth;  
 That se sensyne is callit Pentland Firth.  
 Than tha tuke hevin, and syne passit to land,  
 Ay seikand fordwart on the south hand,  
 Throw Ross and Murray fleand fra the north, 980  
 Quhill at tha come on to the watter of Forth;  
 Thair tha tuke purpois first for to remane,  
 Within schort space syne planeist all that plane,  
 On baith the sydis baith be north and south,  
 Ay quhill thai come rycht on to Tueidis mouth. 985  
 In all that tyme wes nane of thame had wyvis;  
 Than to consider the schortnes of thair ailyvis,  
 Efter thair deid that airis had thai nane  
 [To t]ake tha landis quhen thairselfis war gane.  
 [Syne to] ane counsall passit tha rycht sone, 990  
 . . . . t quhat best wes to be done.  
 . . . . syne with ane consent and will,  
 [Ane mes]singer the Scottis to send till,  
 [To schew] to thame all thair desyre and charge,  
 [Saya]nd with thame tha wald make mariage, 995  
 . . . to haif thair dochteris to thair wyuis,  
 [Leva]nd with thame for terme of all thair lyuis,  
 [And ta]k thair pairt aganis ony vther.  
 . . . . .

Col. 2. [HOW THE] PECHTIS AT [THAIR] CUMING MAID  
MARRIAGE [WITH THE] SCOTTIS.

[Quhen thi]s desyre wes to the Scottis laid,  
 . . . . . leuch amang thame selfis and said, 1000  
 . . . . . it war dishonor and grit schame  
 [To gif] oure barnis in mariage to thame  
 [S]yne knawis nocht of thair genelogie,  
 Thevis, revaris, or leill men gif tha be.  
 Also thai said, gif thai richt vnderstude, 1005  
 Tha come fra hame bot for rycht litill gude.  
 Than spak ane man wes wysar nor the laif,  
 "Ceis now," he said, "heir ze do bot raif.  
 "Sen tha for freindschip hes send to ws hidder,  
 "Thingis to cum now lat ws weill considder; 1010  
 "Rycht weill I wait, as wyss men he[s] me tald,  
 "Brytis till ws ar enimmies of ald;  
 "Be tha and Britis baith intill ane band,  
 "Tha ma richt lichtlie gar ws leue this land.  
 "Forsaik thame nocht that hes send to ws hither, 1015  
 "For weill I wait, be we and tha togidder,  
 "In ony tyme, other in pece or weir,  
 "Britis till ws ma do bot litill deir.  
 "Also I knaw Britis full blyth wald be,  
 "Of sic freindschip and thair affinitie; 1020  
 "Sicylke wald gif thame of ther guidis rycht  
 large  
 "With thair barnis for to mak mariage.  
 "And be that done, doutles withoutin les,  
 "Than we and tha sall sit in rest and peice."  
 All that wes thair thoct this counsall wes gude; 1025  
 But contraply togidder did conclude  
 That thay sall haif thair barnis to thair wyuis,  
 Till obleis thame for terme of all thair lyuis,  
 To tak thair part ay, bayth be se and land,  
 The messinger<sup>1</sup> hes tane that vpon hand: 1030

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *messingeris*.

Hame at he zeid with his deliuerance,  
 And schew the suith with all the circumstance.  
 Tha war rycht blyth fra tyme that tha hard tell  
 Thay suld get wyuis dalie with thame to duell;  
 Syne buskit thame rycht sone on the best wyss, 1035  
 Makand thame garmentis of ane gudlie gyss;  
 Sone efter that within ane litill quhile  
 Come to the Scottis, for tha war in Argyle.  
 Quha had been thair that da for till haif sene  
 Sic freindfull meitting as wes thame betuene; 1040  
 The zyoung virgeins with blenkis amorus,  
 To luke on thame was so delicious;  
 The Pechtis als vpone the tother part,  
 Jocund tha war than with ane joyfull hart;  
 Thair plesand prent, and eik thair tender age, 1045  
 Kendlit in thame the lufe of hete rage.  
 Than euerie man hes chosin him ane maik,  
 Wes none of thame that tyme for till forsaik;  
 With braid seillis than haif tha maid the bandis,  
 Confermand thame with halding vp of handis, 1050  
 Ilkane till other to be leill and trew,  
 And neur to fail for ald feid or for new.  
 Syne sikkerlic wes sworne on euerilk syde,  
 In pece and weir all in ane will to byde.  
 Quhen this wes done, syne on the auchtane da, 1055  
 Tha and thair wyvis tuke leue to pas thair wa,  
 And efter that thai leuit in greit confort  
 In hunting, halking, and in pla and sport;  
 At meit and drink, in sporting and greit pla,  
 In pece and rest, quhill efter on ane da, 1060

Lib. 1, f. 5.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THAT THE BRITIS PUT DISCORD BETUIX THE  
 SCOTTIS AND THE PECHITIS WITH ANE SUBTILL  
 WYLE.

The belleall Britis full of melancolie,  
 With vipers venum and odious invie,  
 With greit dissait assalit hes ane cast  
 To brek that band the quhilik wes bund so fast.

Ane king thai had wes callit Coilus, 1065  
 Doggit and dour, mad and malicious,  
 Quhilk with the Pechtis maid ane quiet tryst  
 To brek that band with tressone did thame tyst;  
 And so thai did, as ze sall efter heir  
 Of thair counsall at lenth the hail maneir. 1070

AS THE KING OF BRITIS CALLIT COILUS CAUSIT  
 THE PECHTIS BE ANE SUBTILL TRANE TO BREK  
 THE BAND THAT THA HAD MAID WITH THE  
 SCOTTIS.

This Coilus, that wes full of dissait,  
 With goldin toung and lippis laureat,  
 In presens thair of mony nobill man  
 His oresoun on this wayis he began.  
 " O ze Pechtis, of blude imperiall, 1075  
 " Clene but corruptioun, and so honest with all;  
 " We mervell mekill how ze wnderstude,  
 " Quhen that ze mixit with sa vyle ane blude,  
 " As with zond Scottis sa full of vilitie,  
 " But faith or fame, honour or honestie; 1080  
 " The laikast leid in all the world I ken,  
 " Withoutin faith to Godis or to men;  
 " Plesure, or plentie, or welfair, haif tha nane,  
 " Bot hunger and cald, with mony waistid wane.  
 " Ze ar degenerat in zour mariage far; 1085  
 " Mair of zour band, and that I think weill war,  
 " To oblis zow to thame and wait nocht how  
 " Onworthy other till mak service to zow.  
 " I haif pietie of zour ryall estait  
 " With thair vylenes to be so maculat, 1090  
 " Quhilk in this world wer euir maist odeous.  
 " Gif our thair band and confidder with ws;  
 " With ws is honour, with ws is greit renoun,  
 " Plesur and plentie in euerilk tour and toun;  
 " Riches and rest, mycht and magnificence, 1095  
 " Wisdome and wit, perfite intelligence,



" For to decerne betuix the g[ude and ill],  
 " Weilfair and welth we haif all tyme at will ;  
 " And, plesit zow with ws to maik ane band,  
 " All that we haif salbe at zour command. 1100  
 " Cheis zow," he said, "for I can say no mair,  
 " With ws or thame quhilk at ze will repair."  
 Quhen that the Pechtis hard thame speik so kynd,  
 The perelus poyssoun enterit in thair mynd  
 Of the ambitioun and of the warldlie gloir, 1105  
 Reddie to brek the band tha maid befor:  
 Quhilk wer betrasit with ane subtill trane ;  
 Oftymes fair hechtis makis fuillis fane.  
 Ardent desyre of gold, riches and land,  
 Hes gart thame mak with the Britis ane band, 1110  
 And fyle thair fayth, and for to be mensworne,  
 And brek the band the quhilk tha maid beforne.  
 Rycht mony wyle syne seikand in thair heid,  
 With Scottis men how tha sall fall at feid,  
 That thai mycht caus that band for to be brokin, 1115  
 And sindrie syis amang thame this wes spokin ;  
 Syne to thair purpois that they mycht applie,  
 Tha gart proclame and mak ane oppin crie,  
 That na Scottis sal cum as tha wer [wont],  
 Within thair boundis for to halk and hunt. 1120  
 Thairof the Scottis greit ferlie tha th[ocht] ;  
 For all thair bost zit tha forbuir it nocht  
 To hunt and halk siclyk as of befoir.  
 The Pechtis than, with mekill bost and schoir,  
 Hes thame offendit baith in word and deid, 1125  
 Quhill at the last evin to the werst it zeid ;  
 Greit slauchter oftymes wes maid yair,  
 With thift and reif, and mekill oppin weir.  
 Fra fyre, and blude, and spulze spair[it nocht],  
 Quhill the bordour wer till confusioun brocht. 1130  
 This beand done, into that samin quhile  
 The Scottis all convenit in Argyle ;  
 At thar meitting wes mony nobill man,  
 And speciallie the heid of eueirilk clan,

To find ane way of Pechtis to be wrok 1135  
 Of thair injure and band that tha had [brok].  
 Sum bad dissimull quhill tha saw thair [tyme],  
 And sum agane without ressonne or [ryme],  
 Tha war so bald tha mycht nocht byde the [bost],  
 Bot gaif counsall to gather ane greit ost, 1140  
 And thame persew bayth with fyre and [blude];  
 The laif thoct all that that counsall w[es] gude.  
 Than spak ane man of greit authoritie,  
 The wysest man him semit weill to be,  
 "Oftymes," he said, "it preues weill to [reid], 1145  
 "That our greit haist cumis hulie [speid].  
 "Be weill aduisit quhat ze tak [in hand],  
 "Will ze consider and ze ma vnderstand  
 "We ar our . . . . . agane  
 "Be . . . . . I ken 1150  
 Lib.1, f.5 b. " . . . . . vaid ather in word or deid,  
 Col. 1. "With oure power we will cum hulie speid.  
 "My counsall is, in all the haist we mai  
 "Send for supple sum till Ybernia.  
 "Sen we and thai ar cum [all] of ane blude, 1155  
 "I traist thai wilbe weill content to dude.  
 "Writ to that king; beseik him, gif he can  
 "In ony part prouide ws to ane man  
 "Of blude royall, gude fame and honour,  
 "To be oure king, oure lorde and governour. 1160  
 "As lang," he said, "as we ar thus diuydit  
 "In sindrie clannis, we can nocht weill be gydit.  
 "Bot weill I wait, had we ane prince or king,  
 "In stait royall<sup>1</sup> amang ws for to ring,  
 "And for to gyde ws bayth in pece and weir, 1165  
 "Britis and Pechtis mycht do ws na deir."  
 Of this counsall than war tha all content;  
 Rycht suddanelie than all with ane assent,  
 Syne haif thai sped, in all haist tha may,  
 Ambassatouris onto Ybernia. 1170

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *royall all*.

HOW THE SCOTTIS SEND IN YRELAND FOR SUPPLE  
AGANE THE PECHTIS AND BRITIS.

Into that land that tyme ther rang ane king,  
 Qubilk Farchart hecht, rycht nobill and conding,  
 Full of fredome and als of nobill fame ;  
 In all land wes notifeit his name.  
 The message come befor the kingis grace 1175  
 With his credens, and schew him all the cace ;  
 This nobill king fra that he vnderstude  
 All his desyre sa honorabill and gude,  
 He wes content, sayand it wes grit rycht  
 In thair mister to help thame and he mycht. 1180  
 Ane sone he had, callit Fergus to name,  
 Worthie and wyss, of greit honour and fame,  
 Honest and heynd, gentill, courtas and frie,  
 Laulie and large, full of humanitie.  
 Strong in ane stour quhen tyme wes till stand ; 1185  
 Bald as ane bair, and big to weild ane brand ;  
 Manlie and wyss, and rycht war into weir ;  
 And of his fais tak wald lytill feir.  
 Farquhart his father him furneist to the se,  
 With men and meit ane rycht greit companie. 1190  
 The marbell stone he send with him alsua,  
 At Symon Brak brocht fra Brigantia.  
 This fatall stone, sic fortune hes ane werd,  
 Qubair it wes brocht in ony land or erd,  
 Into that land Scot ay suld be king ; 1195  
 Of verrie det the Scottis thair suld ring.

AS FERGUS THE SONE OF FERQUHART COME INTO  
SCOTLAND AND BROCHT THE MARBELL STONE.

Then leue tha take a . . . . .  
 With wyfe and bar[ne] . . . . .  
 . . . that . . . . .  
 . . . tha . . . . . 1200

- Col. 2. Quhilk tuke the name, the storie tellis thus,  
 Efter ane man callit Argathelus.  
 Tha set to schoir, and syne passit till land;  
 Mony fair man befor [thame] thair tha fand,  
 Ressaueand him with trew hart tenderlie, 1205  
 And he agane thankit thame courtaslie.  
 Blyth wes the Scottis Fergus quhen tha saw;  
 In him tha thoctt apperit lufe and aw.  
 Blyth and benyng, and manlie als thairwith,  
 Lustie he wes, and large of lym and lith. 1210  
 His forme, his figure, and his countenance,  
 Tha thoctt that tyme rycht guddie till avance.  
 To his palice tha did him than convoy,  
 With laud, honour, reuerence and joy;  
 To make him blyth than haif tha done the best, 1215  
 Tua dayes or thre quhil he had gottin rest.  
 Be he had tane sic recreatiene,  
 The Scottis all war cuming to the toun,  
 Witth capitanis of [all and] sindrie clan;  
 Thair mycht be sene rycht mony lustie man. 1220  
 Quhen tha war sett all with sic circumstance,  
 Among thame all in oppin audiance,  
 This zyoung Fergus, that wes ane nobill man,  
 His oresoun on this wayis he began:  
 " My freindis deir, to zow I mak it knawin, 1225  
 " How zour desyre to my father is schawin;  
 " With sair complaint schawand the maner how,  
 " Of greit injure Pechtis had done to zow,  
 " And thair band so falslie tha had brokin,  
 " Desyrand help of thame for to be wrokin; 1230  
 " In that beleif traistand that we suld dude,  
 " Becaus that we ar cumit all of ane blude.  
 " And we agane the caus hes so considerit,  
 " Becaus the Pechtis wes first with zow confidderit,  
 " That tha ar fals to brek, and wait nocht quhy, 1235  
 " And bund with Britis quhilk hes at zow invie:  
 " We vnderstand, thoctt ze haif gottin the skayth,  
 " The schame and lak redundis till ws bayth;

- " Sen of our blude fra ws ze ar descendit,  
 " Ressone it war by ws ze war defendit, 1240  
 " Efter our mycht na skayth to lat zow tak;  
 " Quha lichleis zow, we think tha do ws lak.  
 " We sall mak threip zit or we [ar] ouirthrowin,  
 " All zour injure we repute as our awin.  
 " Tha hurt the tre that wald offend the fruit; 1245  
 " Ze ar the branchis and we stok and rutt.  
 " And for this caus ze ma rycht weill consider  
 " In zour supple we ar cunit to zow hidder,  
 " To tak zour part quhat euir ze pretend,  
 " Gude or ill, and byde the latter end. 1250  
 " And als I ferlie greitlie of ane thing,  
 " In pace and rest how ze may rax or ring,  
 " Without ane heid, ordour or vnitie,  
 " So lang to leif in ane communitie,  
 " And euerie clan obey onto his lord, 1255  
 " [Quhil]k may be caus of greit strife and discord.  
 " Quhairfoir [I] traist for terme of all oure lyuis, Lib. 1, f. 8.  
 " To leue in peace for thame bayth men and wyuis. Col. 1.  
 " And als I traist all outward weir is gane,  
 " And ennimeis within ws haif we nane, 1260  
 " Quhairfoir as now I ask at zow this thing,  
 " Prouide in tyme for ane to be zour king,  
 " Quhilk is ane man of greit autoritie,  
 " Efter my deid quhen it hapnis to be."  
 Than lord and lord, and bald barroun and knycht, 1265  
 And all the laif with ane loud voce on licht,  
 " Fergus," tha said, "and his successioun,  
 " In heretage sall euer bruke this croun."  
 Syne war all suorne to keip that leill and trew;  
 For moir effect, in greit lettres of grew, 1270  
 Grauit this thing intill ane mekill stane,  
 Weill gilt with gold as it suld neur be gane.  
 Quhen this wes done, than gude Fergus our king,  
 Thocht panelie than, proponit hes this thing;  
 " My counsall is," he said, "[ws] till prouide 1275  
 " In equall pairtis this kinrik to diuide;

- “ Syne euerilk man efter his degrie,  
 “ His stait, conditioun, and his facultie,  
 “ His maner, honour, and his nobill birth;  
 “ Gif him thairefter as ze think him wirth.” 1280  
 Of that desyre content was euerie wicht,  
 Tha thoct it wes rationabill and richt.  
 Than haif tha chosin, and send on euerie hand,  
 Wyiss men to spy and consider the land;  
 Quhilk veseit hes the hie land and the vaill, 1285  
 The mont, the mure, the dounis, and the daill,  
 And equalie proportionat the plane;  
 Till Argateliun syne come hame agane,  
 Syne cavillis kaist for till devyde the land.  
 Than euerilk man with cavill reddie in hand, 1290  
 Bydand his chance into dame Fortonis will,  
 As plesit hir that tyme to gif him till.  
 Of Scoteis blude ane worthie nobill man,  
 Cornath to name the quhilk wes callit than,  
 All fra ane nes ylis far within the se, 1295  
 Quhilk at this tyme is callit Dummisbe,  
 On till ane flude that callit than wes Tayne,  
 Qubair Orknay ylis ylis evin foirgane,  
 Fell till his pairt that tyme, as I hard sa,  
 And efter him we callit it Cornana; 1300  
 That wes the name ane lang tyme as I ges,  
 And now to name it callit is Catnes.  
 The secund cavill, as my author did sa,  
 Fell till ane nobill of Ybernia  
 Come with king Fergus, had consall of his art, 1305  
 Tha thoct him weill among thame worth his part;  
 Lotorth to name that tyme he callit wes,  
 And all the land betuix Tayne and Nes  
 Fell till his part suppois tha had bene ma,  
 And efter him wes callit Lugia. 1310  
 The thrid cavill fell till ane nobill man,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Waroch than,  
 All the land betuix Nes and Spey,  
 Col. 2. Ay for till bruke but contrapleid or pley;

Quhilk efter him hecht Wares I hard sa, 1315  
 And now to name it callit is Murra.  
 Syne Thaalus, quhilk wes ane man of gude,  
 Fell all the land lyand by Speyis flude,  
 And he to name callit it than Tharla,  
 Efter him self, so did my author sa ; 1320  
 Contenand now Strabogy land all through  
 Abune Bochtquhane and Garioch.  
 Martach ane other, than till his pairt fell he  
 Fra Thoala all till the Irland se,  
 In heretage ay till bruke but clame, 1325  
 And he thame callit Merthia to name,  
 Quhilk now contenis mony sindrie land  
 Mar, Badzenoch, Lochquhaber be the sand.  
 Ane nobill man, callit Nouantius,  
 Gat till his part, my storie tellis thus, 1330  
 Fra Ma[r]thia, ay endlang the se syde  
 Till Yrland cost, tha landis braid and wyde,  
 And efter him callit Nouantia ;  
 Kyntyre and Lorne now callit is this da.  
 Syne Atholus, quhilk wes ane nobill man, 1335  
 Borne into Spaine and of the Scottis clan,  
 Into Yrland he come quhen he was zounge,  
 In Scotland with gude Fergus our king,  
 Gat all thir landis within thir landis la,  
 Syne efter him callit Etholia ; 1340  
 And euer sensyne zit than hes the name,  
 For saik of him wes of sa nobill fane.  
 Lelgothe also, quhilk wes ane man of pryde,  
 Fra Argateliu to the watter of Clyde,  
 Gat all tha landis frelie to dispone, 1345  
 Syne efter him wer callit Lelgone ;  
 That now the Lennox, efter Levin that flude,  
 Callit to name quha that rycht vnderstude.  
 Salurth, ane man of greit authoritie,  
 Be cut and cavill than till his part fell he 1350  
 Fra Clyde alhail on to Brigantia,  
 Wes efter him callit Saluria ;

Quhilk is diuidit in thir landis now,  
 In Carrik, Kyle, Cumynghame and Renfrow. 1355  
 Quhen this wes done and all man wes content,  
 This King Fergus, with all thair haill consent,  
 Hes maid the law to gar men leue in peace,  
 To stanche thift and reif, and wrang gar ceis,  
 Remeid for murthure and all sic mischeif,  
 For slauchter heid, and for [to] hang ane theif; 1360  
 For ilk trespas diuisit wes ane pane,  
 So that no falt vnpuneist suld remane.  
 Syne biggit hes ane citie of greit fame,  
 Quhilk Berigone than callit wes to name,  
 In to Lochquhaber law down by the se, 1365  
 With worthie wallis and mony touris be.  
 It stude rycht stark quhair it had strenth aneuche  
 Betuix ane watter and ane hingand heuche;  
 In middis of Scotland for the tyme did stand,  
 Quhilk wes most ewast bayth for Ylis and land. 1370  
 Lib.1, f.8 b. And thair wes ordand for to execute  
 Col. 1. Iustice and law, and pleyis for to mute,  
 Quhair euerilk man suld with solace compeir.  
 And sua thai [did] rycht lang and mony zeir,  
 Quhill that he maid all weir and wrang to ceis; 1375  
 Syne all his dais leuit into peace.

HOW THAT THIS ILK FERGUS PASSIT INTO YRLAND  
 FOR TO MAK CONCORD BETUIX YE KING AND  
 HIS LORDIS; AND HOW HE WAS DROUND BE  
 THE WAY AT ANE CRAIG, CALLIT ZEIT EFTER  
 HIM CRAGFERGUS.

Lang efter this, as ze sall vnderstand,  
 Ambassatouris come furth of Yrland,  
 Schawand till him of mony greit discordis  
 That fallin war betuix the king and lordis, 1380  
 And how it had done thame greit sturt and noy,  
 And wes rycht lyke the kinrik till distroy;



Beseikand him rycht humlie and benyng,  
 As that [he] wes of blude royall ane king,  
 In sic mister to cum and mak remeid, 1385  
 Amang his friendis for till stanche sic feid ;  
 In thair credens also tha schew him till  
 How baith the pairteis referrit thame to his will ;  
 And baith wer sworne at his decreit to byde.  
 This king Fergus gart haistelie prouide 1390  
 Rycht mony galay, and put thame to the se,  
 Wyth men and meit prouidit at plentie ;  
 Syne tuke his leve at bald barroun and knycht,  
 To schipburd went with mony worthy wycht ;  
 Fra Argateliun thair passage that tha maid, 1395  
 Till Yrland syne bownit hes but baid.  
 Wo wes the pepill with him for to depart,  
 With lamentatioun soband fra thair hart ;  
 With murning mude changit wes thair cheir,  
 And how it hapnit efter ze sall heir. 1400  
 To schip tha went, and syne set to the schoir,  
 The wynd blew up the langar ay the moir ;  
 Bayth tow and takill festnit wer all fast,  
 Within schort quhile zit war tha all agast.  
 Fra Eolus so loud he blew his horne 1405  
 On thame all nycht lang or the tother morne,  
 In Yrland cost rycht darffie did thame dryve ;  
 In at ane craig he made thame till arryve.  
 In all that schip chapit nather ald nor zing,  
 Bot perreist all with gude Fergus thair king ; 1410  
 Efter his name, my storie tellis thus,  
 That place seusyne is called Craigfergus.  
 The tuentie zeir and fyve als of his ring,  
 This gude Fergus, of Scotland the first king,  
 Hes tane his leif out this lyfe and gone, 1415  
 Of everie man with grit murning and mone.  
 Worthie he wes quba list of him till reid, Col. 2.  
 And in his tyme did many nobill deid.  
 Peace and policie, riches and renoun,  
 Welth and weifair in castell, tour and toun, 1420

Plesure and plentie ar war in his dais,  
 With law and lawtie, so my author sais.  
 Ouir all Europe his fame did spreid and spring,  
 In Albione for the most famos king,  
 The king of Pechtis, callit wes Camelon, 1425  
 Foundit ane citie wes callit Camelidon,  
 At Carroum mouth, vpon the water of Forth,  
 Wallit about be south and als be north;  
 Quhilk efter wes ane citie of honour,  
 Of wisdome, strenth, of riches and valour, 1430  
 As<sup>1</sup> ze sall heir quha lykis efter luke;  
 Loving to God, heir endis the first buke.

HEIR ENDIS THE FIRST BUKE ; AND BEGYNNIS  
 THE SECUND, MAKAND MENTIOUN OF KING  
 FERGUS SUCCESSIOUN, AND OF MONY SINDRIE  
 STOREIS CONTENIT THAIR INTILL, AS ZE SALL  
 SE AT MOIR LENTHE.

Efter the tyme of king Fergus wes deid,  
 Tua zoung childer he left into his steid;  
 Fergus quhilk wes the eldest bruther, 1435  
 And Maynus to name als hecht the tother;  
 Thocht tha war zoung, zit tha wer farlie fair,  
 His naturall souis and als his lauchfull air.  
 The lordis all that tyme witht ane consent,  
 In Argatellium gart cry ane parliament, 1440  
 Quhair thair convenit mony nobill man,  
 Lord and knyght, and captane of euerie clan;  
 And mony vther richt duchtie and conding,  
 Convenit thair all for to croun thair king.  
 Quhan tha wer sett, and sentit euerilk man, 1445  
 Ane agit lord amang thame thus began:  
 " Lordis," he said, " I traist rycht weill ze know,  
 " With king Fergus first as ze maid the law,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Or.*

- " That he and his suld alwayes bruk this croun,  
 " Ay lineallie discending fra him doun; 1450  
 " Now is he deid, as ze weill consider,  
 " And for that caus we ar all cuming hidder  
 " To croun his sone, quhilk wes of sic honour,  
 " Till be our king, our prince and governour,  
 " That we may leif into gude pece and rest; 1455  
 " Saif better counsall, for me I hald that best."  
 Quhen he had said, vpstude ane vther man,  
 Among thame all the wysast he wes than.  
 Callit he wes Frathaus I hard sa,  
 And lord that tyme [wes] of Brigantia. 1460  
 " Lordis," he said, " I traist ze haif ane feill,  
 " He suld be wyss suld gyde the commoun weill.  
 " It feiris nocht for barne, nor zit for page;  
 " Ane king sould be of grit wisdom and age,  
 " That hes the kinrik haill into his cuir; 1465 Lib. 2, f. 1.  
 " And of this thing sicker I am and suir, Col. 1.  
 " Tak the ane barne this tyme to be zour king,  
 " It sall zow hurt efter in mony thing.  
 " Be weill aduisit, and traist that this is trew,  
 " Do nocht this da the morne that ze will rew:" 1470  
 Quhen he had said, sat doun and held him still.  
 The tother ansuerit wit ane eger will:  
 " As ze haif said, I think it sould sa be  
 " Sa at this [tyme] and we nicht all be frie  
 " Of oure conditioun, oblissing and aith, 1475  
 " The quhilk to brek we suld be verra laith,  
 " That we maid first be gude Fergus our king,  
 " That he and his eternallie suld ring  
 " In heretage but contrapley or pleid.  
 " How haif we now so sone tane in our heid 1480  
 " To fyle our faith, and for to be mensworne?  
 " And we do sua I hald ws all forlorne,  
 " Vnstedfast men without stabilitie,  
 " But faith or fame, traist or tranquillitie,  
 " Reddie to rave at ilk mannis requeist; 1485  
 " Tha ar no better nor ane brutall beist.

" Also for me I hald it but ane scorne  
 " To sueir to da the thing we brek the morne ;  
 " And mairattour, I mervell of ane thing,  
 " Quhair is the kyndnes we suld haif to our king ? 1490  
 " Considering he wes so honorabill,  
 " So kynd till ws, so trew, so proffittable,  
 " That fra his freindis so far come ws till defend,  
 " Into ane cuntrie quhair he wes nocht kend,  
 " And pat his bodie oft syis in sic perrell, 1495  
 " And speirit neuir the caus nor zit the querrell.  
 " He leit ws nocht with no leid be ouirthrawin,  
 " Maid ws to leve ay fre within oure awin ;  
 " The nobill Britis quhilk wer of sic valour,  
 " For all thair pryde rycht law he gart thame lowr ; 1500  
 " Vnder his feit he gart thame lurk full law,  
 " In all his tyme thai stude of him sic aw.  
 " Als in his dayis flour wes of chevalrie,  
 " In Albeone the nobillest king wes he.  
 " For ws richt oft he stude in mony stour, 1505  
 " And wan till ws greit riches and honour,  
 " And sparit nocht for ws his blude to bleid ;  
 " And now we think we quit him weill his meid.  
 " Do we now so, that dar I vndertak,  
 " Will neuer man trow condition that ze mak." 1510  
 Quhen this wes said, befoir thame all in plane,  
 The tother rais and ansuer maid agane :  
 " My lord," he said, " forsuith ze sa rycht weill ;  
 " Zit neuirtheles I traist ze haif ane feill,  
 " Ane barne withoutin ressonne, wit, or skill, 1515  
 " For till decerne betuix the gude and ill ;  
 " Quhilk hes his wit in vther mennis heid,  
 " Is nocht ganand ane kinrik for to leid ;  
 " Vnabill als to execute the law,  
 " For of ane barne rycht few men will stand aw. 1520  
 " But aw and dreid ane land can nocht be gydit,  
 Col. 2. " For in the self it wilbe sone diuidit ;  
 " Diuisioun als is mother of all mischeif,  
 " And forthermoir till mony commoun theif.

- “ Quhat is ane barne bot like ane brutall beist, 1525  
 “ And reddie ay to raif at ilk requeist  
 “ Onto quhat purposis thai will him apply?  
 “ Quhateucr men ask ane barne can nocht deny.  
 “ And mairattour, I wait this is no leis,  
 “ And it war sua, that euerilk man suld preis 1530  
 “ To haif the king into his gouernance;  
 “ Qubilk wald be caus sone efterwart perchance  
 “ The commoun weill to fruster and to fail,  
 “ And euerie man se for his awin avail.  
 “ And he that war maist<sup>1</sup> inwart with the king, 1535  
 “ At his plesour wald gouerne euerilk thing,  
 “ Rewardis tak, and justice dalie sell,  
 “ This wilbe trew, traist weill ze heir me tell;  
 “ And ilk seruand he hes, be the leist knaif,  
 “ Will think him self na fallow to the laif; 1540  
 “ Bot roundand ay into the kingis eir,  
 “ Makand greit menis to wyn wrangus geir,  
 “ And caus the king to mak retrugressioun  
 “ Of leill mennis land and riche men be remi[ssioun];  
 “ And he that is ane traitour or ane theif, 1545  
 “ Ane rank revar reddie till all mischeif,  
 “ Cumis till court and giffis thame reward,  
 “ He wilbe set full heiche abone the laird.  
 “ And thocht thair cum ane nobill or ane lord,  
 “ Vntill the court his erand till record, 1550  
 “ Tha lat him nocht get presens of the king,  
 “ Without sum bud till ane of thame he bring;  
 “ And in his hand his heid that he man hald,  
 “ And bek till him thocht he wer neur so bald,  
 “ And call him Schir, suppois he be ane knaif, 1555  
 “ And hecht him als all thing that he wald haif;  
 “ Thus for ane loun than lichlyit is ane lord.  
 “ It wilbe caus of malice and discord,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *nocht*.

- “ Quhen nobill blude haldis nocht than thair rycht;  
 “ And ilk court knaif maid fallow till ane knyght. 1560  
 “ Better it wer be but ane prince or king,  
 “ Nor in ane regioun lang suffer sic thing,  
 “ To se the pepill soir puneist wit oppressioun,  
 “ But dome or law, parliament or sessioun,  
 “ Throw auerice with sic horribill abusiou, 1565  
 “ The quhilk will bring ane kinrik to confusioun.  
 “ Ane king suld be of honor, full of aw,  
 “ Walkryfe and wyss, expert into the law;  
 “ Richt full of fredome and of fortitude;  
 “ Honorabill, equale bayth to ill and gude, 1570  
 “ Curtas and kynd, constant with discretioun,  
 “ Reward gude work, and puneiss for oppressioun;  
 “ Gracious and gude, but gredines of geir,  
 “ Plesand in pece, and awfull into weir.  
 “ Sic propirteis pertenis to ane king, 1575  
 “ Quhilk in ane barne rycht semdell ze se ring.  
 Lib. 2, f. 9 b. “ I can nocht how that [sikkin] ane but leis  
 Col. 1. “ Can be ane king outhir in weir or peace.  
 “ Zit sall I find ane way to pleis ws baith,  
 “ To keip our band and do no man greit skaith, 1580  
 “ Kyndnes and treuth for to keip to oure king,  
 “ And Fergus hous wnhurt in ony thing.

HOW THAT THE LAW WAS MAID IN CHESING OF  
 THAIR KING, THAT THE MAIST ABILL MAN OF  
 THE KINGIS HOUS SOULD BE CROWNIT AND  
 RING FOR HIS TYME, GIF THE KINGIS SONE  
 EFTER HIS DEATH WAR NOCHT OF AGE; AND  
 EFTER HIS DEITH THE KINGIS SONE TO SUC-  
 CEID.

- “ Tak Feretar, the bruther of gude Fergus,  
 “ The abillest man this tyme of all his hous,  
 “ Bayth wyiss, worthie, douchtie and condng, 1585  
 “ And for his tyme croun him to be oure king.

“ And Fergus sonnys, quilk ar of tender age,  
 “ Nureis thame weill, and spair nocht for no wage ;  
 “ Put thame in cuir of wyiss [and] awfull men  
 “ Quhilk knowledge hes all cunnyng thame to 1590  
     ken,  
 “ And wisdome leir, for all maner of thing,  
 “ And speciallie perteyning to ane king ;  
 “ Sua till remane quhill passit be [the] rage  
 “ Of rakles youth, and cum till lauchtfull age.  
 “ Efter the deith syne of this Feretar, 1595  
 “ Tak Ferlegus, the lauchtfull sone and air  
 “ Of gude Fergus, and croun him to be king ;  
 “ Sua Fergus hous is hurt into nathing.  
 “ My counsall is to institute sic law,  
 “ For greit perrell that efter may befaw ; 1600  
 “ Quhen euerilk king, the quhilk hes bot ane child,  
 “ Efter his deith but age or perfite eild,  
 “ That is unabill for till be ane king,  
 “ Without wisdome to reull or gyde ane ring,  
 “ Put him in cuir ay quhill he is ane page, 1605  
 “ Of rycht wyss men quhill that he cum till age ;  
 “ Syne of that hous to tak the most conding,  
 “ And for his tyme croun him for to be king ;  
 “ And syne efter that governour be deid,  
 “ The kingis sone to ring into his steid ; 1610  
 “ Sua sall we haif one man ay to our king,  
 “ And Fergus hous vnhurt in ony thing.”  
 Quhen this wes said in presence of thame aw,  
 And euerie man assentit to that saw ;  
 Commendand him than of his prudens, 1615  
 His wit, his wisdome, and his eloquence,  
 His afald will, his counsall with gude zeill,  
 He schew that tyme thair for the commoun weill ;  
 Than thai decretit all into ane will  
 To fortifie, and also to fulfill 1620  
 That law he maid in crowning of our king,  
 Eternallie amang [thame] for to ring.





- “ Also to þow I mak it cleirlye kend, 1655  
 “ That I preis nocht in purpose to pretend  
 “ To hurt the air in ony kynd of thing,  
 “ As for my tyme, thocht I be chosin king.”  
 Quhen he had his orisone said and endit,  
 Greitlie he wes amang thame all commendit 1660  
 Of his wyiss saying and his sapience,  
 His wisdome, honour, and his eloquence.  
 With haill consent of thame wes thair ilkane,  
 Tha set him down vpoun the marbell stane ;  
 With diademe, rob royall, and with ring, 1665  
 And croun of gold, thair wes he crownit king.  
 Quhen this wes done, and all man wes content,  
 With haill devyiss of all the parliament,  
 King Fergus sonnys tha haif gart put in cuir  
 Of wyiss ald men that sicker wer and suir, 1670  
 Thame for till gyde and teiche in fill all thing,  
 That neidfull war to ony prince or king,  
 And diuerss langage and lawis for to leir.  
 And so thai did richt lang and mony zeir ;  
 The kingis barnis, ay quhen thai war zyoung, 1675  
 Tha taucht to speik with diuerss [kynd of] toung, Lib. 2, f.10.  
 And kennis lair quhill thai cum till age, Col. 1.  
 And sparit nocht for ony cost or wage.  
 Sone efter this, as ze sall vnderstand,  
 King Feretar renewit hes the band 1680  
 With the Pechtis befor that Fergus maid.  
 For mair effect with seillis round and braid,  
 Tha oblist war for till obserue and keip  
 All thing wes maid with aithis sworne rycht deip.  
 Quhen this wes done, and all man wes content, 1685  
 Tha tuke ther leif, syne ilk man hame thai went.  
 King Ferretar tuke na rest day nor nycht,  
 Quhen ocht zeid wrang quhill all wes put to rycht.  
 Curtas he wes, and tuke on him greit cuir,  
 Equall also baith to the riche and puir. 1690

Greit luck and blythness in his tyme abundit,  
 Welth and weifair, and greit riches redundant;  
 Resson and law, justice and equitie;  
 In all his tyme ane nobill prince wes he.

HOW FERLIGUS, THE ELDEST SONE OF KING  
 FERGUS, BE EUILL COUNSALL OF THAME THAT  
 HAD HIM IN KEIPING, DESYRIT THE CROUN FRA  
 HIS EME, AND OF THE WYSS ANSUER AGANE  
 OF THE KING FERETAR.

The eldest bruther wes callit Ferlegus, 1695  
 That sone and air wes till king Fergus,  
 Throw ill counsall consaut in his heid  
 Dissaitfullie to put the king to deid.  
 Thocht he was zoung, zit had he greit desyre  
 To riches, honour, and to hie impyre, 1700  
 Throw thair counsall that had him than in cuir.  
 Tha thocht his dait wes our lang to indure;  
 And he war deid richt weil thai knew that thing,  
 That Ferlegus suld efter him be king.  
 Amang thame than thair wes ane man of gude, 1705  
 And all the tressoun quhen [he] vnderstude,  
 Vpoun ane tyme he passit to the king,  
 And secretlie he schew him all this thing.  
 This nobill king, the caus quhen that he knew,  
 Richt secret wes and till no man it schew; 1710  
 Bot quietlie in till his mynd it buir,  
 And of him self he tuke the better cuir,  
 And secret keiparis ordand for his corss,  
 Him till defend fra violence and force.  
 The tother part thair purpois did persew, 1715  
 And faillit ay; and than quhen that tha knew  
 That thai war frustrat, and sa oft did faill,  
 Ane vther way tha schupe him to assaill.  
 This Ferlegus thai gart pass to the king,  
 And askit at him but respect till resing, 1720

Kinrik and croun all in his handis 3eild,  
 Becaus that tyme he wes of lauchtful eild,  
 Sayand it wes his awin of heretage,  
 Giffin till him quhen he wes within aige,  
 Nocht as ane king, bot for till keip ane quhile. 1725  
 With that the king did sobirlie than smyle ; Col. 2.  
 With lauchand luke, and with ane lustie cheir,  
 He said till him, as I sall say 3ow heir :  
 " Dear friend," said he, " quhome I lufe with my hart,  
 " Traist weill also that I sall do my part 1730  
 " To my bruther gude Fergus that wes king,  
 " Till all his hous and till his hail offspring ;  
 " And ay sall do quhill my tyme may induir.  
 " It wes for 3ow on me I take the cuir,  
 " Quhen 3e war 3oung to help 3ow in 3our rycht, 1735  
 " And ay sensyne I haif done that I nicht  
 " To keip the croun wes gevin to my bruther,  
 " That it war nocht translatit till ane vther ;  
 " And sen this croun in to the parliament,  
 " Wes gevin me with all thair hail consent, 1740  
 " In parliament I man agane resing,  
 " At thair command that tyme that maid me king.  
 " Thus ordourlie bot gif sic thing be wroucht  
 " With hail consent, traist weill it vaillis nocht."  
 Quhen this wes said, this 3oung man Ferlegus 1745  
 Held him content, and syne said till him thus :  
 " I thank 3ow, sir, thair is no moir to sa."  
 Then take his leue, syne passit hame his wa,  
 He and his folk togidder all in feir ;  
 And how it hapnit efter 3e sall heir. 1750

HOW THE KING AT BERIGONE WALD HAIF RE-  
 SINGIT THE CROUN TO FERLIGUS, AND HOW  
 THE LORDIS THAIROF WAR RICHT DISPLESIT.

The da wes enning the parliament sould hald  
 In Berigone, quhair mony berne full bald

- Conventit thair befor this crownit king,  
 For till devyiss for mony special thing.  
 Quhen tha wer gatherit on ane gudlie gyss, 1755  
 This nobill king, that worthie wes and wyss,  
 Amang thame all bayth sword, sceptour and croun,  
 In parliament befor thame hes laid down.  
 This Ferligus als, as I vnderstand,  
 Besyde himself he sat on the rycht hand; 1760  
 Syne gaif command to keip silence and ceis,  
 Till heir him sa he gart thame cry o peis.  
 Than euerilk man but ony noy drew neir,  
 And how he said, tak tent and ze sall heir.  
 " Lordis, ye knaw, into plane parliament 1765  
 " This croun I gat with all your hail consent,  
 " Befor you all that I haif heir laid down;  
 " Baith sword and sceptour, regimen and croun;  
 " Of your giftis greit goddis you forzeild.  
 " And now I am assaillit so with eild, 1770  
 " Throw febilnes and grit infirmitie,  
 " Vnabill I am till sic autoritie.  
 " My wit growis waik, my curage dull and blunt,  
 " Nothing expert<sup>1</sup> befor that I wes wont:  
 " Travell befor quhilk did me greitlie pleis, 1775  
 " Now is but sturt with pane and greit vneis.  
 Lib.2,f.10b. " The thing for me this tyme that I think best,  
 Col. 1. " In all this warld is<sup>2</sup> quietnes and rest.  
 " My counsall is, sen ze man haif ane vther,  
 " Tak Ferlegus that sone is to my bruther. 1780  
 " Sen that he hes the hail rycht to your croun,  
 " Mak him your king quhilk is of sic renoun;  
 " For weill I wait him richt convenient,  
 " Plesand, perfite, politik and prudent.  
 " And sen he is now at this tyme most abill, 1785  
 " Worthy and wyss, honest and honorabill,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *expect.*<sup>2</sup> In MS. *in.*

“ Liberall and leill, richt gentill and benyng,  
 “ My counsall is now for to mak him king.”  
 This beand said into plane parliament,  
 With eger will all intill ane intent, 1790  
 And scharpe wordis, my storie tellis thus,  
 Sair blamit hes this zyoung man Ferlegus.  
 Hardie he wes, thai said, till tak on hand  
 To lichtlie thame, or zit thair law ganestand,  
 Quhilk thai had maid into plane parliament; 1795  
 Quhairfoir tha said that he sould soir repent.  
 No moir at him as than [thai] wald inquirye,  
 For weill tha wist all come of his desyre.  
 This Ferlegus, quhilk than excuiss had nane,  
 Amang thame all he wes so will of wane, 1800  
 Thair talk that tyme he thocht so vndiscreit,  
 For verrie wo that he begouth to weip.  
 Ane of his men, the quhilk had all the wyte,  
 Quhen he saw that he had rycht greit dispyte;  
 Mouit with malice and melancolie, 1805  
 This Ferlegus than hes he drawin by,  
 And bad him thair no langar till remane,  
 Bot in all haist to speid him hame agane,  
 And tak his tyme syne efter as he mycht.  
 The lordis than persauit hes that slicht, 1810  
 And handis laid vpoun zyoung Ferlegus,  
 And his counsall that bald wer and bustus,  
 Syne hes thame bund rycht sicker fit and hand;  
 No strenth thai had that tyme for to ganestand.  
 Ane of his men that knew the counsall all, 1815  
 Befoir the king on kneis doun did fall,  
 And schew him all the tressone that wes wrocht,  
 Traistand thairwith his lyfe for till haif bocht;  
 And how his maister, Ferlegus the zing,  
 By tressone thocht for to haif slane the king; 1820  
 And quha it wes the tressone first began,  
 Thair word be word he schew of euerie man.  
 And quhen the pepill hard him tell in plane,  
 How that he thocht the king for till haif slane,

	Sic rancour raiss fra the rutis of thair hart,	1825
	That everilk man decreitit for his pairt,	
	That Ferlegus thairfoir suld want the heid,	
	And all the laif hangit quhill thair war deid.	
	And had nocht bene for lufe of gude Fergus,	
	Quhilk father wes to this ilk Ferligus,	1830
	He had bene slane amang thame that same da,	
	For ocht the king nicht other do or sa.	
	Throw counsall and requeist of the king,	
	The lordis all consentit to that thing,	
Col. 2.	That Ferlegus that tyme sould be maid fre	1835
	Of all that cryme and als forgiffin be,	
	And put in keiping of discretar men,	
	Quhilk knowlege had him [for] to teche and ken.	
	The tratouris all syne that the tressoun wrocht,	
	Without dome in all the haist tha mocht,	1840
	Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to die ;	
	Sua endit thair all thair greit tratorie.	
	This beand done, the parliament tuke end,	
	And everie man is till his hame wend.	
	King Feretar, as he wes wont befoir,	1845
	Greit cuir he tuke the langar ay the moir,	
	Keipand alway his kinrik in gude rest,	
	With lufe and lautie quhill his tyme mycht lest.	
	Riches and rest in all his dayis rang ;	
	For in his tyme he suffer nicht na wrang,	1850

HOW FERETHARUS WAS SLANE ON THE NYCHT ;  
QUHAIROF FERLEGUS WAS SUSPECT AND FLED.

	Tak tent and heir syne how the cace befell ;	
	Sone efter this now that ze heir me tell,	
	King Feretar wes fund vpoun ane nycht,	
	Deid in hes bed wnwist of any wicht,	
	Rycht quyetlie quhair he lay him alane.	1855
	Amang thame all that tyme thair wes nocht ane	
	Culd tell the caus perfiltie of his deid,	
	Ȝit Ferlegus thairof buir all the feid ;	

For all the pepill planelie with dispyte  
 On Ferlegus thairof laid all the wyte ; 1860  
 Makand greit duill for the deid of thair king,  
 For in his lyfe tha luifit him attour all thing ;  
 So wes he louit for liberalitie,  
 His manheid, meiknes and humanitie.  
 Ane saxtene zeir amang thame he did ring, 1865  
 Efter the day that he wes crownit king.  
 Quhen Ferlegus knew thai held him suspect,  
 To saue his lyfe he fled in greit effect  
 Amang the Britis, quhair he baid all his dayis  
 Rycht wrachitlie, as that my author sayis. 1870  
 His wrachit lyfe syne maid ane wrachit end,  
 For sua wald God, as all the warld kend.

MAYNUS THE SONE OF FERGUS, EFTER THE DEITH  
 OF HIS EME FERETHARUS AND THE FLEING  
 OF HIS BRUTHER FERLEGUS, WAS CROWNIT IN  
 BERIGONE.

The pepill all that tyme with ane assent,  
 At Berigone into plane parliament,  
 The zoungest sone of Fergus to be king 1875  
 Crownit thai haif thair Maynus the zing.  
 Thocht he wes zounge that tyme, he wes no page,  
 For twentie zeir and foure he wes of age ;  
 Waldin and wicht, and wyss aneuch thairwith,  
 Liberall and large, lustie of lim and lyth. 1880  
 Richt just he wes and full of gentres,  
 Amiabill, awfoll, worthie, wicht and wyss. Lib. 2, f. 11.  
 The king of Pechtis, that callit wes Strynus, Col. 1.  
 Hes till him send, the storie tellis thus,  
 For till renew the band wes maid befor ; 1885  
 And sua thai did with greit louying and gloir.  
 The ambaxat, quhilk wes of nobill fame,  
 With greit reward tuke leve and passit hame.

HOW THAT MAMMITRIE WAS FIRST INSTITUTE IN  
SCOTLAND, AND PROPHANE PLACES ORDANIT  
THAIRFOIR.

The king considerand that all thing was wrocht,  
Be goddis help war till perfectioun brocht, 1890  
And in this warld thair wes nothing availl,  
Without thair help bot it behuuit fail.  
Quhairfoir he has gart suddanelie devyiss  
Prophane places for till mak sacrifice,  
Vpoun the feild rycht far fra any toun, 1895  
Efter the law of Egipt that regioun:  
Greit cragis of quhin thai take, as I consider,  
Syne in ane cirkill set thame all togidder,  
And in the south the grittest stone thai set,  
Thairon to do thair sacrifice and dett 1900  
On to thair goddis with greit reuerence;  
Sic was the vse than of thair observance.  
In sindrie pairtis thir places dois remane;  
Quha likis zit to luke I bid [thame] lane.  
Of Diana, ane ymage fair and bricht, 1905  
[He] hes gart mak, syne set it vpoun hicht,  
To honour hir for thair goddis and quene  
Of woddis wyld and hunting als betuene.  
Of sone and mone tua ymages als hes maid,  
Of birneist gold, that war baith bricht and braid; 1910  
Syne in the tempill set thame vp on hicht,  
To sacrifice ilk da into thair sicht.  
Preistis to pray that tyme he hes gart mak  
Into the tempill and offerand for to tak,  
Thame till sustene, of all wes hither brocht; 1915  
Is none levand that will serue God for nocht.  
In thair langage the maner for till pray  
Till thair goddis he ordanit hes alsua,  
Efter the fassoun in buikis thai fand,  
Wes lang befor brocht out of Egipt land. 1920



Quhat suld I moir remane heir in this thing?  
 In Albeoun wes nocht ane better king,  
 In all his dayis quhill that tha mycht lest;  
 For all his tyme he had baith pece and rest.  
 And zeiris nyne aboue tuentie he rang, 1925  
 Syne tuke his leif quhen he had rung so lang.

DORNADILLA THE SONE OF MAYNUS, EFTER THE  
 DECEIS OF HIS FATHER WES CROWNIT TO BE  
 KING.

Efter the tyme that Maynus wes deid,  
 Than Dornadill succedit in his steid;  
 His eldest sone, and als of lauchfull age,  
 Baith wyss and war, and constant with curage. 1930  
 Quhilk with the Pechtis also maid gude pece, Col. 2.  
 And with the Britis also, or he wald ceis.  
 Amang the Britis Elgone that tyme did ring,  
 And Thaales also of Pechtis wes king.  
 This Dornadill hes maid all weir to ceis, 1935  
 For in his tyme he louit nocht bot pece.  
 Peace and pastance, plentie and all plesour,  
 In all his tyme he had with greit honour.  
 The maist pairt than of his plesour it stude  
 In till hunting, he thoct the game sua gude; 1940  
 He ordand als that euerie man of micht  
 Tua houndis haue, and rache that culd rin rycht,  
 To the greit game quhen he thoct tyme till go,  
 For his plesour and thair proffeit also.  
 Als gaue command with ane generall indyte, 1945  
 As my authour dois now cleirlye write,  
 Quhen ane jolie persault wes ane beist,  
 Greit or small, or all way at the leist,  
 Scho suld be keipit closlie vnder cuir  
 Baith fra hir sone and hir progenitour; 1950  
 And scho war lynit with ony of that birth,  
 Sic hundis thai said for hunting ar na worth,

For sic sibnes and also sic incest  
 For till abhor, him thoct that that wes best.  
 And gif ane man that rynis in the faid 1955  
 War lamit, hurt, or zit mankit be maid,  
 Quhairthrow he war vnabill for till hunt,  
 To ryn or gang befoir as he war wont,  
 Or fra all laubour gif that he war lost,  
 To be sustenit of the commoun cost, 1960  
 And haif his neidis, in all thing moir and les,  
 In suffiencie withoutin distres.  
 Quhat euer he war that put ane wolf to deid,  
 That he sould haif, but ony pley or pleid,  
 For his reward that tyme to haif ane kow, 1965  
 Quhair he thoct best out of the kingis bow.  
 And als thairwith he maid the hunting law  
 To this effect, as I sall to zow schaw,  
 That nothing sould but law be at the leist ;  
 Quhat hound he wes that ledrit first ane beist, 1970  
 Sua to the deid that he did with him byde,  
 For his rewarde that he sould haif his hyde.  
 He that bait neist and baid quhill he wes slane,  
 Bayth heid and hornis to his part suld remane.  
 And gif it hapnis sic thing to be in dout, 1975  
 To cheis ane syis than of the best about ;  
 Be Diana thair goddis gar thame sweir,  
 To keip the law and leill witnes to beir,  
 And to declair the veritie that tyde,  
 How euir tha said that tha decretit to byde. 1980  
 The inwart breidis als of the beist but delt <sup>1</sup>  
 Amang the houndis, bayth leuer, lichtis and melt :  
 Of that hunting the maister man a[lone],  
 At his plesour the haill beist to dispone.  
 Syne efter syne with wyss discreit mennis sawis, 1985  
 In greit tabillis he hes gart writ thir lawis,

Lib.2,f.11b.  
 Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *debt*.

Confirmand wes to the law maid beforne  
 By king Fergus richt lang or he wes borne.  
 For ilk transgressioun ordand hes remeid,  
 For thift and reif, and for oppressioun deid ; 1990  
 For sic transgres he thocht na les mycht gane,  
 For les trespas he ordaned hes les pane.  
 And thame to keip deliuerit hes he than,  
 To ane discreit and circumspect trew man,  
 Quhilk callit wes interpretour of law, 1995  
 In jugement ay for to reid and schaw,  
 Quhen ony wes condampnit for his deid,  
 In jugement that he sould planelie reid,  
 And opinlie befor thame all to schaw  
 For his recet quhat wes the pane of law. 2000  
 Moir of this king quhat sall I to zow sa ?  
 In pece and rest he leuit mony da,  
 And all his liegis louit him richt weill,  
 And he thame [als] for he wes trew as steill.  
 In all his tyme salfe thai war and saucht. 2005  
 Syne tuentie zeir fra he had ring and aucht,  
 Into eild, as that my author sayis,  
 Payit his dett into his latter dayis.  
 To Berigone thai buir him on his beir,  
 Ou sic fassone that tyme as did effer ; 2010  
 With laud and gloir, pomp and lie honour,  
 Tha sesit him thair in his sepultour.

HOW NOTHATUS, THE BRUTHER OF DORNADILLA,  
 WAS CROVINIT, EFTER THE DEPARTING OF HIS  
 BRUTHER DORNADILLA.

Quhen Dornadill his dais had so endit,  
 Quhilk in his tyme his legis neur offendit,  
 Reuthar hes sone, quhilk wes his narrest air, 2015  
 Richt zoung he wes, bayth plesand and preclair,  
 Wes put in cuir, that tyme as wes the gyss,  
 Of leill trew men quhilk aigit war and wyiss,

Him for till teiche, but ony violence,  
 All policie pertening to ane prince. 2020  
 Nothatus syne, this Dornadillis bruther,  
 Quhilk oblist wes that tyme afoir ony vther,  
 With haill consent than to be crownit king,  
 For all his tyme amang thame for to ring.

THIS NOTHATUS, SONE EFTER HE WAS CROWNIT,  
 WAS ANE RYCHT ILL VICIOUS MAN AND RYCHT  
 ILL LOUIT.

Sone efter that, within les nor ane ȝeir, 2025  
 Perturbit wes all stait and maid on steir.  
 Sic wickit wayes amang thame hes he wrocht,  
 That he wes lyke to bring thame all at nocht ;  
 Wes never none intill his tyme so nyce,  
 So full he wes of auerice and vyce ; 2030  
 Rycht fals but fredome, withoutin fayth or fame,  
 In all hic tyme he doutit neur schame.  
 Col. 2. Sopit and sweir, sleipand into sleuth ;  
 Ontrew all tyme withoutin ony treuth ;  
 Wrangus, wilfull, but ony wit or skill ; 2035  
 Infectit with folie, followand ay his will ;  
 Cruell and crabit, and cankerit of kynd ;  
 Mad and malicious, as man out of his mynd.  
 The nobill blude he brocht haill to confusioun,  
 Quhilk horribill wes to heir of sic abusioun ; 2040  
 Rubrie and reif in all his dais rang,  
 Sisma and selander, weir and opin wrang.  
 Lautie wes lost, forleit wes all the lawes,  
 The waik estait that tyme ȝeid to the wawes ;  
 Wes nane gat richt culd nother reif nor steill, 2045  
 Nor ȝit culd leve with lautie that wer leill.  
 And mony syis the lordis him besocht  
 For till reforme, for thame ȝit wald he nocht.

HOW DOWALUS, THE LORD OF BRIGANTIA, CON-  
SPYRIT AGAINST NOTHATUS, AND SLEW HIM IN  
ANE QUYET PLACE.

In that same tyme, as my author did sa,  
Ane nobill man, lord of Brigantia, 2050  
The quhilk Dowalus callit wes to name,  
Ane man he wes of greit honour and fame,  
At this ilk king that tyme he had greit invy,  
Quhilk mouit him with grit melancoly.  
So sad and sair into his mind did sink, 2055  
Quhilk of desyre he drukin hes ane drink,  
Quhilk did infect the langor ay the moir,  
Into his mynd rycht suddanelie and soir  
Agane this king ane counsall he hes wrocht,  
Quhilk suddanelie brocht Scotland all to nocht. 2060  
In that counsall, quhair thair wes mony man,  
Amang thame all Dowalus thus began :  
“ Lordis,” he said, “ and tender freindis deir,  
“ This is the caus we ar conventit heir ;  
“ For to reforme, als far as that we ma, 2065  
“ Inormitie befor oure face ilk day,  
“ Of murthure, slauchter, and all vther thing,  
“ Quhilk is committit throw this cruell king.  
“ No king he is, bot monstour mervelous,  
“ Till all this world horribill and odious, 2070  
“ Quhilk abill is this kinrik to distroy,  
“ That lang hes rung befor in welth and joy.  
“ Thairfoir in tyme provyde for sum remeid,  
“ Or dreidles than we man all suffer deid.  
“ So wrangus wayes agane us he hes wrocht, 2075  
“ Quhairthrow he will sune bring us all to nocht.  
“ The nobill blude he has distroyit hail,  
“ The commoun weill rycht far he hes gart fail ;  
“ Leill lawboraris for law hes left the land ;  
“ Stakkis no stoir into na stait ma stand. 2080

“ My counsall is, suffer no moir sic thing,  
 “ Bot to revenge ws on<sup>1</sup> zond erwell king,  
 “ Of sic ane way for his iniquitie,  
 “ That efterwart it may exempill be  
 Lib. 2, f. 12. “ To king and prince, or gouernour, ilk deill, 2085  
 Col. 1. “ Wysar in tyme to gyde the commoun weill.  
 “ And zyoung Reuthor, this tyme quhilk is our prince,  
 “ Mak oure gyde, oure forte, and oure defence.  
 “ I[f] salbe he sall tak this thing on hand,  
 “ Quhat euer we do be callit his command.” 2090  
 Sic haitrent than thai had all of thair king,  
 That euerilk man content wes of that thing ;  
 Decretit hes, quhen tyme wes oportune,  
 As he hes said, that all thing suld be done.  
 And so it wes, within ane lytill space 2095  
 This king beand intill ane quiet place,  
 Vpoun ane tyme as hapnit so to be,  
 At the hunting bot witht ane few menzie ;  
 Quhen this Dowalus sic thing did consider,  
 Into all haist rycht sone he sped him hidder. 2100  
 Syne quhen he come in presence of the king,  
 He arguit him of money sindrie thing,  
 Desyrand all sua till reformit be ;  
 And he agane ansuerit rycht crabitlie,  
 And sueir oft syis ane mendis for to haif 2105  
 Of him and his, and als of all the laif,  
 That causit him sic thing to tak on hand.  
 Witht that Dowalus pullit out ane brand,  
 Sua did his men that stude him neirhand by,  
 And on the king syne set rycht haistely. 2110  
 Him and his men ilk ane into that steid,  
 Without delay thai did thame all to deid.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *of on.*

HOW DOWALUS, LORD OF BRIGANTIA, AGANE THE  
LAW GART CROWN THE PRINCE ROUTHAR  
QUHILK WES WITHIN AGE.

The prince Routhar that tyme, thocht he wes ȝing,  
In Berigone wes crownit to be king.  
Ane man thair wes into that tyme alsua, 2115  
Callit Ferquhart, lord of Novantia,  
Had to his wyfe the dochter of that king,  
Commouit wes richt far agane that thing ;  
And day nor nycht suithlie he cessit nocht,  
Quhill that his purpois till ane end wes brocht. 2120  
In Berigone ane counsall he gart call,  
And warnit hes the lordis that tyme all,  
To gif presence in that place to prouide  
In peace and rest the kinrik for till gyde ;  
And speciallie that tyme to mak debait 2125  
Contrair Dowalus and his fals dissait.  
The day wes cummit that this counsall suld hald,  
Quhair mony lord and money barroun bald  
Come in that tyme with anefald mynd and hart,  
To follow Farquhart and till tak his pairt. 2130  
So suddanelie sic thing wes nocht ȝit done,  
Quhill this Dowalus thairof knew rycht sone.  
Fra he that knew thairin he wes nocht hidder,  
Bot in all haist he had him rycht sone hidder,  
With armit men ane rycht greit companye, 2135  
Vncallit come to that counsall in hy.  
Amang thame all he enterit thair in cace,  
As he wes wynt, sat doum into his place.  
Quhen all wes set in saittis by and by,  
This ilk Ferquhart vp that he stude in hy, 2140  
Witth laureat language and pret for till prys,  
His<sup>1</sup> orisoun begouth he on this wyss.

Col. 2.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *He*.

HOW FERQUHART, THE LORD OF NOVANCE, SET ANE  
COUNSALL IN BERIGONE AGANIS DOWALUS FOR  
THE DEID OF THE KING.

" Lordis," he said, " heir is ane felloun thing:  
 " First to consider the slauchter of oure king,  
 " Rycht tratourlie this tyme as ze may se, 2145  
 " But law or dome or zit authoritie.  
 " Traist weill," he said, " gif I rycht wnderstand,  
 " Lakit we ar thairfoir in euerilk land,  
 " And till ws all it is bayth skayth and schame,  
 " And to the realme perpetuallie defame. 2150  
 " Vnpuneist now and ze lat pas sic thing,  
 " Ane dog wilbe moir doutit nor ane king.  
 " So mony wayis we ar put to the war,  
 " For-quhy oure law contempnit is rycht far  
 " Be priuat counsall into mony thing, 2155  
 " Quhilk crownit hes ane barne to be our king,  
 " Agane the law, and als far as I haif feill,  
 " At thair plesour contrar the commoun weill,  
 " Quhairthrow thai may exerce thair tyrannie,  
 " That fals counsall quhilk hes at ws invie." 2160  
 Quhen this wes said, Dowalus, fell of yre,  
 Him ansuer maid als het as ony fyre:  
 " Tratour," he said, " rycht loud I heir the lie,  
 " The quhilk is fals, that sall I preif on the."  
 Among thame than thair raiss ane suddane crie; 2165  
 Dowalus men that tyme wer neir hand by,  
 And enterit in richt pertlie in the preis,  
 Greit slauchter maid or thai wald slaucht[er ceis].  
 Ferquhard that tyme, in middis of thame aw,  
 Out throw the thrang rycht puirlic he flaw. 2170  
 That nycht I trow he sleipit richt vnsound,  
 In his bodie that buir sa mony wound.  
 Rycht suddanelie that tyme or he wald ceis,  
 On till ane yle he fled out of that preis.



This wes the caus sone efter of greit sorrow, 2175  
 Sic in Scotland was neuir sene beforrow ;  
 Of weir and wrak, and mekill wrang abusioun,  
 Quhilk brocht the kinrik efter till confusioun.  
 Quir all the land lord or laird wes nane,  
 Bot he tuke part at that tyme witht the tane. 2180  
 The kinrik than diuidit wes in tua ;  
 Quha had the rycht I can nocht to zow sa.  
 Be ze juges ze present in this place,  
 And how it was I sall tell all the cace,  
 And baith thair richtis befor zow I sall la, 2185  
 Consider syne and put the werss awa.  
 Thocht this Dowalus faillit in sum thing,  
 As for the first in slauchter of the king,  
 He did that tyme but autoritie  
 Of the hail realme or zit communitie, 2190  
 His mynd wes gude, suppois his deid wes ill,  
 Sua that he had gane ordourlie thairtill.  
 For he pretendit to na vther thing,  
 Bot reformatioun that tyme of the king,  
 And for till put the pepill out of pyne, 2195  
 And all the land quhilk wes in poynt to tyne :  
 His will wes nocht that tyme the king to sla,  
 On auenture suppois it hapnit sua.  
 To say the suith syne to the secund thing,  
 To croun ane barne to be ane prince or king 2200  
 Agane the law, I grant he did nocht weill ;  
 He wes to pardoun, neuirtheles, sum deill ;  
 For he traistit, throw his autoritie,  
 Fra all his fais to defend him frie.  
 This Farquhart, of quhome I spak of befor, 2205  
 Inclynit wes to vanitie and gloir ;  
 In all his tyme he wes of sic condition,  
 That he desyrit stait and greit ambitioum.  
 That wes the caus that gart him mak debait,  
 For weill he wist that it pertenit stait 2210  
 To him that tyme, and he mycht victour be  
 Of this Dowalus and his company ;

Quhairthrow he mycht cum to so greit honour  
 Trowand that tyme to be maid gouernour,  
 As he that tyme wes of sa his curage, 2215  
 Quhill that the king come till perfytar age.  
 And, for to stand into the pepillis grace,  
 He fenzeit all thing with ane doubill face ;  
 Sayand he did all for the commoun weill,  
 Quhairby he thocht their freindschip for till feill. 2220  
 Heir haif I laid thair rychtis bayth togidder  
 Befoir zow heir, quhairfoir lat zow consider  
 Quha hes the rycht, and arge weill zairfoir ;  
 Syne cast the werst as ze think our the stoir.  
 And to my purposis, as I first began, 2225  
 Now will I pas the narrest way I can.

HOW DOWALUS MAREIT ROUTHAR VPONE THE  
 DOCHTER TO GETHUS, THE KING OF PECHTIS.<sup>1</sup>

Quhen this counsall wes endit so and done ;  
 Then euerilk man, quhen tyme wes oportune,  
 Prouidit hes with mony gudlie man,  
 Ilk for him self the best way that he can. 2230  
 This Dowalus that wes rycht full of slicht,  
 Considerit hes how he nicht hald his richt.  
 The king of Pechtis callit wes Getus,  
 In to the tyme my storie tellis thus ;  
 And this Dowalus passit to that king, 2235  
 For his dochter of bewtie richt benyng,  
 Desyrand hir as wyfe in mariage  
 To zoung Reuthar of eild bot zit ane page,  
 Of his fais for till haif victorie,  
 That he his realme in peace mycht pacifie. 2240  
 This Getus wes content weill of that thing,  
 To wed his dochter with Reuthar the king ;  
 Dowalus also thairof thankit he,  
 And him promittit help and greit supplie,

<sup>1</sup> in MS. *Gethus, the dochter to the king of Pechtis.*

Vnfenetlic all hail power and nicht, 2245  
 Him to defend baith in wrang and rycht.  
 The tother pairt also wes nothing sueir, Col. 2.  
 On all the land sendand baith far and neir,  
 To gather men with wisdom and with wylis  
 In Yrland, Orknay, and our all the Ylis. 2250  
 With schip and boit, fra euerilk cost to cost,  
 Within schort quhile gatherit ane rycht greit ost.  
 Ten thousand men, as my author did sa,  
 Syne semlit hes togither on ane da,  
 To follow him alway quhair euir he will. 2255  
 And tak his pairt baith in gude and ill.  
 Quhen thai war gatherit of ane gudlie gyiss,  
 This ilk Ferquhard said till thame on this wyiss :  
 " My lordis all, it is weill to 3ow knawin,  
 " The fals tressoun sa opinlie is schawin, 2260  
 " Be the tratour, dissaitfull Dowalus,  
 " The quhilk hes slane oure gude king Nothatus.  
 " Riches and rest all in his dais rang,  
 " Plesour and plentie without weir or wrang ;  
 " Larges and luk, honour and honestie ; 2265  
 " In all his tyme ane nobill prince wes he.  
 " And als it is weill knawin till 3ow aw,  
 " How that he has far abrogat oure law,  
 " Into the crownyng of sa 3oung ane king,  
 " Quhilkis hurtis ws in mony sindrie thing ; 2270  
 " And be it nocht remeidit into tyme,  
 " Sen 3outhheid is without ressoun or ryme,  
 " All wilbe lost [or] we haif leuit lang,  
 " Be way of deid, be mekill oppin wrang.  
 " And mairattour, I traist weill that ze ken, 2275  
 " Bot laitlie now so mony nobill men  
 " Rycht crewalie he gart put to the deid,  
 " At Berigone quhair thair wes no remeid ;  
 " The king of Pechtis Getus dochter 3ing  
 " He weddit hes with him that he maid king ; 2280  
 " Traisting by him and his affinitie  
 " Of ws to haif the hail autoritie.

- " Ane secreit seruand of his hes me schawin,  
 " Quhilk to zow all now heir I mak it knawin,  
 " That he pretendis, throw malice and invy, 2285  
 " Gif hapnis him to haif the victorie,  
 " As God forbid of ws that sua be sene !  
 " Of euerilk man to put out bayth his ene,  
 " Bayth nois and eiris circumsyde also,  
 " And secreit memberis cut the bodie fro. 2290  
 " Syne all oure tyme, we that ar nobill blude  
 " Leif vnder him into vyle seritude.  
 " O stus gallandis now blumand into zouth,  
 " Baitht fresche and fair, the quhilk hes strenth aneuch,  
 " Agane zour fa in feild for till defend ; 2295  
 " And als thairwith I mak it to zow kend,  
 " That oure godes sall gif ws victorie  
 " Of zone tiranne sa fell is his envie,  
 " In no jornay rycht fair that he may fall,  
 " So far conermit hes oure godis all, 2300  
 " And vilipendit bayth thair fayth and law,  
 " Quhairfoir on force now he man haif ane faw.  
 " Sen sua it is that we haif all the rycht,  
 " And godis help with sic power and mycht,  
 " Quhy suld we<sup>1</sup> dreid zone tratour till assailzie, 2305  
 " In all his tyme wes neur zit worth ane melzie ?  
 Lib. 2, f. 13. " Now lat ws fecht, thair is no tyme to flie,  
 Col. 1. " For land and law, for lyfe and libertie,  
 " For wyflis, barnis, hallis and for bouris ;  
 " Traist weill," he said, " the victorie be ouris." 2310  
 Thir wordis wyslic he spak to thame than,  
 Changeit the mynd that tyme of euerie man,  
 Fra dreid till yre, with haitrent and invie,  
 Agane Dowalus and his cheualrie,  
 That euerie man hes tane that tyme to reid 2315  
 To win the feild, or than to fecht to deid.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *we suld we*.

HOW THAT DOWALUS AND FERQUHARD MET IN  
PLANE BATTELL AT BERIGO.

Be this Dowalus, with ane royall ost,  
 Come at the hand with mekle schoir and bost ;  
 And syne in feild he lichtit down anone  
 Vpone ane plane wes neir by Berigone. 2320  
 Na joy thair is in erth that ay will lest :  
 Scotland befor into gude peace and rest  
 Ane hundret 3eir but ony weir it rang ;  
 Quhen it had rung into gude pece so lang,  
 Be tua tratouris it wes maid all on steir 2325  
 Throuche thair vane gloir, as I haif said 3ow heir.  
 Singular proffit and 3young counsall also,  
 And auerice that no tyme will cry ho,  
 Pomp and pryde, and prodigalitie,  
 Brocht all Scotland to greit miseritie. 2330  
 For sic mischeif 3it with na levand man  
 Was neir sene sen that the warld began.  
 The tyme wes fund, thair wes no langar ho,  
 That euerilk man fuir fordward till his fo,  
 With swordis scharpe, weill schroudit vnder scheild, 2335  
 Freklie on fute thair haif tha tane the feild.  
 The dartis flew lyke fyre out of the flynt,  
 Darfful and dour, with mony deidlie dynt.  
 Tha rappit on sa ruddie with greit reird,  
 Quhill schawis schuik, and trimlit all the erd. 2340  
 Into that stour so stiflie that thai stude,  
 Quhill all the brym wes breirdit our with blude.  
 The grittest stait that wes in all that stound,  
 In his bodie buir mony deidlie wound.  
 Scheildis war schorne, and helmis hewin in tua, 2345  
 Full mony duchtie deit thair that da.  
 Tha faucht so lang quhill tha wer neir confoundit,  
 In bayth the pairteis mony slane and woundit.  
 Into that feild so furiouslye thai fuir,  
 That tha nicht nocht lest langar to induir : 2350

- Trewis thai tuke that tyme quhill efter none,  
 Traistand thairefter better till haif done.  
 All wes for nocht suithlie, sa God me sane,  
 Of greit tressoun thair followis mony trane :  
 Thair wes no tretie that tyme mycht avail, 2355  
 Bot to the feild agane bot ony fail.  
 The tyme wes cuming that the trewis past,  
 Than euerilk grume, rycht gudlie vnagast,  
 On to the feild as that tha did befor,  
 Col. 2. Bownit agane with mekle bost and schoir. 2360  
 Thair wes no let that tyme, tha war nocht liddir,  
 The men of armes ruddie ran togidder.  
 Speiris brak, and scheildis sched and claue,  
 Helmes wer hewin quhill all the ruvis raue.  
 The brandis brycht so bitterlie did byte, 2365  
 That all thair malzeis mendit nocht ane myte ;  
 Sa stoutlie than togidder that thai straik,  
 Quhill rochis rang, and all the erd did schaik.  
 Dowalus faucht so lang into that stound,  
 In his bodie buir mony bludie wound, 2370  
 And all his men that tyme than tuke to fle ;  
 Sic force it wes Ferquhard wes ma nor he.  
 On till ane strenth, that tyme wes neirhand by,  
 He and his men thai drew thame haistely ;  
 Quhair he wist weill tha nicht [thame] nocht inuaid, 2375  
 Still thair all nycht vntill the morne he laid.  
 Petie it wes for to behald the plane,  
 Tuelf thousand men that tyme thairin la slane.  
 Ferquhard also, suppois he wan the feild,  
 Four thousand men that da of his wes keild. 2380  
 The pairteis bayth that nycht, for dreid of vther,  
 In rayit feild stude on thair feit togidder,  
 And fyris bet with mony blast of horne,  
 Still all the nycht quhill on the tother morne.  
 Syne on the morne, be that the day wes lycht, 2385  
 The king of Pechtis, with mony worthie wycht,  
 In till ane plane besyde [hes] lichtit down,  
 And stentit hes thair mony proude palzeoun.

Dowalus than quhilk had greit noy all nycht,  
 Rycht glaid he wes quhen he beheld that sicht; 2390  
 Sic curage than of his cuming he take,  
 He and his men all cowardnes forsuik,  
 And pertlie than arrayit on the plane,  
 Rycht suddanlie to gif thame feild agane.  
 This king of Pechtis that come in his supplie, 2395  
 With ane loud voce he cryit vponie hie,  
 Exhortand thame to tak curage ilkane,  
 For to revenge the skayth that tha had tane.  
 "Dreid nocht," he said, "for we ar men anew;  
 "Rycht weil I wait that we will all be trew. 2400  
 "We ar all fresche vnfulzeit into feild,  
 "Oure fais woundit and may nocht wapynis [weild].  
 "No maistres till ws without ganestande  
 "3ond folk on force to bind bayth fute and [hand]."  
 Vponie sic wayes as he did thame exhort, 2405  
 Hes causit thame to curage and confort.  
 Ferquhard also, vpoun the tother syde,  
 Buskit for battell baldlie for till byde;  
 And till his men that samin tyme said he,  
 "Dreid nocht this tyme for all 3ond folk ze se; 2410  
 "We ar anew to fecht agane thame bayth,  
 "For at this tyme we haif tane litill skayth;  
 "Of 3ame richt mony we haif maid till die,  
 "And all the laif rycht shamefullie to fle.  
 "All 3ond folk ze se befoir 3our ene, 2415  
 "Cowardlie tha fled fra ws 3istrene;  
 "In thair bodeis beiris woundis wyde  
 "Quhilk nocht [thame] suffer in ane feild to hyde." Lib.2,f.13b.  
 "No moir:" he said, "lat goddis schaw the rycht!" Col. 1.  
 With that the trumpettis blew ilkone on hicht, 2420  
 With sic ane reird, quhill all the rochis rang.  
 Fra bowis bent thai lute braid arrowis gang.  
 Tha raschit on with mony ruddie rap,  
 Frekis war feld with mony ferslie flap;  
 Mony war stickit stark deid in that stound, 2425  
 Liand in feild with mony bludie wound;

Heidis war hewin evin to the hals all down ;  
 Schulleris war sched, and mony laid in swoun ;  
 Breistis did birst, and bokkit out of blude ;  
 Thair wes no stuff thair steill wapynis ganestude. 2130  
 Fell wes the fecht, and rycht strang wes the stour,  
 Indurand ay with mony dyntis dour,  
 But victouri onwittin of ony wicht.  
 Tha ceissit not quhill twynnit thame the nycht,  
 In falt of licht, quhilk to thame wes no lak, 2135  
 Rycht softlie than thai skalit bayth abak ;  
 For lose of licht thai left the feild that tyme,  
 Langar to fecht thai nicht nocht se ane styme.  
 In Albeoun, sen weiris first began,  
 Wes neur sene zit with no levand man, 2140  
 So mucche sorrow as that tyme mycht be sene,  
 Quhair tuentie thousand lay deid on the grund.  
 Bot aucht hundretht amang the levand than,  
 On baith the syidis thair wes nocht left ane man ;  
 For thair wes slane the tirrane Dowalus, 2145  
 And king of Pechtis that callit wes Getus ;  
 The nobill blude and baronis of this land  
 Of Scotland, als that tyme I vnderstand,  
 Deit that da with mony woundis wyde ;  
 Ferquhard the fox als on the vther syde. 2150  
 Baitht lord and laird, and mony nobill man,  
 Deit that da with heidis of thair clan.  
 Consider schirris, the greit calamitie  
 To Scotland, Irland, of thir tirranis thre ;  
 The cruell king the first wes Nothatus, 2155  
 The secund wes the tratour Dowalus,  
 The thrid wes Ferquhard, falsest of the thre,  
 [I] mak zow judges, gude schirris, gif I le.  
 [Be] Nothatus the ill wes all begun,  
 [And] Dowalus the tressoun syne wes fun, 2160  
 [Throw] Ferquhard the haill falset wes wrocht ;  
 Quha had maist wyte for me zit wait I nocht.  
 [In]to this tyme I can nocht rycht weill tell,  
 Saye as ze list now ilk man for himsell ;



Quhen ze haif sene than sa as euir ze will, 2465  
 As for myself I say no moir thairtill.  
 Dowalus men that tyme that left the feild,  
 On to ane strenth thai drew thame and ane beild.  
 Syne on that nycht, ane lytill forrow da,  
 Tha take purpois and passit hame awa. 2470  
 Vpoun the morne quhen it wes fair day lycht,  
 The tother pairt saw thai war out of sight ;  
 Tha maid ane chace, as my author dois tell,  
 [To] Celidane castell, callit now Dunkell.  
 Thame thai ouirtuke tha chaipit neur nane, 2175  
 [Bot] Rauthor the zyoung king that wes tane. Col. 2.  
 Tha sparit him becaus he wes sa zing,  
 Saikles he wes, tha wist weill, of sic thing.  
 To Berigone with him zeid hame agane,  
 Into that citie still thair to remane. 2480  
 My dullie wit dow[is] nocht till indyete,  
 Nor zit my pen with patiens for till writ,  
 Of Scotland, Pechtland, the greit meseritie,  
 The sair complaynt of infortunitie ;  
 The murning mude of euerie wyfe and man, 2485  
 Wareand the wicht quhairin the wyle began ;  
 The dule, the dolour thairof bayth da and nycht,  
 The weiping virgen, the wo of euerie wycht.  
 Greit harme it wes in hart thame for till heir,  
 The baill, the barrat, and the daylie beir, 2190  
 The sorrowfull sound that tyme of zyoung and ald,  
 The clamorous cry with cruell tairis cald,  
 The greitting, gowling, and the greit distres,  
 The murning, meaning, baith of mair and les.  
 In Scotland, Pechland, suithlie, sa God me saue, 2195  
 Wes nocht ane left wes worth to gyde the laue ;  
 Or fra thair fais that culd thame defend.  
 Alace! thairfoir all maid ane wratchit end :  
 As word by word befoir zow ze sall find,  
 For all the werst remanis zit behind. 2500

HOW THE BRITIS PAT THE SCOTTIS AND THE  
PECHTIS BAITH OUT OF THAIR AWIN LANDIS  
BE THE SPACE OF XIII. 3EIRIS.

The fame, the fassoun, of this wickit weir,  
 Rudlie wes rung in euerilk mannis eir;  
 Swift as ane swallown throw Albecoun it flaw,  
 Throw Scotland, Pechland, and Britane aw.  
 And quhen the Britis knew and vnderstude 2505  
 How in Scotland wes spilt sa mekill blude,  
 And how thai had so greit penuritie  
 Of men of gude to haif authoritie;  
 And how the captanis trewlie wes slane down,  
 And all the pepill put hail to confusioun; 2510  
 Ane king tha had, callit Oenus,  
 Bayth fers and fell, mad and malicious.  
 Rycht glaid he wes that tyme quhen he hard tell  
 The greit mischief amangis his fais that fell:  
 Bayth da and nycht it wes his desyre 2515  
 Of Albecoun to haif the hail impyre;  
 Syne quhen he saw the tyme wes oportune,  
 In gudlie haist contractis hes rycht sone  
 Ane royall ost of mekill pomp and pryde,  
 Syne enterit sone in at the bordour syde, 2520  
 Amang the Pechtis bayth with fyre and blude:  
 Thair wes no strenth that tyme him ganestude.  
 Tha war so far in till confusioun brocht,  
 Qulhairfoir that tyme, in all the haist tha mocht,  
 With wyfe and barnis the hail communitie, 2525  
 And all thair gude, take purposis for to flic,  
 To keip thame on till ane better cast;  
 And sua tha did sone efter at the last.  
 By land tha fled richt far awa  
 On till ane yle now callit Orkna, 2530  
 And thair thai duelt in pecc and rest a quhile  
 With the same folk thai fand in to that yle.

Baith 3oung and ald, and waik that mycht nocht fle,  
 War with the Britis put in captiuitie;  
 And als the land ilk bit of breid and lenth, 2535  
 Tha occupeit with euerie toun and strenth.  
 Quhen that wes done and tha had no ganestand,  
 With haill power thai come into Scotland;  
 At Calidone wod, ane lytill fra ane toun,  
 Tha lichtit thair and stentit palzeonis doun. 2540

HOW THE BRITIS AND THE SCOTTIS FAUCHT FIRST  
 AT CALIDONA AND THE SCOTTIS TYNT THE  
 FEILD.

Exploratouris than haif tha send in hy  
 That war expert, to speir about and spy  
 Gif ony Scot apperit on the plane;  
 And sua thai did, and sone tha come agane,  
 And schew to thame, besyde thame that tha saw 2545  
 Ane small power bezond in till ane schaw  
 Come at thair hand thair reddie, as I wene.  
 With that the Britis arrayit thame bedene.  
 The Scottis men thair power wes rycht small,  
 Befoir in feild thai war distroyit all; 2550  
 3it neurtheles the laue war leuand than,  
 Come to the feild that tyme baith wyfe and man;  
 Tha thocht far better in ane feild to de,  
 Nor vnder Britis leue in captiuitie.  
 The Scottis than quhilk cuming war in sycht, 2555  
 With mony trumpet blawand loud on hycht,  
 The braid arrowis als fers as fyre tha flew,  
 As schairp as hail, and thik as ony dew;  
 Into the air fleand with ane greit sound,  
 Ay quhair tha hit makand ane werkand wound, 2560  
 That scharplie schure throw bane and branis  
 bayth,  
 Quhair throw the Britis sufferit hes greit skayth.

The Scottis bowmen baldlie did thame abyde;  
 The Britis als vpoun the vther syde  
 With sword and knyfe, with lang speir and with 2565  
 scheild,  
 Fraukie that tyme thai enterit in the feild.  
 The Scottis oist wes bot ane lytill knot,  
 Ten Britis tha war [thair] for euerie Scot;  
 Becaus thair number that tyme wes sa small,  
 That day in feild fortoun gaif thame ane fall. 2570  
 Tua thousand men than of the best wes slane,  
 The laue all fled, no langar might remane.  
 All Scottis then sic dreddour thairof tuke,  
 Fra thai dayis furth to fecht mair tha forsuik;  
 Behaldand to the better end at lenth, 2575  
 And euerie man syne drew him to ane strentht.  
 Dreidand richt soir thai war for sic ane fall,  
 Prognosticat it wes amang thame all,  
 Fra Fergus hous faillit for to be king,  
 Scottis in Scotland na langar suld ring. 2580

HOW THAT THE KING OF BRITIS SEIGIT THE TOUN  
 OF BERIGONE RYCHT LANG, AND SYNE TUKE  
 IT BE TRESSOUN.

Col. 2. The king of Britis maid him b[oun]  
 With all power to pas to Berigone,  
 Quhair zoung Routhar remane in [that tyde];  
 He bowuit hidder and wald na la[nger byde].  
 Quhen he come thair he spyit a . . . . . 2585  
 About the toun he stude on sic as . . . . .  
 Quhairby he wist it wes nocht . . . . .  
 Thairfoir in haist or he wald la . . . . .  
 Vpoun ane plane plantit his p[alzeoun]  
 And set ane sege syne round about [the toun]. 2590  
 That seig it lestit till ane rycht . . . . .  
 Quhyllis with force, quhyllis with frau . . . . .  
 Vpoun the toun rycht mony assalt thai [set],  
 And tha within richt manfullie thame met,

And worthelie hes worne thame fra the wa[ll], 2595  
 Braid arrowis schot, and grit stanis lute fa[ll].  
 The Britis than, for all thair renoun,  
 Disparit wes that tyme to wyn the toun,  
 Had nocht fortoun turnit hir fikkill quheill,  
 It had bene so that tyme I wot rycht weill. 2600  
 Tha ar nocht suir that standis in hir grace,  
 No moir war tha within ane lytill space.  
 It preuit weill, as eith mycht be presumit,  
 Or euir tha wist thair victuall wes consumit.  
 Meit or drink rycht lytill than or nane 2605  
 Was left that tyme within tha wallis o[f stane].  
 And than to counsall ar thai passit [sone],  
 To be aduisit quhat best wes till [done].  
 Sum gaif counsall for to gif our  
 To the king of Britis and hald of him the [pouir], 2610  
 And tribut zeirlie till him for to pa;  
 " We chaip rycht weill," tha said, " and he d[o sa].  
 " Rycht hard it is till ws to tyne oure ly[vis],  
 " Oure heretage, oure barnis and oure w[yvis],  
 " Be ony way and we can mak remeid. 2615  
 " He dreidid nocht that can nocht [sic thing] dreid.  
 " Perforce on ws now and he wyn the [toun],  
 " Than sall we loiss bayth lyfe, kinrik [and croun];  
 " Wyfe and barnis all in bondage brocht,  
 " Oure heretage and airis put till nocht; 2620  
 " Within schort quhill forzet als quyt [as clene],  
 " Into this world as we had neuir [bene].  
 " For me I hald for greit wisdome now,  
 " The narrest perrell first for till [vmschew]; . . .  
 " Quhill efterwart that fortoun turne . . . 2625  
 " Hir fikkill quheill, and set ws vp on h . . .  
 " Quhen euir scho list rycht weill it [wilbe done],  
 " As tha ar now set ws als heiche abone.  
 " Sumtyme it is of fortitude ane grie,  
 " On till ane capitane better for to fle, 2630  
 " And saiff him self vntill ane better . . .  
 " Nor tyne the feild, his lyfe and his . . .

- " As for my self I can na better sa,  
 " Quha lykis nocht than do the best tha [ma]."  
 Ane vther said, " that counsall is nocht [gude], 2635  
 " For weill I wait tha wordis we will [rewid],  
 " And we do sa, to lois oure l[ibertie],  
 " And wnder thame leif in pen[uritie],  
 " Dalie in bondage . . . . ."  
 Lib.2,f.14b. [Ane uthir] said, " that counsall is nocht gude. 2640  
 Col. 1. " [Better it is] to de witht honest fame  
 " [Upon ane] da, nor leif with lak and schame,  
 " [And byde to] se sic sichtis as wilbe sene.  
 " [Our wyfe] and barne dalie befoir oure ene,  
 " [To b]e defoullit and oure selffis ouir thrawin, 2645  
 " [And nocht] dar say oure saullis ar oure awin.  
 " [Thairfoir] as now, for me I hald it best,  
 " . . . . rycht that we may leif in rest ;  
 " [Takyn] the chance that goddis will to ws send,  
 " . . . de and byde the latter end. 2650  
 " . . . . it is that oure victuallis ar failzeit,  
 " . . . . dalie als we ar rycht soir assailzeit.  
 " [M]y counsall is zit byde ane grittar blast,  
 " [Am]ang oure selffis first cavillis for till cast ;  
 " By prouidence of oure goddis devyne, 2655  
 " Quhome euir vpoun the cavillis dois inclyne,  
 " [Quhithi]r gude knyecht, capitane or knaif,  
 " Quhill he ma lest till be meit to the laif.  
 " Quha wait perchance within ane lytill space,  
 " Nor oure goddis of thair excellent grace, 2660  
 " Will rew on ws and send ws sum remeid,  
 " Or mony sua of ws sall suffer deid.  
 " [As] for my self I can no better sa ;  
 " [The] aventure lat all cum as it ma."  
 [The] pepill als, that present wes that tyde, 2665  
 [Conte]nt thai war at that decreit till byde.  
 Petie it wes sic thingis as tha pretendit,  
 For of tha wayis the toum wes lang defendit  
 In wratchit lyfe and greit miseritie,  
 Hungar and thirst, and in penuritie. 2670

Sa mekle falt tha had of lyuis fude,  
 That mennis flesche tha thought sueit and gude;  
 [An]d day be day the moir ay for till mene,  
 [For] sic distres thai mycht nocht lang sustene.

HOW COLANUS IN THE RELEIF OF THE SEGE OF  
 BERIGONE WES SLANE, AND ALL THAT WAR  
 WITH HIM.

In that same tyme, my storic tellis thus, 2675  
 Ane nobill man was callit Colanus,  
 Heid of ane clan, as my author did sa,  
 The grittest man in all Novantia,  
 Greit petie had of thair penuritie,  
 Heirand thair mister and miseritie, 2680  
 Dreidand full soir that thai sould all be lost;  
 [Qu]hairfoir ane haist he gatherit hes ane ost  
 [Of] Novantynis in till ane gude array,  
 [And] all the laif that levand wes that day.  
 [Fra] Argatill and vther landis by, 2685  
 [To] skaill the sege he haistit him in hy.  
 [To] Berigone quhen that he come anone  
 [With] bowis bent to battell ar thai gone.  
 [This Co]lanus that principall wes than,  
 [Ane hun]dret men he had of his awin clan; 2690  
 [Manlie he wes], wyss and of greit valour,  
 Befoir thame all he enterit in the stour. Col. 2.  
 The Britis als vpoun the tother syde  
 In that battell richt baldlie did abyde,  
 Without affray togidder all ar gane; 2695  
 So mycht tha weill, thai war ay tua for ane.  
 The gude Colanus on the tother part,  
 With bowis bent and mony deidlie dart,  
 The Britis bald, for all thair greit valour,  
 Rycht strait wer sted with him into that stour. 2700  
 Of this melle quhat sall I sa 3ow mair?  
 Fell mony wicht buir wounds werkand sair.

The Scottis than so baldlie did abyde,  
 Quhill mony berne vpoun the vther syde,  
 That wes fell bald, lay bulrand in thair blude ; 2705  
 Thair wes no strentht that thair straikis ganestude.  
 That day tha faucht so furiouslie and fell,  
 That wounder wer to ony tounge to tell,  
 How that sa few folk in so waik estait,  
 Agane so mony maid so lang debait. 2710  
 Tha thoct moir honour in the feild to de,  
 Out of the feild ane fute or tha wald fle ;  
 And so thai did, as my author did sa,  
 Faucht to the deid the leist ane man that da,  
 So wes the end that tyme of all that weir, 2715  
 Fra that tyme furth Scottis did thame na deir.  
 The Scottis than, that wes into that toun,  
 Fra tyme tha saw thair awin confusioun,  
 Out of the toun at ane bak zet tha fled  
 On to the se, and als with thame tha had 2720  
 Reuthar thair king intill ane gay gala,  
 With all his men, and syne tha tuke the wa,  
 Out throw the se rycht sone that tyme tha socht,  
 Till Ireland quhill tha war sailie brocht ;  
 And thair he baid rycht lang and mony zeir, 2725  
 Quhill efterwart as I sall schaw zow heir.  
 Displesit wes the Britis of sic thing ;  
 Fra tyme tha knew that chaipit wes the king,  
 The cruellar tha war on all the laif,  
 And sparit nother that tyme knyght nor knaif ; 2730  
 Bot dogitlie tha did thame all to deid  
 But ony rewth, thair wes no vther remeid.  
 The wemen than beheld thair standand by,  
 Into thair mynd tuke sic melancoly,  
 That sum for wanes lap into the se 2735  
 And dround thame self, and sum ouir cragis fle ;  
 Lichtlie tha lap quhair tha brak all thair banes,  
 Baith man and wyfe thus endit all atanes.  
 Syne crewellie tha enterit in the toun,  
 Bayth man and barne but mercie hes put down. 2740



Tha stanchit nocht, for no man thame ganestude,  
 Qubill all the stretis ran our with reid blude ;  
 Dispytfullie that tyme tha sparit nocht,  
 Quhill to the deid bayth zyoung and ald wes brocht ;  
 Syne all the strenthis that war in Scotland, 2745  
 Tha segit all and sesit in thair hand.  
 All Scottis blude that tyme richt far did fle Lib. 2, f. 15.  
 Fra Albioun furtht in the occident se ; Col. 1.  
 Into the Ylis that tyme fled ilkone ;  
 Rycht few remanit into Albione, 2750  
 Except ane sort that laith war for till fle,  
 And far lather subjectis for to be.  
 Tha left the plane and drew thame to ane strenth,  
 To hillis hie, and wodis large of lenth,  
 And montanis cald, quhair thai mycht byde 2755  
 vnsocht ;<sup>1</sup>  
 To thame that byding wes richt deirlie bocht.  
 For hunger and cald thai sufferit in that wane,  
 Meit nor drink the lang symmer gat nane ;  
 Bot herbis grene and frutt baith evin and nune,  
 Syne watter cald to drink quhen tha had done ; 2760  
 And quhilis milk but other breid or aill,  
 Without kitching or ony kynd of kail.  
 In winter syne baith in frost and snaw,  
 In schouris scharp and mony felloun flaw,  
 In craig and cleuche, in mony bus and breir, 2765  
 Thair wcr thai fed than of the fallow deir,  
 And mekill spulze than oft maid on the plane ;  
 Quhat euer thai gat thai gaif richt nocht agane ;  
 And of the Britis sindrie als tha slew,  
 In contrair thame that come to mak reskew. 2770  
 Ane lang quhile thus thai leuit on thair pra,  
 Tuelf zeiris and ma thai weiris lestit sa ;  
 In the begynning of the threttene zeir  
 How it hapnit harkin and ze sall heir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *unsoft*.

HOW THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS WAN THAIR  
LANDIS AGANE FRA THE BRITIS.

Reuthar the king, in till Ybernia, 2775  
 [Gr]eit diligence he hes done nycht and da,  
 And ay [the] langar with the moir desyre  
 So till obtene his croun and his impyre.  
 His seruandis also oft syis hes he send  
 In till Orknay, with hartlie recommend 2780  
 To Getus king of Pechtis, da be da  
 Remanand wes that tyme in Orknay;  
 He wes the sone, gif I richt wnderstand,  
 Of Getus king that slane wes in Scotland;  
 Beseikand him that he wald cum anone, 2785  
 With all power meit him in Albione  
 At tyme and place quhair he sould him advert.  
 Getus agane rycht glaidlie with his hart  
 Promittit hes, rycht trewlie be his hand,  
 At tyme and place to meit him in Scotland;<sup>1</sup> 2790  
 And so he did, as my author did sa.<sup>1</sup>  
 Reuthar the king, out of Ybernia,  
 With ane greit armie passit to the se;  
 Throw all the Ylis than saiffie saillit he,  
 By craig and cleuche, and mony sinkand sand, 2795  
 Till Lagia<sup>2</sup> quhair that he tuke the land,  
 [No]w callit Ros, and thair landit sone  
 In till ane place quhilk callit is Lochbrome.

HOW THAT REUTHAR, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, AND  
GETUS, THE KING OF PECHTIS, MET IN ROSS.

Col. 2. Be this Gethus wes passit to the se  
 With mony Deyn that tyme in company, 2800  
 And da nor nycht than respyt tuke he none  
 Quhill that belyue he come in Albione.

<sup>1</sup> These two lines are misplaced  
in the MS., being above the three  
preceding.

<sup>2</sup> In MS. *Lagia*.

The Scottis met him baith on fit and horss,  
 Thair at ane place callit Dingwall in Ross.  
 Greit joy it wes to se thir kingis meit 2805  
 With sic solace and salussing sa sueit,  
 And countenance quhilk wes rycht amiabill,  
 With wordis warme rycht dulce and dilectabill.  
 Tha salute vther oft and mony syis  
 With langage boun vpoun ane gudlie wyss ; 2810  
 Syne fordward fuir and fraklie tuke the feild,  
 Toward the south with mony speir and scheild.  
 Quhat freik befor thame in thair gait tha fand,  
 Tha gart him lig rycht law vpoun the land ;  
 And all the laif for feirdnes ilkane fled 2815  
 On fit and horss with all the speid tha had,  
 And left all waist about on breid and lenth ;  
 To saue him self ilk man drew till ane strenth.  
 The Scottis all than, quhilk in the mont did  
 duell,  
 Rycht blyth thai war fra tyme that tha hard tell 2820  
 The end wes cuming of thair greit distres ;  
 And all the laif of Scotland mair and les,  
 And Pechtis als, thai gatherit sone anone,  
 Quhilk duelland war that tyme in Albione,  
 In gudlie haist tha come and met the king. 2825  
 Rycht blyth tha war fra [thai] haue sene sic thing ;  
 Thankand thair goddis of thair mekill nicht  
 Befor thair ene that thai mycht se that sycht,  
 Of thair pepill sa lang into distres  
 Deliuerit than of langour moir and les. 2830  
 In Albioun wes nother Scot nor Pecht,  
 On fute and horss that abill wes to fecht,  
 Or arrow schute, or zit ane sling culd sling,  
 Bot he come thair that tyme and met his king.  
 Ane royall ost thai war, bayth lang and braid ; 2835  
 Towart the south thair passage sone thai maid,  
 And young Reuthar, quhilk wes of sic valour,  
 With hail consent wes maid thair governour,

To gyde thame all by his autoritie,  
 And thai siclike at his command to be. 2840  
 The Britis fled rycht fast on euerilk hand,  
 And stuffit strengthis for to mak ganestand.  
 Tha tareit nother to seig tour or toun,  
 Bot to the bordour baldlie maid thame boun,  
 Amang the Britis for till exers thair ire ; 2845  
 Tha enterit in baith with blude and fyre.

HOW THAT REUTHAR, THE KING OF SCOTTIS,  
 FAUCHT WITH CECELUS, THE KING OF BRITIS,  
 AND WAN HIM.

Secelius, in Britane quhill did ring,  
 Fra tyme he knew and vnderstude sic thing,  
 The king of Britis wes into tha dais,  
 Sone to Oenus, as that my author sais, 2850  
 In till all pairt gart speid be mony post,  
 And sone in haist hes gatherit ane greit ost,  
 And maid no tarie other da nor nyecht  
 Quhill that he come intill his fais sicht.  
 Lib.2,f.15b. Than mony berne, rycht traist in thair intent, 2855  
 Col. 1. For battell boun with bowis big and bent,  
 With sword and ax, with lang speiris and with  
 scheidl,  
 On fute and hors thir freikis tuke the feild.  
 The braid arrowis that fra the Scottis flew  
 Rycht mony hurt, and sundrie als thai slew ; 2860  
 With lustie lancis that wer lang and large,  
 With steill helmis, and mony gudlie targe,  
 Thir forcie freikis than hes tane the feild.  
 Helmis war hewin, and schorne war mony  
 scheidl,  
 Bayth heid and hals, and all that wes thair 2865  
 vnder,  
 War revin and rent, and schorne all in schunder.

Was none so bald of hand, or zit of hart,  
 Or all wes done he wes full of his part.  
 Fell wes the faucht, and rycht strang wes the  
   stour,  
 The victorie stude lang in aventour. 2870  
 This king Reuthar persauyng that rycht weill,  
 With bernis bald weill stuffit all in steill,  
 But ony lat dilayit nocht richt lang,  
 Bot sone he enterit in the thickest thrang.  
 So furiouslie into that feild he fuir, 2875  
 Quhill mony berne vpoun his bak he buir;  
 His knightis kene war reddie at his hand,  
 War nane sa stout thair strakis nicht ganestand.  
 The Britis than, for all thair pryde and nicht,  
 Out of the feild rycht sone tha tuke the flicht. 2880  
 Cecilius wes slane into the feild;  
 Ten thousand als thair of his men wes keild.  
 Of Scot and Pecht fywe thousand lost that da,  
 To nother pairt it wes na barnis pla.  
 Reuthar that tyme so strang wes in that stour, 2885  
 He and his men than wan so greit honour,  
 That all the valour and the victorie  
 Wes gevin him for his greit cheualrie.  
 Quhairfoir the feild that tyme quhair tha did fecht  
 Efter his name zit Redisdail it hecht; 2890  
 Quhilk Reuthe the wallis, as my author did sa,  
 Lang efter that wes callit mony da.  
 Quhen that the Britis had so tynt the feild,  
 Haiffand thair king and mony lordis keild,  
 Tha war sa fleit sone efter thai war fane 2895  
 For all thair pride to purches peace agane;  
 To Scot and Pecht agane for to restoir  
 All toun and strentlit tha occupit befoir.  
 Tua hundreht zeir and four to als beforne,  
 Or Jesu Christ wes of the Virgin borne, 2900  
 This king Reuthar, rycht baldlie with ane brand,  
 Agains the Britis reskewit hes Scotland.

Tuentie zeiris and sax richt so he rang;  
 In pece and rest quhen [he] had rung so lang,  
 Passit the wa that euerie man man wend. 2905  
 Off ill and gude sick is the latter end.

HOW EFTER THE TYME OF REUTHAR, HIS FATHER  
 BRUTHER, QUHILK WES CALLIT REUTHA, WES  
 CROWNIT AND MAID KING.

Efter the deid of this Reuthar the king,  
 Ane sone he had that tyme bot he wes zing,  
 Quhilk Thereus wes callit to his name,  
 In Ireland borne quhen Reuthar wes fra hame. 2910  
 Col. 2. His patrual, that callit wes Reutha,  
 They crownit him, as my [author] did sa,  
 At Berigone with sword, sceptour and ring,  
 And diademe of Scotland to be king.  
 He wes the first that euer tuke ony cuir 2915  
 On deid corsis to gar mak sepultour,  
 In taik[y]nyng of thair honour and fame  
 That in this warld remane sould ay thair name.  
 The sepulture of men quhen<sup>1</sup> tha war deid  
 Wes maid that tyme in mony sindrie steid; 2920  
 Sum by watter, and sum by hillis hie,  
 Sum in the wall, and sum law be the se;  
 Than euerilk clan had, in ane proper place,  
 Within him self, ane commoun erding place.  
 This king Reutha, he wes the first began, 2925  
 Vpoun the graif of euerilk nobill man,  
 Ane toume of stanis of rycht greit quantitie  
 Big on his graif that huge wes and hie.  
 Towardis the middis of that carne on hicht,  
 Ane greit lang stone gart set on end vprycht; 2930

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *quha*.

And in that stone wes writtin to discriue  
 His fame, his deidis, and his nobill lyfe,  
 Efter thair ken that euerie man nicht ken  
 Into that place that grauit wer sic men.  
 Thir placis zit remanis for to se, 2935  
 Sum in the plane, sum in the hillis hie.  
 This Reutha als he wes the first began  
 Into Scotland for to bring craftisman.  
 He hes gart seik in mony sindrie land  
 Of euerilk craft for part that wes cunnand, 2940  
 Bayth smyth and wricht, and masoun to and  
 fro,  
 Leichis, lawmen, and mony vther mo,  
 To be sustenit of the commoun weill ;  
 Sua wes the vse in thai dais ilk deill.  
 Into Scotland that tyme thair wes no cunze ; 2945  
 Than craftismen, withoutin ony sunze,  
 On force behuivit for thair craft to tak  
 For thair merchandice as vse wes than to mak.  
 Quhairfoir that tyme proclamit wes in plane,  
 Gif<sup>1</sup> ony beist to mannis meit war slane, 2950  
 Ilk craftisman thairof to haif ane breid  
 For his laubour for to releif his neid.  
 The smyth the heid, the toung the man of law,  
 The wricht the neiris and the briscat smaw.  
 The theif takar suld haif the forder spald, 2955  
 Darach to name quhilk callit wes of auld ;  
 Part of the panchis with the lytch suld byde,  
 The medicinar tua ribbis on euerilk syde.  
 Of quheit and beir, meill, malt and all the one,  
 Ilk man of thame zeirlie ane portione. 2960  
 Als generallie wes gevin in command,  
 None be so hardie for to tak on hand  
 Of seik or hurt men to tak ony cuir,  
 Bot he that war in till sic sciens suir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Gif to*.

Leichis befor no sic men had thai nocht ; 2965  
 Baith seik and sair thairfoir on bed wes brocht  
 In publicc place quhair all men did convene,  
 And leit thair seiknes till all men be sene,  
 That euerilk man mycht sa efter his skill  
 As he thoct best and gif counsall thair till. 2970  
 Sic wes the vse befor of euerilk toun,  
 Fra that tyne furth sic vse wes all laid [down].

Lib. 2, f. 16.  
 Lib. 1.

HOW THE KING OF EGIPT, CALLIT PHELIDELFF,  
 SEND HIS ORATORIS IN SCOTLAND, FOR TO  
 CONSIDDER THE SITUATIOUN THAIROF, AND  
 THE QUANTITIE.

Soune efter this, as I haif said my self,  
 Ane king of Egipt, callit Philedelf,  
 His oratouris callit war to Ptholome, 2975  
 In Scotland come that tyme to spy and se  
 The lenth, the breid, the fassoun of the land,  
 The figure sic, the se, and als the sand  
 Endlang the coist, the hillis and the hewis ;  
 The mount, the mure, the craigis and the clewis ; 2980  
 The wod, the watter about on euirilk hand,  
 Bayth laik and loch, that wes in all that land ;  
 And to consider the greit diuersitie  
 Of da and nycht be thair astronomye.  
 The eleuatioun of the poll alsua, 2985  
 Of Vrs Major and mony vther ma,  
 With astrologe and vther instrument,  
 With compas, calk, and als with quadrant.  
 This Philedelf, he send baith eist and west  
 Ouir all the warld quhair him plesit best, 2990  
 Of euirilk land that he mycht knaw and ken  
 The forme, the figure, the fassoun of the men ;  
 The lenth, the breid, and situatioun ;  
 The number als of euirilk place and toun.



And all his landis by him thus war socht, 2995  
 And all thair laubour till ane end wes brocht,  
 Syne in ane volume all wer put togidder ;  
 Quha lykis zit to luke tha may consider  
 Into that buik, quhilk callit is for-yi  
 Of Pholome the greit cosmogrophi. 3000  
 Aneuch of this; now I will tell no moir :  
 Pas to my purpois quhair I wes befoir.  
 Of thair cuming this king he wes full blyth,  
 Ressauit thame rycht suddanelie and suyth,  
 With honour, gloir, and greit nobilitie, 3005  
 As did pertene till his hie majestie ;  
 Feistand ilk da with dayntais dilectabill,  
 With game and gle, honest and honorabill,  
 In sic sporting on till ane weill lang space ;  
 Syne at thair plesour send to euirilk place 3010  
 Gydaris rycht gude, that culd thame weill convoy  
 Fra all perrell that nathing suld thame noy.  
 With quadrans, compas, and astrolog ;<sup>1</sup>  
 The circulatioun of the sone celes ;<sup>1</sup>  
 His proper muyn and his mot raptayne, 3015  
 Ey eleuatioun of the medit lyne,  
 Into quhat gre aboue the orizunt,  
 By calculatioun and by craftie cunt,  
 Of signifer the greit obliquitie,  
 Fra Aries to Cancer gre be grie, 3020  
 Be intersit of equanocticall,  
 Fra the coluyre to tropic estiwall ;  
 Quhairby thai mycht consider weill and se  
 Of day and nycht the greit diuersitie,  
 The lenth and breid of euerie regioun, 3025  
 The distance als of euerie place and toun.  
 Also thairwith tha kest thame for to ken  
 The multitude and maneris of the men,

Col. 2.

Thair law, thair lair, thair language and [thair leid],  
 The quantitie and fassoun of thair weid. 3030  
 Quhen all sic thing wes cleirlie to thame kend,  
 Tha tuke thair leif quhen tha thocht tyme to wend,  
 Befoir this king law kneilland on thair kne,  
 Thankand him thair of his humanitie,  
 And he agane rewardit thame also; 3035  
 Tha tuke thair leve and syne hamewart did go.  
 This king Reutha, but ony weir or wrang,  
 Neir fourtene zeir in peace and rest he rang;  
 Syne efter that, I knaw nocht his intent,  
 Into Berigone in plane parliament 3040  
 Resignit hes bayth sword, sceptour and croun,  
 To Thereus quhilk wes of hie renoun,  
 Wes sone and air maist lauchtful to succeed  
 To king Reuthar, befoir as ze ma reid.  
 Be his greit ald he did him self excuiss, 3045  
 Quhairby he said that he mycht weil refus  
 So greit office, for-quhy he mycht na mair  
 Sic travell mak, nor zit sic cuiris bair;  
 Beseikand thame sen he mycht nocht indure,  
 Exoner him of sic office and cure. 3050  
 The lordis all than present in that place,  
 Quhen that thai knew and vnderstude the cace,  
 To hald ane man tha thocht it greit folie  
 Agane his will in sic autoritie;  
 With hail consent thairfoir of ald and zing 3055  
 This Thereus thair haif tha crownit king.

HOW THAT REUTHA RESIGNIT THE CROUN AND  
 REGIMEN TO THEREUS, THE SONE OF REU-  
 THAR.

Ane nobill king than wes this Thereus,  
 The first sax zeir, my author sais thus;  
 In pece and rest without ony discord,  
 Weill louit als he wes with euerilk lord. 3060

Sone efter syne, be the sevint ȝeir began,  
 He changit syne in till ane vther man.  
 Fra mansuetude and greit humanitie,  
 To tigirnes and greit tirannitie ;  
 He flemit law, put justice to the horne, 3065  
 Religioun als he dalie draue to scorne ;  
 He gaif him alway to gelocitie,  
 To fleschlie lust and foull faminitie ;  
 He luikit nocht to resson nor to ryme,  
 Quhill mony theif and tratour in his tyme 3070  
 Raxit and rang, and hereit all the land ;  
 Wes nane of him that tyme that aw did stand.  
 Thairof the lordis had rycht grit dispyte,  
 Wittand sa weill that he had all the wyte.  
 Quhairfoir to counsall ar thir lordis gone 3075  
 Rycht quietlie than into Berigone ;  
 And in that counsall thair wes nocht ane man  
 Amang thame all, bot he consentit than,  
 Without delay of ony kynd of thing,  
 To be revengit on this tirrane king. 3080  
 Decreittit als, quhen tyme wes oportune,  
 As thai haif said that all thing suld be done. Lib.2,f.16b.  
 So quyetlie this counsall wes nocht wrocht, Col. 1.  
 To Thereus quhen all this talk wes brocht ;  
 Quhen he that knew, so soir for thame he dred, 3085  
 And tuke sic feir, richt far away he fled  
 Into Britane, seikand at thame supple ;  
 Bot all for nocht, that tyme it wald not be.  
 In all his dais, the langer ay the les,  
 That all his tyme he leuit in distres. 3090  
 In Eborak, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 Sone efter that closit his latter end ;  
 This Thereus, efter that he wes king,  
 Maid sic ane end the tuelf ȝeir of his ring.  
 In the tyme of his exulatioun 3095  
 The lordis maid gude reparatioun ;

Ane nobill man, of wisdome and honour,  
 For all that tyme thai haif maid governour,  
 Callit Conan, as my author did sa,  
 Ane lord he wes als of Brigantia; 3100  
 Quhilk mony falt reformit in his tyme,  
 And mony lymmer lappit in the lyme;<sup>1</sup>  
 And on ane gallous maid thame all to die,  
 And leill men leve in greit tranquillitie.  
 All thing befor he fand that wes misdone 3105  
 In till his tyme he gart reforme rycht sone.  
 Syne quhen tha knew deid wes this Thereus,  
 In Berigone, my author sayis thus,  
 Befoir the lordis that tyme auld [and] zing  
 This Conanus his office did resing. 3110

HOW JOSINA WES MAID KING EFTER THE TYME OF  
 HIS BRUTHER THEREUS.

With hail consent than of the lordis all,  
 On Josina the hail counsall did call,  
 As he that wes most abill for sic thing,  
 With hail consent than wes he crownit king.  
 Bruther germane he wes to Thereus; 3115  
 He had no child, my author sais thus.  
 Ane nobill man in all his tyme wes he,  
 Baith traist and trew, full of tranquillitie;  
 With Pecht and Brit renewit hes the band  
 In forme and effect for all his tyme to stand. 3120  
 He tretit weill gude lechis that war fyne,  
 Cunnand him self wes into medicyne;  
 He leirit that craft, as my author did sa,  
 Quhair he wes fosterit in till Ybernia.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lyne*.

HOW TUA SCHIP-BROKIN MEN WAR FUND IN ANE  
YLE, AND BROCHT TO JOSINA THE KING;  
THE QUHILK BEGOUTH THE FIRST STUDIE IN  
SCOTLAND.

Sone efter this ze heir me tell anone, 3125  
 This nobill king beand in Berigone,  
 Tua plesand men wes brocht than him beforne,  
 Naikit and bair almaist as thai war borne,  
 Fund in ane yle schip-brokin with the se,  
 Quhilk drevin war out of ane far cuntrie. 3130  
 The king wes curtas of considerance ; Col. 2.  
 And suddantlie, but ony circumstance,  
 He gart convoy thame till ane secret place,  
 Quhair tha mycht sojorne for ane tyme and space ;  
 And meit and drink, fyre, claithis and easment, 3135  
 That neidfull war, he hes to thame sent ;  
 Quhill that thai war refreschit weill agane,  
 And had forzet the maist part of thair pane.  
 Syne efter that, the fyftene day and moir,  
 Thir tua zoung men gart present him befoir ; 3140  
 And reuerentlie he did at thame inquirye  
 Quhat that tha war, or quhat wes thair desyre?  
 Rycht curtaslie tha maid ansuer agane,  
 Sayand tha war tua priestis borne in Spane,  
 The quhilk had bene ane long tyme at the lair 3145  
 In till Athenis plesand and preclair,  
 Quhair all science war kennit craftiuslie  
 Musick, phisick, art and philosophie.  
 Be Eolus and his autoritie,  
 And Neptunus, quhilk god is of the se, 3150  
 In that disert and danger did they dryue,  
 Syne in ane craig fortoun maid tham aryue ;  
 “ Quhair all the laif, except we tua alone,  
 “ In the salt se wer perreist thair ilkone.”

- This nobill king, quhen he hard thame declair, 3155  
 That tha wer men of cunnyng and of lair,  
 To talk that tyme with thame in theologie,  
 And sindrie questionis sperit that war hie.  
 And first he sperit into generall  
 Quhat wes the nature of thair goddis all? 3160  
 Thair godis than, thai war botht les and moir,  
 Bot stok and stone, as I schew zow befor :  
 The similitude maid of the sune and mune,  
 And brutell beistis set vp in ane trune.  
 Maid ansuer be thair philosophie, 3165  
 Cunnyng thai war als in mortalitie,  
 The law of nature than tha had perqueir,  
 Sic ansuer maid as I sall schaw zow heir :  
 " Excellent prince," witht wordis rycht benyng,  
 " We studie nocht tha said into sic thing ; 3170  
 " Our studie is in sciens naturall,  
 " As for to tell of thingis menerall,  
 " Of gold, siluer, and mony sindrie vre,  
 " Vnder the erd out of all mannis cuir ;  
 " Into the bowellis of the erd we ken 3175  
 " Thair is mair proffeit for the vse of men,  
 " Nor is aboue of herb, corne or tre,  
 " That we ma ken superficialitie.  
 " As for zour goddis we hald thame for nane ;  
 " In all this world thair is no God bot ane. 3180  
 " God of the hevin that gydis, as him list,  
 " All thing, all tyme, ay as he plesis best.  
 " Without begynnyng he is lord and king,  
 " Begynnar als he is of euirilk thing ;  
 " By him all thingis sicker ay and suir, 3185  
 " But him no thing hes power till induir ;  
 " And at his will all thingis man haif end,  
 " And quhen he will siclyke thingis to send.  
 Lib. 2, f. 17. " At his frie will the world man be gydit,  
 Col. 1. " Ay as he will, siclyke all thing prouydit ; 3190

- “ Thair is na will that may haif rectitude  
 “ Into the self nor zit na vther gude ;  
 “ Nane bot his will of sic sublimitie,  
 “ To quhome all willis suld conformit be.  
 “ Vnlefull is als, I wndertak, 3195  
 “ Of this greit God ane figure for to mak,  
 “ Of gold or siluer, stock or zit of stone ;  
 “ For in him self this God figure hes none.”  
 This king he said, “ It is mervell to me,  
 “ Without ane figure how that God ma be.” 3200  
 “ **Z**is,” said he than, “ God is immensurabill,  
 “ In euerie place, and als inte[r]menabill,  
 “ And infinite als he is in valour,  
 “ Infinite repungis to figure.”  
 “ This tyme,” he said, “ that I considder weill ; 3205  
 “ **Z**it neurtheles I wald ze leit me feill  
 “ How that I sall perfiltie wnderstand  
 “ Thair is bot ane God both of se and land.”  
 “ **Z**e schir,” he said, “ ze may considder quhy  
 “ Be men in earth and thair greit gerathy ; 3210  
 “ Trewlie to tell, tranquillitie is none,  
 “ Bot in that place quhair all obeyis one.  
 “ For multitude withoutin vnitie,  
 “ Lang but discord it can nocht rycht weill be,  
 “ The quhilk repungis in ane god till ring, 3215  
 “ Quhairfoir I hald it bot ane folie thing  
 “ To put in godheid sic pluralitie ;  
 “ In all this warld thair is no moir folie.  
 “ And secundlie, that same thing for to preue,  
 “ **Z**e sall considder, gude schir, with zour leue, 3220  
 “ The nature is of Godis hie impyre  
 “ Till haif all that thing ay at his awin desyre,  
 “ But contrapleid, ay as his awin self pleis ;  
 “ War it nocht sua than God war nocht at eis.  
 “ He is na god that wantis of his will, 3225  
 “ Or he that ma restranit be thair till.

“ Quhilk I sall preue, that it ma rycht weill be,  
 “ In 3our goddis put 3e pluralitie.”  
 The king he said, “ Gude schir, gar me know,  
 “ How that is suith ;” said he, “ That sall I schaw. 3230  
 “ Consider weill this thing I tell 3ow till ;  
 “ Sen euirilk god man haif his awin fre will  
 “ To vse all tyme at his awin libertie,  
 “ It is na will bot gif that it be fre ;  
 “ Ma will that tyme na schour of rane to be ; 3235  
 “ Quhilk kyndlie is as I haif said to the,  
 “ That euirilk god wirk efter his awin will ;<sup>1</sup>  
 “ Thus in 3our godis that sic scisma be,  
 “ And als of power sic equalitie,  
 “ For ony ressoun 3e can schaw me till, 3240  
 “ The tane on force that tyme man want his will ;  
 “ The quhilk repungis alwaysis to deitie  
 “ To want his will, or 3it in thrall to be.”  
 “ Qubhat is oure goddis than ? tell me,” said the king ;  
 “ Feinzeit tha ar,” he said ; “ na vther thing ; 3245  
 “ Sic wes thair nane,<sup>2</sup> nor neur 3it salbe,  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ tha ar bot vanitie.  
 Col. 2. “ Thair is na God bot one that sittis abone,  
 “ Quhilk gydar is baith of the sone and mone,  
 “ Of starris als both moir and les, 3e se ; 3250  
 “ Traist weill forsuith thair is na God bot he.  
 “ He is the gydar of the coursis richt,  
 “ Dewydis als the cleir da fra the nyecht ;  
 “ The se also to fill and to reflow,  
 “ Bayth gerss and corne on ground he garris 3255  
     grow.  
 “ Mankynd all tyme he gydis at his will,  
 “ Seiknes or heill as he lykis send him till ;  
 “ Plesour or pane, welth or penuritie,  
 “ Travell or rest, trubill or tranquillitie ;

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *name*.



- “ Equall he is till euerie warldlie wicht. 3260  
 “ Ane king or prince is no moir in his sicht  
 “ Nor the leist page, thocht he be neuir sa pair,  
 “ Or zit in earth the vylest creature.”  
 Than said the king, “ Sen he is ressonabill,  
 “ Quhy ar sum men to him sua acceptabill, 3265  
 “ Gif it be so that his will ay is fre,  
 “ And vther als so far haitit to be?”  
 Said he agane, “ That I can weill declair ;  
 “ And gif it is so plesand and preclair,  
 “ And so respesand into Godis sicht, 3270  
 “ That is the caus he lous ony wicht ;  
 “ All lyfe also the quhilk is to detest,  
 “ To God and man, and carest to the best,  
 “ Full of ill vice, as pride, ire and invie,  
 “ That God thame hait, this is the verrie quhy.” 3275  
 Than said the king, “ Gif he be of that sort,  
 “ Thy argument thow hes done rycht report ;  
 “ Agane thi self ar preuis weill befoir.”  
 The tother said till<sup>1</sup> him agane, “ Quhairfoir?”  
 The king he said, “ Becaus I hard the tell 3280  
 “ That vice and vertu dois thy God compell  
 “ To luif the tane for his vertew and pryss,  
 “ And hait the vther also for his vice.  
 “ Gif it be trew that thow hes said to me,  
 “ His will, me think, can nocht alwayes be fre ; 3285  
 “ Be it nocht fre, I think in my intent,  
 “ He is nocht God be thi awin argument.”  
 “ Zis,” said he, “ schir, as I sall to zow schaw,  
 “ Into Godheid is sic nature and law,  
 “ Ather to be fre, ather in will or deid, 3290  
 “ Zit neuirtheles to loue men for thair meid ;  
 “ And for this quhy that I sall schaw [the] till,  
 “ Sen it is ay in Godis awin frie will  
 “ Of euerilk man for till except his deid,  
 “ Accept he nocht than it is of na meid, 3295

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *ull*.

- “ And want it meid it seruis than no lowe ;  
 “ Fra first to last this rycht weill ma I prowē,  
 “ For till assoill, schir, all 3our sophistrie,  
 “ That Godis will at all tyme man be fre.”  
 Then said the king, “ Ane thing 3it will I speir, 3300  
 “ Tell me the suith thairof I the requer ;  
 “ Sen that 3our God all tyme hes his frie will  
 “ May he nocht lowe ane man alway for [ill] ?”  
 Lib.2,f.17b. “ Na schir,” said he, “ forsuith that may nocht be ;  
 Col. 1. “ For that wald put in God iniquitie ; 3305  
 “ The nature is of God ay till be gude,  
 “ And full of justice and of rectitude ;  
 “ Als force it is no tyme to him to fail,  
 “ And lufe all thing ay efter the awin vaill.  
 “ Thair is nothing of imperfectioun, 3310  
 “ All thocht it be in his electioun,  
 “ Into no tyme, or 3it be ony cace,  
 “ Into his Godheid may haif ony place.  
 “ My counsall is quhairfoir [that] 3e trow  
 “ Into na God nor in na vther now : 3315  
 “ Thair is no God in all this warld-bot he,  
 “ That may 3ow help in 3our necessitie.”  
 Throw the persuasioun that thir tua maid than,  
 Bayth king and court, and mony vther man,  
 Left superstitioun and ydolatrie, 3320  
 And honorit ane God in hevin maist hie.  
 Prophane places, to make sacrifice,  
 Tha biggit than as that tyme wes the gyss ;  
 Efter the law and teiching of nature,  
 That haue thai kennit euerilk creature. 3325  
 How tha sould ken thair wes no God bot ane,  
 And leif thair goddis quhilk war bot stok and stane.  
 3it thair wes mony of sic conditioun,  
 That wald nocht leif thair superstitioun,  
 To honour God that wes in hevin sa hie, 3330  
 Bot followit alway on ydolatrie.  
 This nobill king, of quhome I haif tald heir,  
 Into his ring the foure and tuentie 3eir,

He tuke his leif and of this lyfe is gone,  
And buriet wes that tyme in Berigone. 3335

HOW FENANUS, THE SONE OF JOSINA, EFTER HIS  
FATHERIS DEID SUCCEIDIT, AND WES MAID  
KING.

Efter the tyme that Josina wes deid,  
Fenan his sone succedit in his steid.  
In all his tyme wes neur ane nobillar king,  
And with his liegis louit our all thing.  
In all his tyme with counsall ay he wrocht, 3340  
Without counsall in his tyme did rycht nocht.  
Ane law he maid, the quhilk wes rycht conding,  
Without counsall ane king sould do na thing.  
Religious lyke he wes in all his dais,  
Exceptand ane thing, as my author sais; 3345  
He left the honour of God in hevin so hie,  
Turnand agane vntill ydolatrie;  
And mamantis als he hes gart mak also,  
Of Phebus, Diane, and of Apollo,  
And set thame vp richt hie in the prophane, 3350  
As tha war wont to honour thame agane.  
Religious men, to honour thame alsua and pra,  
With sacrifice and greit singing alsua,  
And foundit thame witht greit possessioun  
Of land and lordschip, and of mony toun; 3355  
And ane hie maid to be aboue the laiff,  
Prerogative of all the laif to haif; Col. 2.  
To vse sic office ay quhill he be deid,  
Syn efter him ane vther in his steid.  
Dursergales<sup>1</sup> in oure Scottis leid 3360  
Tha war callit, sa said my author Beid,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Surfergales*.

And Cornikill, as sayis of thame, but leis,  
 In Romane toung wer callit Drewideis.  
 The Ile of Man quhair sait wes maid to be,  
 Befoir Brigance into the occident se, 3365  
 In lyke distance it wes that tyme alsua  
 Fra Britane, Scotland and Ibernia.  
 In Brigane land in moir propinquitie,  
 Nor it is now be ane greit quantitie.  
 The passage wes that tyme I wnderstand 3370  
 Ane ouris saling fra the narrest land,  
 And now it is befoir ane felowand wynd  
 Sax houris saling bayth with fuk and blind.  
 The se sensyne hes worne away the land ;  
 Experient men may tak be the sand 3375  
 Quhilk lyis furth rycht far within the se,  
 With laikis law, and mony hillis hie,  
 In the reflowing of the flude agane  
 Ane rycht lang space it leuis dry the plane ;  
 Quhairfoir rycht weill it may be vnderstand 3380  
 All that befoir wes ferme and fixit land.  
 As be exempill we ma se alsua,  
 Ascending vp fra that to Sulwa,  
 Endlang the cost quhair that thair is no craig,  
 And dalie zit thair fallis mony flag, 3385  
 And worne away hes mony plane and glen,  
 My self hes sene within thir zeiris ten ;  
 The quhilk befoir wes medow and mane land,  
 Quhair now is nocht bot salt water and sand.  
 My purpois now sen I haif preuit plane, 3390  
 On to my taill now will I turne agane.  
 In Mona Ile, as I haif said zow air,  
 Ane proper place rycht plesand and preclair,  
 Besyde ane water on ane plesand plane,  
 Quhair Drewideis wes maid for to remane ; 3395  
 Ane tempill als of greit autoritie,  
 Quhairin their godis placit wer full hie,  
 This king gart mak for habitatioun  
 Of Drewides witht greit possessioun.



With lauatar, lamp, with buke and mony bell, 3400  
 Thir Drewideis thair syne did [gar] to dwell.  
 Bayth king and lord gaif thame authoritie  
 For to mak law in spiritualitie,  
 In sanctuar for to make ceremonie,  
 Witht sacrifice to thair god ilkone, 3405  
 And psalmistrie for to be said and sung.  
 The obseruance als weill of ald as zyoung,  
 The reuerence to godis suld be maid,  
 That wes the thing that no man durst inuaid.  
 Dais festiue tha haif ordand alsua, 3410  
 To keip halie quhen the pepill suld pra,  
 Till thair goddis for to mak reuerence,  
 With sacrifice and all sic obseruance.  
 In sindrie pairtis of the land sielyke,  
 War preuie preistis ouir the hail kinrik, 3415  
 All for to do thair goddis sic honour  
 As I haif said, in tymes, place and hour.  
 Anis in the zeir to mak conventioun all  
 In Mona Ile befor thair principall,  
 Thair to reforme all faltis war bygane 3420  
 Done to thair god, for thai wald suffer nane ;  
 And for to caus thair lawis keip the strenth,  
 That tha had maid vnabrogat at lenth.  
 Expert thai war in mony sindrie art,  
 For tha had bene in mony vther part ; 3425  
 Nocht lang befor at studie tha had bene  
 In Grece rycht lang, in citie of Athene,  
 Sindre science quhair tha did apply  
 As musick, grammer, and philosophie,  
 Logick, phisick, and artis naturall, 3430  
 Methamatik, and sciens als morall,  
 Quhairby thai knew the nature of the hevin ;  
 Rycht promp tha war in all the sciens sevin.  
 The fame of thame als far as Rome it flaw ;  
 In Romane storeis the suith thairof will schaw 3435  
 Be thame that put thair deidis in memorie,  
 As preuis weill by Strabo in his storie.

Lib. 2. f. 18.  
 Col. L.

And mony ma as I list not reheress,  
 So lang mater I haif to put in verss.  
 Thair laubour wes most for to treit and draw 3440  
 Historiall thing and lybellis of the law,  
 And childer teiche, siclike as tha had sene  
 In Grece befoir at studie in Athene.  
 The kingis sonis, and lordis of the ring,  
 War techit thair sua lang as tha war zing: 3445  
 Fra that he wes of sevin zeir ane page,  
 Quhill that he come till tuentie zeiris of age,  
 Sindre sciens and wisdome for to leir;  
 That wes thair law rycht lang and mony zeir.  
 This king Fenan, quilk wes of nobill fame, 3450  
 Ane sone he had wes callit Drust to name,  
 The king of Britis dochter Agasan,  
 In all hir tyme thair wes nane bettir than,  
 Till wyfe he had, as that my author sayis:  
 Quhairfoir his father in all his dayis 3455  
 Wes louit hartlie with the Britis all,  
 Rycht tenderlie than bayth with greit and small.  
 Ane threttie zeir he rang, my author sais,  
 Syne tuke his leif into his latter dayes,  
 Passand the way quhair all the laif ar gone. 3460  
 Buryit he wes syne into Berigone.

HOW THAT DRUSTUS WES CROWNIT, AND SUC-  
 CEIDIT EFTER THE TYME OF HIS FATHER  
 FENAN.

Col. 2. Efter the deth of gude Fenan this king,  
 Drustus his sone wes crownit for to ring,  
 With sword and sceptour on the marbell stone,  
 And croun of gold than into Berigone. 3465  
 Sone efter that, within ane litill quhile,  
 In word and work this king he wox rycht vile;  
 Gredie and glittus in gulos[it]ie,  
 In flesche assegit with foull faminitie;

Lubrik and louss, with licherous appetyte, 3470  
 Drokkit and dull throw vndantit delyte ;  
 In drinking, dissin, hurdome and harlatric,  
 He wes profest ane fule in sic folie.  
 The men his father traistit in and treattit,  
 Odius tha war to him and als far haittit ; 3475  
 But counsall ay he wrocht in all his tyme,  
 And luikit nocht to ressoun nor to ryme.  
 He luifit nane bot flatteraris and fullis,  
 And haittit all that cunningg wer in scuillis ;  
 The men of wisdom and nobilitie, 3480  
 Destroyit thame throw his iniquitie ;  
 The men of gude he flemit haill and slew ;  
 In all his tyme he wes ane verra schrew.  
 The nobill, wyss, and fair gude Agasane,  
 The curtas quene he hes excludit than 3485  
 Out of his court and of his companie.  
 Magir hir will maid ladis with hir ly ;  
 Qubairby he nicht allege ane fenzeit causs  
 Hir correppitt<sup>1</sup> be all ordour of lawis.  
 Greit harme it wes of hir sic thing to beir, 3490  
 Ane kingis wyfe and kingis dochter deir,  
 Quhilk in hir tyme did neur man offence,  
 Corrupit wes throw force and violence.

HOW THE LORDIS OF SCOTLAND CONSPYRIT AGANIS  
 DRUSTUS THAIR KING, QUHILK GYDIT WES  
 WITH EUILL COUNSALL.

The lord of Ilis, and lord of Argatill,  
 Lord of Novans, all thre in till ane will, 3495  
 Witht lord of Thawe, of Cronane, and Lugia,  
 Of Athall als and mony vther ma,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *correppill*.

Agane this king quietlie hes conspyrit.  
 But ony tarie that tyme or euir tha tyrit,  
 Bownit for battell, baith for ill and gude, 3500  
 Of harnest men ane full greit multitude,  
 For kinglie honour wald nocht him degraid;  
 The caus thai come for in the tyme, tha said,  
 Wes to correct misgydaris of the king,  
 Thair purpos wes than to na vther thing, 3505  
 Or zit displesour to thair king or prince,  
 Bo[t] to reforme and nocht till do offence.  
 Fra that the king knew weill and vnderstude  
 Weill mycht he nocht mell with sic multitude,  
 He take purpos first with his men to fle 3510  
 Into Britane, thair for to get suppl.  
 Lib.2.f.18b. The Britis als agane him than rebellit,  
 Col. 1. For-quhy but caus his quene that he repellit,  
 Defamand hir quhilk wes of sic honour;  
 Quhairfoir tha said he suld get na succour. 3515  
 Syne quhen this king knew weill that tyme that he  
 Wald get na help, reskew, nor zit suppl,  
 And he nicht nocht resist thair violence,  
 Than hes he fund rycht sone ane new defence  
 Intill his mynd, full of subtilitie, 3520  
 Full of dissait, fraude and iniquitie;  
 Sayand he wald stand in his lordis grace,  
 Vsand thair counsall in all tyme and place;  
 And for that tyme to put him in thair will,  
 To quhat purpos tha pleis to put him till, 3525  
 And neur agane als lang as he wes king,  
 But thair counsall for to do ony thing.  
 The counsallouris the quhilk had all the wyte  
 Of his mischeif quhome of tha had dispyte,  
 To send to thame in haist but ony rest, 3530  
 Till heid or hang as thame self lykit best.  
 All this wes done wnder ane fals cullour  
 For to postpone that ill tyme and that hour,  
 Quhill efterwart that he mycht se his tyme,  
 Full weill he thocht to revenge him of that cryme. 3535



For mair effect that he sould credens haif  
 Out of his court he hes tane mony knaif,  
 Quhilk in thair tyme war bot of litill fece,  
 And cled thame all, euin fra the heill to nek,  
 In silk and syper, and in siluer schene, 3540  
 Most inwart men with him as tha had bene ;  
 In raipis, and festnit baith fute and hand,  
 Deliuerit thame than without ganestand ;  
 And thame that had the wyte of all the wrang,  
 In publicc presoun maid thame all to gang, 3545  
 Quhill efterwart he nicht prouidit be  
 With haill counsall quhat deid that tha suld de.  
 All this he did for till excuiss his cryme,  
 Quhill efterwart that he nicht se his tyme ;  
 And than he thocht revengit for to be, 3550  
 Or mony ane vpoun ane da suld de.  
 Fra that the lordis hes hard all his proffer,  
 Sa fair promiseit with mony ples and offer,  
 Him self and seruandis all into thair will,  
 Tha war content, and sone tha send him till 3555  
 Dorane, ane man of greit auctoritie,  
 Of Novantia the lord that tyme wes he,  
 Quhilk schew to him thair haill desyr and mynd,  
 The fassoun all than how and in quhat kynd,  
 To oblis him effectuellie to byde 3560  
 To thair decret, quhat euir efter betyde.  
 Glaidlie this king hes grantit with gude will  
 For moir effect thair desyr to fulfill.  
 To Dianis alter passit is this king ;  
 On bell and buke and mony secret thing, 3565  
 Be sone and mone, and all thair goldin geir,  
 Solempnitlie ane preist hes gart him sueir  
 To tak the folk in fauour all his tyme,  
 And neur agane to ask count of that cryme ;  
 And at thair counsall all thing to be wrocht, 3570  
 And but thair counsall he till do rycht nocht ;  
 Als to reforme all faultis done befoir,  
 And mend his lyfe withoutin ony moir.

Quhen this wes done and publist into plane,  
 Thairof rycht mony war full blyth and fane. 3575  
 The lordis all that tyme come to the king,  
 And salust him with wordis rycht benyng :  
 Wes nothing said bot gude into that tyme,  
 Forgevin wes thame all offence and cryme.  
 Thairof the pepill wes rycht blyth and glaid, 3580  
 Amang thame self ilkane to vther said,  
 " We traist to God that all is cumit for the best,  
 " For now we traist to haif gude pece and rest."  
 The contrair, as my author did sa,  
 Come efter that rycht sone vpoun ane da. 3585

HOW THIS KING DRUSTUS IN EWONIA GART MAK  
 ANE FEIST, QUHAIR HE SLEW ALL HIS LORDIS  
 WITH TRESSOUN.

This king Drustus, of quhome befor I spak,  
 Seand his tyme ane mendis for to tak  
 Of his lordis ilkane baith les and moir,  
 For the injure thai did till him befor,  
 Ane<sup>1</sup> riall feist gart mak in Berigone, 3590  
 Quhair all his lordis sould conuene anone.  
 And he hes ordand euerilk lord to bring  
 Baith wyfe and dochter for to dance and sing,  
 Thairfoir to sport and speik of paramour,  
 Of knyghtlie deidis and of sic aventure ; 3595  
 For all the blythar wald the bankit be,  
 That euirilk lord mycht luke on his ladie,  
 And ilk zyoung man in courtlie caroling  
 With his lamen thairfoir to dance and sing.  
 The da syne come the mamorie suld hald, 3600  
 Quhair mony berne and mony barroun bald,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *In*.

With lustie ladeis quhit as quhalis bone,  
 Come thair that da with madanis mony one.  
 Quhen that thai come befor the king with croun,  
 In Berigone within that nobill toun, 3605  
 Into the palice proper wes to se,  
 Poleist perfyte with all speciositie.  
 Syne to the hall the king himself is gone,  
 With ladeis quhite and lordis mony one ;  
 The lordis all sat with the king at tabill, 3610  
 With lustie ladeis brycht and amiabill,  
 And vther bernis sat at burdis by,  
 With madynis myld into thair company.  
 The trumpetis blew, the schalmes wald nocht ceis,  
 On to the hall come mony royall meis ; 3615  
 Of dulce musick so mirrie wes the sound,  
 That armony gart all the hall rebound. . Lib. 2, f.19.  
 In sic sporting thai war ane weill lang space, Col. 1.  
 Quhill efter meit syne said wes the grace.  
 Heir may we haif ane generall conclusioun, 3620  
 That warldlie gloir is no thing bot illusioun ;  
 And lestis nocht bot for ane lytill tyme,  
 And mony one it lampis in the lyme.<sup>1</sup>  
 Sic vanitie is all bot variabill ;  
 Syne quhene ane man trowis he be most stabill, 3625  
 Or euer he wit it gevis him ane fall,  
 Makand of him ane subject and ane thrall.  
 Now to my purpos this tyme till apply,  
 Ane feinzeit exémpill we ma tak heirby,  
 Be thir lordis all that da at sic disport 3630  
 With thair ladyis at plesour and confort.  
 The ladyis als, vpoun the tother part,  
 Rejosit war rycht greitlie in thair hart,  
 Traistand that tyme and all to gone rycht,  
 Efter the day to haif als mirrie nycht. 3635

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lyne*.

Zit neuirtheles that tyme tha wer begylit,  
 This cruell king richt sone his fayth hes fylit.  
 For all that tyme with falsheid he thame fed,  
 As quha wald set ane girne befor ane gled,  
 Or on ane lyne ane plesand bait to mak 3640  
 Vpoun ane huke the hungrie fische to tak.  
 Rycht so this king, full of dolositie,  
 Crabit, but cours, throw greit crudelitie,  
 Quhen that he saw the tyme wes oportune,  
 In to the hall, quhen the dennar wes done, 3645  
 Befor thame all that tyme bayth les and moir  
 He fell in talk of all thing done befor.  
 Rycht sone to scharpnes turnit all thir bourdis,  
 For ay the langar with ye caldar wordis,  
 Rycht crabitlie he did thame all accuiss: 3650  
 "Traist weill," he said, "ze sall zow nothing ruiss  
 "Of zour tressone, tratouris, les and moir,  
 "Wes done to me nocht lang syne of befor."  
 Meiklie to him ane ansuer maid agane:  
 "Traist weill," thai<sup>1</sup> said, "we did it for na trane, 3655  
 "Nor for displesour of your majestie,  
 "Bot for the honour of zour rialtie;  
 "Thairfoir," thai said, "most hie excellent prince,  
 "Oure mynd wes nocht to do zour grace offence;  
 "All that we did wes for zour greit honour." 3660  
 "Ze leid," agane he said to thame, "tratouris."  
 Be this wes said, in at the hallis dure,  
 Ane hundreth men in armour strang and suir,  
 With nakit swordis drawin in thair hand,  
 The lordis all befor thame that tha fand, 3665  
 Without reskew, respite, or zit remeid,  
 Rycht doggitlie thai did thame all to deid.  
 Quha had bene thai that tyme for till [haif] sene  
 The lustie ladeis rymmand thame betuene,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hc.*

To hald and help thair husbands in the tyme, 3670  
 Sum out of wit, without ressonne or ryme ;  
 Tha war so wild wist nother of ill nor gude,  
 Blawdit and browdin in thair husbandis blude ; Col. 2.  
 Sum keipand straikis gat werkand woundis sair,  
 And sum rycht rudlie raif out all thair hair ; 3675  
 Sum held hir grip quhill all hir lyre wes revin ;  
 Sum to the erd rycht dogitlie wes drevin ;  
 Rudlie our run rycht law vnder thair feit,  
 In burnis of blude thair facis all did fleit.  
 The lustie lyre, qubit as the lillie flour, 3680  
 Wes maid as reid as ross in symmer schour.  
 Greit petie wes for to behald thair harme ;  
 Ilk lady had ane deid corss in hir arme,  
 And all thair bodie browdin our with blude,  
 So wo thai war wist nother of ill nor gude. 3685  
 Quhat sall I say zow moir in this thing ?  
 Sic wes the count than of that erwell king.  
 Of that denner me tho:ht the lawing deir,  
 Suppois the feist had lestit for ane zeir.  
 In this mater quhair is thair moir to sa ? 3690  
 Bot euerie ladie passit hame hir wa,  
 Weipand full soir and wareand hir werd  
 That euer scho wes ane woman wrocht in erd,  
 Quhilk losit had to hir that wes so deir :  
 And how it hapnit syne efter ze sall heir, 3695

HOW THAT THE LORDIS RAIS AGANES DRUSTUS  
 FOR THE SLAUCHTER OF THE LORDIS IN  
 EWON, AND SLEW HIM IN BATTELL.

The wrak that fell vpoun this erwell king ;  
 For God wald nocht lang suffer sic ane thing.  
 Sum of the lordis that knew weill his conditioun,  
 Of his greit falsheid take ane greit suspitioun,

- And preisit nocht that da to be present, 3700  
 Bot fand ane sunzie for to be absent.  
 And quhen tha hard the greit mortalitie  
 That he had maid that tyme without pitie,  
 Dreidand siclyke for thame that he suld cast,  
 Thairfoir to purpois all togidder past 3705  
 With thair airis that tyme that he had slane,  
 Ane greit power tha passit to the plane.  
 Zit still that tyme, wnwittand of sic thing,  
 In Berigone remanand wes the king,  
 Dreidand na hurt till him nor till his croun, 3710  
 Quhill that ane seig wes laid about the toun.  
 And quhen he knew it wes neidfull to be  
 Gif our the toun, or than for hunger die,  
 Or than in feild debait him with ane brand,  
 Without counsall thair hes he tane on hand 3715  
 To gif battell and byd the better end,  
 And tak the chance that godis will him send.  
 And so he did rycht sone or he wald ceiss,  
 Baith zung and auld within the toun, but leis,  
 Lib.2,f.19b. Arrayit thame vpone ane plane besyde, 3720  
 Col. 1. And baldlie thocht thair battell for till byde.  
 The tother pairt wes of sic multitude,  
 With litill pane or spilling of greit blude  
 Vincust this king, qubair that him self wes slane,  
 And all his counsall siclyke on that plane. 3725  
 Ane king or prince exempill heir ma haue,  
 To put his traist in [n]other fule or knaue,  
 To lufe wisdom and follow nocht thair will,  
 Trowand thairof that no man dar speik ill,  
 Becaus he is ane prince of potestate ; 3730  
 He is begylit thairof rycht weill I wait.  
 He is ane fule the quhilk hes hard and sene  
 So suith exempill as befoir hes bene,  
 And trowis nocht sic thingis as he heiris tell,  
 Quhill that he tak exempill be him sell. 3735

No moir of this : heir will I hald me still,  
 And to my purpois turne agane I will,  
 And tell zow furth the laue of Drustus king,  
 The quhilk deit the nynt zeir of his ring.

HOW THE SONNIS OFF DRUSTUS EFTER HIS DEID  
 FLED IN IRELAND, AND HOW THE LORDIS OF  
 SCOTLAND CHESIT ANE KING.

Quhen his sonis hard [that] he had maid sic end, 3740  
 Tha war sa wild tha wist nocht quhair to wend;  
 Bot in ane bate fled in Ibernia,  
 Rycht zyoung tha war, sa did my author say,  
 Remanit thair rycht lang and mony zeir,  
 Quhill efterwart, as I sall schaw zow heir. 3745  
 The lordis all than of that land ilkone  
 Convenit hes that tyme in Berigone,  
 For to provide for mony diuerss thing,  
 And speciallie than for to cheiss ane king.  
 Quhen tha war set ilkone in thair degre, 3750  
 Ane man that tyme of greit authoritie  
 Amang thame all, he tuke the spech on hand,  
 And thus he said, as I rycht wnderstand.<sup>1</sup>  
 " I traist ze knaw the greit crudelitie  
 " Of king Drustus, and sic mortalitie 3755  
 " Of oure fatheris befoir as he hes maid,  
 " And now also as we did him invaid  
 " With mort battell rycht pertlie on zone plane,  
 " Quhair he him self and all zone folk ar slane.  
 " Quhairfoir I traist his successioun and we 3760  
 " At pece and rest sall neur perfitlie be ;  
 " For weill I wait, get ony of his kin  
 " Auctoritie ather mair or myn,  
 " He sall neur be at concord with the laif,  
 " Quhill he ane mendis or ane vengance haif. 3765

<sup>1</sup> These eight lines from "The lordis" to "wnderstand" precede the first six in the MS.

“ And tha pepill als ar so perelous,  
 “ Full of dissait, doggit and dangerous ;  
 “ My counsall is richt speciall in that thing,  
 Col. 2. “ Cheis nane of thame agane to be maid king,  
 “ Bot cheis sum vther wyss discret zyoung man, 3770  
 “ Of ane gude hous and of ane nobill clan.  
 “ Thair is anew that rycht nobill wald be,  
 “ And tha war put in till auctoritie.”  
 Ilk man that tyme, sa far as thai had feill,  
 Tha said for suitht that he had said full weill ; 3775  
 And said tha wald cheis of ane<sup>1</sup> vther clan,  
 To be thair king, sum wyss discret zyoung man.  
 Sum chesit Ragone, lord of Brigantia ;  
 Sum Coreman, lord of Novantia ;  
 Sum Cornell, lord of Ylis in the se, 3780  
 Becaus he wes of sic auctoritie.  
 The commoun voce agane him did reclame,  
 For-quby he wes ane man of brukill fame.  
 Thus<sup>2</sup> culd thai nocht concord into ane will.  
 Caranus than, the lord of Argatill, 3785  
 Ane man he wes ay for to do the best,  
 And all his tyme he louit pece and rest,  
 Withouttin feid or zit ony offence,  
 And thus he said in opin audience :

HOW THE LORD OF ARGATILL, CALLIT CARANUS,  
 MAID HIS ORESOUN BEFOIR THE LORDIS.

“ Be weill aduisit, my lordis, in this thing ; 3790  
 “ Mak na discord in chesing of zour king.  
 “ For weill ze knaw sic seisma and discord,  
 “ Nocht lang gane syne as men ma zit remord,  
 “ Of Ferquhard, lord wes of Novantia,  
 “ And Dowalus, lord of Brigantia, 3795

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *ane of ane*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *This*.



- “ Sic wickit wayes betuix thame wes wrocht,  
 “ Quhilk all the kinrik till confusioun brocht,  
 “ Clenelie slane doun wes all the nobill blude ;  
 “ The puir pepill put in vyle seruitude  
 “ By the Britis inuaidand ws sa lang ; 3800  
 “ At Berigone tha pat ws in sic thrang  
 “ Quhill we war fane that tyme for falt of meit,  
 “ And greit hunger, ilkane ane vther till eit.  
 “ Colanus als, quhilk wes of knychtheid flour,  
 “ Of manheid, streuth, wisdome and honour, 3805  
 “ For to releif thair greit miseritie  
 “ In that distres thair wes he done to de.  
 “ The nobill wemen of Novantia  
 “ For sic displesour slew thame self alsua,  
 “ And 3oung Reuthar flemit that wes our king ; 3810  
 “ Discord, he said, wes caus of all this thing.  
 “ Thairfoir in tyme bewar quhill all is weill,  
 “ And do 3e nocht, als far as I haif feill,  
 “ Bot this discord, with greit abusioun,  
 “ All wilbe brocht to vter confusioun. 3815  
 “ Then will the Britis enter in our boundis,  
 “ And wirk ws wrang with mony werkand woundis,  
 “ Quhen that we haif na strentht thame to ganestand,  
 “ First sla our self and syne posses our land.  
 “ Sen better is ane wisdome that is bocht 3820  
 “ Than other tua that gottin ar for nocht,  
 “ And we befor sic wisdome bocht full deir,  
 “ My counsall is thairfoir to ws it heir.” Lib. 2. f.20.  
 Quhen he had said, bayth ill and gude ilkman Col. 1.  
 Of his wisdome tha thocht greit wounder than. 3825  
 Becaus he said that tyme so neir the skill,  
 Cheis quhome he wald tha pat it in his will.  
 And he on hand the hail mater hes tane ;  
 With wyss sad men to counsall syne ar gane,  
 Deliuerit als vpoun ane gude maneir, 3830  
 On this same wyss as I sall schaw 3ow heir.

HOW EWENUS, THE PATRUELL OF DRUSTUS,  
 QUHILK FLEMIT WAS BE HIM IN PECHTLAND,  
 WES BROCHT HAME IN SCOTLAND AND CROWNIT  
 KING.

Ane man thair wes that tyme into Pechtland,  
 Fra Scotland flemit, ze sall wnderstand,  
 Be this Drustus of quhome befor I spak,  
 Becaus he schupe his faltis to corrak. 3835  
 Be his counsall as he best wnderstude,  
 Becaus till him he wes so neir of blude,  
 His patruall ane man of nobill fame,  
 Quhilk Ewenus callit wes to name,  
 This Caranus with wordis meik and sueit, 3840  
 Be his counsall hes giffin sic decreit,  
 This ilk Ewenus for to mak thair king,  
 For all his tyme amang thame for to ring.  
 For-quhy he wes neir of the kingis blude,  
 And of the best as all man vnderstude ; 3845  
 And till vmschew all malice and discord,  
 Thairfoir he wald cheis than na vther lord.  
 The hail counsall thocht hail that wes the best,  
 Thairfoir but respekt, or thai wald tak rest,  
 Send for Ewenus, as I vnderstand, 3850  
 With greit honour and brocht him hame in Scot-  
 land.  
 With hail consent that tyme of enerie one,  
 Crownit he wes vpoun the marbell stone.  
 The lordis all he hes gart sweir that tyde  
 Him till obey and at his counsall byde : 3855  
 He wes the first king that in till Scotland  
 Of lordis tuke other aith or band ;  
 All this he did for mair securitie.  
 In all his tyme ane nobill man wes he.  
 Quhen king Drustus, as ze haif hard, wes deid, 3860  
 And endit wes that tyme all pley and pleid,

And Ewenus had ressaut the croun  
 In Berigone with honour and renoun,  
 Rycht just he wes till all men in his dais,  
 And circumspect, as that my author sais ; 3865  
 Liberall and large, weill louit with ilk lord,  
 Maker of peace and haitter of discord.  
 In till his tyme than sic ane law maid he,  
 All zyoung childer sould rudlie nureist be  
 In meit and drink, in haping fra the cald, 3870  
 Quhairby tha mycht than efter quhen tha wald  
 Suffer vneis and do thame litill deir, Col. 2.  
 Quhairthrow tha war moir abill for the weir,  
 To walk and fast at thair awin plesour bayth,  
 Withoutin pane or do thair bodie skayth. 3875  
 With hail consent also of eurilk lord  
 Forbad all play the quhilk mycht mak discord ;  
 And speciallie the cartis and the dyce  
 Quhilk causis men to fall in till all vice ;  
 Commanding thame in zouthheid for to leir 3880  
 To schot and just, and harnes for till weir,  
 That thair fais no way suld wit thair wrang,  
 Thocht tha come sone or baid tha neur so lang.  
 Greit justice als he hes maid our all quhair,  
 Fra place to place, for travell wald nocht spair ; 3885  
 And puneist thame that alway had gane wrang ;  
 Sum he gart heid, and vther sum he gart hang.  
 And as he had perlustrit all the land,  
 The king of Pechtis send him ane seruand,  
 Beseikand him in gudlie haist to speid 3890  
 Agane the Britis to help him in his neid ;  
 For tha war cuming by Dieria,  
 Into Pechland that tyme the greit ost la,  
 And war tha nocht resistit sone anone,  
 Tha schupe to seig the said Camelidone. 3895  
 Gladlie this king than grantit with gud will  
 Into all haist that he suld cum him till ;

And so he did, as ze sall efter heir,  
 With mony wicht that worthie wes but weir.  
 Ane royall ost that wes bayth lang and braid 3900  
 Semblit rycht sone, and syne thair passage maid  
 Vnto the king of Pechtis, quhair he la,  
 Quhilk come to him sone efter the thrid da.  
 Glaid wes the Pechtis quhen tha saw that sycht,  
 For in his gard wes mony gudlie knycht, 3905  
 Weill bodin war with horss, harnes and geir,  
 And all wapynis that neidfull war in weir.  
 Thir tua kingis quhen tha war met togidder,  
 Withoutin let that tyme tha war nocht lidder,  
 Bot manlie movit furth with all thair mane 3910  
 Toward the Britis lyand on ane plane.

HOW THAT THE NYCHT TWYNNIT THE PAIRTEIS,  
 AND HOW THE BRITIS FLED TROWAND THA  
 HAD TYNT THE FEILD.

The Britis als vponn the tother syde,  
 Bownit for battell baldlie for till byde,  
 In gude array, quhair tha stude on ane grene,  
 Scharpe schutting thair ane lang tyme mycht be 3915  
 sene.  
 With sic ane rusche tha ran togidder on raw,  
 Quhill speiris brak, and all in flenderis flaw.  
 Freikis throw force wer fellit in the feild,  
 Helmis wer hewin and schorne war mony  
 scheid,  
 And mony berne wes bludie maid and bla. 3920  
 Rycht furious ane lang tyme fuir tha sua,  
 Lib.2,f20b. But victorie that tyme of ony syde,  
 Col. 1. Tha beirnis bald in battell sa did byde,  
 And faucht sa lang that bayth the sydis war fane  
 To draw abak ane pais vponn the plane. 3925

Be this wes done, it drew rycht neir the nycht,  
 Tha[t] ilk of vther rycht sone hes tint thair sicht.  
 Thir tua kingis to moustour zeid agane ;  
 And quhen tha saw sa mony tha had slane,  
 And thryis als mony woundit war rycht sair, 3930  
 Than tha forsuik that tyme for till fecht mair ;  
 Syne passit on in all the haist tha ma  
 To Pechtland hillis, till on the morne wes da.  
 The Britis als abasit wes rycht far  
 Trowand siclike that tha had gottin the war, 3935  
 And left the feild ane litil forrow da,  
 And all the spulze, and passit hame thair wa.  
 Tha war sa feird, and dred that tha suld fynd  
 thame,  
 Tha fled like fyre and lukit neuir behind thame.  
 Syne on the morne, quhen it was fair da lycht, 3940  
 Bayth Scot and Pecht quhair that tha la on the  
 hycht,  
 Persauit weill, quhen tha beheld the plane,  
 The Britis war fled, quhair of tha war full fane.  
 Exploraturis that tyme tha send till spy  
 Gif ony baid in buschment neir hand by ; 3945  
 Trowand rycht weill it wes done for a trane,  
 Doun fra the hycht to draw thame to the plane.  
 The spyis come agane to thame and schew  
 That tha war gane ; and when thir kingis knew,  
 In gudlie haist descendit fra the licht ; 3950  
 In gude array syne raikit on full richt,  
 And all the spuilze in the feild tha fand,  
 Helme and habrik, bow, bukler and brand,  
 Gold and siluer, and all vther geir,  
 Dewydit hes amang the men of weir ; 3955  
 And all the heirschip, tane wes of befoir,  
 To euerilk steid tha gart agane restoir.  
 Greit riches als, as ze sall vnderstand,  
 This Ewenus that tyme brocht in Scotland ;

And tha that had in feild thair fatheris slane. 3960  
 Rewairdit war quhen he come hame agane,  
 And tratit weill with him in all thair dais.  
 Sone efter syne, as that my author sais,  
 He biggit hes vpone ane roche of stone  
 Ane strang castell that callit wes Ewone ; 3965  
 Ewonewin than, efter Ewenus,  
 It namit wes, the storie tellis thus ;  
 Quhilk royallie with lyme and stane wes wallit,  
 And now to name Ewnstafage it is callit.  
 This nobill king in sporting and in playes, 3970  
 In pece and rest, syne leuit all his dayes ;  
 Justice he gart exerce ouir all his land,  
 Than nane fauour quhomewith ane falt he fand ;  
 In euerie pairt ordanit ane speciall iuge,  
 Sua that no faltour suld get na refuge ; 3975  
 And sindrie seruandis for to seis the land,  
 In ony pairt quhair thai ane faltour fand,  
 Col. 2. Without refuge vnto the law him bring.  
 Syne efterwart, this worthie nobill king,  
 Quhen he had rung the space of nynetene zeir, 3980  
 He tuke his leif and baid no langer heir.  
 The lordis all that tyme with greit honour,  
 Hes saisit him syne in his sepulture,  
 Besyde in Ewin, in till ane feild full fair,  
 Quhair that him self befoir chesit his lair. 3985  
 Syne sumptuslie vpone his graif they set  
 Ane carne of stonis togither cumulat,  
 Rycht round and rownid vpone a rycht huge hycht,  
 That mycht be sene in euerie mannis sicht ;  
 In till ane taikin, and ane suir sing, 3990  
 Vnder that carne that thair la sic ane king,  
 In till his tyme of sic auctoritie ;  
 The quhilk carne zit remanis for till se.

HOW KING DRUSTUS TUA SONIS DISCORDIT FOR  
THE RYCHT OF THE CROUN, AND HOW FALS  
GILLUS WITH TRESSOUN SLEW THAME. c

Quhen passit wes this gudè king Ewenus, <sup>6</sup>  
 In the same tyme tua sonis of Drustus, 3995  
 The quhilk befoir fled in Ybernia,  
 Nocht lang gane syne, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Quhilk Ewenus brocht hame agane befoir  
 His deith ane quhile with greit honour and gloir,  
 And traistit thame, as he suld, in all thing, 4000  
 As did pertene till sonis of ane king.  
 And thir tua syne, sone efter he wes deid,  
 Betuix thame selfis thair rais grit stryf and feid,  
 About the croun quhilk of thame had the rycht;  
 Twynnis tha war, and bayth borne on ane nycht. 4005  
 Ane bastard sone thair wes of Ewenus,  
 Quhilk till his name wes callit Gillus,  
 Dissimulat, of greit subtilitie,  
 Vicious and vane, full of crudelitie.  
 Warlie he wrocht betuix thame da and nycht; 4010  
 To gar thame [hait] he hes done that he nicht,  
 Quhill with the ane, quhillis with the vther,  
 Garrand ilk trow he had mair rycht than vther,  
 To that effect tha suld discord and stryve,  
 Quhairthrow he thocht tha suld bayth loss the lyfe; 4015  
 Trowand rycht weill gif his bruther wer deid,  
 To bruke the croun but contrapley or pleid.  
 And all the pepill he gart trow ilk deill,  
 All that he wrocht wes for the commoun weill.

HOW GILLUS SET ANE DAY TO CONCORD THIR  
BRETHER, AND SYNE SLEW THAME BAITH, AND  
THAN EFTER OCCUPEIT THE CROUN.

With hail consent that tyme of euery lord, 4020  
 He set ane 'day to caus thame till concord.

Quhen cumin wes ilk part that tyme and place,  
This foirsaid Gillus, witht ane fenzeit face,

· · · · ·  
· · · · · 1

- Lib.2, f.22. How tratourlie agane him tha rebellit,  
Col. 1. Fra toun and kinrik falslie him expellit ; 4025  
Beseikand thame with all humanitie,  
Of thair kyndnes for to mak him supplie,  
For till restoir him till his croun agane.  
Befoir thame all he hes promittit plane,  
On to Yreland that he sall gif rycht frie 4030  
The Ylis all liand within the se,  
For thair supple tha suld haif to thair wage,  
Perpetuallie to bruke in heretage.  
Of that conditioun thai war all content,  
And euerilk man thairto gaif his consent. 4035

HOW GILLUS COME FURTH OF YRELAND WITH  
ANE GREIT ARMY INTO THE YLIS.

Of men of weir ane rycht greit multitude,  
With schip and boit, tha furneist to the flude ;  
And gaif Gillus to governe and to gyde,  
At his command at lyffe and deid to byde.  
And so tha did, syne glaidlie ar tha gone, 4040  
All to the se to cum in Albione.  
Cadallus syne, quhair he wes in ane yle,  
Fra he gat wit within ane litill quhile,  
With bark and boit tha tuke the se ilkone,  
In gudlie haist syne come to Berigone. 4045  
The lordis all he hes gart thame convene,  
But circumstance, the suith for to be sene,

<sup>1</sup> Folio 21 missing.



Qulhome thai wald cheis that tyme to be thair king ;  
 For neid it war into sa greit ane thing,  
 Agane sic power of thair injure 4050  
 Than with ane king that [thai] sould gydit be.

HOW THE LORDIS, AT THE COUNSALL OF CADAL-  
 LUS, CHESIT ANE KING CALLIT EWENUS, THE  
 SONE OF ANE NOBILL MAN CORANUS, THE  
 BRUTHER OF FENANUS.

In that same tyme thair wes ane nobill man,  
 To name Ewenus he wes callit than ;  
 The sone he wes of ane hecht Coranus,  
 That bruther wes to gude king Fenanus ; 4055  
 Intill ane yle he wes ryecht lang vnknawin,  
 Flemit be Gillus, and durst nocht be schawin.  
 With haill consent that tyme of ald and ȝing,  
 This ilk Ewenus crownit than wes king.  
 Ane greit armye he laid at the se cost, 4060  
 For to resist this Gillus and his ost.  
 Fra Gillus knew him gatherit on the land,  
 Turnit his purpois on ane vther hand ;  
 Syne with his ost, in all the haist tha ma,  
 Left Albione and passit in Yla. 4065  
 Within schort quhile he maid it all on steir,  
 Hereit and brint oure all, bayth far and neir ;  
 He left na leid thair leveand vpone lyfe,  
 Ȝoung or ald, other man or wyffe ;  
 All thing sielyke, that micht nocht with thame pas, 4070 Col. 2.  
 Intill ane fyre tha brint it all in as.  
 Quhen he had done syne passit hame away,  
 With greit spulze in till Ybernia.

HOW CADALLUS PASSIT IN YRELAND WITH ANE  
GREIT ARMYE, AND SLEW THIS FALS GILLUS.

Quhen Ewenus this greit harme did persauē,  
 He maid his vow ane mendis for to haif. 4075  
 Postpone no langar in that tyme wald he,  
 Bot sone he set ane armie to the se;  
 With bark and barge, bot and ballingar,  
 Quhen tha war furneist tuke thair leve to fair;  
 And Cadallus he maid thair governour, 4080  
 Quhilk efterwart that wan sua greit honour.  
 Fra Beregone thair passage that tha maid,  
 Leit saillis fall and passit of the raid;  
 The wynd was fair and tha salit rycht fast,  
 To Yberland the narrest way thair past, 4085  
 And in ane firth ane nobill hevin tha fand,  
 Quhair tha in boittis passit all to land.  
 All flemit men into Ybernia,  
 Quhen that tha knew quhair that Cadallus la,  
 Tha drew till him in hundrethis heir and thair; 4090  
 Ilk da by da his ost grew mair and mair.  
 And fra this Gillus sic thing vnderstude,  
 Sone he hes met him with ane multitude  
 Of nobill men that war rycht wyss in weir,  
 Weill put to poynt in horss, armour and geir. 4095  
 Thir nobill men, that worthie war and wycht,  
 War semblit sone quhair mony deid wes dycht,  
 With mony straik, that stalwert wes and strang,  
 Tha rappit on quhill all the rochis rang,  
 With mony raice and mony reuthfull reird, 4100  
 Quhill all with blude broderit wes the eird.  
 Into that stour that wes bayth stiff and strang,  
 The Ireland men, quhen tha had fochtin lang,  
 Seand thame self that tyme in to sic perrell,  
 Knawand so weill tha had ane euill querrell; 4105

And for that caus rycht mony left Gillus  
 Into the feild, and come till Cadallus.  
 Quhen Gillus saw his men had left him sua,  
 He wes so will he wist nocht quhair to ga;  
 Traistand that tyme he sould be traisit be, 4110  
 With few thairfoir tuke purpois for to fle;  
 In ane thik wod, that wes thair neir hand by,  
 To hyde him thair he fled rycht haistely.  
 And quhen his men persaut he wes fled,  
 Tha thocht rycht euill that tyme that tha had sped, 4115  
 And all [for] wrang had<sup>1</sup> partit [with] thair pelfe,  
 To fecht for him wald nocht fecht for him selfe.  
 Without delay tha came Cadallus till,  
 Both les and mair, and pat thame in his will;  
 And he agane ressaut thame all sworne 4120  
 For till be trew till him bot evin and morne.  
 Syne in this wod he hes send thame ilkone  
 To seik and se quhair this Gillus wes gone.  
 Rycht circumspect about with mony spy  
 Gart sett the wod rycht sone and suddanelie; 4125  
 And sua tha socht ane da till end or tua,  
 Quhill at the last thai fand him quhair he lay  
 In till ane coif neir hungrit to the deid.  
 Tha slew him thair, and syne straik of his heid,  
 And on ane speir buir to the oist agane: 4130  
 Quhen tha it saw than war thai all full fane.  
 This wes the end of Gillus and his deidis,  
 As in this buik yow ma se quhen yow reidis.

Lib.2,f.22b.  
 Col. 1.

HOW CADALLUS, EFTER THE SLAUCHTER OF GILLUS,  
 COME HOME IN ALBIONE WITH VICTORIE.

Quhen this Gillus wes slane vpoun this wyss,  
 And endit wes Cadallus interpryss, 4135

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hard*.

And bownit hame and wald na langer byde,  
 And tuke with him greit spulze in the tyde,  
 That he had wyn into Ybernia  
 To recompance the spulze of Yla.  
 This beand done, with all his men ilkone, 4140  
 He tuke the se to cum in Albione.  
 With bark and barge, and mony gay gala,  
 To schipburd went syne efter on ane da.  
 Rycht souerlie tha salit for ane quhile  
 In half ane da the space of threttie myle; 4145  
 Syne Eolus his bugill blew so loud,  
 That all the se with schouris he did schroud.  
 Thair wes no thing bot harrok, how and cry,  
 Sum bad on luffe, and vther sum hald by;  
 And sum bad how, and vther sum bad baill, 4150  
 Sum bad on le, and vther sum strek sail;  
 Sum with ane bub had blawin doun hir blind,  
 Sum with ane torss la capand on the wynd;  
 Sum gat ane rais gart all hir ribbis rak,  
 Sum gat ane coup gart all hir [tymmaris] crak; 4155  
 Sum in the wynd la capand thair so he  
 Quhill scho tuke in than bayth at lufe and le;  
 Sic fersie flaggis fra the hevin did fall  
 Tha war in poynt that tyme to perische all.  
 In that storne so stranglie tha war straist, 4160  
 Mony war lost and mycht no langer lest.  
 Sum than on craig, and vther sum on sand,  
 Waill few that tyme come levand to the land.  
 The pepill all, that duelland wer neirby,  
 Come to the cost thair hame-cuming to spy, 4165  
 Of yair tydenis than glaidlie for till heir,  
 And euirilk man efter his kynd till speir;  
 And euirilk wyfe to se hir husband;  
 And quhen tha saw sa few men cum to land,  
 The zoutting, zouling, and the bailfull beir, 4170  
 Tha maid that tyme wes hiddieous for till heir.

This ilk Cadallus, quhen he come to land,  
 Vpoun his feit for wanes mycht nocht stand,  
 Bot on his kneis la fell down in hy,  
 Syne to the hevin kest vp ane cairfull cry, 4175  
 Wareand the tyme that he wes wrocht in erd,  
 And als fortoun had gevin him sic werd, Col. 2.  
 Of his awin men to se sa mony de,  
 Schort quhile befoir had win sic victorie.  
 Be this the king wes cumand at the hand, 4180  
 And this Cadallus, as I wnderstand,  
 In armis tuke and maid him for to ryiss,  
 And confort him syne on ane gudlie wyss.  
 "Deir freind," he said, "of cheualrie the flour,  
 "Throw quhome this tyme we haif win sic honour, 4185  
 "Rycht weill we aucht to wirschip the alway  
 "With haill power in all thing that we may;  
 "Aboue all man on erd to lufe the best,  
 "And honour the ay quhill thi tyme may lest.  
 "Thow art oure gyde, our governour and girth, 4190  
 "Quhy murnis thow, haifand sic caus of mirth?  
 "Hes thow nocht done, doand thi self no deir,  
 "All thing pertenis to ane man of weir;  
 "Sautit thi self and vincust hes thi fa,  
 "Spuilzeit the feild and brocht awa thi pra? 4195  
 "How culd ane man in erd wyn mair honour  
 "Na thow hes wyn rycht stranglie in zone stour?  
 "Thocht oure godis and fals Fortoun this tyme  
 "Hes wrocht thair will, therof thow hes no cryme,  
 "Suithtlie to say that I dar vndertak, 4200  
 "Thocht we haif skayth therof thow hes no lak.  
 "Nor to thi fa it can be na honour,  
 "No lak to the, suppois that aventure  
 "And fals Fortoun hes turnit so hir quheill,  
 "Is none to wit bot scho that I wait weill. 4205  
 "Be blyth," he said, "sen this perrell is past,  
 "We man forzet all dolour at the last;

“ And all the skaith we haif tane in this place  
 “ We will forzet within ane litill space.  
 “ Bot the wirschip that thow hes win and gloir, 4210  
 “ In to this erd it will lest euir moir,  
 “ Quhill ony leid hes lyfe thairon to think,  
 “ Or man levand can writ with pen and ink.”  
 Wyslie this king, with wordis balme and sueit,  
 He spak till him for to confort his spreit, 4215  
 Quhill at the last he gart him leve his mone;  
 Syne altogidder passit till Ewone,  
 And thair remanit quhill the auchtane da,  
 Syne tuke his leif and passit hame his wa,  
 He and his men on till Brigance agane; 4220  
 And all his tyme thair still he did remane  
 In Epiacum, in that nobill toun,  
 In peax and rest with honour and renoun.  
 Quchen Ewenus knew that this Gillus wes deid,  
 And he mycht leve withoutin pley or pleid; 4225  
 With his counsall that hes he tane on hand  
 Within schort quhill to visie all his land.  
 And so he did within ane lytill space,  
 Gude pece and rest syne maid in euerilk place;  
 In to na part that tyme wes ony pley, 4230  
 And all his lordis did him weill obey.  
 Sone efter that, so did my author sa,  
 He passit hes into Brigantia,  
 Lib. 2, f. 23. To Epiacum, into that royall toun,  
 Col. 1. Quhair that he wes ressaut with renoun, 4235  
 With game and gle, honour and gloir,  
 Be Cadallus, of quhome I spak befor.  
 Greit joy it was that tyme to se thame meit,  
 With hamelie hailsing, and with wordis sueit,  
 With tender talking, and with humbill cheir, 4240  
 With freindlie faour as<sup>1</sup> than did effeir.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *and*.

And for the honour this Cadallus wan,  
 This nobill king hes gevin till him than  
 All the strenthis in Brigantia  
 In heretage, suppois thai had bene ma ; 4245  
 And all the laue als of tha landis frie,  
 Euir till be haldin in regalitie.

HOW EWENUS WEDDIT THE KING OF PECHTIS  
 DOCHTER, CALLIT SIORA, AND RENEWIT THE  
 BAND.

Quhen this wes done this nobill Ewenus  
 And his lordis, my author sais thus,  
 The king of Pechtis met at the bordour syde, 4250  
 With his lordis that mekill war of pryde ;  
 And thair agane renewit hes the band  
 Betuix thame tua, that it sould euir stand  
 In forme and effect siclike as of befoir.  
 Quhen this wes done withoutin ony moir, 4255  
 The king of Pechtis, callit wes Gethus,  
 Aue dochter had, my author sayis thus,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Siora,  
 Bricht as Lucene, and fair as dame Flora.  
 This king Ewenus for hir pulchritude, 4260  
 Hir blewmand bewtie, and hir nobill blude,  
 In matrimonie hes tane hir till his wyffe,  
 To leue with hir for terme of all his lyffe.  
 At Epiaecum, in that royall toum,  
 With mony lord and mony bald barroun, 4265  
 And with the principall of the Drevedes,  
 This mariage wes maid that tyme but les,  
 With singing, dansing, and with nobill cheir,  
 With sport and play that hevinlie wes to heir ;  
 In sic fassoun, quhill on the fyftene da, 4270  
 Ilk man take leif, syne passit hame his wa.

This king Ewenus and his lustie quene,  
 Of quhome befoir as ze haif hard me ne,

At euerilk lord tha tuke thair leue anone,  
 Syne in all haist passit to Berigone. 4275  
 And as he wes hame rydand be the wa,  
 Ane messinger come furth of Lugia,  
 And schew till him how that ane hecht Balus,  
 Of Orkna king, my author tellis thus,  
 Quhilk hereit had, bayth on fute and horss, 4280  
 All Lugia that now is callit Ross,  
 And all the landis als, bayth mair and les,  
 Col. 2. Of Cornana now is callit Catnes.  
 And quhen the king hes hard this messinger  
 Sic tydenis tell that tyme he<sup>1</sup> wes not sueir; 4285  
 With ane greit ost, with all the haist tha ma,  
 He passit hes than fordward to Lugia.

HOW BALUS WAS VINCUST IN FEILD, AND SYNE  
 EFTER, FOR GREIT DISPLESOUR, SLEW HIMSELF.

Quhen this Balus hard of his cunning tell,  
 He tuke sic dreid he durst na langer duell.

To saue him self tuke purpois for to flie 4290  
 In Corna[na] amang tha hillis hie,  
 With all his gaird, ther trowand to get girth  
 Neirby his flot that la by Panetland Firth.  
 He wes betraisit that tyme for all his trane.  
 Or he wes passit half gait our the plane, 4295  
 This king Ewenus, with ane royall ost,  
 Ryeht clos he come betuix him and the cost.  
 Quhen Balus saw it mycht na better be,<sup>2</sup>  
 To ray he zeid ryeht sharplie under scheild,  
 Upone that fell to gif Ewenus feild. 4300

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hes*.

<sup>2</sup> Here a line seems to be wanting.



The Scottis than, quhilk war of sic valour,  
 So wyss and wycht, so strang als in that stour,  
 Wyth litill force that da tha wan the feild,  
 Quhair Balus men al hallelie war keild.  
 And tha that fled in schippis to pas hame, 4305  
 In Pentland Firth wer all drownit in the fame.  
 Of all his ost rycht few thair did remane  
 Come with him thair, bot ouyer tane or slane.  
 Quhen this Balus knew weill and understude  
 His men all slane, or ellis drownit in the flude, 4310  
 And he onlyve wes left syne all alane,  
 Or he in handis levand suld be tane,  
 With ane lang knyfe that tyme himself he slew.  
 This endit he; ze ma weill traist it trew.  
 Syne this Ewenus, and his men ilkone, 4315  
 Quhen this wes done passit till Berigone.  
 Syne efter that, as my author did sa,  
 Foundit ane citie upoun Lochia,  
 Into Lochquhaber, law down be the se,  
 With doubill dykis and wallis that war he, 4320  
 Quhilk Inverlochtie callit is to name,  
 And syne efter ane toun wes of greit fame;  
 Quhairat the schippis come ilk da be da,  
 Fra France and Flanderis, and fra Spane alsua.  
 Sone efter that ane litill, as I ges, 4325  
 Foundit ane toun upoun the watter of Nes,  
 Quhilk Invernes to name that toun wes callit,  
 With stone and lyme rycht worthebie wes wallit.  
 Quhair mony merchand come ilk zeir be zeir  
 With merchandice as that tyme did effeir. 4330  
 Quhilk callit is that same name in thir daies,  
 It callit wes than, as my author sayes.  
 Quhen foundit wer thir citeis tua rycht fair,  
 With all fassone rycht plesand and preclair,  
 Unto Brigance passit this Ewenus, 4335  
 For till concord the sonnys of Cadallus,

- Lib.2,f.23b. The quhilk rycht sone efter thair faderis deid,  
 Col. 1. For his richis thai fell in stryfe and feid.  
 Bot fra thai come in presence of the king,  
 And schew till him the maner of all thing, 4340  
 Then he considerit also les and moir  
 The causis quhy that thai discordit soir.  
 Throw his greit wit that tyme, and his prudence,  
 Rycht circumspect als of intelligence,  
 Accordit hes thai brether in that steid, 4345  
 Without offence of ony part or feid.  
 So weill this king louit this Brigans lord,  
 Efter his deid, his deidis till remord,  
 He hes gart mak of plesand marbell stone  
 Ane fair image till his figure anone, 4350  
 Aboue his graif syne set it hie in trone.  
 Syne sindrie dais ordand till be done  
 Solempnitlie with sensin sacrifice,  
 Richt glorious as that tyme wes the gyis.  
 Quhen this wes done the king passit agane 4355  
 To Berigone, quhair that he did remane  
 In pece and rest quhill that infirmitie  
 Hes tuicht him with sic melancolie,  
 Fra gude Cadallus did fra him depairt,  
 Quhome that he luifit als tender as his hart. 4360  
 And quhen he saw that his seiknes alway  
 Lost him no thing, bot grew ilk day by day,  
 And his dolour the langar ay the moir,  
 This Ederus, of quhome I spak befoir,  
 With his nureis fled out of Mona Yle, 4365  
 As ze hard sa befoir ane litill quhile,  
 And nepos als he wes till Drustus king,  
 Befoir thame all in presence he gart bring.  
 Syne said till him than of ane gude maneir,  
 Rycht freindlie as I sall schaw zow heir : 4370  
 " Deir freind," he said, "so tender is to me,  
 " I the beseik gif neur autoritie

" To unjust men, and se scharplie thow luke  
 " In thi kinrik that nane sic office bruke.  
 " In greit causis be ay thi awin self juge, 4375  
 " For euirilk falt se that thow find refuge ;  
 " And beir thi self so wyslie till ilk wicht,  
 " That nocht in the be fand all tyme bot rycht.  
 " And, mairattour, put neur the commoun weill  
 " Into the handis of Fortoun nor hir quheill. 4380  
 " For and thow do, bewar rycht sone with all,  
 " Or euer thow wit thow will sone get ane fall."  
 This beand said, as I haif said zow heir,  
 Quhen of this king completit wes sevin zeir,  
 He tuke his leif and passit to the laue 4385  
 In Epiacum, syne gaist wes in graif.  
 Heir endis now, quho<sup>1</sup> lykis sic to luke,  
 Ewenus deidis and the secund buke.

HOW EDERUS, EFTER THE DEID OF EWENUS, WES Lib. 3.  
CROWNIT, AND OF [HIS] NOBILL DEIDIS.

Efter the tyme of gude Ewenus king,  
 Ederus than wes crownit for to ring. 4390  
 In all tyme quhilk wes sa acceptabill  
 To God and man, and als so honorabill ; Col. 2.  
 Quhilk efterwart previt weill in deid,  
 As in this buik ze sall se quhen ze reid.  
 Greit rest he had the tyme of all his ring, 4395  
 In Albione wes neur ane better king ;  
 Weill louit him all man into his dais,  
 Plesand he wes in euerie gudlie plais.  
 The maist plesour he had in ony pla,  
 In hunting wes, my author sa did sa. 4400

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *quhy*.

Sua hapnit him, efter ane litill quhile,  
 Neir Argatill, quhilk callit is Argyle,  
 With mony nobill in his companie,  
 Amang the hillis at the hunting be.  
 Fra Argatill thair come ane messinger, 4405  
 And schew till him, as ze sall efter heir,  
 Ane bellomy, that callit wes Bredus,  
 Quhilk cousing wes wnto the fals Gillus,  
 That Cadallus sumtyme in Ireland slew,  
 Not lang gane syne, befoir as I zow schew; 4410  
 How that he come that tyme with ane greit ost,  
 And enterit in at Argatelin cost,  
 And waistit had the land all far and neir,  
 Bayth brint and slew, that horribill wes till heir;  
 Rycht cruellie gart sla baith ald and zing, 4415  
 For to reveng the deid of Gillus king.  
 Quhen Ederus hard thir tydenis tauld,  
 As he that wes ane bellomy full bald,  
 He maid na baid, bot bownit him that nycht  
 To Argatill with mony worthie wycht. 4420  
 Syne preualie that nycht and all his ost,  
 He come rycht clois unto the west se cost,  
 Quhair Bridus schippis and thair schip men la;  
 He slew the men and brint the schippis or da.  
 Syne on the morne, sone be the da wes lycht, 4425  
 And Bredus war baith met into sycht,  
 That force it wes to Bredus in that tyde  
 Be tane or slane, or bargane till abyde,  
 He take the feild that saim tyme as he mocht,  
 Quhair strenth and manheid vailit him rycht nocht. 4430  
 Him self wes slane, mony to deid was done,  
 Tha that remanit efter fled rycht sone,  
 Sum heir, sum thair, without ony remeid,  
 Tha war all tane, syne hangit to the deid.  
 Quhen this wes done, he and his men ilk one, 4435  
 With all plesour ar past till Ewone.

HOW EDERUS, EFTER THE GRIT VICTORIE OF  
BRIDUS COME HAME AGANE, MET WITH ANE  
HERAULD SEND FRA CASSIBILAN FOR HELP  
AGANE JULIUS.

And as he come hame, rydand be the way,  
Thair hes he met, as my author did say,  
Ane messinger wes cuming him forgane,  
Wes send that tyme fra king Cassibelan, 4440  
King of the Britis, of greit honour and fame,  
The messinger Androgeus hecht to name; Lib. 3, f.24.  
Askand at him that tyme help and supple, Col. 1.  
Rycht meklie than with all humanitie,  
Aganis the Romanis without ressonne or rycht 4445.  
That conquiest all the warld with their mycht.  
Greit Julius Cesar als thair empriour,  
Quhilk in his tyme of all knychtis wes flour,  
In France that tyme wes cumand to the sie,  
To cum in Britane with his cheualrie, 4450.  
And for to weild all Britane at his will  
Or tak the chance that godis will send him till.  
Sayand also that thai had tane in handis  
Exploratouris quhilk tha had bund in bandis,<sup>1</sup>  
That Julius thame secretlie did schew 4455.  
The veritie of all thingis as they knew.  
Of his desyre Ederus wes content,  
Ȝit neurtheles, or he wald gif consent,  
Still at his rest he bad him thair remane  
Quhill the thrid day, syne for to cum agane; 4460  
All his desyre that tyme bayth greit and small  
He sould propone befor the lordis all.  
And so he did syne efter the thrid da  
Befor thame all; as he said I sall sa.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *landis*.

HOW ANDROGEUS SCHEW HIS CREDENCE BEFOIR  
EDERUS, KING OF SCOTLAND.

This Britane lord, quhilk hecht Androgeus, 4465  
 In all Britane wes nane mair curious  
 For wit and wisdom, honour and renoun;  
 He wes than best of Britane nixt the croun.  
 Befoir thame all that wes thair, young and ald,  
 On guddle wyss his message thus hes tald: 4470  
 " O king Edeir, and victor inuincibill!  
 " Traist well," he said, " this is no fenzeit fabill;  
 " That my desyre is nocht, I mak zow plane,  
 " All for the weill of king Cassibilane,  
 " Nor zit salbe, as far as I haif feill, 4475  
 " Bot quhilk pertenis to the commoun weill  
 " Of Albione, as ze ma weill considder,  
 " Quhen ze haif hard quhairfoir that I come hidder.  
 " Traist weill," he said, " sen our godis aboue,  
 " Quhome that we aucht to honour and to lufe, 4480  
 " In Albione hes plantit, I suppois,  
 " The perfite pepill, bald and bellicois,  
 " To that effect, I vnderstand for me,  
 " To leif in pece, concord, and vnitie;  
 " And euerie ane in neid for till help vther, 4485  
 " Sidlike alway as to his carnall bruther;  
 " And speciallie quhen thair apperis ane perrell  
 " Till ony part withoutin caus or querrell,  
 " Quhilk is contrarious to the commoun weill,  
 " Movit but conscience, fayth, or zit gude zeill, 4490  
 " Rycht hastilie for to remeid in tyme.  
 " For quhen the bird is lampit in the lyme,<sup>1</sup>  
 " It helpis nocht that tyme thocht scho be skar,  
 " Becaus in tyme that scho culd not bewar

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lyne*.

- “ Efter the perrell for to seik remeid, 4495  
 “ As quha wald gif ane drogare to the deid.  
 “ Be this,” he said, “ ʒe ma considder cleir,  
 “ In Albione sic perrell dois appeir, Col. 2.  
 “ Quhilk is contrarious to the commoun weill  
 “ Of Albione, als far as I can feill, 4500  
 “ Be the Romanis quhilk, in this warld wyde,  
 “ Hes no compair of arrogance and pryde.  
 “ Oure all this warld thair power hes bene schawin,  
 “ For tha war neur content ʒit of thair awin,  
 “ Quhill euerie land, that la neur hand thame by, 4505  
 “ Wer subjugat vnto thair senʒeory.  
 “ And now thai seik vnto the warld end,  
 “ To ws Britis till thame befoir vnkend,  
 “ And schapis nocht for no leid for to lat  
 “ Quhill we to thame be maid `all subjugat ; 4510  
 “ Syne occupie oure land and strenthis all,  
 “ And we to thame be maid bundis and thrall ;  
 “ And sua to leue, for terme of all oure lyfe,  
 “ In servitude with thame bayth man and wyfe ;  
 “ Syne schamefullie to be baith da and nycht 4515  
 “ Bayth [wyfe] and barnes defoullit in oure sycht.  
 “ Far farar is ane thousand fald to de,  
 “ Or leif witht thame in sic meseritie ;  
 “ Dalie with thame thus for to be our thrawin,  
 “ Quhair we war wynt to be fre within our awin. 4520  
 “ Gif hapnis thame, as God forbid so be,  
 “ Of ws this tyme haue superioritie,  
 “ And tak oure strenthis all at thair awin handis,  
 “ Subdew oure selffis and occupie oure landis,  
 “ Baith wyfe and man all into bondage brocht ; 4525  
 “ Quhen this is done, sone efter dout ʒe nocht,  
 “ Bot tha will preue to do siclike to ʒow,  
 “ Suppois rycht litill that ʒe dout thame now.  
 “ My counsall is in tyme se for remeid ;  
 “ It is oure lait to juke quhen that the heid 4530

- " Is fra the hals, and the nek bane brokin,  
 " Or to repent quhen that the word is spokin ;  
 " As it is said rycht oft, in mony ryme,  
 " All thing gois weill quhen it is tane in tyme.  
 " Traist weill," he said, " as ze ma eth consider, 4535  
 " All in ane will and ze be knit togidder,  
 " For all thair pryde, and greit prattik in weir,  
 " To ws this tyme tha ma do litill deir.  
 " Be we diuidit in oure self and brokin,  
 " Rycht sone of us thair harme ma be wrokin ; 4540  
 " Ane threfald string is straitar on ane bow,  
 " Nor singill cord quhilk is of better tow.  
 " Consider als your self, and ze ma se  
 " Of Carthago the greit miseritie ;  
 " Quhen that the toun wes into bondage brocht, 4545  
 " And tha of Carthage did all that tha mocht  
 " Vnder the Romanis for to leif in peace,  
 " Zit be no way tha schupe thame for to ceis,  
 " Quhill all the nobill that tyme of the toun  
 " Destroyit war and the citie put down, 4550  
 " The commoun pepill put in seruitude ;  
 " Quhairby," he said, " ze man schortlie conclude  
 " Siclike to ws and thai ma maister be,  
 " And als to zow, as ze sall rycht sone se.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " O thow nobill Edeir ! 4555  
 " Tak tent to this I haif said to the heir,  
 Lib.3.f.24b. " As thow art king constant and curious,  
 Col. 1. " Worthie and wyss, vailzeand and victorius :  
 " Exers thi strenth, think on thi grit manheid,  
 " Agane thi fa for to defend in neid, 4560  
 " Agane this perrell apperand till ilkone  
 " That levand is this da in Albione."  
 Quhen that wes said this Androg held him still,  
 Of his desyre to heir the lordis will ;  
 And tha that tyme commandit him in hy, 4565  
 Quhill thai aduisit ane litill till pas by.



And so he did richt haistelie anone,  
 That thai to counsall togidder all ar gone.  
 In that counsall thair wes no contrarie ;  
 With schort auisement that tyme but ony tarie, 4570  
 Tha haif decretit all into ane will,  
 Help and supple the Britis to send till.  
 Androgeus to thame syne hes gart call  
 This nobill king in presens of thame all ;  
 To him he said than on ane gude maneir, 4575  
 In gude effect, as ze sall efter heir.

THE ANSUER OF EDERUS, KING OF SCOTTIS, TO  
 ANDROGEUS, LORD IN BRITANE.

“ Deir freind,” he said, “ we haif considerit weill  
 “ All your deshir als far as we haif feill ;  
 “ Quhilk is till ws honest and honorabill,  
 “ And ilk siclyke plesand and proffittabill, 4580  
 “ As to defendoure heretage and rycht,  
 “ Grantit till ws be oure godis of mycht,  
 “ In this perrell apperand till ilkone  
 “ That setis hes this tyme in Albione.  
 “ For weill I knaw the Romanis hes desyre 4585  
 “ Of all this world to haif the haill impyre,  
 “ As I hard tell of thair greit tirranie  
 “ In till all pairt quhair tha haif victorie ;  
 “ The nobill blude put to confusioun all,  
 “ The commoun pepill boundis maid and thrall ; 4590  
 “ Bayth wyfe and barne defoullit in thair sycht,  
 “ Wedowis or wyffis gettis bot litill rycht ;  
 “ The pur pepill of thame standis sic aw,  
 “ In cart and wane tha gar tham drug and draw,  
 “ Quhilk in this world is horribill for till heir ; 4595  
 “ And libertie to man, quhilk is so deir,  
 “ Translatit is into vyle seruitude,  
 “ And bondage maid of all the nobill blude.

- “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ as I consider now,  
 “ As God forbid tha be victoris of zow, 4600  
 “ That we suld find withoutin ony fail  
 “ Tha suld sone efter scharplie ws assaill.  
 “ As for myself, schortlie I say for me,  
 “ Moir honest war with honor for till die,  
 “ In just battell and in oure defence, 4605  
 “ Quhome to we did neur wrang nor violence,  
 “ Nor for to leif with thame in lack and schame,  
 “ Efter oure deid syne haif so vyle ane name.  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ we haif decretit now,  
 “ In gudlie haist for to send help to zow, 4610  
 “ With all oure power to convene in vne  
 “ That settis hes now in till Albione,  
 “ For to defend ws fra oure commoun fa.”  
 Col. 2. Quhen Androgeus hes hard him say sa,  
 He thankit him and all the lordis ilkone, 4615  
 And tuke his leif and hamewart syne is gone.

HOW EDERUS SEND ANE GYDE WITH ANDROGEUS  
 TO THE KING OF PECHTIS, CALLIT GETHUS.

Ederus king hes send with him that tyde  
 Ane messinger, him to convoy and gyde  
 To Gethus, king of Pechtis in tha dais,  
 Exhortand him siclike, my author sais, 4620  
 Rycht freindfullie for his help and supplie  
 Agane thair fais in sic necessitie.  
 This Gethus king, and his lordis ilkone,  
 In gudlie haist to counsall all ar gone,  
 How that thai sould aduiss thame in that thing, 4625  
 For to gif ansuer to the Britane king;  
 And als thairwith how that tha nicht fulfill  
 The greit requeist Ederus send thame till.

And sone tha haif decretit in<sup>1</sup> that thing,  
 In gudlie haist withoutin tareing, 4630  
 Efter thair power all help and supple  
 Him for to send in sic necessitie.

HOW ANDROGEUS PASSIT HAME, AND SCHEW HIS  
 ANSUER BEFOIR THE KING CASSIBILAN.

This Britane knyght passit hame his wa,  
 And schew his king, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Of baith the kingis the deliuerance, 4635  
 Ilk word by word with all the circumstance ;  
 Sayand, he trowit thai suld nocht langer byde.  
 Blyth wes the king of tha tydenis that tyde,  
 And thankit godis of thair mekill nicht  
 Hes grantit him sic help into his richt. 4640

HOW EDERUS GART WAILL TEN THOUSAND MEN,  
 AND SEND WITH CADALLANUS IN BRITANE.

Ederus king hes gart send in that tyde  
 Ouir all Scotland, quhilk wes bayth lang and wyde,  
 And chosin hes with thame that best culd ken  
 Ganand for weir that tyme ten thousand men,  
 Curious and kene, cupit of honour, 4645  
 Stalwart, [and] lang to stand in ony stour ;  
 Quhilk in ane feild far farar thocht to de,  
 Nor leif with lak out of ane feild to fle.  
 Deliuerit thame syne for to reull and gyde  
 To Cadallanus, lord wes in that tyde 4650  
 Of Brigantia, my storie tellis thus,  
 The sone and air of nobill Cadallus,  
 That wan the honour in Ybernia,  
 Quhilk slew Gillus, as ze haif hard me sa ;  
 And to ane lord of greit auctoritie, 4655

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *in in*.

The quhilk to name Donaldus than hecht he,  
 Of Argatill the lord and senzeour,  
 Worthie and wyss, and stalwart in ane stour.  
 To Britane than tha tuke the nerrest way,  
 Lib. 3, f. 25. Quhair that the king and all his lordis lay, 4660  
 Col. 2. To Trynowairt that toun<sup>1</sup> of mekill pryde,  
 That Londoun now is callit in this tyde.  
 The Pechtis als vpoun the samin pairt,  
 Comperit thair with egir will and hart.  
 Blyth wes the Britis quhen tha saw that sycht; 4665  
 Thair hairtis grew sa hallile on hicht,  
 Tha gart beleif the tyme that tha war in  
 Tha put na dout that tyme the feild to wyn.  
 In royall ost tha war than to behald,  
 Of mony berne that wes full big and bald, 4670  
 In helme and habrick, and hecomont of steill,  
 With pissant pans wes maid to lest full weil;  
 With gude girgettis as ane lantren lycht,  
 With breistplait, birny, as the buriall brycht;  
 With sword and ax, bow, brand, and with speir, 4675  
 And all wapynis that neidfull war in weir;  
 And pleven plait with mony riall rufe,  
 With courtlie cast of cot-armour abufe.

HOW JULIUS CESAR COME FIRST INTO BRITANE  
 WITH ANE GREIT POWER OFF ROMANIS.

Cassibilan that tyme had send ane spy  
 That samyn tyme, that come agane in hy, 4680  
 And schew to him how Julius and his ost  
 Arrayit wes that tyme at the south cost;  
 And how [he] enterit syne into his land,  
 And waistit all befor him that he fand;  
 And how his liegis also that he slew, 4685  
 That schupe thame self thair guidis to reskew,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *tyme*.

Quhilk prysit hes his power of greit pryde,  
 Sayand he wes richt awfull for till abyde.  
 The Britis than, thocht tha war neur so bald,  
 Wes stupefat that taill quhen tha hard tald. 4690  
 Cassibilan quhen that he knew and saw  
 His men astoneist throw sic dreid and aw,  
 Befoir thame all than of ane gude maneir,  
 He said to thame, as I sall say 3ow heir.

HOW CASSIBILAN, KING OF BRITIS, MAID HIS  
 ORATIOUN TO HIS MEN BEFOIR THE FEILD.

“ O Britis bald ! quhat causis 3ow to dreid ? 4695  
 “ Haif 3e nocht strentth, with mycht and grit  
 manheid,  
 “ Agane 3our fais this tyme 3ow to defend ?  
 “ For weill I wat the caus and 3e rycht kend,  
 “ And als the querrell we fecht now foir,  
 “ That 3e wald be the langar ay the moir 4700  
 “ Of better will, and of moir curage hie,  
 “ And nocht for dreid withoutin straik to flie.  
 “ Kuaw 3e not weill, that this is thair desyir,  
 “ To subjugat ws to thair hie impyre,  
 “ But ony caus of ws this tyme or blame, 4705  
 “ Ws to invaid hes socht sa far fra hame ?  
 “ Tha haif no rycht till ws nor till our landis,  
 “ Quhilk hes bene sesit sa lang into oure handis,  
 “ Gevin to ws be oure goddis of mycht ; Col. 2.  
 “ Quhairfoir we haif ane just querrell and rycht. 4710  
 “ Ane vnjust caus, as it is rycht weill kend,  
 “ On force man mak bot ane vnhappie end,  
 “ Quhilk in oure godis fermelie that I trow,  
 “ So sall thai do and tha deill with ws now.  
 “ Haue we nocht heir, for to manteine oure rycht, 4715  
 “ The nobill Scottis, worthie, wyss and wicht,  
 “ Rycht bellicois quhilk war in mony stour,  
 “ Sa oft befoir hes wyn sa greit honour ?

“ The Pechtis proude, thair ost hes win greit prys,  
 “ War into weir baith manlie, wycht and wyss? 4720  
 “ And sen we haif sic power and sic mycht,  
 “ And als oure querrell is so just and rycht,  
 “ We haif na caus at this tyme for to dreid,  
 “ And thoct we do, we haif bot litill neid.  
 “ I zow beseik, of knychtheid well and flour, 4725  
 “ That euirilk man think on his awin honour,  
 “ His wyfe and barnis, and land with libertie,  
 “ Quhilk of befor sa lang tyme hes bene frie ;  
 “ And latt ws nocht be bundis maid and thrall,  
 “ On to na man this da that is mortall. 4730  
 “ Bot tak the chance that godis will ws send,  
 “ Sen euirilk thing is prysit be the end.  
 “ For weill I wat that we haif all the rycht,  
 “ Quhairfoir I traist the moir in godis mycht.”  
 Quhen he had said, syne efter held him still, 4735  
 Then enerilk man with curage and gudwill,  
 With hart and mynd, with haill power and mycht,  
 As ony falcone forcie<sup>1</sup> to the flicht,  
 Bald as ane bair to battell tha pretend,  
 And tuk the chance that godis will thame send. 4740

HOW THE BRITIS, THROW THE PERSUASIOUN OF  
 CASSIBILAN, PASSIT WITH GREIT CURAGE TO  
 [THE] FEILD.

Than furth our fell and mony forth tha fuir,  
 Our down and daill, our mony moss and mure ;  
 Tha take na respit nother nycht nor da,  
 Quhill that tha come quhair Julius Cesar la.  
 And fra thai come in to the Romanis sycht, 4745  
 With baneris braid, and standertis hie on hycht ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *fercie*.

With stremaris strait, and mony pinsall proude,  
 With taborne, trumpet, and mony schalme loud;  
 With clarions cleir, and mony bugall blast;  
 Tha grwmis gay, in nother syde agast, 4750  
 Arrayit than rycht fraklie for the feild.  
 Thair mycht be sene rycht mony shynand scheid.  
 Cassibilan hes chosin furth that tyde,  
 Of nobill men that weill on horss culd ryde;  
 Quhilk war expert to ryde and rin ane speir, 4755  
 On cursuris kene weill bardit for the weir,  
 Than for to brek thair ordour and array.  
 Thairof the Romanis tuke bot litill fray;  
 Bot manfullie tha met thame with greit mycht,  
 Quhill in that counter mony cruell knycht 4760  
 Wes maid to kneill, and sum to licht full law,  
 With buffatis braid and mony bitter blaw.  
 Tha preuit vther pertlie on that plane; Lib.3,f.25b.  
 Mony war hurt, bot few of thame war slane. Col. 1.  
 The Romanis so wyss war into weir, 4765  
 The Britane bernis culd do to thame no deir;  
 Bot drew abak the battell to renew,  
 Agane sic force tha thocht thame selfis our few.  
 On euerie syde, as that tyme wes the gyss,  
 Preikand in preis with mony interpryss; 4770  
 And mony lord thair, for his ladeis saik,  
 To tak and gif rycht mony stalwart straik;  
 Quhair mony sadill temit wes on force,  
 And mony berne borne bakwart of his horss,  
 Quhill that the feild renewit wes agane; 4775  
 With that tha preikit pertlie on the plane.  
 The Albionis, with mekill bost and schoir,  
 Fuir to the feild sic like as of befoir.  
 At that counter wes mony crwell knap,  
 With rewden rude sae mony raiss and rap, 4780  
 Quhair tha sat on that tyme at the tane syde,  
 The Romane knychtis rycht baldlie did abyde,

Than stalwartlie and strang in to that stour,  
 Tha dowblit on with dyntis that war dour ;  
 Rycht furiouslie tha fuir so for ane quhile, 4785  
 That ane mycht pas the space of half a myle.

HOW JULIUS WITH ALL HIS HAILL POWER AND  
 CASSIBILAN MET IN PLANE BATTELL.

And syne or that intermell wes done,  
 The greit battell on euerie syd did jone,  
 With sic ane reird quhill all the rochis rang,  
 So thrafullie togidder that tha thrang. 4790  
 Tha flappit on quhill all the fyre out flaw,  
 Quhillk mony freik on force hes maid to faw ;  
 Helm<sup>1</sup> and habrek all wer hewin in sunder,  
 Ribbis war revin, and reft that wes thair vnder ;  
 Freikkis throw force wer fellit in the feild, 4795  
 Schouderis wer schorne, and sched war mony scheild ;  
 Helmis war hewin to the schouderis down,  
 Mony ane swolt and mony fell in swoun ;  
 Howchis wer als hewin law down to the thie,  
 Leggis war likkit of hardof at the kne ; 4800  
 Bristis war brissin and bokkit out of blude,  
 Into that stour stalwartlie that stude.  
 Fell wes the fecht, and rycht strang wes the stour,  
 Induring sua moir nor ane large hour,  
 But victorie that tyme of ony syde, 4805  
 So baldlie thair tha bernis all did byde.  
 The Romanis faucht for riches and for mycht,  
 The Albionis for to defend thair richt.  
 On baith the sydis thair hartis wer so hie,  
 That euerilk freik wald not fra vther flie. 4810  
 Rycht lang in dout the victorie stude sa.  
 The lord of Cornewall and of Cumbria,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *helun*.



With mony semelie schroudit vnder scheild,  
 Als bald as boir hes enterit in the feild,  
 Bot laitlie come than to the feild witht few ; 4815  
 And quhen the Romanis saw the feild renew,  
 Tha war so ferit quhill that tha take the flicht,  
 Langar to byde had nother strenth nor nicht.  
 Greit Julius that tyme, for all his pryde,  
 Into that battell mycht no langar byde ; 4820  
 For force it wes that tyme till him to fle,  
 Or in the feild thair fechtand for till de.  
 The Albionis fast follout on the chace ;  
 Quhome tha ouirhyt into ony place,  
 Tha dang thame doun as dourlie as tha docht, 4825  
 Zit neurtheles thair following wes deir bocht.  
 The Romanis fled weill rayit vnder scheild ;  
 The Albionis war skatterit in the feild,  
 Without array or ordour in that tyde ;  
 Quhairfoir the Romanis, on the other syde, 4830  
 Turnit agane the battell till renew  
 And in that semlie mony syr tha slew.  
 Suppois thair hartis than wes neur so hie,  
 On force agane zit war thai maid to fle.  
 The Albionis than followit quhill tha nicht, 4835  
 And left thame nocht als lang as tha had licht.  
 This Julius that tyme he had grit pane  
 Or he culd get thame gatherit all agane ;  
 And quhen tha war all semblit in his sicht  
 Rycht wyslie than gart euerie woundit wicht 4840  
 Pas to his schip, and tak him thair gude rest,  
 Quhair leichis war that tyme of the best ;  
 Syne pertlie purpost on the morne rycht plane,  
 To tak the feild and gif battell agane.

HOW JULIUS' MEN OF WEIR WES NOCHT CONTENT  
TO FECHT AGANE, PERSWAIDAND HIM TO LEUE  
BATTELL.

His men that tyme that wysast wer in weir, 4845  
Of that folie thai tuke ane richt greit feir  
And of sic danger wer into greit dreid,  
Sayand to him thai wald cum liddir speid  
To fecht in feild agane thame on the morne,  
Hes vincust thame so laillie of beforne. 4850  
And als thai haif thair louit at grit lenth  
The Albionis of thair manehaid and strenth,  
So big thai war in battell and so bald;  
And als thai wist sa weill that nane wald  
Fle for na feir that tha wald tak or fray, 4855  
That victoris war befor the tother day;  
Considering als that he had tynt the feild,  
And had the maist pairt of his knychtis keild,  
Qubairfoir the laif tha said wer soir adred  
To fecht with thame quhome fra befor tha fled. 4860

HOW JULIUS PERSWADIT THE SECUND TYME HIS  
MEN TO PAS WITHT HIM TO BATTELL.

Lib. 3, f. 26. Quhen Julius knew weill that tyme and saw  
Col. 1. To fecht agane thai stude sa mekill aw,  
And hard the caussis that tha [to] him schew  
Greit danger wes sic perrell to persew,  
He said to thame, as ze sall efter heir: 4865  
" O ze, my knychtis, to me leif and deir,  
" Sa oft with me hes stand in mony stour,  
" Qubair we haif win greit riches and honour,  
" In Italie, in mony sindrie feild,  
" Qubair the maist part of oure contra wes keild; 4870  
" And into France, the flour of chevalrie,  
" Sa oft of thame we haif had victorie;

‘ And now to ws it is greit schame and lak  
 “ With thir barbouris for to be put abak,  
 “ Quhilk hes no wit nor wisdome into weir, 4875  
 “ No policie nor prattik wirth ane peir,  
 “ Bot hasartrie, evin as it cumis be hand.  
 “ And als,” he said, “ rycht weill I vnderstand,  
 “ Oure negligence and misgyding all haill,  
 “ Wes all the caus this tyme that gart ws fail, 4880  
 “ Quhair we haif spilt sa mekle of oure blude,  
 “ And nocht thair force nor zit thair fortitude,  
 “ Nor zit thair wisdome, manheid, nor thair strenth;  
 “ And als I haif considderit weill at lenth  
 “ Thair policie and prattik into weir, 4885  
 “ Quhairfoir to ws thai can do lytill deir.”  
 To thame syne said, “ O ze, my knychtis all,  
 “ I zow beseik lat nocht zour honour fall;  
 “ Think on the wirschip that ze haif win befoir,  
 “ Till ws that is greit lak for eur moir 4890  
 “ So schamefullie to flie fra thame for this,  
 “ On ws be spokin greit schame than it is;  
 “ Ouir all the warld it wil be planelie spokin  
 “ Sic barbour bodeis hes oure power brokin,  
 “ Faucht neur befoir, nor zit wan victorie, 4895  
 “ Nor prattik hes nor vse of cheualrie;  
 “ Syne schame oure men chaissit oure self with all,  
 “ Now God forbid that sic schame suld ws fall!”

QUHEN JULIUS HAD ENDIT HIS ORESOUN, HOW ANE  
 SCHIPMAN SCHEW HIM THAT ALL HIS SCHIPPIS  
 WAR IN POYNT TO TYNE.

Be he had said all that he wald sa than,  
 Fra his navin in haist thair come ane man, 4900  
 Schawand to him his schippis on the flude  
 Without supple in grit perrell thai stude;  
 And gat thai nocht remeid into that tyde,  
 Neur on of thame wald with ane vther byde.

The streme wes stark, and als the wind wes hie, 4905  
 Sa stiff ane storme that tyme wes in the se,  
 That mony one of his schippis wer lost,  
 Tha la that tyme so neir ane cragie cost:  
 And sped he nocht, with all power and mycht,  
 All wald be lost, he said, that samin nycht. 4910

HOW JULIUS LEFT THE BATTELL AND PASSIT TO  
 HIS SCHIPPIS THAT WER IN PERRELL FOR  
 FALT OF HELP.

Col. 2. Fra Julius hard thir tythandis tauld,  
 As bist it was and so that tyme he wald  
 The narrest perrell first for to supplie,  
 Passit to his schippis and leit the battell be,  
 To saulfe him self vnto ane better tyme, 4915  
 Quhen that he nicht revenge him of that cryme,  
 Quhill efterwart he had ane better querrell,  
 To saue his schippis that war into sic perrell.  
 And so he did ane little forrow da,  
 Passit to the se quhair that his schippis la, 4920  
 And all his ost he drew intill ane strenth,  
 Quhill that he mycht prouidit be at lenth.

HOW JULIUS LEFT BRITANE, AND PASSIT HIM SELFF  
 IN GALLIA, QUHAIR HE REMANIT FOR ANE  
 QUHILE.

Syne on the nycht, quhen that the wynd wes fair,  
 He tuke the se with anker, saill and air,  
 Syne saillit furth rycht fair befor the wynd, 4925  
 And all the spulze that tyme left behind;  
 Sa mony schippis loisit in that tyde  
 That gart the spulze all behind him byde;  
 And on this wayes he hes left Albione,  
 And with his men passit in France ilkone. 4930

The Albionis come to the place belyue,  
 Quhair that the schippis brokin did arryve ;  
 In that same place also thair did tha find  
 The haill spulzie the Romanis left behind.  
 Out of that place or tha wald forder gang, 4935  
 Rycht equallie diuidit thame amang  
 Baith horse and harnes, gold and vther geir,  
 Romanis befoir had win into thair weir.  
 In the fourt zeir of Ederus ring,  
 Quhilk in Scotland into that tyme wes king, 4940  
 And sixtie zeir no langer beforne  
 [That Jesu wes of the sueit Virgin borne],  
 That Julius come first in Albione,  
 With sic repulss syne bakwart is he gone.  
 Blyth wes the Britis quhen he went to the se, 4945  
 Trowand that dreid hes causit him to fle:  
 All Albione beleuit weill that tyde  
 That Julius, for all his pomp and pryde,  
 In all his tyme suld be joyfull and fane  
 In Albione neurir for to cum agane. 4950  
 Quhairfoir thair maid than of ane gudlie gyss  
 To thair goddis solemp sacrifice,  
 Baith said and sang with noitis that war he,  
 In thair tempillis of greit authoritie,  
 With loving loud thankand thair godis all, 4955  
 Sic aventure and chance had gart thame fall.

HOW THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS TUKE LEIF  
 AND PASSIT HAME, AND WES REWARDIT WITH  
 THE KING.

Quhen this wes done into thair godis name, 4960  
 Than euirilk berne tuke leif for to pas hame.  
 Cassibilan, with wordis richt beuyng,  
 Thankit the Scottis and Ederus thair king, 4960  
Lib.3,f.26b.  
Col. 1.

Quhilk throw thair power, thair grit strenth and  
 mycht,  
 Defendit wes thair gude querrell and rycht ;  
 And to the Pechtis siclike he did also.  
 Quhen this wes done thai tuke thair leif to go.  
 This Cadallan, this nobill Scottis knicht, 4965  
 Of Brigance lord, and all his weirmen wicht,  
 In gudlie haist is passit hame agane ;  
 In that confit few of his men wes slane.  
 Quhen he come hame in presens of the king,  
 He schew till him at lasar euerilk thing, 4970  
 Of thair melle the first da as tha met,  
 How that thai faucht twyis or the feild wes set,  
 Syne of the battell, and of the victorie,  
 And how that Cesar than fled to the se ;  
 Sayand, he trowit that tha weiris suld ceis, 4975  
 And Albione for thame ay leif in peace.  
 Of tha tydenis so blyth than wes the king,  
 Of his tempill the bellis all gart ring,  
 And warnit hes the pepill far and neir,  
 Prelat and preist, that tha suld all compeir 4980  
 Solempnitlie thairfoir to sacrifie,  
 Thankand thair godis of that victorie.  
 Sone efter that, quhen this Ederus knew  
 Na outward fa his boundis did persew,  
 Na inwart weiris also had he nane, 4985  
 He and his lordis to thair game is gane  
 Into the hillis for to halk and hunt,  
 At hart and hynd, siclike as tha war wont ;  
 And thus tha draue that zeir neir to the end.  
 So at the last it hapnit him to wend 4990  
 On to the toum that tyme of Inuernes,  
 Quhair mony schip of merchandice thair wes,  
 Quhilk in the tyme wer cuming out of France  
 With quheit and flour, and wyne of Orleance,

And for till by thair merchandice agane, 4995  
 As selch and salmone, scuir, pellat and pran ;  
 For fox and fulmart and of mertrik skin,  
 Anew thair wes tha landis than within,  
 Of woll and hyde thai gat at abundance  
 To fraucht thame with agane home into France. 5000  
 Thir men of France thair to the king tha schew,  
 How Julius maid with ane armie new  
 That samin zeir in Britane come agane,  
 For till revenge him of Cassibilan.  
 Also thai said, as tha rycht wnderstude, 5005  
 He had sic power and sic multitude,  
 Without richt wyislie thai convoyit all,  
 That Britis sould be bundis maid and thrall.  
 And quhen the king hes hard how that tha schew,  
 Traistand rycht weill it suld be verrie trew, 5010  
 Ane messinger sone hes he send agane  
 With thai tydenis to king Cassibilane ;  
 And schew till him the fassoun all in feir,  
 Ilk word by word befoir as ze mycht heir.  
 Sayand also, gif neid hapnit to be, 5015  
 That he suld send till him siclyk supple  
 As of befoir, with all power and mycht, Col. 2.  
 For to defend of Albione the rycht.  
 Thairat the Britis lichlie all tha leuch,  
 Sayand that tyme thai had power aneuche 5020  
 To fecht witht thame tha vincust had befoir,  
 As for his help tha wald haif it no moir :  
 It wes no neid to send help and supple  
 To thame quhilk had win sic victorie.  
 This messinger, quhen he come hame agane, 5025  
 He schew sic ansuer to the king in plane,  
 Word be word, befoir as I haif tald ;  
 Quhairfoir the king had mervell mony fald,  
 Sayand thair hicht and thair presumptione  
 Within schort quhile wald put all Britan doun. 5030

HOW JULIUS CESAR COME THE SECOND TYME IN  
BRITANE.

And so it did, as ze sall heir me sa,  
 This Julius, sone efter on ane da,  
 Come furth of France than with ane navin larg,  
 With craik,<sup>1</sup> colvene, with mony bark and barge,  
 Ay sailland furth our salt water and sand 5035  
 To Britane cost quhairat he tuke the land.  
 The maretyms that duelt neir be the cost,  
 Bayth men and guidis dreidand suld be lost,  
 Rycht fast tha fled quhill tha come to the king,  
 And schew till him the fassone of that thing. 5040  
 The king that tyme lang tarie maid he nocht;  
 In gudlie haist with all power he mocht  
 Of mony berne, rycht bellicois and bald,  
 That at his will to wirk quhat [that] he wald,  
 Towart the Romanis he hes tane the way, 5045  
 And sone he come quhair that thair army lay.

OFF THE GREIT BATTELL BETUIX JULIUS CESAR  
AND CASSIBILAN, AND HOW CASSIBILAN TYNT  
THE FEILD.

In gude array vpoun ane plesand plane  
 This king of Britis, gude Cassibilan,  
 Thre litill battellis buskit on the bent.  
 Ilkane of thame ane sindrie way is went 5050  
 Vpoun the Romanis with sic breid and lenth  
 To preif throw prattik, policie, or strent,  
 Of ony fassone for till mak ane fray,  
 To put the Romanis out of thair array.  
 The Romanis than, quhilk wer so wyss in weir, 5055  
 Of sic affray [tha] tuke bot litill feir,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *clerk*.



Bot baldlie buskit thre battellis that tyde,  
 In gude ordour tha bernis for till byde ;  
 Quhilk hes thame met in middis of the way,  
 Or tha come neir quhair that thair greit ost lay ; 5060  
 Trowand tha had sun sle prattik in weir,  
 Quhairby tha dred that tha suld do thame deir.  
 Thir thre battellis jonit all at onis,  
 Quhair mekill blude and mony brokin bonis,  
 And mony semelie had rycht sowand syde, 5065  
 And mony wicht buir woundis that war wyde,  
 And mony bald man of the Britis slane.  
 With that in haist the king Cassibilan  
 Come with his ost to help thame in the tyde ;  
 Cesar also, vpoun the tother syde, 5070  
 In rayit battell enterit him foirgane,  
 With haill power met bayth vpone the plane.  
 Fell wes the faucht and rycht strang wes the stour,  
 Indurand sua the space of half ane hour ;  
 Quhair mony duchtie than wes maid to de, 5075  
 The Britis all on force thair for to flie.  
 Androgeus, that worthie nobill knight,  
 And vther mo that hardie war and wicht,  
 With vther tua of greit authoritie,  
 Into the feild war tane that tyme all thrie. 5080  
 Fra that the king persaut syne rycht plane  
 Sa mony thousand of his men wes slane,  
 And [he] him self had tynt the feild and fled,  
 Help or supple rycht few as than he had,  
 His freindis all wer other slane or tane, 5085  
 And he him self left dissolat alane,  
 Without beleif his kinrik to reskew,  
 Or zit power new battell till persew,  
 Thairfoir he put him into Julius will,  
 To quhat purpois that he wald put him till. 5090

Lib. 3, f. 27.  
Col. 1.

HOW JULIUS RESSAUIT CASSIBILAN TO HIS GRACE  
 EFTER HE HAD TYNT THE FEILD, AND MAID  
 HIM TRIBUTAR TO ROME.

This Julius, that gentill wes and hend,  
 Ressauit him richt hartlie as his freind ;  
 To that effect that all his folk and he  
 Vnto the Romanis tributaris suld be.  
 Thre thousand pund of gude mony alsua, 5095  
 Onto the Romanis zeirlie for to pa,  
 And bald of thame his kimrik and his crown ;  
 Concord wes maid on that conditioun ;  
 And all the Britis befoir that tha had tane  
 Tha suld be fred and all maid fre ilkane. 5100  
 Syne suir plaigis of thame all he tuke,  
 And gart thame sweir, bayth on bell and buke,  
 At his bidding all tyme for till abyde,  
 For ony thing that efter nicht betyde.

HOW JULIUS WES RESSAUIT IN TRENOWANT,<sup>1</sup> AND  
 REMANIT QUHILL HIS MEN WAR HAILL.

This Julius, efter this wes done, 5105  
 To Trynowant he tuke the way rycht sone ;  
 Quhair that he wes ressauit with renoun  
 With citenaris that duelt into that toun.  
 And all his knichtis that wer seek and soir,  
 Quhilk in the feild had bene hurt of befoir, 5110  
 Commandit thame all in the toun to byde  
 To tak thair eis and rest thame in that tyde,  
 For ony thing that efter nicht befall,  
 Quhill thai war haillit of thair hurtis all.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Frenovant*.

HOW JULIUS, OR HE WALD GIFF BATTLE TO THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS, SEND ANE HER-  
AULD TO THAME TO HEIR THAIR INTENT. Col. 2]

Decretit hes syne with his counsall haill, 5115  
 Bayth Scot and Pecht with battell to assaill  
 Incontinent, withoutin tarie moir,  
 For the supple that tha had send befoir  
 Incontrair him to Cassibilan,  
 Quhair he that da sa mony men had slane. 5120  
 And first he thocht thair ansuer he wald heir,  
 Thairfoir in haist than with ane messingeir  
 All his desyre sone he hes send thame till,  
 To lat thame wit that tyme quhat wes his will.  
 This wes the text that tyme of his desyre: 5125  
 Gif that tha wold to the Romanis impyre  
 Rander thame rycht, and hald of thame alsua ;  
 Syne sobir tribut zeirlic to thame pa,  
 Into ane takin of thair autoritie,  
 Quhilk suld defend thame fra all noyis fre ; 5130  
 And wald tha nocht, [syne] schortlie to conclude,  
 He suld persew thame baith with fyre and blude.  
 The messenger tuke leif to pass his wa,  
 And maid no tarie nother nycht nor da,  
 Ane quhill that he befoir this king Edeir 5135  
 Come and schew him all as ze sall heir.  
 With mony lord and mony erwell knycht  
 Befoir thame all he said rycht hie on hicht :

HOW JULIUS HERAULD PASSIT TO EDERUS, AND  
MAID ANE ORESOUN IN HIS PRESENS.

“ O king Edeir, to the I mak it knawin,  
 “ The Romanis haldis this warld all for thair awin, 5140  
 “ Grantit to thame be thair godis of micht,  
 “ Quhairfoir tha sa thairtill tha haif greit richt.  
 “ As God will, so all thing it man be,  
 “ Ma nane resist thair greit auctoritie.

- " As be experiens we ma vnderstand, 5145  
 " How thai triumph in mony sindrie land,  
 " In Perss, in Meid and in Asseria,  
 " In Affrik, Egipt and Arabia,  
 " Phalistene, Poll, and als in Portingall,  
 " In France, Flandes and in Spanze all. 5150  
 " And schortlie syne," he said, " for to conclude,  
 " In all this warld thair is no fortitude  
 " That ma resist thair strenthis in a stour;  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " to zow it is honour,  
 " Sen that zour power is sa waik and small, 5155  
 " Quhome tha ma rycht sone boundis mak and  
 thrall,  
 " That tha this tyme so gentill ar and hend  
 " Zow to ressaue to thair fallow and freind,  
 " Quhilk to zow all greit honour is and gloir,<sup>o</sup>  
 " Perpetuallie for now and euir moir. 5160  
 " Forsaik thame nocht that will lat zow leue fre,  
 " And bruike zour land, zour law and libertie;  
 " And do no moir bot curtaslie and hend  
 Lib.3,f.27b. " To hald zour self ay for the Romanis freind."  
 Col. 1. Ederus king, and all the haill repair, 5165  
 Tha dred dissait becaus he spak so fair:  
 Tha wer misleivit of his langage far,  
 Sone efterwart<sup>1</sup> that it suld turne to war.  
 But suddanelie, withoutin ony baid,  
 The king to him this ilk ansuer hes maid. 5170

QUHEN JULIUS HERAULD HAD SAID HIS CREDENCE,  
 KING EDERUS WITH COUNSALL OF HIS LORDS  
 MAID THIS ANSUER.

" We haif considerit suithlie be zour sawis,  
 " Zat ze mak ruiss far mair nor ze haif caus.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *estewart*.

“ For-quhy,” he said, “ to ws it wes weill kend,  
 “ Ȝour word so walkis to the warldis end,  
 “ That Ȝe ar men of sic condition, 5175  
 “ With gredie mynd and hie ambitioun,  
 “ To weild this warld alway as Ȝe wald,  
 “ Sic talk of Ȝow rycht oft I haif hard tald ;  
 “ With auerice mynd and beistlie appetyte,  
 “ In weir and wrang Ȝe put Ȝour haill delyte ; 5180  
 “ For gredines of gold and vther geir,  
 “ This warld all Ȝe haif opprest with weir ;  
 “ But ony caus, heir schortlie to conclude,  
 “ Ȝe haif gart spill rycht mekill saikles blude,  
 “ Reiffand thair rycht and thair possessionis all, 5185  
 “ And syne thame selff hes bundis maid and thrall.  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ I say schortlie for me,  
 “ Far better is in just querrell to de,  
 “ In oure defens for oure barnis and oure wyuis,  
 “ For land and law, for libertie and lyuis, 5190  
 “ Na vnder Ȝow leue in miseritie,  
 “ And syne sic sorrow dalie for to se  
 “ Of mony prince that Ȝe haif maid full puir,  
 “ Come of fre will and pat thame in Ȝour cuir,  
 “ At Ȝour plesour put thame in pouertie, 5195  
 “ But ony rycht at Ȝour autoritie.  
 “ Quhen euir Ȝe lyke Ȝe can sone find a caus  
 “ For Ȝour avail for to alledge the lawes.  
 “ Rycht semdill it is that Ȝe ar fund in trew,  
 “ For no condition other auld or new, 5200  
 “ That ony wit or mannis mynd can mak,  
 “ Quhen euir Ȝe pleis Ȝeill find ane caus to brek ;  
 “ Fra Ȝour falset rycht euill is to defend.  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ to Ȝow I mak it kend,  
 “ Quhen euir Ȝe cum we schaip nocht for to fle ; 5205  
 “ All on ane da we sall far erar de,  
 “ Or we till him mak ony aith or band,  
 “ Quhill ane of ws ma other stryk or stand.”

HOW JULIUS HERAULD PASSIT FRA EDERUS TO  
JULIUS HIS LORD, AND SCHEW EDERUS  
ANSUER.

Quhen this wes said, this royall Romane knycht  
He take his leif and passit on full rycht 5210  
To the king of Pechtis, for to wit his will ;  
And he sielyke ane ansuer gaif him till.  
Col. 2. Fra thyne he passit on to Trynowant,  
Qubair Julius at that tyme maid his hant ;  
He schew till him sic ansuer as he gat. 5215  
Then Julius, quhen he persaut that,  
That tha culd not apply thame to his will,  
The secund tyme zit hes he send thame till,  
With bost and schoir, and wordis pungetyue.  
The messenger syne take his leif belyue, 5220  
Quhill that he come befoir Edeir the king,  
Without tarie that tyme of ony thing,  
And mony lord with him that tyme in feir,  
And said till him as I sall say zow heir.

HOW JULIUS CESAR SEND THE SECUND TYME TO  
EDERUS AND TO THE KING OF PECHTIS.

“ O royall king, and lordis of counsall, 5225  
“ I mervell mekill of zour wisdome all,  
“ How that ze dar put in sic jeopardie  
“ Zour land, zour lyuis, and zour libertie,  
“ With perrellus pryde ascendand to sic hicht  
“ Agane the Romanis of sic strenth and micht, 5230  
“ Quhilk all this warld witht greit victorie  
“ Subjectit hes vnto thair senzeorie ;  
“ And ze, quhilk of power is so small,  
“ For to contemne to quhome this warld all  
“ Obeyit hes ay at thair will to byde ; 5235  
“ My counsall is for to lat be sic pryde,  
“ And preiss zou nocht in battell till assaill,  
“ Sic auenture or dreid rycht sone ze fail.

- “ Trow ze,” he said, “ for to debait your rycht  
 “ With strenth, with force, with manheid, or with 5240  
     mycht,  
 “ Agane the Romanis of sic multitude  
 “ Of men, of riches, gold and vther gude.  
 “ Far eithar is to ony man to win  
 “ This world wyde, and all that is thairin,  
 “ Baith king and knycht, and all the laif ilkane, 5245  
 “ Nor Julius to vincus him allane.  
 “ The quhilk fortoun hes set on sic ane hicht,  
 “ For in his tyme neur king nor knycht,  
 “ That micht haif strenth agane him to defend,  
 “ Ouir all this world his victorie is kend. 5250  
 “ And ze,” he said, “ with sa small power,  
 “ To him ze schaip for to mak your compeer,  
 “ Quhilk and ze preue ze sall find rycht grit perell,  
 “ Suppois that ze haif neur so just ane querrell.  
 “ And gif ze think, as I traist weill it be, 5255  
 “ That ze pryde your in to your montanis hie,  
 “ Your wallis law, with mony moss and myre,  
 “ Quhairthrow ze traist the Romanis for to tyre,  
 “ Your self and gude syne into sic ane strenth,  
 “ At laser ly evin as ze lyke at lenth, 5260  
 “ Quhair na Roman dar cum your till assaill,  
 “ Quhill all thair victuall be consumit haill ;  
 “ Syne into wynter trowand that tha wald,  
 “ For verrie hunger and for cruell cald,  
 “ To pas thair way without ony remeid, 5265  
 “ And so ze trow for to vmschew thair feid.  
 “ My counsall is that prattik nocht to preve, 5270  
 “ For weill I wait that is ane fals beleif,  
 “ For Julius hes in [his] ost sic men  
 “ The quhilk of weir all prattis do ken,  
 “ And abill als that ar of lith and lym,<sup>1</sup>  
 “ Oure craig and clewchis bayth for to creip and clim,

Lib. 3, f. 28.  
Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lym and lith.*

“ To walk and fast, and for to thoill greit cald,  
 “ Bustious thai ar, baith bellicois and bald,  
 “ And spair for nothing ather weit or dry, 5275  
 “ Thair is na sorrow that tha will set by.  
 “ As for victuall he neidis nocht to fail,  
 “ Hes all this warld at his weilding hail,  
 “ Quhair tha ma bring fra with sic abundance  
 “ Fra Almany, fra Flanderis, and fra France. 5280  
 “ And thus,” he said, “ zour wisdome is sma<sup>1</sup> worth,  
 “ Rycht gude it war, gif that ze wald haif girth,  
 “ To tak exempill be the Britis now,  
 “ Trowit sum tyme als far now as zow,  
 “ Into thair strenth, thair manheid, and thair 5285  
     mycht,  
 “ And now ze se it is maid law to lycht.  
 “ For all the wisdome thai culd haif in weir  
 “ Thair power now it is nocht worth ane peir.  
 “ My counsall is,” he said, “ thairfoir that ze  
 “ Awyiss zow weill, and lat sic folie be, 5290  
 “ Or ze on force be bundis maid and thrall,  
 “ And loiss zour lawis and zour landis all,  
 “ And all zour barnis, and zour nobill blude,  
 “ Be put on force syne in vyle seruitude.”  
 Quhen this wes said, than ilkane that stude by, 5295  
 At his langage thai had rycht grit invy,  
 And speciallie quhen that tha vnderstude  
 He spak to thame of sic vyle seruitude,  
 Quhilk thai detaistit euir into thair dais,  
 Thair libertie tha thocht sa gude alwayes. 5300  
 The nobill lord of Brigance, Cadallan,  
 Commandit wes to gif ansuer agane,  
 In all his tyme that wes baith wyss and wycht.  
 This wes his ansuer to that Roman knycht.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *sua*.



HOW CADALLANUS, THE LORD OF BRIGANTIA, GAIFF  
ANSUER TO THE ROMANE LEGAT AGANE.

- “ Traist weill,” he said, “ oure mynd will nocht 5305  
be brokin
- “ For ony speche that ze haif to ws spokin,  
“ Ȝour facund fleching, and Ȝour wordis suet  
“ Of rithorie in quhome Ȝour toung do fleit,  
“ With sic wisdomē gif ze can find ane wyle  
“ Oure sempilnes trowand for to begyle. 5310  
“ Rycht weill we knaw Ȝour fraude and Ȝour  
dissait ;
- “ Quhairfoir in tyme now erar nor our lait  
“ We will prowyde how we may best remeid,  
“ Sen force it is to suffer all Ȝour feid.  
“ As for Ȝour bost, Ȝour manassing and schoir, 5315  
“ We dreid it nocht, for-quhy we said befoir  
“ We haif Ȝow previt pertlie into feild,  
“ Quhair mony one of Ȝour knychtis war keild ; Col. 2.  
“ Cesar him self wes maid on force to fle,  
“ Quhil he<sup>1</sup> wes fane than for to tak the se. 5320  
“ We ken Ȝour prattik that ze vse in weir,  
“ Quhairfoir of Ȝow we tak the far les feir ;  
“ And we be trew, as I traist weill we be,  
“ Amang oure self, we count Ȝow nocht ane fle,  
“ For all Ȝour power and Ȝour mekle mycht ; 5325  
“ For weill I wait that we haif all the rycht.  
“ Thairfoir we think we are in litill perrell  
“ Ws to defend into sa just ane querrell ;  
“ And for this caus ze nicht lat ws allane.  
“ Now vther ansuer get ze of ws nane.” 5330

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *he he*.

HOW THE ROMANE LEGAT PASSIT TO THE KING,  
AND GAIFF SICLYKE ANSUER AS THAT THE  
SCOTTIS GAIFF.

Quhen this wes said, this legat Roman knycht,  
 He take his leif and bad thame all gude nycht.  
 But ony rest syne raikit on his wa,  
 To king of Pechtis to speir quhat he wuld sa.  
 And quhen he ansuer askit hes in plane, 5335  
 This wes the ansuer he got agane:  
 That tha wald [do] siclike as king Edeir;  
 Forbad him syne ma tydenis for to speir.  
 And quhen he saw he had na mair to sa,  
 With sic ansuer he passit hame his wa 5340  
 To Julius, and tald him all in plane,  
 First how he said and how tha said agane.  
 Fra Julius thir tydenis hes hard tald,  
 He said agane, how durst tha be so bald  
 For to rebell, sayand thai haif sic rycht 5345  
 Agane my hie magnificence and mycht?  
 Thairfoir decretit with his counsall hail,  
 Witht fyre and battell sone thame till assaill.  
 Thairof wald delay no langar nor frist  
 Quhill he thame causit outhur bow or brist. 5350

HOW ANE LEGAT IN GALLIA, CALLIT LABIANE,  
SEND TO JULIUS AND SCHEW HOW THAI DID  
REBELL AGANE HIM.

In that same tyme thair come to hym a man  
 With letters send fra ane hecht Labian,  
 Quhilk Julius had ordand into France,  
 To reule and steir, and haif the gouernance. 5355  
 The tennour wes that tha letters did tell,  
 That France that tyme agane him did rebell,

And how thai had, withoutin ony moir,  
 Slane thair awin king that tha had maid befoir.  
 Sayand also siclike that Newstria  
 Rebellit had and all Armorica, 5360  
 And come he nocht with his supple rycht sone,  
 All wald be lost befoir that he had done. Lib.3.f.28b.  
 Col. 1.

HOW JULIUS LEFT BRITANE AND PASSIT INTO  
 GALLIA, AND FRA THAT FURTH COME NEUIR  
 AGANE IN BRITANE.

Quhen Julius than vnderstude and knew  
 Sic falt in France wes maid him of the new,  
 The quhilk perceuit perrell and greit skaith, 5365  
 Quhairfoir the Scottis and the Pechtis baith  
 He hes postponit till ane vther tyme,  
 For to revenge him of ane grittar cryme.  
 Syne with his armie passit to the se,  
 Saillit in France and leit the Scottis be; 5370  
 Fra Britane thus rycht haistelie is gone,  
 Fra that tyme furth come neuir in Albion.  
 In that same tyme neir Brigantia cost  
 Ederus la with ane royall ost,  
 Adreid the Romanis sould his land invaid, 5375  
 And for that caus thair with the oist he baid.  
 Syne quhen he knew Cesar had tane the se,  
 And fuir in France with all his haille armie,  
 Of tha tydenis richt blyth he wes and fane,  
 With all his ost syne passit hame agane. 5280  
 And as he wes hame passand by the way,  
 Thair hes he met, as my author did sa,  
 Ane messinger fast cumand fra the Ylis  
 Quhilk hailsit him with mony staitlie stylis,  
 Sayand to him that ane hecht Murkthetus, 5385  
 That wes the oy of umquhill fals Gillus,

The quhilk Cadallus into Yreland slew,  
 Rycht schort quhile syne, as I befor heir schew,  
 Cuming he wes out of Ybernia,  
 With schip and boit, and mony gay gala, 5390  
 And spulzeit had the Ylis far and neir,  
 Bayth brint and slew that horribill wes to heir.  
 All zyoung and ald mycht nother fend nor fle,  
 Rycht cruellie hes maid thame all to de,  
 Beacuss he knew perfittie weill sic thing, 5395  
 The men war all in hoisting with the king.

HOW EDERUS SEND CADALLANUS WITH ANE OIST  
 FOR TO RESIST THEVIS WAR CUMING TO  
 ARGATILL.

Quhen that the king thir tydenis hard tald,  
 Gude Cadallan, rycht bellicois and bald,  
 He hes maid reddie with ane royall oist,  
 Syne tuke the se at Argatilin cost. 5400  
 He send ane spy that tyme befor him far,  
 To spy and speir quhair that tha thevis war.  
 The spy syne passit, rycht lang forrow da,  
 Vnto the yle quhair that thir thevis la,  
 Withoutin dout of ony bernis clame, 5405  
 Becaus tha knew the men war all fra hame.  
 Col. 2. That causit thame rycht closlie all to sleip  
 Withoutin watchis thame that nycht to keip.  
 The spy passit in his gala agane,  
 And on the fude he met this Cadallan, 5410  
 And schew till him quhair that tha thevis la.  
 Than Cadallan, ane litill forrow da,  
 His entrie maid into that samin yle,  
 And all his men within ane litill quhile,  
 And this Murkthetus, sleipand quhair he la, 5415  
 Wes tane in hand and all his men that da ;

And on ane gallous syne wes hangit he,  
 And all his men siclyke wer maid to de.  
 Gude king Edeir, the laif of all his lyue,  
 The quhilk contenit fourtie ȝeir and fyve, 5420  
 In pece and rest, and greit tranquillitie,  
 Fra that tyme furth all his dayis wes he,  
 As be his deidis ȝe ma rycht weill heir.  
 Syne of his ring the aucht and fourtie ȝeir,  
 He tuke his leif and bad thame all gude nycht, 5425  
 On till his rest syne raikit on full richt.  
 Ane better king nor he wes in his dais  
 In peice and weir, in ernist and in playis,  
 Tha sall not find, quha listis for to luke,  
 Quhen thai haif socht ane grit part of this buke. 5430  
 Efter his deid tha tuke of him greit cure,  
 And sesit him into his sepulture  
 Besyde Ewone, as that tyme wes the gyss,  
 Into ane plane quhair ȝit thair still he lyis.

HOW EWENUS, THE SONE OF EDERUS, WAS CROWNIT  
 EFTER HIS FADERIS DEID, QUHILK WAS ANE  
 OF THE WERST KINGIS THAT EUIR WAS IN  
 SCOTLAND.

Eftir the deid of nobill Ederus, 5435  
 Ane son he had wes callit Ewenus,  
 Quhilk crownit wes in that tyme to be king,  
 As he that wes maist richteous for till ring.  
 Of him his liegis had ane gude beleue,  
 Trowand the sone suld lyke the father preue; 5440  
 And be exempill sindrie tymes we se  
 That rycht gude fruct cumis of ane gude tre.  
 ȝit neuirtheles thai war begylit far;  
 In all this warld wes neuir man ȝit war,  
 That is, or wes, or euir ȝit salbe, 5445  
 So far affectit to foull faminitie.

I schame rycht sar to schaw zow all his cryme,  
 So far he faillit, and so oft in his tyme ;  
 Rycht lubrecus and full of vanitie,  
 Of concubinis ane hundreth than had he ; 5450  
 And als thairwith he leuit all the laue,  
 Als mony wyffis as tha pleis to haue.  
 Thair is na poet that with pen can write  
 His beistlie lust and furious appetyte.  
 Into his tyme sic ane law maid he, 5455  
 That nycht ane madyn hapnit to weddit be,  
 Lib. 3, f. 29. The landis lord suld ly with hir that nycht,  
 Col. 1. Quhilk he suld haif of proper det and rycht.  
 This law it lestit till ane weill lang space,  
 As I sall schaw efter at tyme and place. 5460  
 Vicis oft syis thai ar sib togidder,  
 That on ane vice followis ay ane uther ;  
 And quhen ane man in vicis dois repair,  
 It multipleis his vicis ay the mair,  
 And bringis him or euer he wit to schame.<sup>1</sup> 5465  
 So mycht be said be this now Ewenus ;  
 For as the storie trewlie tellis thus,  
 Thair wes na vicis that man in erth culd knaw  
 Bot in his corss thai rang baith ane and aw.  
 Scisma, slauchter, murthure and mischeif, 5470  
 Reif and thift of mony commoun theif,  
 Spulze, oppressioun, and mekill opin wrang,  
 Abundantlie all in his tyme thai rang.  
 The lordis lang mycht nocht suffer sic thing,  
 Vncorrigibill quhen that thai knew thair king ; 5475  
 Then quietlie agane him did conspyre,  
 All in ane will with sic ardent desyre,  
 That for na lat, without lithen or lidder,  
 Sone in ane court convenit all togidder,  
 Thair purpois wes to do na vther thing 5480  
 Bot to correct the faltis of thair king.

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

And fra this counsall to the king wes knawin,  
 That he wes socht sa scharplie wth his awin,  
 He tuke the feild thair with ane few menze,  
 For dreid of him trowand that tha suld fle. 5485  
 He wes begylit as I wnderstand ;  
 With lytill sturt he wes sone tane in hand,  
 And, spuilzeit baith of his kinrik and crown,  
 Perpetuallie condampnit to presoun.

HOW CADALLANUS, LORD OF BRIGANTIA, WAS MAID  
 GOVERNOUR, AND HOW EWENUS WAS SLANE IN  
 PRESOUN.

Than with consent of all the lordis ilk man, 5490  
 The lord of Brigance, noble Cadallan,  
 Thair governour wes chosin in that tyde ;  
 The king in presoun all his tyme sall byde,  
 To giff exempill bayth to king and prince,  
 To gyde him self but vice or violence. 5495  
 That samyn nycht, rycht lang befor the da,  
 Ane furious fuill in presoun quhair he la,  
 Hardie, vnhappie for to tak on hand,  
 He slew this king without ony command,  
 In that beleif he sould rewardit be 5500  
 With Cadallan, bot all begylit wes he ;  
 Quhair that he trowit to be maid ane laird,  
 He gat the gallous syne to his reward.  
 This wes the end of Ewenus ring  
 The sevint zeir efter he wes crownit king. 5505  
 To eurilk man as it is rycht weill kend  
 Ane vicious lyfe makis ane wickit end.  
 Ane perfyte man perfittlie als man de ;  
 Thair is nothing will wnrewardit be. Col. 2.

OFF THE CROWNYNG OFF METALLANUS, THE  
BRUTHER SONE OF EDERUS, THE QUHILK WAS  
THE MAIST HAPPIE KING THAT WES IN ALBIONE.  
IN HIS TYME CHRIST WES BORNE.

Sone efter syne this Ewenus wes slane, 5510  
Ane nobill man wes callit Metellan,  
Quhilk bruther sone wes to the gude Edeir,  
Quhome of befor schort quhile I schew 3ow heir,  
Ressaut wes with swerd, sceptour and croun ;  
Of Ewenus come na successioun. 5515  
In all his tyme he wes the maist happie king,  
That euir tuke croun in Scotland for to ring :  
Peace and plentie he had in his dais,  
Welth and weil fair, as my author sais ;  
Justice and rest all in his dais rang, 5520  
But outward weir or ony inward wrang.  
Greit diligence he did baith da and nycht,  
For to reforme with all power and nycht  
Ewenus law, the quhilk befor maid he,  
In the defoulling of virginite 5525  
Of euerie madin in thair wedding nycht,  
So far it wes by ressoun and by rycht.  
The 3oung lordis so hett tha war and he,  
And so inclynit to sic fantasie,  
To him na way that tyme tha wald consent ; 5530  
Quhairfoir as than he left hes that intent,  
Or dreid it sould gender discord and feid,  
Quhill efterward quhill he saw for remeid.  
Wes neur king nor prince in his dais,  
Quhill Malcome Canmore, as my author sais, 5535  
For feid or fauour, lufe or 3it for aw,  
Culd find ane way to put doun that law.



HOW AUGUSTUS CESAR SEND IN THAT TYME TO  
METOLLANUS FOR TO SEND HIM ANE TAIKIN  
OF PEICE, AND HE SEND HIM ANE CROUN OF  
GOLD IN TAIKIN OF PEICE AND FREINDSCHIP.

Giff it be suith heir that my author sais,  
Augustus Cesar rang into tha dais ;  
That tyme in Rome the empriour wes he, 5540  
Of all this world had haill authoritie,  
That far or neir that tyme culd no man tell  
No berne so bald agane him durst rebell.  
Ouir all the world of pece wes greit plentie,  
Justice and law, rest and tranquillitie ; 5545  
All wer in peace withoutin pley or pleid, Lib.3,f.29b.  
Wes non that tyme durst haue at vther feid. Col. 1.  
This Cesar send that same tyme in Britane,  
Vnto ane king wes callit Kimbalan,  
Thankand him fair of his fidelitie 5550  
He schaw till him and greit humanitie,  
Till him alway and to the Romanis als,  
For in his tyme he wes nevir funden fals ;  
Beseikand him to do his diligence  
To stanche all stryfe, all feid, and all offence, 5555  
With everie prince in birdour neir him by,  
And to postpone all malice and invy.  
Richt so he send to Metallanus king,  
Beseikand him siclike for the same thing,  
As he that wes so curteis and sa hend, 5560  
To schaw him self that tyme the Romanis frend,  
To caus all weir to sober and to ceis.  
Oure all the world greit plentie wes of peace,  
That none<sup>1</sup> to vther for ony thing mycht happin,  
Durst be so pert as to stryk with ane wapyng. 5565

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *onc.*

HOW METALLANUS REWARDIT THE EMPRIOURIS  
HERAULD, AND [SEND] WITH HIM TO ROME  
TO CESAR ANE CROUN OF GOLD.

This nobill king wald nocht Cesar deny,  
Bot till his purpos alway did apply.  
Ane croun of gold that forgit wes rycht fair,  
With poleist peirle rycht plesand and preclair,  
He hes him send with grit humanitie, 5570  
Promittand him his freind all tyme to be.  
In Capitoll quhen that this croun wes schawin,  
And with the Romanis his gentres wes knawin,  
Quhilk causit hes grit kyndnes of thame than,  
For that reward till euerilk Scottis man, 5575  
And speciallie to Metallane the king,  
So plesit he the Romanis with that thing.  
This kyndnes lestit lang and mony zeir,  
Quhill efterwart as I sall schaw zow heir.

HOW OURE SALUIOURE CHRIST JESU WES BORNE  
OF ANE VIRGIN IN BETHLEAM, IN THE  
QUHILK TYME ALL THE WARLD WAS AT PEAX.

In this same time that ze heir me tell, 5580  
The king of peace, maker of hevin and hell,  
That formit all thing at his will beforne,  
In Bethlehem wes of ane virgin borne.  
It wes most ganand to the king of peace  
Into his tyme all weir and wrang to ceis, 5585  
Giffand exempill till ws all to knaw  
He luifis nocht bot justice, peis and law.  
As the propheit Esaias of him sais,  
Of peax abundans sal be in his dais.  
Col. 2. With sic belief that no man sould dreid weir 5590  
Ouir all the warld for to do ony deir ;

Thair wapynis all quhilk war bayth hard and teuche,  
 Hes maid thame all in somes to thair pleuche.  
 The tyme that borne wes this hevinlie king  
 Wes the tent ȝeir of Metallanus ring; 5595  
 Syne twentie ȝeiris and nyne efter he rang  
 In pece and rest, but ony weir or wrang;  
 Syne of his ring the nyne and threttie ȝeir,  
 He bad gude nycht, and baid na langer heir;  
 In sepulture syne put wes for to rest. 5600  
 So happie wes quhill that his tyme mycht lest,  
 Haldin he wes for the moist happie king,  
 In happie tyme rycht so endit his ring,  
 Quhen that the king of all felicitie,  
 Bayth God and man in his humanitie, 5605  
 Incarnat wes for mankynd in this erd.  
 Of Metallan sic wes the chance and werd,  
 Gif it be suith as that my author sais,  
 In that same tyme choisit his latter dais.

EFTER HIS DEID HIS SISTER SONE, CALLIT EUROPIA,  
 THAT LADIE WES TO CADALLANUS, LORD OF  
 BRIGANTIA, HIR SONE CARAT[AC]US WES  
 CROWNIT.

Quhen gone to rest wes Metallan the king, 5610  
 Quhilk hed<sup>1</sup> no air to succeed to his ring,  
 Except ane sister hecht Europia,  
 Qubilk ladie wes, as my author did sa,  
 To Cadallan, of quhome befor I tald,  
 Lord of Brigance, quhilk wes ane berne full bald. 5615  
 Ane sone scho buir to this ilk lord hir maik,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Caratak,  
 Blumand in ȝouth, bayth fragrant and formois,  
 Into his tyme of knychtheid flour and rois;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hes*.

Manlie he wes and meik as ony ma, 5620  
 Aufull in weir and plesand into pla.  
 With hail consent of that tyme ald and zing,  
 This Caratak wes crownit to be king,  
 Quhilk in the tyme of Metallanus age  
 Rycht oft befoir had done greit vassalage. 5625  
 In the same tyme now that ze heir me tell  
 The Ylis all agane him did rebell :  
 Fra thift nor reif thai sparit neur a deill,  
 In greit confusioun of the commoun weill.  
 This Caratac, quhilk wes sa circumspect, 5630  
 With litill feir hes pangit all the fect,  
 Or euer tha wist outhir to fend or fle,  
 Syne on ane gallous maid thame all to de.  
 Quhen this wes done, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 This king he passit to Selluria, 5635  
 On to ane toun that tyme rycht weill wes wallit,  
 The quhilk to name Caracon than wes callit.  
 Efter the toun now, as my author sais,  
 That land is callit Carrik in thir dais.  
 Into that toun this nobill king wes borne, 5640  
 His father als siclike him of biforne ;  
 For in that place wes his natiuitie  
 Into that toun thairfoir remanit he ;  
 Throw the repair the king maid in that toun,  
 It grew to honour and to greit renoum. 5645

Lib. 3, f. 30.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THAT GUYDERUS, THE KING OF BRITANE,  
 WAS THE FIRST THAT REBELLIT AGAINS THE  
 ROMANIS.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell,  
 Harkin and heir sic aventure befell.  
 Into Britan quhen Kynbalan wes deid,  
 Guydeir his sone succedit in his steid,  
 As [he] that wes most richteous for to ring, 5650  
 Of all Britane that tyme wes crownit king.

Quhilk curage had that tyme aboue the laue,  
 Fredome agane and libertie to haiff.  
 Fra Julius come first into Britane,  
 And in battell vincust Cassibilan, 5655  
 Britane wes maid, as my author did sa,  
 Ay vnder tribut to that samyn da.

HOW THIS GUYDERUS CAUSIT HIS LORDIS TO  
 CONVENE, AND THAIR PERSWADIT THAME TO  
 REBELL AGAINS THE ROMANIS.

Quhairfoir this [king] ane counsall sone gart call,  
 And in the presens of his lordis all,  
 Thair of the Romanis sair complaynt maid he, 5660  
 Quhilk held fra thame fredome and libertie,  
 And bundis maid of all the nobill blude,  
 And put the pepill to vyle seruitude,  
 But fredome ay for to be maid thrall.  
 “ Also thair strenthis and thair townis all, 5665  
 “ Tha occupie evin as thai war thair awin,  
 “ And thus with thame dalie to be ourthrawin,  
 “ Bayth wyfe and barne defoulit in our sicht ;  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ quhill we haif strenth and  
 nicht,  
 “ And men anew, I call it best for me 5670  
 “ All on ane da in just battell to de,  
 “ Erar with thame to<sup>1</sup> leif in seruitude.  
 “ My counsall is, now schortlie to conclude,  
 “ Rycht haistelie with all power and nicht,  
 “ For to rebell, sen we haif all the richt, 5675  
 “ In the defens of land and libertie,  
 “ Or in battell all on ane day to die.”  
 In that counsall wes nother lord nor knyght,  
 Erle or duke, or ony vther wicht,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *ane*.

Bot he consentit rycht sone to that thing, 5680  
 And hartfullie thairof thankit thair king,  
 Off his kyndnes that offerit him to de  
 For to reskew thair land and libertie.  
 Rycht haistelie that tyme bot ony rest  
 All Roman blude, and erast of the best, 5685  
 Into Britane, without ony reskew,  
 That mycht be fund, bayth zyoung and ald tha slew.  
 Col. 2. Tha left nocht ane in Britane onslane doun  
 Within ane strenth, ane castell, or ane toun.  
 Greit Clawdeus,<sup>1</sup> quhilk senzeour wes and syir 5690  
 Of Rome that tyme, and had the hail impyre,  
 The emperowr the quhilk wes in that tyme,  
 Rycht sone to him thai haif maid kend that cryme,  
 Be ane seruand the Romanis to him send ;  
 Quhilk schew to him at lenth fra end till end 5695  
 How the Britis than brokin had thair band,  
 And had nocht left levand in all that land  
 Of Roman blude nother barne nor wyfe,  
 Without ane strenth than levand vpoun lyfe ;  
 And send he nocht rycht sone to thame supple, 5700  
 All on ane da tha wald be maid to de.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE CLAUDEUS, HEIRAND THAT  
 THE BRITIS HAD REBELLIT, SEND PLANCTUS  
 AND KNEUS WITH ANE ARMIE INTO BRITANE  
 FOR TO REFORME THAIR REBELLIONE.

This Claudeus, fra tyme that he hard tell  
 How Britane than agane him did rebell,  
 Ane nobill christing callit Planctus,  
 With his collig that callit wes Kneus, 5705  
 In armour bricht with mony nobill man,  
 In gudlie haist he send into Britane.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Slawdeus*.

Throw Italie and France rycht sone tha past,  
 Syne into Britane landit at the last  
 With ane greit oist that wes bayth lang and      5710  
 braid ;  
 Into that tyme no tarie than tha maid,  
 Bot fordwart ay, as my author did say,  
 To Trynovant tha tuke the narrest way.

HOW PLANCTUS AND KNEUS COME IN BRITANE,  
 AND WAN GWYDERUS IN FEILD FECHTAND.

The Britis all, and Gwyderus thair king,  
 Quhen that tha knew perfittlie all that thing,      5715  
 Bownit for battell, wald no langar byde,  
 With mony prince that mekill wes of pryde.  
 Syne raikit on towart the Romanis rycht,  
 Quhill that thai come rycht sone into thair sycht,  
 Quhair that thai baid rycht baldlie on the bent,      5720  
 With baneris brycht and standartis straucht vp stent.  
 The Britis als, upoun the tother syde,  
 So bald tha war no langar tha wald byde,  
 Bot ran togidder with sic ane felloun reird,  
 Quhill [through] thair force than trimlit all the      5725  
 . erd.

The schalmis schill gart all the schawis s[ch]aik,  
 And scharpe schutting gart mony cowart quaik,  
 Quhair mony kemp wes causit for to kneill  
 Agane his will wist nother of wo nor weil.  
 Rycht furiouslie tha faucht into that place      5730  
 But victorie vnto ane weil lang space,  
 Quhill da wes gane, and cumin wes the nycht.  
 The Romanis than wes of sic strenth and nicht,      Lib.3.f.30b.  
 Thocht force it was the Britis for to fle,      Col. 1.  
 Rycht litill skaith thai tuke in that melle ;      5735  
 Tha vmbeschewit vntill ane better tyme  
 To saue thame self and to revenge that cryme.  
 Syne efterwart tha met rycht mony tyde,  
 With mekill slauchter maid on euerilk syde,

Fra blude and battell dalie ceissit nocht, 5740  
 Quhill all that symmer till ane end wes brocht.  
 The Romanis than into the winter tyde  
 Drew to ane strenth thair to remane and byde,  
 To saue thame self vnto the secund 3eir,  
 Quhill symmer come, as 3e sall efter heir. 5745

HOW GWYDERUS, THE KING OF BRITIS, EFTIR HE  
 TYNT THE FEILD, SEND TO THE KING OF  
 SCOTTIS FOR SUPPLE.

In this same tyme this king Gwyderus send  
 Ane messenger, with hartlie recommend,  
 To Caratacus, of Scotland than wes king,  
 Quhilk salust him with wordis rycht benyng,  
 To that effect as 3e sall efter heir. 5750  
 Quben cuming wes this mirrie messingeir  
 Befoir the king, his office did adres,  
 And thus he said as I sall now rehers.

HOW HE SEND AN HERAULD TO CARATACUS, SCHAW-  
 AND TO HIM ALL THAIR DESYRE.

“ O peirles prince and perle of pulchritude, <sup>1</sup>  
 “ Invincibill victor in thi majestie! 5755  
 “ Gwyderus king rycht gudlie greitis the,  
 “ With his lordis and with his liegis all,  
 “ Beseikand the into thy stait royall,  
 “ As thow art prince of greit blythnes and joy,  
 “ That thow wald haif compatiens of his noy 5760  
 “ Quhilk that we suffer all tyme da and nycht  
 “ Be the Romanis hes <sup>2</sup> reft fra ws our rycht.  
 “ Oure royall realme thai haif put hail to nocht,  
 “ The nobill blude all to confusioun brocht,

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *Romend he hes*.



- “ The pair pepill put in vyle seruitude, 5765  
 “ Possessit all oure landis and oure gude,  
 “ Bayth wyffe and barne defoullis in our sycht ;  
 “ Ilk knaif of thame is falow<sup>1</sup> till ane knyecht  
 “ Of the best blude that is of Britane borne ;  
 “ Thus ar we thrall quhair we war fre beforne. 5770  
 “ Wnder the hevin we wait of no supple,  
 “ Nor zit remeid, bot gif it be with the,  
 “ And with the Pechtis, as I can weill considder,  
 “ Sen ze and tha ar connix[i]t togidder.  
 “ Heir I beseik,” he said, “ thi celsitude, 5775  
 “ Exeree thi strenth, thi force and fortitude,  
 “ And help ws out of this miseritie,  
 “ For bot thi help na vther help haif we.  
 “ Consider als this [is] ane commoun querrell,  
 “ And to ws all perteing of greit perrell. 5780  
 “ Traist weill,” he said, “ as tha with ws hes done,  
 “ Sielyke with zow tha think to do ryecht sone. Col. 2.  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ O zow victorius king !  
 “ We the beseik richt humblie and benyng,  
 “ To be oure help, oure succour and supple, 5785  
 “ And leif ws nocht in this necessitie.  
 “ Thoecht we ryecht litill ma do oure alane,  
 “ Bot weill I wait war all our strenth in ane,  
 “ The riche Romanis, for all thair strenth and myecht,  
 “ Nocht worth ane myte myecht reif [us] of our 5790  
 ryecht.  
 “ Sen sua it is, O zow king Caratae !  
 “ We the beseik for all thi goddis saik,  
 “ And for the faith thow anecht to king Gwydeir,  
 “ And for hir lufe that thow luifis sa deir,  
 “ To be oure help and supple in this cace. 5795  
 “ Do as thow will ; all standis in thi grace.”

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *fulwes*.

THE ANSUER OF CARATACUS AGANE TO THE BRITANE  
HERAULD, AND OF HIS COUNSALL IN THE  
MATER.

Quhen this wes said befor thame all in plane,  
 This nobill king sic answer maid agane.  
 " Forsuith," he said, " no mervell is to me  
 " Of 3our mischeif and greit miseritie. 5800  
 " For weill I wait ze be the wyte of all,  
 " Sen pryde left neur his maist[er] but ane fall.  
 " Quhilk previs weill by 3ow as I presume,  
 " Quhen Julius, the preconsull of Rome,  
 " Assailzeit 3ow with greit power and nicht; 5805  
 " 3our hartis than thai war so hie on hicht,  
 " That ze forsuk our help that tyme rycht far,  
 " Quhairfoir rycht sone ze war put to the war.  
 " Thairby," he said, " that ze ma full weill knaw,  
 " That pride left neur his maister but ane faw, 5810  
 " For-quhy ze sett oure power all at nocht,  
 " And neur sensyne supple at ws ze socht  
 " Quhill now," he said, " that verrie force and neid  
 " Hes causit 3ow quhen ze can cum na speid.  
 " 3it can I nocht perfitlie vnderstand, 5815  
 " How ze ma weill now sic thing tak on hand  
 " Be ony way that efter may befall,  
 " Sen that ye Romanis hes 3our strenthis all,  
 " As Trynovant and Eborac alsua,  
 " Carlialum and mony vther ma; 5820  
 " And all 3our land, quhair that thame lykis best,  
 " At thair plesour tha bruke in peax and rest,  
 " And ze ar parit of 3our power far,  
 " Far waikar now befor nor euir ze war.  
 " And quhen ze war at all 3our pryde and hicht, 5825  
 " Not all 3our power, 3our strenthis and nicht,  
 " And had 3our strenthis all in 3our awin hand,  
 " Nane bot 3our self to occupie 3our land,

- “ Zit prefalie on zow tha wan the feild,  
 “ Quhair mony ane of zow that da wes keild. 5830  
 “ Now sen zour power is bot of lytill prys,  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ I hald zow for<sup>1</sup> wnwys  
 “ With small power so greit thing to pretend,  
 “ The quhilk befoir mycht nocht zour self defend,  
 “ Quhen zour power vnbrokin wes and hail; 5835  
 “ Also thairwith ze had the better dail. Lib. 3, f. 31.  
 “ As it is said in mony suithfull saw, Col. 1.  
 “ Far ethar is to hald nor for to draw,  
 “ Traist weill,” he said, “ that [that] is verrie trew.  
 “ Greit perrell is sic battell till persew, 5840  
 “ Sen that zour power is so waik and pair,  
 “ And hes no strenth sic battell till indure  
 “ Agane Romanis of sa mekill nicht,  
 “ Quhilk all this warld haldis thair awin of rycht;  
 “ And all the warld thai haif gart lout full law, 5845  
 “ Rycht mony king of thame standis sic aw.  
 “ Mulzeonis of gold thai haif aneuch to spend,  
 “ Quhen euer tha pleis other to cum or send  
 “ With new power agane into zour land;  
 “ Quharefoir,” he said, “ I can nocht wnderstand 5850  
 “ How that sic thing rycht weill mycht be brocht  
 to,  
 “ Without thai had sum vther thing ado.  
 “ My counsall is,” he said, “ into this caice,  
 “ That ze send sum in mony sundrie place,  
 “ As France, Flanderis, and als in Neustria,<sup>2</sup> 5855  
 “ In Burgone, Brabane, and Armorica,  
 “ Or vther landis lyis zow neir hand by,  
 “ Gif that ze can rycht sone and suddanelie  
 “ Caus thame in haist to tak sic thing on hand,  
 “ All to rebell togidder in ane band; 5860

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *far*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *Meustria*.

“ Sayand to thame that all the kingis ilk one,  
 “ Quhilk at this tyme ringis in Albione,  
 “ Sall thame support with all help and supple,  
 “ Quhen mister is of men and als money,  
 “ And tak thair pairt in all thingis gude and ill, 5865  
 “ Sua that thai pleis for to consent thairtill.  
 “ Rycht weill I wait thai pepill hallelie  
 “ At the Romanis hes malice and invy,  
 “ And wilbe blyth sic thingis to tak on hand,  
 “ And be it sua, rycht weill I vnderstand, 5870  
 “ For ony case that thai can weill cum to,  
 “ The Romanis than sall haif aneweche ado  
 “ Or tha can bring tha raletis to gude rest.  
 “ Then I consider that 3our tyme is best,  
 “ With oure power together all in one, 5875  
 “ That princes ar this tyme in Albione,  
 “ Than to our purpois we may weill proceid,  
 “ But ony danger of oure fais or dreid.  
 “ And this be done thair is no moir to sa,  
 “ Bot lat vs de all erar on ane da, 5880  
 “ And in oure bodie suffer werkand woundis,  
 “ Or baneis thame ilk ane out of our boundis.  
 “ This is my counsall alway for the best,  
 “ Pleis 3e nocht this, 3e may do as 3e lest.”

HOW THE HERALD PASSIT HAME AGANE AND  
 SCHEW HIS ANSUER ; OF THE QUHILK THE  
 BRITIS WAR CONTENT.

Quhen this was said as I haif said 3ow heir, 5885  
 Of this ansuer blyth wes the messingeir ;  
 Baith king and lord he thankit in that tyde,  
 Syne take his leiff and wald no langer byde ;  
 And passit hame in Britane to thair king,  
 Col. 2. And word by word he schew till him all thing. 5890

Thairof the Britis was rycht blyth and glaid,  
 Quhen that thai hard how that this herauld said.  
 Rycht glaidlie all thankit the Scottis king  
 Of his promit and counsall in that thing.

HOW THE BRITIS SEND IN GALLIA AND ARMORICA  
 TO CAUS THAME REBELL AGANIS THE ROMANIS.

Than have thai chosin, in all the haist thai ma, 5895  
 Ambassatouris to pas in Gallia,  
 For to compleit the purpois thai had tane ;  
 Thai tuke thair leue syne furth in haist is gane.  
 To schip thai went and passit to the se,  
 And sone tuke land rycht sone in Picardie ; 5900  
 That land befoir, as my author did sa,  
 In to that tyme wes callit Morina.  
 Quhen this ambaxat cuming wes to land,  
 No tarie maid as ze sall vnderstand,  
 Bot sped thame fast with all the haist tha ma, 5905  
 Quhill that thai come quhair the counsall la.  
 And in that counsall, secreitlie and trew,  
 As ze haif hard, ilk word by word tha schew,  
 Schort quhile before as ze haif hard me tell,  
 Agane the Romanis gif thai wald rebell, 5910  
 Quhilk haldis thame in sic misericitie,  
 For till reskew thair land and libertie,  
 And mak thame fre of all thair feid and wrang,  
 And seruitude thai had bene in so lang ;  
 " And pleis ze this that I haif shawin now, 5915  
 " All Albione will confidder with zow,  
 " And mak supplie with hors, harnes and geir,  
 " Money and men, and schippis for the weir,  
 " And alkin thing that neidfull is to haif ;  
 " Quhat we ma do sall nocht be for to craif. 5920  
 " In all Britane is nocht levand on lyve  
 " Of Roman blude other man or wyve,

“ Without ane strenth or than put to the se,  
 “ Thus of the Romanis neir clengit ar we.  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ put all oure strenth in   5925  
   ane,  
 “ Persew the purpois we haif vnderthane;  
 “ Thair is no perrell sic thing to persew,  
 “ For weill I wat that we will all be trew.”

HOW THE MEN OF GALLIA TUKE THAME TO AUIS-  
 MENT, AND CAUSIT THE BRITANE HERALD TO  
 KEIP HIM QUYET.

Quhen this wes said befor them all in plane,  
 This wes the ansuer that he gat agane;                   5930  
 Sayand thai suld aduise with all the laif,  
 Sen<sup>1</sup> neid it war of thair counsall to haif.  
 Exhortand thame, for ocht that euir mycht fall,  
 Secreit to be and till keip counsall all,  
 Or dreid the Romanis sic thing suld presume.           5935  
 Lib.3.f.31b. For and tha did, but ony law or domé,  
   Col. 1. All the plagis of thame that tha had tane,  
 But ony dout tha wald hang thame ilkane;  
 And, or thai suld suspectit be that tyde,  
 Commandit thame no langar thair to byde,               5940  
 Bot pas to Calice, thair for to remane  
 Quhill that thai suld send thame answer agane.  
 And so thai did vnto ane weill lang space,  
 Rycht mony da remanand on thair grace;  
 And tha agane, with diligence ilk da,                   5945  
 In till all pairt that round about thame la,  
 Bayth far and neir thair herauldis haif tha send,  
 Greitand thame weill with hartlie recommend,  
 Schawand all thing at lenth baith les and moir,  
 Ilk word by word as ze haif hard befor.               5950

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *send*.

Now will I leif of this ane lytill we,  
 And at thair counsall heir I lat thame be ;  
 And turne agane into that tyme and tell  
 Sic aventure as in Britane befell.

HOW THAT THE ROMANE LEGAT, CALLIT PLANTEUS,  
 PASSIT TO THE FEILD AGANE GWYDERUS.

Quhen passit wes the winter that wes cald, 5955  
 With mony blast that bitter wes and bald,  
 And cummin wes the symmer soft and schene,  
 With feildis fair and mony leuis grene ;  
 Quhen flureis fair vpoun the sprayis sprang,  
 The lustie lark with mony noittis sang, 5960  
 This Romane legat, callit Plantius,  
 And his collig with knychtis curious,  
 No langar than in strenthis wald remane,  
 Bot rycht pertlie sone passit to the plane,  
 With all thair folk weill furneist for the feild 5965  
 With helme and habrik, burneist brand and scheild,  
 With sword and ax, lang lance and speir,  
 And all wapynis that neidfull war in weir.  
 Syne waistit hes ouir all bayth far and neir  
 The landis all that held of king Guydeir, 5970  
 Evin as thai list at greit lasar and lenth ;  
 Wes nothing saiff that wes without ane strenth.

HOW GUYDERUS, THE KING OF BRITIS, TUKE THE  
 FEILD AGANE THE ROMANE LEGAT, CALLIT  
 PLANTIUS.

This king Guydeir, quhen he hard this, in hy  
 He haistit him and wald na langar ly.  
 Greit diligence he hes done nycht and da, 5975  
 With all the power possibill that he ma,  
 Quhill all the Britis that tyme in Britane  
 In till ane ost contractit hes ilk man,

Quhilk [abill] war ane wapin for to weild,  
 To mak defence agane thair fa in feild. 5980  
 And women als, that hardie war and wicht,  
 With bow and brand, brasar and birny bricht,  
 For to reskew thair libertie and land,  
 And scrutude out of the Romanis hand.

Col. 2.

HOW PLANCTUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, AND GWY-  
 DERUS, THE KING OF BRITIS, MET IN FEILD.

Than to the feild ryeht fraklie that tha fuir, 5985  
 And with the Romanis met vpone ane mure;  
 And semblit sone with mony cry and shout,  
 Quhair mony stalwart that wer strang and stout,  
 And mony berne wes laid vpone his bak,  
 And mony burdoun vpone breist plait brak, 5990  
 And mony freik war fellit in the feild,  
 And mony schoulder schorne out throw the scheid,  
 And mony berne la bulrand in his blude,  
 Into that strive so stranglie all tha stude.  
 The Britis faucht with egir hartis hie, 5995  
 For wyfe, for barne, for land, for libertie;  
 The Romanis faucht for riches and for glore.  
 The stour vpsprang the langer ay the more;  
 The Romane knychtis wer nocht for to leir  
 Of all prattik and wisdome into weir; 6000  
 Throw sic prattik and greit multitude,  
 The victorie hail in thair handis stude.

HOW PLANCTUS WAN THE FEILD, AND SLEW GWY-  
 DERUS, THE KING OF BRITIS.

This king Gwydeir, into the formest feild,  
 Quhair that he faucht with mony knycht, wes keild.  
 The Britis than persaeand weill sic thing, 6005  
 Thair greit mischeif and slaucher of the king,



And greit trobill that tha war in that tyde,  
 Turnit thair bak and mycht na langer byde,  
 And fled rycht far out of the fechtin place.  
 The Romanis than sone furneist hes ane chace, 6010  
 And slauchter maid on thame ane waiill lang  
 quhile,  
 Followand ay fast the space of neir sax myle,  
 Vnsatiat than of the Britis blude,  
 Quhill that thai come till Garran that flude.  
 Suppois the Romanis wan the feild that da, 6015  
 It wes deir bocht, the suith gif I sall sa ;  
 Tha lost sa mony of thair nobill men,  
 And wys Kneus quhilk wes worth vther ten,  
 Of wit and wisdom, manheid and valour,  
 For all his strenth he stervit in that stour. 6020

HOW THE BRITANE HERAULD WAS SEND OUT OF  
 GALLIA WITHOUT BELEIFF OF SUPPLIE, QUHEN  
 THA HARD GWYDERUS WES SLANE.

Fra this battell in France wes hard and kend,  
 How king Gwydeir that tyme had maid sic end,  
 And how the Romanis wan the victorie,  
 Tha war disparit than alluterlie  
 For ony help thai mycht get or supple, 6025  
 In tyme to cum to reskew thair libertie.  
 The Britis than, quhilk on the answer baid,  
 Tha take thair leve and no moir tarie maid, 6030  
 And sped thame hame but expeditioun  
 Of thair erand, evin as thai come of the toun.

Lib. 3, f.32.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE CALLIT CLAUDEUS, WITH  
 VESPACIAN, COME FURTH OF FLANDERIS WITH  
 ANE GREIT ARMIE.

Sone efter this the emprioure Claudeus,  
 And Vespacian, my author tellis thus,

Come furth of Flanderis with ane greit armie  
 On to Britane, quhair that tyme landit he  
 With mony legioun into weirlyke weid, 6035  
 Quhome of the Britis tuke greit feir and dreid.  
 Quhairfoir to him rycht sone that thair haif send  
 Ane messinger with hartlie recommend,  
 Rycht humblie than his grace for to imploir ;  
 Excusand thame of all thing done befoir, 6040  
 Be wrang counsall and be na vther thing,  
 And all promute first [maid] into thair king,  
 Quhilk for his falt wes puneist than full sair,  
 And thair forthocht and suld do sa na mair,

HOW CLAUDEUS MAID ANSUER TO THE BRITANE  
 HERAULD, SAYAND HE WALD NOCHT TAK  
 THAME TO HIS PEAX WITHOUT THAI COME ALL  
 AND PUT THAME IN HIS WILL.

Quhen this wes said than be this messingeir, 6045  
 This Claudeus thair of he wald nocht heir  
 Without thair come thame self rycht sone him till,  
 And puirlye all syne put thame in his will.  
 And so thair did on force, for it wes neid,  
 Into that tyme tha war into sic dreid. 6050  
 And quhen thair come befoir this Claudeus,  
 That bellicois wes, bald and busteous,  
 He said to thame, "How durst ze be so bald,  
 " For to rebell failland sa in ony fald,  
 " Thair fayth and aithis sa oft befoir had sworne, 6055  
 " And all promisis laitlie maid beforne?"  
 The Britis than, quhilk knew full weil thair cryme,  
 Tha wist nocht how to answer in that tyme,  
 Without prudence thair taill till him to tell,  
 Befoir his face quhill down on kneis thair fell, 6060  
 With trigland teiris rynnand to thair feit,  
 Than for thair gilt thair tha begouth to greit ;

Beseikand him, as he wes roy of reuth,  
 Thame to ressaue agane into his treuth,  
 And thai suld bind thame, baith with ayth and 6065  
 seill,

For euirmoir to his impyre be leill.  
 This Claudeus than maid thame all to ryis,  
 In that mater sayand he wald adwyis ;  
 Thingis in weir with wisdome suld be wrocht,  
 Thairfoir but counsall he wald do rycht nocht. 6070

Mony thair wes, as my author did tell,  
 Amang the Romanis crwell of counsall,  
 Sayand he wald neur bruke Britane in rest,  
 Without he puneist that tyme of the best  
 So scharp and sair, that euerie man mycht se 6075  
 To all the laue it nicht exempill be.

Col. 2.

Vespacian than, so curtas wes and gude,  
 Gentill and meik, and full of mansuetude,  
 Quhilk of his nature also wes benyng,  
 Alluterlie discentit to that thing. 6080

Sayand alway, that other king or prince  
 That crwell war but mercie or clemence,  
 Thocht he his liegis guyde with dreid and aw,  
 So sall he nocht with equitie of law,  
 As be exempill oft syis it is sene, 6085

Vnto the Romanis alwayis dois pertene,  
 Of prostrat pepill petie haif and rew,  
 And prydfull men with battell to persew.  
 This Claudius, quhilk wes ane humill mau,  
 Throw the counsall of this Vespacian, 6090  
 Remittit hes all offence done beforne ;  
 Syne gude and ill befor him all hes sworne,  
 Ay at his faith perpetuallie remane ;  
 In all thair tyme neur to rebell agane.

HOW THE BRITIS, EFTER GWYDERUS WAS SLANE,  
CROWNIT HIS BRUTHER ARUEREGUS<sup>1</sup> TO BE  
KING.

Than with the counsall of the Britis hail, 6095  
That Britis blude in Britane suld nocht fail,  
In stait royall as thai had wont to ring  
Arverigus than hes be crownit king,  
Qubilk bruther germane wes to king Gwydeir,  
Laitlie befor wes slaine, as ze mycht heir. 6100  
And Plantius he ordand als to be  
Greit precident with hail autoritie,  
To gyde and reull that all thing suld gang rycht,  
But weir or wrang of ony warldlie wycht.  
Mark Terebell, ane man of price and pryde, 6105  
Hes constat him his vietogall that tyde,  
For to collect his tribute and his rent,  
And to distribut dalie to his stent.  
Commandand thame that all thing suld ga rycht,  
And blythlie syne he bad thame all gude nycht, 6110  
Exortand thame alway for to be trew,  
And in that tyme neur agane to persew  
To mak sic falt as thai had maid beforne,  
And brek thair band and aith that tha had sworne.  
For better it war to lat sic thing alane, 6115  
Nor tak sic skaith befor as thai haif taue.  
“ And for to haif the Romanis to 3our freind,  
“ And wnder ws and oure protectioun leind,  
“ The quhilk to 3ow salbe scheild and defence  
“ Fra weir and wrang and fra all violence. 6120  
“ Than ma ze leif into gude pece and rest,  
“ And policie evin as 3ow plesis best,  
“ In welth and weilfair baith with barne and wyve,  
“ Withoutin sturt of ony or 3it stryve.”  
Quhen this wes said as ze haif hard me sa, 6125  
And thai war reddie for to pas thair wa,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Aruegerus*.

Rycht grittumlie the Britis thankit than,  
 Of his gentreis, this nobill Vespacian,  
 As he that wes ane gentill curtas knycht ;  
 Syne tuk thair leif and bad thame all gude nycht. 6130

HOW CLAUDEUS THE EMPRIoure PASSIT OUT OF  
 BRITANE TO ORKNAY, AND TUKE THE KING  
 GANUS TO ROME.

This Claudeus hes gevin strait command  
 To Plantius for to defend that land, Lib.3,f.32b.  
 Fra Scot and Pecht for to debait thame baith, Col. 1.  
 In pece and rest that thai may leif but skayth ;  
 And he with battell suld persew no tyde 6135  
 Scot nor Pecht quhilk pepill war of pryde ;  
 In thair awin realme with rest to lat thame ring,  
 Without thair self the caus wer of sic thing.  
 Zit wald he nocht, at that tyme as it stude,  
 Pas hame agane without battell or blude ; 6140  
 Quharefoir he chesit for the likliest way  
 With his armie to pas into Orknay,  
 Becaus the pepill war of power small  
 As eith it war for till ouirturn thame all,  
 Scot nor Pecht that tyme persewit nocht, 6145  
 He knew so weill it wald be deirlic bocht,  
 Rycht oft befoir to him it hes bene tald  
 Tha pepill war rycht bellicois and bald.  
 Syne efterwart, rycht sone vpoun ane day  
 He tuke the se and passit till Orknay. 6150  
 Gydis that tyme he had wes gude aneuche  
 Him till convoy fra craig, sand, or cleuche,  
 With mony barge that mekill wes of birth,  
 Quhill that he enterit into Pantland Firth ;  
 Quhair mony perrell in that place thai fand, 6155  
 Of stark stremis that ran neir the land ;

Quhilis in wynd and vther quihilis in wall,  
 Tha war in point that tyme to perische all.  
 Zit neuirtheles tha chaipit weill that tyde,  
 Sic wes thair grace thai had so gude ane gyde. 6160  
 Unto the yle quhair that tha first tuke land,  
 No creature befor thame thair thai fand.  
 The folk wes fled that tyme or tha come nar,  
 Quben thai persauit he cuming wes on far ;  
 That wes the caus that gart the pepill flie, 6165  
 Sa mony schippis tha saw vpoun the se.  
 Than thai remanit in that place schort quhile,  
 And sone thai passit till ane vther ile,  
 Quhilk in that tyme, as my author did sa,  
 It callit wes to name Pomonia : 6170  
 That wes the name ane long tyme of the ald,  
 And now to name it callit is Kirkwald :  
 And thair tha set thair schippis to the sand,  
 Syne with thair boittis passit al to land.  
 By ane watter besyde ane litill toun 6175  
 Tha stentit thair rycht mony proude palzeoun.  
 Exploraturis than haif thai send in hy  
 Ouir all the yle rycht scharplie for to spy,  
 And all the land also baith far and neir,  
 Gif ony perrell did in that place appeir. 6180  
 And so thai did, syne come agane ilkane,  
 With presonaris rycht mony tha had tane ;  
 Quhilk schew to thame than of ane strang castell,  
 Of stone and lyme, and mony worthie wall,  
 Vpoun ane strenth, with touris that wer hie, 6185  
 Within twelf myle rycht law down be the se,  
 With wod and watter stranglie it was wallit,  
 Quhair that thair king, that Ganus than wes callit,  
 With wyfe and barne remanit in the tyde.  
 Than Claudeus rycht sone hes gart prowye 6190  
 In armour brycht ane grit legione befall,  
 That strang castell rycht sone for to assail.

And as thai war than passand be the way,  
 The Orknay men that fled wes fra the fray,  
 And all the laif als of the land about, 6195  
 Gatherit thai war togidder in ane rout ;  
 And as the da departit fra the nycht  
 Thair of the Romanis thai haif gottin sycht.  
 Than force it wes to fecht or to be tane ;  
 Flie mycht tha nocht, thair wes na vther wane 6200  
 Bot byde the chance fortoun wald send thame till ;  
 Tha tuke the feild and pat thame in her will,  
 But all for nocht, thair power wes so small,  
 Rycht suddanelie thair wer tha vincust all.  
 Amang thame all that tyme thair wes nocht ane 6205  
 Left of thame all bot other slane or tane.  
 Quhen this wes done, the Romanis wer so blyth,  
 Vnto the seig thai dressit thame rycht swyth  
 Of that castell stude on ane rock of stone ;  
 With mony bent and arrowis mony one, 6210  
 With gun and genzie, and with vther geir,  
 And all ingyne that vsit wes in weir,  
 That neidfull war, thairof tha had no falt.  
 And sindrie syis<sup>1</sup> thai saillit with ane salt,  
 And tha within als lang than as thai mocht 6215  
 Hes maid defence, bot it wes all for nocht.  
 The Romanis power wes so stark and strang,  
 And thai within defendit had sa lang,  
 Thair passage all wes stoppit by the se,  
 And tha within syne wist of no supple, 6220  
 And or tha suld constranit be thairtill,  
 Gif our the hous and put thame in his will.  
 The king Ganus with wyfe and barnis ilkane  
 Out of the hous the Romanis than hes tane ;  
 Syne to thair schippis led thame fra the land, 6225  
 And held thame thair fast bundin into band.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *sayis*.

This beand done, syne efter in schort quhile,  
 This Claudius considerit hes that yle,  
 With firth and fell, and mony feildis fair,  
 With fische in flude, and foullis in the air, 6230  
 With greit abundance of all bestiall,  
 Of wyld and tame, with cornis and victuall;  
 All kynd of thing that neidfull wes for man,  
 Within that yle abundance thair wes than.

HOW CLAUDEUS PASSIT FRA ORKNAY TO GALLIA,  
 AND SYNE FRA GALLIA HAME AGANE TO ROME.

Than Claudius within ane lytill quhile, 6235  
 To schip he went and passit fra that yle;  
 And saillit furth, syne on the auchtane da  
 To Calice toum, as my author did sa,  
 He and his men restit ane lytill we,  
 Quhilk tyrit wes for travell on the se. 6240  
 Quhen this wes done, syne efter on ane da,  
 In gudlie haist he passit hame his wa.  
 This king Ganus, with wyfe and barnis than,  
 And pledgis all, he brocht out of Britane,  
 With greit triumph with him to Rome he had, 6245  
 To mak it kend how he that tyme had sped.  
 Aneuche of this; heir will I hald me still,  
 And to the Britis turne agane I will.

Lib. 3, f.33.  
 Col. 1.

HOW ARWERAGUS, KING OF BRITIS, REPELLIT HIS  
 QUENE WOADA, SISTER TO KING CARATAC,  
 FOR ANE ROMANE LADIE.

Thair king that tyme, quhilk hecht Arweragus,  
 That creat was be this ilk Claudius, 6250  
 As of befoir schort quhile ze haif hard me sa,  
 Ane quene he had wes callit Woadas,  
 Quhilk in hir tyme had nother peir nor maik,  
 Sister sche wes to gude king Carataic,



King of Scotland, the quhilk into his dais 6255  
 Wes flour of knychtheid, as my author sais.  
 This Romane pretor callit Plantius  
 Perswadit hes this ilk Arweragus,  
 For to repell this nobill Woyoda.  
 This lustie quene and hir barnis alsua, 6260  
 Ane sone sche had wes callit Gwyderus,  
 And dochteris tua, the storie tellis thus,  
 He gart include thame in ane castell strang,  
 Without fredome other to ryde or gang,  
 Thair to remane for terme of all thair lyfe ; 6265  
 Vnlefullie syne tuke ane vther wyfe,  
 Ane Roman ladie callit Genissa.  
 And for that caus, my author sais sua,  
 That Plantius he wrocht all hail this thing,  
 To caus the Britis and the Scottis king 6270  
 For to discord and tyne affinitie,  
 So that the Britis suld get na supple,  
 That Caratac gif efter so befell  
 Agane the Romanis gif thai wald rebell.  
 Ane nobill man wes lord of Cambria, 6275  
 Ane vther als lord of Tegenia,<sup>1</sup>  
 And mony vther that war cheualrous,  
 Quhilk had the gyding of Arweragus,  
 Displesit war rycht greitlie of that thing,  
 Quhen that thai knew sic folie of thair king, 6280  
 But ony caus his quene for to exclude,  
 And syne to mixt him with the Roman blude.  
 To him tha zeid rycht oft and mony syis,  
 Exhortand him with wordis that war wys,  
 For till exclude fra him that Roman huir, 6285  
 And of his quene agane to tak the cuir,  
 And keip hir weill alway as did effer,  
 Sen that scho wes ane kingis dochter deir.

<sup>1</sup> In MS., and several times subsequently, *Fegenia*.

- Think of his barnis tender and benyng,  
 Quhilk darrest wer to him of ony thing; 6290  
 Beseikand him, for all thair goddis saik,  
 To keip kyndnes to gude king Carrataik,  
 And to the Scottis thair freindis wer befoir,  
 The quhilk suld be the langer ay the moir,  
 As resson wald, throw the affinitie 6295  
 Of Woda, and consanguinitie  
 Of hir barnis, quhilk war bayth Brit and Scott,  
 That matrimonie had knit in sic ane knot;  
 And sindrie syis rycht so thai him besocht,  
 Bot all thair lawbour that tyme wes for nocht. 6300  
 Lust in his hart had kendlit sic curage,  
 And appetyte of his new mariage,  
 As be his ansuer thai mycht rycht weill fynd  
 That wit and ressoun bayth war in him blind.  
 And quhen thai saw that thair wes no remeid 6305  
 Col. 2. Bot force it wes ather to haif his feid,  
 Or thoill the quene in presoun for to de,  
 Withoutin falt thair and hir barnis thre;  
 Quhairfoir of this no moir than haif thai spokin,  
 That samin nycht the presoun thai haif brokin, 6310  
 And furth hes tane this nobill Woyada  
 With hir barnis, and hed in Cambria  
 Vnto ane place quhair scho mycht saffie be,  
 Evin as sche list at hir awin libertie.  
 Arweragus heirand that this wes done, 6315  
 Ane messenger he hes send to thame sone,  
 Schawand to thame the thing la in his thocht  
 So wranguslie agane him tha had wrocht,  
 Quhome to that tyme he gevin had sic cuir,  
 And he befoir to thame did nevir injure. 6320  
 And mairatour, he said he vnderstude  
 Quhen that he mixt him with the Romanis blude,  
 That he did sua wes alsway for the best  
 To purcheis peice, and mak concord and rest

With the Romanis sa lang had been thair fa : 6325  
 That wes the caus, he said, that he did sua.  
 Als be na caus, he said, that he culd knaw  
 Of consuetude or zit be writtin law,  
 He culd nocht find that he had far misgane,  
 Sen lesum wes to haif ma wyffis nor ane ; 6330  
 Als prayand thame speciallic with his hart  
 Vnto the Romanis for to keip thair pairt,  
 And of the cuir that thai had tane on hand,  
 Anent the reull and gyding of the land.

HOW ARWERAGUS AND PLANTIUS PASSIT WITH  
 POWER AGANE THE MEN OF TEGEN AND  
 CAMBRIA.

Quhen this wes said befor thame all in plane, 6335  
 Of the ansuer that tha send him agane,  
 How ever it wes, or quhat thing that it ment,  
 Arweragus thairof wes nocht content.  
 Fra this wes schawin to Aulus Plantius,  
 Perswadit hes this ilk Arweragus 6340  
 With plane battell in all the hast tha ma,  
 For till persew Tegin and Cambria.  
 The Cambriens and Tigens in that tyde  
 For all his bost rycht baldlie thoct to byde ;  
 With roustie rancour that ruttis of the hart 6345  
 Vpoun ane plane thai met the vther pairt.  
 The men of Tegen and of Cambria,  
 Thoct tha war forcie to the feild that da,  
 Zit neuirtheles thair power wes so small,  
 Into that feild thai war confoundit all ; 6350  
 Mony war slane, the laif wer maid to fle,  
 Sum to the mos, sum to the montanis lie.

HOW PLANCTUS, HEIRAND THAT THAI REBELLIT  
 AGANIS HYM, PASSIT IN HAIST TO KENTSCHYIR  
 TO REMANE.

- This beand done, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Ane messinger vpoun the secund da,  
 He come and schew to Aulus Planctus, 6355  
 This Romane legat, and to Arweragus,  
 That all the nobills of Icinia  
 With thair colliggis of Lobunia,<sup>1</sup>  
 Lib.3,f.33b. Rebellit had agane thame in ane band  
 Col. 1. And tane the strenthis all at thair awin hand. 6360  
 Tha landis now contenis landis thrie,  
 All Loncastell, York schyre, and Darbie.  
 Than Planctius, fra tyme that he hard tell  
 So haistelic the Britis did rebell,  
 With all his power passit into Kent, 6365  
 Dreidand full sair that tyme of his intent,  
 Or dreid the Britis that lay in bordour by  
 Suld thame inuaid, and for that samin quby  
 He sped him hame in all the haist he mycht,  
 Withoutin tarie other day or nycht. 6370

HOW PLANCTUS INTO KENTSCHYRE STUFFIT ALL  
 THE STRENGTHIS, AND SEND IN GALLIA FOR  
 MAIR SUPPLE.

- Syne quhen he come to Kentschyre, in that land  
 All the strenthis befor him that he fand,  
 With meit and men, and strang waponis of steill,  
 He stuffit thame all at that tyme rycht weill.  
 So litill traist he had into the Britis, 6375  
 That samin tyme, as that my author writis,  
 He send in France for to get mair supple ;  
 Syne in ane strentlh he drew him suddantlie.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Cobunia*.

HOW IT<sup>1</sup> WAS SCHAWIN TO THE LEGAT THAT TEGIN,  
CAMBRIA, AND LOBINIA<sup>2</sup> HAD REBELLIT.

This samin tyme, now that ze heir me sa,  
The Cambriens and all Teginia 6380  
Buskit but baid that tyme or tha wald blin,  
On till ane toun wes callit Coremyu;  
Quhilk wes ane toun of honour than and fame,  
That Schoresberrie now is callit to name.  
And all the nobillis of Icinia 6385  
Come thair that tyme, with mony vther ma,  
For to devyis into sa greit ane thing;  
And speciallic quhilk wes agane thair king,  
So wranguslie that did his quene exclude,  
Infectand him syne with the Roman blude 6390  
Sua lang beforne had bene thair mortall fa,  
Fredome and land also had tane thame fra.  
With haill consent thair tha decreittit all,  
For ony thing that efter mycht befall,  
All on ane da in just battell to de, 6395  
Or to reskew bayth land and libertie.  
And or tha wald oucht ellis tak on hand,  
Sone haif thai send in mony sindrie land,  
As in Cornwell and als in Candalia  
And all the partis of Damonia, 6400  
Requyrand thame rycht afald with thair hart,  
In that purpos that thai wald tak thair part.  
Tha landis now contenis in thir dais  
Cornewell and Kendail, as my author sais,  
And Diromschire<sup>3</sup> all haill with Cumerland, 6405  
Evin to the valis of Esk and of Annand.  
The lordis all, that dwelt thir landis within,  
Comperit hes that tyme in Coremyu,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *it it*.

<sup>2</sup> In MS. *Cobinia*.

<sup>3</sup> In MS. *riromschire*.

- And all the laif syne semblit thair rycht sone,  
 For to devyis quhat best war to be done, 6410  
 With lang consulting of mony sindrie thing,  
 Col. 2. Compleinand soir the folie of thair king,  
 Throw fleschlie lust infectit with ane huir,  
 Erar to ring vnder the Romanis cuir,  
 And be thair seruand dalie in all thing 6415  
 But libertie, nor for to be thair king:  
 His nobill quene, quhilk wes of royall blude,  
 Dame Woyada, that wes baith fair and gude,  
 And hir barnis, but ony caus or quhy,  
 Excludit hes out of his company. 6420  
 Quhairfoir to purpois planclie thai pretend  
 To tak the chance that godis will thame send  
 In plane battell, and thair erar to de,  
 Na vnder thame in sic bondage to be.  
 This counsall ilk man thoct commodious, 6425  
 The Romain blude tha held sa odeous,  
 And scrutitude that thai had lang bene in.  
 With sic desyre thair libertie to win,  
 Decreittit than it wes with euerilk lord,  
 In that counsall without ony discord, 6430  
 That thai wald fecht for land, barnis and wyve,  
 And thus thai gaif sentence diffinityve.  
 And euerie man, bayth euill and gude that tyde,  
 At thair decretit wer obleist to abyde.

HOW THE BRITIS CULD NOCHT CORD CHESAND  
 ANE GOVERNOUR, AT THE COUNSALL OF COMUS  
 CHESIT THE KING OF SCOTTIS.

- This beand done as ze haif hard me tell, 6435  
 The lordis all convenit in counsall,  
 Quhome to thai wald gif superioritie  
 Amang thame all thair governour to be.  
 Some chesit hes the lord of Cambria,  
 Sum of Cornewell, sunn of Tegenia; 6440

Sum of Kyndale,<sup>1</sup> and sum of Coremyne;  
 Thus all that day thair wittis wer in twyne.  
 Tha war sa hie ilkane in his intent,  
 Neuir ane to vther wald gif his consent;  
 So couetous thai war that tyme of gloir, 6415  
 Tha[t] thai war lyke for to discord thairfoir.  
 Comus ane man of hie autoritie,  
 Of Cambria ane greit nobill wes hie,  
 Heirand that tyme sic scisma and discord,  
 With greit contentioun als of lord and lord, 6450  
 Vp that he stude in middis of thame aw,  
 And thus he said, as I sall to zow schaw.  
 " Lordis," said he, " ane se, sa God me saue,  
 " Ilkane of zow desyris for till haif  
 " Naturallie honour and dignitie, 6455  
 " As at this tyme appeiris weill to be;  
 " Quhairfoir I think that it is all the war,  
 " That nane of zow ane vther will prefar,  
 " Quhilk at this tyme is neidfull for to be,  
 " Ane for to haif the hail autoritie, 6460  
 " At the plesour this tyme of euerie lord,  
 " With lufe and favour without ony discord;  
 " For quhair thair is divisioun in sic thing,  
 " Rycht weill I wait that nother prince no king  
 " May win wirschip, honour, or victorie, 6465  
 " Or zit prevaill agane his ennemie.  
 " Neidfull it is thairfoir into sic thing,  
 " Now at this tyme sen that we want our king,  
 " To cheis ane man of hie genelogie, Lib. 3, f.34.  
 " And gif till him the hail autoritie, Col. 1.  
 " And all the laif at his will till obey, 6470  
 " With all plesour but contrapleid or pley.  
 " Amang thair self is sic equalitie  
 " Of honour, riches, and of dignitie,  
 " And eurilk man hes sic affectioun 6475  
 " To him awin self with sic delectioun,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Tyndale*.

“ Inordinat, without humanitie,  
 “ So greit desyre ze haif of dignitie,  
 “ That neur ane content is of ane vther  
 “ He suld prevaill, suppois he war his bruther. 6480  
 “ My counsall is thairfor into this thing,  
 “ Refer zow all vnto the Scottis king;  
 “ Gude Caratac, quhilk is of sic honour,  
 “ Mak him zour cheif, zour gyde and gouernour,  
 “ And he to haif the haill authoritie, 6485  
 “ And ze ilkone at his command to be.  
 “ Sen that this querrell is commoun to zow baith,  
 “ For to revenge the greit injure and skaith  
 “ Is done to ws, and to him self alsua,  
 “ And his sister, gude quene Woyada, 6490  
 “ And hir zounge sone, that is our prince Guydeir,  
 “ His sister sone and his nevoy so neur;  
 “ Sen he of law his tutour aucht to be,  
 “ And hes thairof rycht and authoritie,  
 “ And all the lordis that ar in Britane, 6495  
 “ To tak his pairt at this tyme euirilkane  
 “ Agane the Romanis and oure crwell king,  
 “ Other to de or to revenge this thing.”

HOW THE BRITIS EFTER THE COUNSALL SEND ANE  
 HERAULD TO CARATACUS,<sup>1</sup> KING OF SCOTTIS,  
 FOR HIS HELP.

Off this counsall wes euerie man content.  
 Rycht suddanelie, with thair haill consent, 6500  
 Ambassadouris thai haif send to this king,  
 Quhilk word by word schew till him all this thing.  
 Quhen he had hard all thair desyre and will,  
 This wes the answer that he gaif thame till:  
 “ Forsuith,” he said, “ full sair forthinkis me, 6505  
 “ The greit injuris and enormitie  
 “ Done to my sister and her sone Gwydeir;  
 “ And mekill mair the thing sen syne I heir

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS., and several times subsequently, *Caracatus*.



- “ Done be ȝour king, the fals Arweragus,  
 “ Throw perswasioune of Aulus Plantus, 6510  
 “ He mixt him so with the Roman blude,  
 “ The quhilk I traist salbe for lytill gude  
 “ Of ws or ȝow, or ȝit or any vther  
 “ In Albione, als far as I consider.  
 “ That thing is wrocht alway, rycht weil I wait, 6515  
 “ With fraude and falset, tressoun and dissait,  
 “ Into the contrair of the commoun weil,  
 “ Of ws ilkone, als far as I haif feill,  
 “ Throw greit folie of this Arveragus,  
 “ Seducit so with this Planctus, 6520  
 “ With fair treittie hes maid sic ane trane,  
 “ For oft fair hechtis makis fuillis fane.  
 “ So fairis it alway be ȝour king  
 “ With Planctus so blindit in that thing,  
 “ Throw sic displeasour he hes wynd him ane 6525  
     pime;  
 “ Syne quhen his fut is fast into the girne,  
 “ That he dow nother for to fend nor flie,  
 “ Than force it is to him in thrall to be.  
 “ Sen that this querrell is commoun to ws bayth,  
 “ For till vmschew sic perrell and greit skayth, 6530  
 “ I am content to tak sic thing on hand, Col. 2.  
 “ In that querrell quhill I ma stryk or stand,  
 “ To be revengit on ȝour turrane king.  
 “ Fra winter pas, quhill grene levis do spring,  
 “ I salbe thair with all power I ma, 6535  
 “ Quhair euer it be at sic place and at da.”

HOW THE BRITANE HERALD PASSIT FRA CARATA-  
 CUS TO CORAMYN, AND SCHEW TO THAI LORDIS  
 HIS ANSUER.

Quhen Caratac his ansuer so had said,  
 The messinger thair of he wes rycht glaid.  
 Befoir the king thair kneilland on his kne  
 He thankit him rycht oft and reuerentlic; 6540

Syne curtaslie, at king and lordis than,  
 He tuke his leif and passit in Britane.  
 Withoutin rest baith da and nycht he raid  
 To Corymyn quhair all the Britis baid,  
 To quhome rycht sone his ansuer hes maid knawin, 6545  
 Ilk word by word befoir as I haif schawin;  
 Quhair of the Britis was rycht blyth ilkone.  
 The symmer sessoun than wes neir hand gone,  
 And cumin wes the winter euill and cald,  
 That euerilk man than drew him till ane hald, 6550  
 Leuand the plane and passand till ane strenth,  
 Quhill that the winter wes gone by at lenth.  
 Betuix thame than suppois thai tuke na peice,  
 The cald winter gart all the weiris ceis.

HOW CARATACUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, COME  
 WITH ALL HIS POWER AND MET THE BRITIS  
 NEIR BY EBORAC.

Quhen passit wes the winter with his schouris, 6555  
 And cuming wes the symmer with his flouris,  
 With nychtis short, and lustie dais lang,  
 And flouris fair out of thair knoppis sprang,  
 The Tegens all, and Cornagens all sa,  
 The Cambriens and all Candalia, 6560  
 With all the Britis as ze hard befoir,  
 With wapin weid ilkone bayth les and moir,  
 Conuenit hes neir hand by Eborac,  
 Quhair that tha met the gude king Caratac,  
 With mony lord and mony lustie knycht, 6565  
 And mony barroun that wes bayth bald and wicht.  
 The king of Pechtis, Conkestus hecht to name,  
 In all his tyme ane man of nobill fame,  
 Met thame that da with all power and nicht,  
 Of Albione for to defend the rycht. 6570  
 Blyth wes the Britis that da of that thing,  
 And quhen thai saw gude Caratac the king,  
 And king of Pechtis that come for thair supple,  
 Tha thankit God all kneilland on thair kne.

HOW THE BRITIS AND THE PECHTIS MAID KING  
CARATAC THE GOVERNOUR OF ALL ALBIONE.

With hail consent of king and euerilk lord,	6575	
All in ane will without ony discord,		
King Caratac thai maid thair governour,		
As he that wes of Albione the flour.		Lib.3,f.34b.
Auchtie thousand of fechtand men that da,		Col. 1.
Tha war be taill, as my author did sa,	6580	
Worthie and wicht thair wapyins for to weild,		
Furneist rycht weill to fecht in ony feild.		
King Caratac, of the best wayis he can,		
Gart put in ordour that tyme euerilk man ;		
Dewydand thame in sindrie feildis also,	6585	
And euerilk feild with his chiftane to go,		
Vnder baner thairfoir to byde and be		
At his command, baith for to fecht and flie.		
Ane large ost thai weir of lenth and breid,		
Tha cled the plane our all quhat tha zeid ;	6590	
Thair baneris braid agane the bemis brycht		
Of Phebus face illuminat all with licht ;		
Thair schynand scheildis glitterit as gold wyir,		
With diamantis deir, most dantie of desyre,		
Cled in cot armour of mony sindrie hew,	6595	
With rubeis reid, and mony saphir blew,		
With poleist perle, and mony pretious stone,		
Agane the schyning of the sone tha schone,		
With goldin gullis glitterand as ane gleid,		
Ane semeliar sicht wes neur of Adamis seid.	6600	
The schalmes schill schoutit with sic ane sound,		
And bugillis blast gart all the bank rebound ;		
Trumpet and taburne tunit with sic ane stevin		
Quhill all thair noyis rang vp to the hevin.		
Thair steill helmes, and bureall basnetis brycht,	6605	
Like lucent lantrynis caist ane aureat lycht.		

HOW ARWERAGUS AND PLANCTUS THE LEGAT  
TUKE THE FEILD AGANE CARATACUS.

Qubhen this wes schawin to king Arweragus,  
 And the protectour Aulus Planctus,  
 Thair wes no lat, thai list nocht for to ly,  
 Bot sone for battell bownit thame in hy, 6610  
 With mony Brit and mony Romane knyecht  
 And mony vther worthie wes and wicht,  
 Tha left the strenth and passit to the feild,  
 Buskit for battell baith with speir and scheidl.  
 This Planctus, fra tyme he vnderstude 6615  
 The strenth and mycht, and als the multitude,  
 Of Albionis, as sindrie men him schew,  
 He knew greit perrell battell till persew.  
 Quhairfoir ryecht sone he socht ane vther way  
 For to postpone the battell, and delay, 6620  
 With sic prattik ane lang tyme for to preue,  
 Ay da be ba puttand thame in beleue  
 To gif battell, till that tha war ilkane  
 Werie, forwalkit, and all thair victuallis gane.  
 With sic prattik trowand ryecht weill he wald 6625  
 Vincust thame all with hunger, thirst and cald.  
 And so he did ryecht lang and mony da,  
 That on the nycht waill mony stall awa,  
 Irkit and tyrit, forwalkit in the tyde,  
 In falt of victuall nicht na langar byde. 6630  
 Throw lang lething ryecht mony so thai lost,  
 Within schort quhile the thrid part of thair oist.  
 The Albionis vnusit into weir,  
 Walking and cald did thame sa mekle deir,  
 Throw lang travell and trubill thai had tane, 6635  
 Tha war in poynt to perische than ilkane.  
 Fra Planctus than vnderstude and knew  
 The fassoun all, as sindrie men him schew  
 Of Albionis wer cumand fra thair ost,  
 How all the laif in poynt wes to be lost, 6640

He maid no tarie that tyme nycht nor da,  
 Quhill that he come quhair that the Albionis la.

HOW CARRATACUS AND ARWERAGUS COME IN  
 SICHT ILKANE OF VTHER MAKAND FOR FEILD.

Ather of vther sone cuming ar in sicht,  
 With stremaris straucht and standartis vpoun hycht,  
 With baneris braid, and mony pensall proude, 6615  
 With schalmes schill, and bugillis blawand loude,  
 With trumpet, taburne, and mony clarioum cleir,  
 With blast of horne, that hiddeous wes till heir,  
 Schoutand sa schill with sic ane aufull sound,  
 Quhill that thair dyn gart all the dail redound. 6650  
 King Caratac in middis of the feild,  
 With mony semlie that tyme wnder scheild,  
 Amang thame all he said with voce so cleir,  
 On this same wayis as I sall schaw 3ow heir.

HOW CARATACUS MAID ANE ORESOUN THAT CAUSIT  
 ALL HIS MEN TO TAK CURAGE.

“ O bernis bald ! I 3ow beseik ilkone, 6655  
 “ Sen that 3e ar rycht big of blude and bone,  
 “ Think on 3our barnis at this tyme and 3our wyvis,  
 “ 3our land, 3our law, 3our libertie and lyvis ;  
 “ Think on 3our honour, 3our wirschip and 3our fame,  
 “ And of 3our freindis that 3e haif left at hame ; 6660  
 “ Think on also how nobill Julius,  
 “ Of all this warld wes most victorius,  
 “ With oure fatheris but laitlie now befor,  
 “ Than vincust wes for all his pryde and gloir.  
 “ His men wer slane, him self wes maid to fle, 6665  
 “ Quhill he wes fain him self to tak the se.  
 “ I 3ow beseik at this tyme, sen neid is,  
 “ Think on oure fatheris and thair nobill deidis,

“ And lat ws nocht be cawit fader war,<sup>1</sup>  
 “ Thocht we be hapnit now fra thame so far ; 6670  
 “ For weill I wait, and we haif will to fecht,  
 “ The feild is ouris, that dar I trewlie hecht.”  
 Be this wes said, thai freikis tuke the feild  
 With sic ane force quhill mony targe and scheidl  
 Raif into raggis, and mony speiris brak ; 6675  
 Thair countering wes lyke ane thunder crak,  
 Thir dyntis dour wer afull to sustene,  
 Quhen bernis brist, and blude ran down bedene ;  
 Schankis wer schorne, scheidis and schulderis claue,  
 Basnetis wer birstit quhill all the ruvis raue ; 6680  
 The braid arrowis flew lyke fyre fra flynt,  
 Tha dang dourlie with mony doggit dynt ;  
 Tha swapit our quhill all the swyir did swydder  
 As hevin and erd that tyme had gane togidder.  
 Arweragus into the formest feild, 6685  
 And all his knyechtis that tyme had bene keild,  
 Had nocht Aulus reskewit with his oist ;  
 But ony lat that da tha had bene lost.  
 Quhen Planetus persaut him in thrang  
 He wist rycht weill he nicht nocht lest so lang ; 6690  
 His men war slane, and he left wihth rycht few,  
 Quhairfoir rycht sone he come him till reskew.  
 Of his cuming Arweragus wes fane,  
 And suddanelie renewit the feild agane.  
 Strang wes that stour ane weill lang quhile that 6695  
 tyid,  
 Quhair mony wicht buir werkand woundis wyid,  
 And mony freik war fellit in the feild,  
 And mony knyecht in that counter wes keild.  
 Tha faucht sa lang quhill that thai loisit lycht,  
 Gone wes the day and cuming wes the nyecht, 6700  
 That ane fra vther thai myecht nocht weill decerne ;  
 Thai loist all lycht bot lycht than of the sterne.

Lib. 3. f. 35.  
 Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Called inferior to our fathers.

It wes so mirk thai mycht not se ane styme,  
 Than force it wes to leue fechtung that tyme ;  
 And euerie syde hes drawin to ane strenth, 6705  
 Quhill that the nycht wes passit by ; at lenth,  
 Of ather syde wes not ane sene in sicht,  
 Syne on the morne quhen it wes fair dalicht,  
 Bot deid bodeis in the feild that la :  
 Neir tuentie thousand deit thair that da. 6710

HOW THE NYCHT DEPARTIT THE PARTEIS, AND  
 HOW PLANCTUS CULD NOCHT GET HIS MEN  
 AGANE IN ORDOUR.

This Planetus all nycht he tuke greit pane  
 In gude ordour to put his men agane ;  
 Bot all for nocht, that tyme it wald not be,  
 Sic appetite thai had ilk ane to fle.  
 Tha tuke no rest nother in dail nor down, 6715  
 Quhill that thai come all to Lundoun toun.  
 In that same tyme this nobill Caratac  
 And all his ost passit to Eborac.  
 About the toun on mony plesand plane,  
 Tha tuke thame rest ane quhile thair to remane, 6720  
 Quhill thai war haillit of thair sair[is] sund,  
 Of brokin bone and mony bludie wound.  
 And syne in counsall gaif generall command  
 That euerilk man sould pas hame in his land,  
 And tak him rest ontill ane weill lang space ; 6725  
 Syne to convene ane sett da at that place,  
 Quhen tha war warnit at ane certane da ;  
 Ilk man tuke leif and passit hame his wa.  
 Sune efter syne, as ze sall wnderstand,  
 King Caratac come hame into Scotland 6730  
 Till Caraccone, the quhilk wes in that da,  
 Ane nobill toun into Saluria,

That wallit wes about with lyme and stone,  
 With dowbill stank and fowsseis mony one.  
 Thair he tuk rest ane sessoun of the zeir, 6735  
 Quhill all his men wer maid hail and feir.

HOW AULUS PLANCTUS SEND TO CARATACUS, TO  
 CAUS HIM LEUE THE BRITIS AND TAK THE  
 ROMANIS PARTE.

This Planetius, this Roman protector,  
 Considdering all thing wes done befor,  
 And of Romanis the greit mortalitie,  
 Bot laitlie maid into that battellis thre, 6740  
 Knawand also he mycht nocht him alone  
 Rycht weill defend contrair all Albione ;  
 Col. 2. Bot weill he knew he culd thame all defy,  
 King Caratac sua that he culd cut by ;  
 Quhairfoir to him he send ane messingeir, 6745  
 Quhilk said to him as I sall say zow heir.  
 " O Caratac ! O nobill prince and king !  
 " Awle Planetius sendis the salussing,  
 " Merueland mekill of thi majestie,  
 " Quhairfoir that thow his ennemie suld be, 6750  
 " To the Romanis quhilk did the neur offend,  
 " Till all the warld as it is rycht weill kend.  
 " With Albione al hail at thi command  
 " Rycht wranguslie invadit hes thair land ;  
 " Hereit and brint thair land lang and braid, 6755  
 " And of oure men greit slauchter als hes maid.  
 " Sayand als far as he can vnderstand,  
 " All Albione durst nocht haif tane in hand  
 " To attemp sic thing but thi autoritie,  
 " As to rebell agane his majestie. 6760  
 " Now at this tyme, I bid nocht for to nyit,  
 " On the he lais the hail caus and the wyit ;



- “ Accusand the als of ingratitude,  
 “ That it wes not thi commoun for till dude.  
 “ For quhen the empriour, nobill Claudius, 6765  
 “ Quhilk in this warld is moist victorious,  
 “ Wes into Britane with his power all,  
 “ Quhilk mycht haif maid the to him bund and  
     thrall,  
 “ He sparit 3ow than and the Pechtis bayth,  
 “ Becaus he thocht he wald do 3ow na skayth ; 6770  
 “ Bot as his freindis thoillit 3ow leif fre,  
 “ Syne with his armie passit to the se,  
 “ With all his power sailit in Orkna  
 “ Agane Ganus quhilk wes 3our mortall fa,  
 “ And wan his croun and tuke him self captine, 6775  
 “ And had to Rome with his barnis and his wyue.  
 “ For sic kyndnes he did than to 3ow,  
 “ This is the thank that we get of 3ow now.  
 “ Quhairfor,” he said, “ gif that it plesis the,  
 “ In tyme to cum 3it for to lat ws be, 6780  
 “ And mak redres of skayth that thow hes maid,  
 “ Gif our thi band of the Britis but baid,  
 “ And nane of thame within thi land lat leind,  
 “ Thow salbe repute for the Romanis freind.  
 “ This is the charge I haif to sa the till ; 6785  
 “ How I haif said, say thow as euir thow will.”  
 Quhen this wes said as I haif said 3ow heir,  
 King Caratac said to this messingeir,  
 As he that wes bayth wys and circumspect,  
 In this same forme as followis in effect. 6790

HOW CARATACUS MAID ANSUEER TO THE ROMAN  
 LEGAT, SAYAND THAT HE WRANGUSLIE CAUSIT  
 ARWERAGUS TO REPELL HIS WYFFE.

- “ Gude freind,” he said, “ 3our legat Planctius,  
 “ No caus he hes to mervell so on ws.

- “ Quhairfoir me think thairof he dois but rawe,  
 “ Wald he consider mair mervell to haue  
 “ Of him awin self, quhilk causit hes the king 6795  
 “ Arweragus for to commit sic thing,  
 “ Contrair the lawis bayth of God and man,  
 “ By mony ressonis preve rycht weill I can,  
 “ For till exclude his lauchtfull wyfe and quene,  
 “ Quhilk his fallow and far better mycht haif 6800  
     bene  
 Lib.3,f.35b. “ For hir bewtie, hir blude, and nobilnes,  
 Col. 1. “ Hir wit, hir wisdome, and hir gentilnes,  
 “ Quhilk in hir tyme did neuir none injure,  
 “ To be put in presoun for ane Romane huir;  
 “ And young Guyder, the quhilk wes his nevoy, 6805  
 “ But ony caus thai schuip him to distroy;  
 “ And for no quhy, as he weill wnderstode,  
 “ Bot to distroy the nobill Britane blude;  
 “ Also,” he said, “ that he did neuir offence  
 “ In word or deid no way to the Romans; 6810  
 “ All that he did into his ire and tene,  
 “ Wes to revenge gude Woyada the quene,  
 “ Quhilk wes his sister, and hir sone Gwydeir,  
 “ His sister sone to him tender and neir;  
 “ All that he did wes done in thair defence, 6815  
 “ And nother feir, injure, nor violence,  
 “ Of the Romanis, nor zit agane that rycht.  
 “ Thairfoir,” he said, “ quhill that I haif strentlh  
     and mycht,  
 “ I will supple thame all tyme into neid,  
 “ And stand of him bot litill aw or dreid. 6820  
 “ And quhair he sais thair empriour Claudious,  
 “ Into that tyme sic kyndnes schew till ws,  
 “ We thank him nocht thairof now worth ane pyn;  
 “ Rycht weill he knew that thair wes nocht to win  
 “ At ws that tyme bot greit battell and blude; 6825  
 “ Thairfoir I wait that he durst nocht weill dude,

" For all the gold betuix the sone and se  
 " Put his honour into sic jeopardie,  
 " Quhilk preuit weill, that dar I hardlie sa,  
 " Be his passage that tyme in Orkna, 6830  
 " Vpoun ane pepill puir and indigent,  
 " Quhilk knew full litill that tyme quhat he ment,  
 " But ony strenth of hors, harnes or geir,  
 " Without power or prattik into weir ;  
 " Quhilk ma be liknit, as it semis to me, 6835  
 " As quaha wald hunt ane falcone till ane fle.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " say thow to Planctius,  
 " Na vther ansuer gettis he of ws.  
 " Sen all the princes into Albione  
 " Ar at this tyme at my command ilkone, 6840  
 " Heir I declair ws all his mortall fa,  
 " Fra Albione without rycht sone he ga,  
 " And leue it fre, evin as it wes befor :  
 " Do as him list, of me he gettis no moir."

HOW THE ROMAN HERAULD PASSIT TO PLANCTUS,  
 AND THE ANSUER THAT CARATACUS GAIF  
 HIM.

This beand said as that ze hard me tell, 6845  
 This messinger he wald na langer duell ;  
 Bot hyit him hame in all the haist he ma,  
 And word by word as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Rehersit hes befor this Planctius,  
 In the presens of king Arweragus, 6850  
 Quhilk soir adred that tyme wes of sic thing,  
 Takand sic feir of Caratac the king.  
 Tha knew he wes baith stalwart, stout and strang,  
 Walkryfe in weir, and wald nocht suffer lang ;  
 Also he had that tyme at his command 6855  
 All Albione to weild vnder his wand.

Qubairfoir of him thai war the moir adred,  
 At his command so greit power he had,  
 Col. 2. Sone efterward traistand it suld be weir.  
 Als Planctius displesit wes rycht far 6860  
 Of the answer that Caratac him send,  
 And of the purposis that he did pretend ;  
 Merveland mekill that tyme quhat he ment  
 With sic pepill sa puir and indigent,  
 But hors, harnes, gunnis or vther geir, 6865  
 And all waponis that neidfull ar to weir ;  
 But wit and wisdome, and but ordenance,  
 But grace and gwyding, and but governance,  
 So hardalie that thai durst contove  
 Agane the Romanis battell for to move, 6870  
 Quhilk hes sic wisdome, manheid, strenth and  
 mycht,  
 “ To quhome oure godis gevin hes sic rycht  
 “ Of all the world bayth be land and se,  
 “ To haif lordschip and victoris for to be.”  
 Quhen he had said all thing that he wald, 6875  
 He held him still syne quhen his taill wes told.

HOW ARWERAGUS KNAWAND THAT HE HAD FAILLIT,  
 LEFT THE ROMAN LEGAT AND PASSIT TO HIS  
 LORDIS.

Sune efter this that ze haif hard me sa,  
 Arweragus this king vpoun ane da  
 Considerit weill that he wes in the wrang,  
 Agane his liegis for to stryue so lang, 6880  
 With sic oppresseione of his pepill puir,  
 For the affectioun that he had to ane huir,  
 For to exclude out of his hall and bour  
 Quene Woyada, quhilk wes of sic honour,  
 His wyfe and quene, and hir zyoung sone Gwydeir, 6885  
 Of pulchritude that tyme quhilk had no peir.

He traistit als that Aulus Planctius  
 Rycht fenzeit wes, bayth fals and venemus ;  
 Also that tyme rycht weill he did consider  
 War all the kingis of Albione togidder 6890  
 Intill ane wit, ane wisdom, and ane will,  
 Rycht eith it war thair purpos to fulfill,  
 And of the Romanis victorie to haif.  
 Quhairthrow that tyme, throw counsall of the laif  
 Of Britis than wes in his company, 6895  
 He dressit him rycht sone and suddanelie,  
 But ony baid, and wald no langar blyn,  
 Quhill that he come rycht sone to Corymyn,  
 And thair he met Comus of Cambria,  
 Ane rycht wys man as ze haif hard me sa 6900  
 Schort quhile befor, quhilk wes bayth blyth and  
 glaid  
 Of his cuming, and schortlie to him said :  
 " Knawis thow nocht zit thi errour and thi gilt,  
 " Of Britis blude sa mekill thow hes spilt,  
 " And thow suld be thair governour and king?" 6905  
 Said he agane : " Sair I forthink sic thing ;  
 " Blindit I wes, and culd not wnderstand,  
 " Quhill now I am dung with my awin wand.  
 " Repruiff me nocht ; at this tyme lat me be ;  
 " The werst is myne, that soir forthinkis me. 6910  
 " I had the wyte as it is rycht weill kend ;  
 " Forgif me now, I am in will to mend."

HOW ALL THE LORDIS OF BRITANE RESSAUT THAIR  
 KING AGANE WITH GREIT BLYTHNES.

Comus this lord that tyme of Cambria, 6915  
 And all the lordis als of Tegenia, Lib. 3, f. 36.  
 With Cornebens that war in Corymyn, Col. 1.  
 Candalia and Damans mair and myn,  
 Richt blyth thai war heirand of sic ane thing,  
 Than hartfullie ressaunt hes thair king.

Syne bund thai war togidder in ane band,  
 With [him] to byde and be at his command; 6920  
 And he agane wes obleist in that tyde,  
 At thair counsall for to obey and byde,  
 And for na thing thair counsall suld forsaik;  
 Keipand conditioun to king Carataic,  
 That he sould be thair lord and empiour, 6925  
 In Albione baith gyde and governour,  
 As [he] that wes baith worthie, wys and wycht  
 Of Albione for to defend the rycht,  
 And to reskew bayth land and libertie,  
 Or on ane da, with his auctoritie, 6930  
 To tak the chance godis will send thame till;  
 At this counsall now heir I leif thame still.

HOW GENISSA DEPARTIT WITH CHILD FOR DISPLE-  
 SOUR, AND DEIT OF THE SAME DISPLESOUR.

Quhen this wes done as ze haif hard me sa,  
 This Roman ladie callit Genissa,  
 Quhen scho hard tell the king wes went hir fro, 6935  
 And hir defraudit of hir wedding so,  
 So schortlie als hir luif that he forsuik,  
 Into hir mynd greit dolour that scho tuik;  
 Quhen that scho knew that he had hir begylit,  
 Rycht suddanelie depairtit with hir child, 6940  
 For greit displesour, as my author sais,  
 And cruell pane closit hir latter dais.

HOW PLANCTUS EFTER THE [PASSING] OF ARWE-  
 RAGUS WRAIT ANE EPISTILL TO CLAUDIUS  
 PLEINZEAND ON THE BRITIS.

This Planctus quhen he knew it wes so,  
 Arweragus wes passit and ago,  
 And he culd find na fayth into the Britis, 6945  
 Rycht suddantlie, as that my author wrytis,

He stuffit hes that tyme bayth vp and doun  
 The castellis [and] all strenthis, tour and toun,  
 Agane the Britis for to mak debait.  
 To Claudius ane epistill syne he wrait, 6950  
 And send to Rome syne with ane messingeir,  
 In this same forme as efter followis heir.

HOW AULUS PLANCTUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, SEND  
 ANE EPISTILL TO CLAUDIUS PLENZEAND OF  
 THE BRITIS.

“ O michtie, he, excellent Claudius !  
 “ Thy simpill seruand, Aulus Planctus,  
 “ Ane thousand syis gude salus dois the send, 6955  
 “ With hail seruice and hartlie recommend.  
 “ Rycht manifest vnto thi majestie  
 “ I mak it knawin to, thy authoritie Col. 2.  
 “ In Albione contempnit is so far,  
 “ In all that land is no Roman that dar 6960  
 “ Without ane strenth, wnder the pane of deid,  
 “ Nocht half ane hour dar anis schaw his heid.  
 “ Thair is no Brit this day of Britane borne,  
 “ That settis by how oft he be mensworne ;  
 “ In all this warld thair is no leid thame lyke, 6965  
 “ But ony faith as fals as ony tyke ;  
 “ For to be leill alway thai ar full laith,  
 “ For oblissing, conditioun, or zit aith,  
 “ That man can mak thai brek it quhen tha pleis ;  
 “ Thair is no leid with thame may leif at eis. 6970  
 “ The king of Scotland, callit Caratac,  
 “ In all this warld knew I neur his maik  
 “ Of pomp and pryde and his presumptioun,  
 “ Cankerit and curst, full of contentioun,  
 “ Quhilk vilipendis thy power throw his pryde ; 6975  
 “ All Albione he hes vnder his gyyde,  
 “ And laitlie now within ane litill tyme,  
 “ Into thi land committit hes grit cryme

“ Of thift and reif, of slaughter and of fyre,  
 “ Quhilk at that tyme wald nother irk nor tyre, 6980  
 “ With mortall battell quhill I did him persew,  
 “ Quhair mony thousand of oure men he slew.  
 “ We faucht all da quhill that we loisit lycht,  
 “ But victorie quhill twynnit ws the nycht.  
 “ Arweragus in Britane thow maid king, 6985  
 “ In all this world is nocht sa fals ane thing ;  
 “ For at thi faith na langar he wald byde,  
 “ Bot turnit hes now to the tother syde.  
 “ Thus am I left allanerlie allone  
 “ Aganis thre kingis into Albione, 6990  
 “ With all thair power sone will me persew.  
 “ Rycht haistelie, and I get nocht reskew,  
 “ Britane this da, that Romanis bocht sa deir,  
 “ Will loisit be, thairof haif thow no weir.”

EFTER PLANCTUS EPISTILL WAS RED IN ROME  
 VESPACIAN WAS DIRECTIT TO PAS IN BRITANE.

Quhen this wes red befor the emprioure, 6995  
 And the Romanis that most wes of honour,  
 In Capitall quhair thai war all present,  
 Than suddantlie, with all thair hail consent,  
 Thai haif directit gude Vespacian  
 With ane armie to pas into Britane, 7000  
 To Planetus, to help him in his neid.  
 He tuke his leif, syne furth with thame he zeid  
 Fast forward furth rycht lang and mony da,  
 Throw Italie and Lumbertie the wa,  
 Quhill that he come into the land of France. 7005  
 This nobill man, most gudlie till avance,  
 Provydit hes ane navin than rycht large,  
 Of craik and carvill, collvin, bark and barge,  
 With all furing hes furneist to the flude,  
 Of meit and men ane rycht greit multitude 7010



Witht hors and harnes, and all vther geir,  
 And all victuall that neidfull war in weir;  
 Syne sailit furth our salt se, than our sand,  
 To Britane cost quhair that he take the land.

HOW VESPACIAN COME FRA ROME WITH ANE NEW Lib.3,f.36b.  
 ARMIE, QUHILK WES WEILL RESAUT WITH Col. 1.  
 PLANCTUS.

Off his cuming the Romanis war rycht blyth, 7015  
 Ressaut him full suddantlie and suyth,  
 With all honour pertenant to ane prince,  
 Tha war sa fane for till haif his defence.  
 In that same tyme this Vespacianus  
 Accusit hes this Aulus Planctus, 7020  
 Sayand he trowit his sleuth and negligens  
 Without travell, laubour or diligens,  
 Als far befor of him, as he hard tell,  
 Wes all the caus the Britis did rebell.  
 Fra men of weir be vsit in ydilnes, 7025  
 Sleipand in sleuth, drokkin and drunkennes,  
 To sing and dance and to leif paramouris,  
 Tha ar nocht abill into aventuris.  
 Sic ydilnes quhen it standis in neid,  
 Causis<sup>1</sup> thair fa of thame to haif na dreid. 7030  
 Thairfoir he said with him he wald nocht nyit,  
 As it wes said that he had all the wyit.  
 This Planctus, to clenge him of that cryme,  
 Rycht reuerentlie maid ansuer in the tyme:  
 " Forsuith," he said, " 3our awin self sall se 7035  
 " Gif all be suith that hes bene said of me."  
 Than he hes led him baith vp and doun  
 To euirilk castell, tour, and wallit town,  
 And leit him se at greit lasar and lenth,  
 How thai<sup>2</sup> wer stankit weill about for strentth, 7040

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Causit*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *thair*.

With meit and men, and waponis for the weir,  
 With gun and ganze, and all vther geir.  
 The Romanis all greit farlie had that tyde,  
 So greit prouisioun he had done provyde;  
 Commendand thair his wit and diligence, 7045  
 Puttand no wyt than to his negligence,  
 Sayand he seruit thank and grit rewaird,  
 So wyslie than he gydit had his gaird.  
 At this purpois now heir I leif thame still,  
 And to the Britis turne agane I will. 7050

HOW ARWERAGUS, KING OF THE BRITIS, HEIRAND  
 VESPACIAN WAS CUMMAND WITH HIS LORDIS,  
 COME TO EBORAC AND [SET] THAIR ANE  
 COUNSALE.

Arweragus, fra tyme he hard and knew  
 Of his cuming, as sindrie men him schew,  
 How Vespacian with mekill schoir and bost,  
 Within Britane had brocht ane mekill ost;  
 Doand him als that tyme to vnderstand, 7055  
 He thoct rycht sone for to invaid his land.  
 Fra this wes schawin to Arweragus,  
 He and his lordis, chief and cheualrus,  
 To Eborac thai sped thame wail gude speid;  
 Quhen thai come thair, syne all to counsall 3eid. 7060  
 And in that counsall thai decreitit so,  
 That euerie man sould nocht to battell go,  
 For-quhy rycht weil thair knew and wnderstude,  
 Eith wes it nocht to gyde ane multitude.  
 Ane multitude alway na victor mais, 7065  
 All fechtis nocht that to the battell gais.  
 Quhairfoir thai haif dewysit for the feild  
 Threttie thousand wnder speir and scheid,  
 Of nobill men that worthie war in weir,  
 With hors, harnes, and all vther geir; 7070  
 And all the laif at hame for to remane,  
 Quhill tha had neid of men of weir agane.

Syne warning maid, baith far and neir alwayis,  
 For to be reddie within fourtie dayis,  
 With furnesing fra that furth as lang space, 7075  
 Syne to convene at set da and at place.

HOW ARWERAGUS AND HIS LORDIS SEND TO  
 CARATACUS, KING OF SCOTTIS, FOR SUPPLE.

To Caratac syne letteris tha sent,  
 Quhilk schaw till him all that the Romanis ment,  
 Word be word at greit laser him schew.  
 King Caratac, fra he the maner knew, 7080  
 Without respit than nother nycht nor da,  
 Prowydit hes in all the haist tha ma,  
 In siclike number as tha did propert.  
 The king of Pechtis in the samin sort,  
 He hes prowydit into litill space 7085  
 To meit the laif at sett da and at place.

HOW ARWERAGUS AND CARATACUS MET AT EBORAC,  
 ILKANE HAIFFAND THRETTIE THOUSAND MEN.

Quhen cuming wes the tyme, as ze hard tell,  
 That euerie beirne hes bownit for battell,  
 Arweragus and his lordis all haill,  
 With threttie thousand of nobill men be taill, 7090  
 At Eborac, besyde that nobill toun,  
 Tha lichtit thair and stentit palzeonis down.  
 King Caratac, with threttie thousand knychtis,  
 Vpoun ane plane siclike besyde thame lichtis,  
 With palzeonis proude, and mony ro[y]all tent, 7095  
 Syne baldlie blew thair buglis on the bent.  
 The king of Pechtis, into siclike number,  
 Than haistelie come our the watter of Humber,  
 Withouth lathen, that tyme he wes not lidder;  
 Syne in ane feild tha lichtit all togidder. 7100

Greit mirth wes maid quhen tha kingis did meit,  
 With wordis warme, and salussing rycht sweit,  
 With fair having, and knichtlie countenance,  
 With all honour most gudlie to advance.  
 Ilkane that tyme wes als content of vther, 7105  
 And blyth and glaid as he had bene his bruther.  
 The trumpetis blew, the bugillis wald not blin,  
 The clarionis cleir gart all the dalis din ;  
 And thus in sporting, in plesans, and in pla,  
 Fra end till end tha draue our all that da. 7110  
 Syne on the morne to counsall ar tha gone,  
 Thir kingis thre and thair lordis ilkone ;  
 And in that counsall, all with ane consent,  
 Baith ill and gude, that tyme wer weill content,  
 King Caratac to haif auctoritie 7115  
 Of all wes thair and governour to be.  
 This Caratac, most gudlie till avance,  
 Rycht wyslie than pat thame in ordinance,  
 In sindrie feildis also thame dewydit,  
 Syne with ane chiftane ilk feild to be gydit, 7120  
 And [vther] chiftanis wnder him to haue  
 Lib. 3, f. 37. Sindrie chiftanis for to gyde all the laue :  
 Col. 1. And signis mak to qubome thai sould attend,  
 Quhen thai sould flie and quhen thai sould defend,  
 Quhen thai sould fecht or follow on thair fa, 7125  
 Quhen tha sould stand, bid, and na farther ga.  
 At this dewys I leif thame heir ane quhile,  
 And to the Romanis turne I will my style.

HOW VESPACIAN WES GYDIT BE THE BRITIS TO THE  
 PLACE QUHAIR CARATAC AND ARWERAGUS LA  
 ONWITTAND OF THAME.

Vespacian, quhen he hard tell of this,  
 In all his tyme that was so wys I wys, 7130

In mony battell oft befoir had bene,  
 In mony feild greit slauchter als had sene ;  
 Into that tyme he wes nocht for to leir,  
 In all prattik of weir he wes perqueir.  
 He wes convoyit that tyme be the Britis, 7135  
 That faouirit him, as that my author writis ;  
 Rycht quietlie endlang ane montane syd,  
 Vnder ane fell wnsene tha gart him ryde,  
 Rycht subtilie, vnwist of ony wicht,  
 Quhill that he come into thair fais sicht. 7140

HOW CARATACUS AND ARWERAGUS GAIF FEILD TO  
 THE LEGAT VESPACIAN, AND TYNT THE FEILD.

The Albionis that tyme war all on steir,  
 Quhen that tha saw thair ennimeis so neir,  
 Wnwarneist als thai war of ony wicht ;  
 And sone thai streikit thair standartis vpon licht,  
 And baneris braid agane the sone<sup>1</sup> that schane, 7145  
 Of glitterand gold and mony pretious stane.  
 The brasin bugulis maid sic busteons beir,  
 And blast of horne, that hiddeous wes till heir ;  
 The schalmis schoutit rycht schill in the schaw,  
 Trumpet and talburne tunit vpone raw, 7150  
 Sic ane repit rumor and sic ane reird,  
 Wes neur hard befoir into this eird.  
 On bairdit hors the Romanis tay the feild,  
 With armour bricht and mony targe and scheild,  
 With brandis braid, that scharpe as rasure schair, 7155  
 With speiris scharpe, that war bayth lang and  
 squair.  
 The Scottis archeares tuke the feild befoir,  
 Manlie on fit fore all the Romanis schoir,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *schone*.

In plait of maill weill beltit into brandis,  
 And bowis big quhilk bent war in thair handis, 7160  
 And braid arrowis wer scharp heidit with steill :  
 Quhair euir thai hit thai baid and bait rycht weill.  
 The flainnis flew lyke fyre out of the flynt,  
 Throw all thair stufte drew blude or euer tha stint,  
 And wrocht thame wa with werkand woundis 7165  
 wyde.

At that bikertie the Romanis nocht set byid ;  
 Bot in the feild tha enterit with greit force,  
 And brak the bowmen with thair bairdit horss,  
 And skalit thame so wyde into the plane,  
 That tha mycht nocht convene togidder agane. 7170  
 Than Caratac hes send thame sone reskew,  
 Ane battell bald wes of ane brichtar hew :  
 In curage cleir, with stufte axis of steill,  
 Sic dyntis dour thai lute the Romanis feill,  
 Of bairdit horss quhill mony Romane knycht 7175  
 Vpoun the land full law he[s] gart thame lycht.

Col. 2.

Vespacian thairof wes nothing fane,  
 And sone he send thame new reskew agane,  
 Of waillit men that war rycht wyss in weir.  
 The Albionis thairof tuke litill feir, 7180  
 Bot faucht so fast quhill thai wer neir confoundit,  
 Mony war slane and mony deidlie woundit.  
 King Caratac, quhen he saw it wes sua,  
 Than all the laif into the feild gart ga,  
 With greit noyis and schouting for the nanis 7185  
 Commanding thame to tak the feild atanis ;  
 And so thai did rycht sone into the tyde.  
 Vespacian, vpoun the tother syde,  
 Was war with that, and sone withoutin delay  
 He tuke the feild and put all to assay. 7190  
 Tha ruschit than togidder with sic eird,  
 Quhill schawis schuik and trimlit all the eird,  
 Dalis dynlit, clyntis and craigis claue,  
 Montanis schuke, and mony rochis raue,

- With stalwart straikis that sturdie wes and  
strang 7195
- Rappit on vther quhill all the ruvis rang.  
Thair speiris brak, and mony scheildis claue  
Ribbis war rent, and all in sunder raue ;  
Heidis war halkit hard of by the halss,  
Leg harnes lap and lynnmis vnder alss ; 7200
- Sydis war schorne that bowellis mycht be sene,  
Breistis did birst quhill blude ran on the grene.  
And thus thai faucht ane lang tyme of the da  
But victorie, so that no man culd sa  
Quha wes maist lyke the victorie to wyn ; 7205
- Quhill fals Fortoun, that gydis all the gyn  
Of victorie vpoun hir countir quheill,  
Hir favour than scho lute the Roman feill.  
To Albionis scho lukit vpoun syde,  
Ȝit neurtheles rycht baldlie thai did byde. 7210
- The Romanis war sa weill graithit into geir,  
And had sic power and prattik into weir,  
Also thai war of sic ane multitude,  
And in that stour thairwith so stranglie stude,  
The Albionis thocht thai wer neur sa wicht, 7215
- Langar to fecht had nother strenth nor nicht ;  
The nobillis haill of Albione wes slane.  
Arweragus thairof wes nothing fane,  
Quhen he beheld and saw his nobillis de,  
Into the feild he enterit haistelic ; 7220
- Seand that tyme that thair wes no remeid,  
He chesit erar to fecht to the deid  
After that da than for to levand be,  
So mekill sorrow dalie for to se.  
Ȝit neurtheles, his men with him than war, 7225
- Out of the feild tha careit him full far,  
Syne on ane horss tha gart him pas his wa,  
To keip him self vnto ane better da.  
The king of Pechtis, callit Ilynthear,  
Seand his lordis all distroyit war, 7230

Out of the feild he schuip nocht for to steir,  
 Bot of he caist his cot armour sa cleir,  
 And kinglie weid; syne sat down on ane stone,  
 Rycht petiouslie thairfoir to mak his mone;  
 And as he sat makand so mad murning, 7235  
 Thair wes he slane vnkawin as ane king.

HOW CARATACUS SEING ALL THE ALBIONIS DISTROYIT,  
 PASSIT OUT OF THE FEILD IN ORDER  
 HAME TO BRIGANTIA.

Lib.3,f.37b. King Caratac, fra tyme that he beheld

Col. 1.

The Albionis all slane in the feild,  
 And he allane left with sua few menzie,  
 Far sickerar it wes he thocht to fie, 7240  
 And saue him self vnto ane better tyme,  
 Na to be slane and lampit in the lyme,<sup>1</sup>  
 And quhen he saw no langar byde he mycht,  
 He tuke his leif and bad thame all gude nycht,  
 With verrie few, as my author did sa, 7245  
 He passit hame into Brigantia.

HOW ARWERAGUS AND ALL THE BRIT LORDIS  
 EFTER THE FEILD COME AND PAT THAME [IN]  
 VESPACIANIS WILL.

Arweragus, sone efter vpcun ane da,  
 And his lordis, as my author did sa,  
 Quhilk chapit war into the feild vnslane,  
 Saw tha culd [nocht] haue reingres agane 7250  
 To brew thair boundis that thai had befoir,  
 And liklear the langar ay the moir,  
 Into the weiris for to tyne or win;  
 And that thair power als wes so thyn,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lyne*.



And knew the Romanis of sic multitude, 7255  
 With power of gold and [of all] vtheir gude,  
 Vnpossibill als thair power to resist ;  
 Arweragus thairby rycht weill he wist,  
 That he mycht not agane that mycht defend,  
 Quhairfoir rycht sone and suddantlie he send 7260  
 Ane messinger, quhilk wes ane nobill man,  
 Rycht humblie to this Vespacian ;  
 Beseikand him, as he wes gentill knycht,  
 To rew on him that wes so wracchit ane wycht,  
 That fals Fortoun sa far hes put at vnder, 7265  
 Till all<sup>1</sup> this warld quhill he wes maid ane wynder ;  
 Quhilk losit had so mony nobill men  
 In his defalt, as it wes eith to ken,  
 Of saxtie thowsand he brocht to the feild,  
 Excep fyve hundreth all the laif wer keild. 7270  
 And weill he wist it wes thair godis will,  
 And Fortonis als hir fatis to fulfill,  
 Mair victorie the quhilk that tyme that gaue  
 To the Romanis nor thai desyrit haue.  
 Beseikand him rycht lawlie in that tyme, 7275  
 For till remit all his offencis and cryme ;  
 As he wes prince of power and petie,  
 Schaw sum meiknes to his miseritie,  
 And in his grace agane him to ressaue,  
 With quhat condition plesit him to haue, 7280  
 Or zit quhat pane that he wald put him till ;  
 Do as he wald, he did him in his will.

HOW VESPACIAN WALD GRANT NO GRACE TO  
 ARWERAGUS QUHILL HE COME AND PAT HIM  
 IN HIS WILL.

Quhen this was said befoir Vespacian,  
 This was the answer that he gat agane ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *as*.

Sayand he wald no answer send him till, 7285  
 Without he come and pat him in his will,  
 Nocht like ane king, bot lyke an vther knycht,  
 As he that tyme that wes ane wincust wycht ;  
 “ And will he nocht, sic answer to him bair,  
 “ Se for him self, of me he gettis na mair.” 7290

Col. 2. This messinger he sped him sone agane,  
 And word by word as I haif schaw[in] plane,  
 Rehersit hes Arweragus befor ;  
 And he agane, withoutin any moir,  
 In that same tyme he maid na tarie than, 7295  
 Quhill that he come befor this Vespacian.  
 Rycht simpillie he schew him in his sicht,  
 Nocht like ane king bot like ane wracchit wycht,  
 Waitand alway that tyme vpoun his will,  
 To heir quhat answer he wald sa him till. 7300

HOW VESPACIAN ACCUSIT ARWERAGUS OF HIS  
 INGRATITUDE AGAIN CLAUDIUS THAT MAID  
 HIM KING.

Vespacian till him than said he,  
 “ Arweragus quhat wes it movit the  
 “ To fyle thi faith and to be mensworne,  
 “ And brek the band zow maid till ws beforne ?  
 “ Quhair is thi lautie that thow cannocht be leill ? 7305  
 “ Thou art vnsikkar baith of thi saw and feill.  
 “ Quhairfoir our godis hes ane vengeance tane  
 “ Of the this tyme and all the laue ilkane.  
 “ Quhair is the kyndnes thow aucht to Claudius  
 “ That maid the king ? tell me Arweragus ; 7310  
 “ Into that tyme so weill that he the lout,  
 “ The contrair to him thow hes now prouit.  
 “ For now thow hes, but ony caus or quhy,  
 “ Contempnit ws and all sic thing set by.”

HOW ARWERAGUS COME TO VESPACIAN OF FRIE  
WILL, AND SAT DOUN BEFOIR HIM ON [HIS]  
KNEIS ASKAND GRACE.

Quhen this wes said befoir that multitude, 7315  
 Arweragus, befoir him quhair he stude,  
 Rycht suddanelie he fell doun at his feit,  
 And for his gilt thair he begouth to greit.  
 Sayand, " I am maist wracchit creature  
 " In all this warld is formit be nature ; 7320  
 " So soir I am now puneist for my gilt  
 " Of saikles blude throw me this tyme is spilt,  
 " Bot ony caus or quhy I had thair till.  
 " Do as thow list, I put me in thyne will,  
 " Rycht humblie to be thi bund and thrall, 7325  
 " For weill I wait I had the wyit of all.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " my will is, wald thow dude,  
 " To puneis me and spair the multitude,  
 " And work thi harmes on thame that wrocht the  
 wrang,  
 " Evin as thow list, other to heid or hang." 7330

HOW VESPACIAN, SEING ARWERAGUS IN SIC  
MISERIE, GRAT FOR PETIE AND RESAUIT HIM  
IN HIS GRACE.

Vespacian, quhen he hard him say so,  
 For pietie grat, his hart it wes so wo ;  
 Menand rycht mekill his miseritie,  
 His mortall fait and infortunitie,  
 That fals Fortoun had brocht sua fra the hicht, 7335  
 Quhilk of befoir sic riches had and mycht,  
 Worschip and honour, stait and dignitie.  
 Vespacian, full of benignitie,  
 Rycht meiklie than hes maid him for to ryss,  
 In that mater sayand he wald adwyss. 7340

Lib. 3, f. 38.  
Col. 1.

Syne in that place he left him thair alone,  
 And with his knichtis to counsall is gone.  
 Thair wes sum thair that cruell counsall gaif,  
 Gif euer he thocht gude pece or rest to haif  
 Into Britane, and bruke it out of pleid, 7345  
 For to stryik of Arweragus his heid ;  
 And siclike mendis of his lordis haif,  
 That it mycht be exempill to the laif,  
 In tyme to cum agane thame to rebell,  
 Or with sic materis for till intermell : 7350  
 Syne gold and gude, and all vther nicht,  
 To be the Romanis all of verrie richt.  
 And vther sum that wes far mair discretit,  
 Haifand sa greit compassioun in thair spreit,  
 Sayand sic laud and knychtlic victorie 7355  
 Suld nocht be vsit with sic tirranie,  
 Quhilk is aganis the Romanis honour far,  
 Thair majestie also and gude Cesar,  
 For to be erwell vther to king or knycht  
 In battell win or ony vther wicht, 7360  
 Bot in all tyme aye clement for to be,  
 And not till vse owir greit crudelitie.  
 “ And als thairto, sen that Arweragus  
 “ Of his fre will is cuming now till ws,  
 “ Be verrie law he aucht nocht puneist be, 7365  
 “ Bot at his will to lat him pas hame fre  
 “ Quhair he come fra, vnto the samin place,  
 “ Or than ressaue him gudlie in your grace.”  
 In that counsall wes nother lord nor knycht  
 All consonand concordand to the rycht, 7370  
 Bot ilkane said that that wes leill and trew,  
 By sindrie caussis that tyme that he schew.  
 Vespacian sone efter syne in plane  
 Restorit hes Arweragus agane,  
 And all his lordis that tyme les and moir, 7375  
 To that same stait that thair war in befor.

Syne pledgis tuke, that tha suld all be trew,  
 Forgevin als was baith ald feid and new.  
 Arweragus his 3oung sone Gwydeir  
 Tha tuke in pledge, quhen tyme wes, to compeir ; 7380  
 Syne efterwart with him be<sup>1</sup> had to Rome,  
 As I sall tell at tyme quhen I haif come.

HOW VESPACIAN AND ARWERAGUS, KING OF BRITANE,  
 PASSIT TO EBORAC QUHILL WINTER WES DONE.

Syne winter come with woderis cuill and cald,  
 That euerie man hes bound him till ane hald,  
 To keip him self but ony skaith or harme, 7385  
 Quhill simmer cum with wodderis that war warme.  
 Vespacian and king Arweragus,  
 To Eborac and Aulus Planctus,  
 Passit that tyme thair still for to remane,  
 Quhill wynter wynt and symmer come agane. 7390  
 And thair thair baid quhill mony bitter blast  
 Of frost and snaw and all winter was past.

HOW VESPACIAN INTO SYMMER COME FRA 3ORK  
 WITH ANE GREIT ARMIE WITHOUT STOP TO  
 CAMELIDONE.

Quhen Aprill wes passit with his schowris,  
 And May also, quhen mony fragrant flouris  
 Syne into June begouth to spring and spreid, 7395  
 And all the feild with clauer wes our cleid, Col. 2.  
 Throw cours of kynd and grene levis will spring,  
 And mos and myre with clot and clay will cling,  
 And passit wes all wedder, wynd and rane,  
 That men fra<sup>2</sup> cald mycht walk vpoun the plane ; 7400

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *he*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *for*.

Vespacian that same tyme maid him boun,  
 In Eborac that tyme out of that nobill toun  
 Vnto the weir with mony worthie wicht  
 In curage cleir of mony Romane knycht.  
 On to the Scottis he haistit him in hy, 7405  
 And with the Pechtis to speik or he zeid by.  
 Syne enterit in thair at thair bordour syid,  
 Thair wes no beirne that durst him than abyid ;  
 For in the field that symmer last bigane  
 Thair nobillis all wes vther slane or tane, 7410  
 And als thairwith tha wist of no supple,  
 Quhairfoir as than tha lute all battell be ;  
 And suddanelie thai come the Romanis till,  
 Bayth men and gude, and pat all in thair will.  
 The laif of Pechtis quhen thai hard and kend 7415  
 How tha had done, thai schupe nocht to defend,  
 Sa brokin wes thair power and thair mycht,  
 Bot randerit thame all to the Romanis rycht.

HOW VESPACIAN SEIGIT CAMELIDONE AND WAN IT  
 WITH LYTILL TRUBILL.

The lordis all thai fled that tyme ilkone  
 Into the citie of Camelidone ; 7420  
 Neirhand by Forth that nobill toun it stude,  
 Vpoun the mouth that tyme of Carroun flude ;  
 Quhilk wes ane toun of greit breid and lenth,  
 With wall and watter, and with mony strent,  
 And furneist weill rycht lang for to defend. 7425  
 And that thing wes to Vespacian kend,  
 Da nor nycht that tyme he tareit nocht,  
 Quhill all his armie to that toun he brocht,  
 And on ane plane plantit thair palzeonis doun,  
 Syne sett ane seig rycht sone about the toun. 7430  
 And thai within hes maid rycht lang defence,  
 Rycht valiantlie for all thair violence.

At dalie bikker spilt wes mekill blude,  
 Als tha within war of sic multitude,  
 Witht mony wachis walkand on the wall, 7435  
 Quhill all thair victuall wes consumit all,  
 That neid and force constranit thame thairtill  
 Gif our the houss and cum into his will.  
 And syne but baid, or tha wald langer blin,  
 Opnit the zettis and luit Vespacian in. 7440

HOW THAT VESPACIAN WALD NOCHT LAT SPULZIE  
 THE TOUN, AND OF SIC ANE ROYALL CROWN  
 AND SWORD HE FAND THAIR.

Vespacian, that wes of sic renoun,  
 Lut no man mak na spulze in the toun.  
 The citineris he lute thame all duell fre  
 Within the toun at thair awin libertie.  
 Vespacian than gat within the toun 7445  
 Of fynest gold ane weill wrocht kingis croun;  
 Quhilk plantit wes with mony pretious stone,  
 And poleist perle be paris mony one. Lib.3.f.38b.  
 Ane sword also quhilk wes bayth hard and wycht, Col. 1.  
 With hiltis and hand of burneist gold sa brycht; 7450  
 Ane scalbert also quhilk was of purpure fine,  
 Wondourlie wrocht with gold of cristillyne.  
 Vespacian syne efter, all his dais,  
 Vsit this sword, as that my author sais,  
 In euerie feild fra that furth he faucht in, 7455  
 Traistand thairwith the victorie to win,  
 Into that swerd he put sic senzorie;  
 Quhat wes the caus I can nocht tell weill quhy.  
 Syne in the toun efter that he had tume,  
 Judges he maid neirby the vse of Rome, 7460  
 Of Romane fassoun for to hald the law,  
 To puneis thame that wald stand [in] na aw.  
 Syne efter that, ane lytill fra the toun,  
 Ane tempill maid that standis on Carroun,

Baith rowme and wyde, of hewin stone rycht hie, 7465  
 Quhilk standis zit in that place to se.  
 Tua images als of birneist marbell brycht,  
 In that tempill he gart set vp on hicht ;  
 Ane in the honour of god<sup>1</sup> of victorie,  
 Of Claudius the tother that stude by ; 7470  
 And sindrie seruice for to sing and sa,  
 He ordand hes vpoune the halie da.  
 In that same sted that tempill standis still,  
 Quha will gang luke tha ma se and tha will ;  
 Quhilk now adais callit is Arthuris hwe, 7475  
 Apperandlie that is for to repowe  
 Of Julius, sayand it suld be he  
 That left it thair in sing of victorie.  
 That is nocht suith, quhilk say rycht weill I dar,  
 For he come neur in Albione so far. 7480  
 Heir will I stint ane quhill and hald me still ;  
 To Caratac now turne agane I will.

HOW CARATACUS GATHERIT ANE NEW ARMIE FOR  
 TO GIF VESPACIAN FEILD AT CAMELIDONE.

Greit diligence he hes done da and nycht,  
 Of Albione for to defend the rycht ;  
 With greit prouisioun all tyme bayth evin and 7485  
 morne,  
 For to revenge the feild wes tynt beforne.  
 So odious he held the Roman blude,  
 Contraccit hes ane rycht greit multitude  
 Of nobill men weill furneist for the feild,  
 Waldin and wicht that wapyins weill culd weild ; 7490  
 Of Scot and Pecht, of Britis to also.  
 Than hastelie, withoutin ony ho,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *gad*.



With gude gydis without delay is gone  
 Ay fordwaird furth toward Camelidone,  
 And schupe the Romanis rycht sone to persew. 7495  
 With that ane spy vnto the Romanis schew  
 Of his cuming with mekill schoir and bost,  
 For till invaid thame with ane royall ost,  
 Of stalwart men that war bayth stout and strang,  
 As he beleuit wald not tarie lang. 7500

HOW VESPACIAN SEND PLANCTUS WITH ANE GREIT  
 ARMIE TO RESIST CARATACUS CUMING.

Vespacian heirand that it wes so,  
 In gudlie haist than hes he maid till go  
 Planctus with [mony] nobill men of weir,  
 With bow and brand, with ax, halbert and speir,  
 With helmes brycht, and mony brodin scheild, 7505 Col. 2.  
 Threttie thousand that wapyins weill culd weild,  
 Of Caratac the power to resist.  
 He<sup>1</sup> tuke his leif and furth he fuir at list,  
 Towart Brigance the narrest way is gone,  
 And left Vespacian at Camelidone. 7510  
 Out throw the fellis as he tuke the way,  
 He met ane man vpon the secund day,  
 Quhilk schew till [him] into the samin quhile,  
 King Caratac within les nor four myle,  
 With greit power wes cumand him forgane. 7515  
 Than Planctus, vpoun the narrest plane  
 That plesand wes, plantit his palzeonis doun,  
 Thairfor to byde vpoun the bentis broun ;  
 Dissimuland as he had bene ouir few  
 King Caratac with battell to persew ; 7520  
 As he had bene affrayit in the tyde,  
 Into that place for to remane and byde  
 At his defence without battell thair still,  
 Quhill on the morne Vespacian come him till,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *His*.

With hail power for to mak him reskew. 7525  
 King Caratac trowand that that wes trew,  
 Knawand nothing of his falsheid and slicht,  
 Seand also approcheand wes the nicht,  
 His men he causit for till go to rest  
 Quhill on the morne, traistand that it wes best. 7530  
 Syne set ane watche about the oist all nycht,  
 In helmes cleir and mony birny brycht,  
 Of stalwart men that war bayth stout and strang,  
 That weill durst stryk and stand in ony thrang.  
 Syne Caratac and all his men ilkone, 7535  
 That samin nycht on to thair rest ar gone.

HOW AULUS PLANCTUS SET VPON CARATACUS  
 ON THE NYCHT QUHEN THAI WAR ALL  
 SLEIPAND, AND WAN THE FEILD.

Quhen suddanelie thai war brocht all on sleip,  
 Aull Planctius thairto that tuke gude keip,  
 With rayit feild vpoun him quhair he lay,  
 He maid onset rycht lang befor the day. 7540  
 The vtter watche, quhair thai woik all alane,  
 Or euir tha wist war all in handis tane.  
 The inwart watche, quhair tha stude in the feild,  
 In gude array weill schrudit wnder scheid,  
 Tha faucht sua lang but [ony] help allone, 7545  
 Into the feild quhair thai war all slane ilkone.  
 Or this wes done the laif wes reddie all  
 Put in array that tyme bayth grit and small,  
 Syne enterit sone into that felloun fray ;  
 Be this it wes<sup>1</sup> neir hand lycht of the day. 7550  
 The braid arrowis, that flew fra euerilk syde,  
 Maid mony wound that warkand wes and wyde.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *weir*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *gyde*.

With swordis scharpe schorne wes mony scheild,  
 Plaittis wer persit and skatterit in the feild.  
 The millane melzeis mendit nocht ane myte, 7555  
 The brandis bricht sa bitterlie did byte.<sup>1</sup>  
 Into that stour sa stalwartlie tha stude,  
 Quhill all the bent wes broudit our with blude.  
 Lang so thai faucht quhill neir euin of the da, Lib. 3, f. 39.  
 But victorie, as my author did sa : 7560 Col. 1.  
 Quhill at the last the Scottis wes maid to fle,  
 Sum to the mos, sum to the montanis he.  
 Baith Brit and Pecht that fled out of the feild,  
 Seing that tyme that thai culd get na beild,  
 In gudlie haist thai passit all ilkone, 7565  
 To get refuge into the Yle of Mone.  
 King Caratac within ane lytill stound,  
 In his bodie the quhilk buir mony wound,  
 Quhairof his lordis lykit all full ill,  
 Sone efter that passit to Argatill; 7570  
 Syne efter that to Ewin hes he past,  
 Thair to remane at laisar him to rest.  
 Of this battell the greit mortalitie,  
 And Caratacus infortunitie,  
 Throw Albione that tyme forsuith it flaw, 7575  
 Our all the landis as outhar dow or craw.  
 Quhairfoir rycht mony come the Romanis till,  
 Of Brit and Pecht, and pat thame in thair will,  
 That subdewit wes nocht to thame befor:  
 In Caratac thai put thair hoip no moir. 7580  
 The Brigantinis all to Saluria,  
 Baith man and wyfe with guidis fied awa;  
 Sum to Lelgoth<sup>2</sup> and sum to Argatill,  
 The quhilk wald not cum in the Romanis will,  
 All vnder thame in seruitude to be; 7585  
 Tha war sa laith to leiss thair libertie.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *byde*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *Belgoth*.

This Planctius, the feild suppois he wan,  
 Zit neuirtheles he loisit mony man ;  
 For thair wes slane into that samin tyde,  
 Ma of his men nor of the vther syde, 7590  
 That wes the caus that gart him still remane  
 Quhill he refreshit all his men agane.  
 Syne efter that tyme, vpoun the ferd day,  
 To Caracaton he take the narrest way,  
 Quhilk wes ane toun that tyme of greit honour, 7595  
 Of policie, pryde, plentie, and plesour,  
 Quhair Caratac rycht oft than maid repair,  
 That stude that tyme baith plesand and rycht fair  
 Vpoun ane strength besyid ane rynnand flude,  
 Into Carrik this nobill toun it stude. 7600  
 This Planctius fur furth our daill and doun,  
 Quhill that he come vnto this nobill toun,  
 Syne take the toun throw strength and violence,  
 Or thai within doucht for to mak defence,  
 So haistelie this thing than wes gydit : 7605  
 The spulzie syne amang his men dewydit.  
 Syne efterwart ane messinger he send  
 To Vespacian with harttie recommend,  
 Quhilk schew till him all haill the circumstance  
 Of that battell, the aventure and chance, 7610  
 The victorie and wyning of the toun ;  
 Sayand also that all Brigance wes boun  
 Him to obey, and at his fayth to byde.  
 Vespacian, but tarie in that tyde,  
 And all his bernis blythlie maid thame boun 7615  
 Without tarie quhill thai come to that toun.  
 The men that tyme all of Brigantia,  
 To other pairtis that war nocht fled awa,  
 Rycht haistelie thai come Vespacian till,  
 With all thair gude and pat thame in his will. 7620  
 And he agane, so curtas wes and frie,  
 Ressaut thame with all humanitie,

In siclyke fredome as thai had befoir,  
 To leif with him that tyme bayth les and moir. Col. 2.  
 Syne efter that, quhen he mycht better vaik, 7625  
 Ane epistill send to king Carataic,

HOW VESPACIANUS, THE EMPRIoure, WRAIT ANE  
 EPISTILL TO CARATACUS, KING OF SCOTTIS.

Rycht suddantlie onewith ane messinger,  
 Quhilk said till him as I sall say ȝow heir,  
 " O Caratac ! O magnanimitie !  
 " Vespacian rycht gudlie greitis the ; 7630  
 " Haiffand alway of the sa grit mervell  
 " Agane oure goddis sa oft thow dois rebell,  
 " Quhilk to the Romanis giffin hes the rycht  
 " Of all this warld to haif power and mycht,  
 " And for to be lordis of euerie land, 7635  
 " And all this warld to weild at oure awin hand ;  
 " Syne thow richt oft, with power waik and small,  
 " Invaidis ws to quhome this warld all  
 " Obeyit hes and cuming to oure peace,  
 " And ȝit thow schaipis the na moir to ceis 7640  
 " Nor the first tyme sen thow weir began,  
 " Quhilk loisit hes sa mony nobill man.  
 " We ken rycht weill full deir thow hes it coft,  
 " That in battell hes vincust bene sa oft,  
 " And ȝit me think thow schaipis nocht to tyre : 7645  
 " Traist weill," he said, " it is the godis ire,  
 " Aganis quhome ma na power prevaill,  
 " Sua oft in battell causis the to faill.  
 " Ȝit neurtheles, as freind I say to the,  
 " Leif thi debait and lat all battell be ; 7650  
 " And sobir the of thi malice and ceiss,  
 " Syne cum and put the in the Romanis pece ;  
 " And tha to the sall curtas be and heind,  
 " As the to hald for fallow and for freind ;

“ And in thi realme to ring for euir moir, 7655  
 “ In peice and rest siclike as thow did befoir.  
 “ And pleis thow nocht as I haif said the till,  
 “ Sone efterwart, in contrair of thi will,  
 “ Thow salbe maid on force to be ane thrall,  
 “ And loiss thi land and libertie with all; 7660  
 “ Thy pepill als put in vile seruitude,  
 “ And bondis maid of all thi nobill blude,  
 “ In pouertie ay for to be opprest :  
 “ Now I haif said, do as thow thinkis best.”

HOW CARATACUS ANSUERIT RYCHT SCHORTLIE TO  
 THE EPISTILL SEND TO HIM FRA VESPACIAN.

This epistill wes red fra end to end. 7665  
 This same ansuer to him agane he send :  
 “ O ze Romanis, so full of pryde and hicht,  
 “ Ascrybent zow, throw zour power and nicht,  
 “ With zouris goddis familiar to be,  
 “ And knaw thair secreit and thair priuitie : 7670  
 “ And for till tell the thingis that will fall,  
 “ As ze to thame in wisdome wer equall,  
 “ And for to knaw thair counsall moir and les ;  
 Lib.3.f.39b. “ I hald for me sic wisdome bot wodnes.  
 Col. 1. “ For weill I knaw the godis equitie, 7675  
 “ Full of gudnes and of benignitie,  
 “ Quhilk gydis all thing be power and mycht,  
 “ Quhairby I knaw tha will do no wnrycht ;  
 “ No reif no man, nor zit assist thairtill,  
 “ Suppois the Romanis thairof sa tha<sup>1</sup> will. 7680  
 “ Also I wait that I do na injure  
 “ To tak on me sic cummer and sic cuir  
 “ For to defend the rycht quhilk is my awin,  
 “ And nocht with zow thoillit to be ouirthrawn.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *zour*.

" For weill I wait, oure goddis of greit mycht 7685  
 " Till oure fatheris befoir gaif all the rycht  
 " Of thir landis quhilk that we bruke now ;  
 " Quhat is the caus thai sould be giffin zow ?  
 " And quhair ze hald zour self curtas and heind,  
 " With sic honour to be the Romanis freind, 7690  
 " Off that honour I rak nocht worth ane flie ;  
 " I had far levar leve at my libertie  
 " In Albione, and be the puirest prince,  
 " Na in riches ring wnder the Romans.  
 " Quhairfoir I hald that we do na injure 7695  
 " Defend oure self thocht we war neur sa pur,  
 " And to debait oure libertie and landis,  
 " Godis ws gaif sa frelie in our handis.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " quhill I haif strenth or mycht,  
 " Zit think I neur for to gif our my rycht, 7700  
 " Nor zit fra battell think I neur to blin,  
 " Tak aventure quhither I tyne or win."

HOW VESPACIAN WONDERIT OF THE HIENES OF  
 CARATAC GEVAND HIM GREIT LOVING.

Vespacian, fra that he hard sic thing,  
 Greit farlie thought of Caratac the king ;  
 Of his curage and magnanemitie, 7705  
 His pomp, his pryde, his hart that wes so hie ;  
 Quhilk causit him rycht far that tyme to fone,  
 Sen all the princes into Albione  
 Obeyit had and cuming to his peace,  
 And zit fra battell schupe he nocht to ceis, 7710  
 The quhilk Fortoun had maid sa oft to fall,  
 And syne his power wes so pur and small.  
 Rycht freindfullie that tyme he hes him meind,  
 Trowand, he said, had Fortoun bene his freind  
 Vnpossibill wer agane him to prevaill ; 7715  
 The falt wes nocht in him that gart him fail.

HOW VESPACIANUS LEFT THE PERSEWING OF  
CARATAC, AND PASSIT WITH HIS ARMIE TO  
THE YLE OF MONE.

Ȝit neirtheles thocht he did on him rew,  
 With plane battell he thocht him to persew,  
 And follow him alway quhair euir he wend.  
 Bot other men that knew full weill and kend 7720  
 The greit perrell of mony montanis hie,  
 Gaif him counsall to let sic battell be,  
 Or dreid efter it maid him for to rew,  
 Greit perrell wes him forder till persew ;  
 And schew till him the perrell all at lenth 7725  
 Of craig and cleuch, of mony mos and strenth,  
 Of mure and myre, and mony montane cald.  
 Col. 2. Vespacian, sic thing quhen he hard tald,  
 Of greit perrell into his gait that la,  
 Turnit his mynd to pas ane vther wa ; 7730  
 With all his oist that samin tyme is gone  
 For to persew richt sone the Yle of Mone,  
 Far fugiatouris thair oft in deid did fle.  
 Syne schip and boit rycht sone set to the se ;  
 And as he wes reddie to tak the fame, 7735  
 Ane messinger, I can nocht tell his name,  
 Come out of Kent that tyme, quhilk did him tell  
 Into that land sa mony did rebell,  
 And come he nocht with greit power and mycht,  
 Rycht suddantlie for to debait thair rycht, 7740  
 Withoutin tarie other les or moir,  
 All wald be loist that thai had win befoir.

HOW VESPACIANUS LEFT MONA YLE, AND PASSIT  
HIM SELF TO KENTSCHYRE.

Vespacian fra tyme he hard him sa so,  
 Left Mona Yle and bownit him till go,



Agane thai rebellis for to mak remeid ; 7745  
 And Planctus syne leuit in his steid,  
 With greit power quhilk wes of mekill pryde,  
 That land all hail to governe and to gyde.  
 And he him self for na trauell wald tyre,  
 Quhill suddanelie he come into Kent schyre ; 7750  
 And fra he come with his power but pane,  
 Or ony sturt, reformit all agane,  
 Syne passit hame with greit honour and gloir  
 To Rome agane, quhair he come fra befoir.

HOW CARATAC EFTER THE PASSAGE OF VESPACIAN  
 GAIF BATELL TO PLANCTIUS AGANE, AND  
 TYNT THE FEILD.

Quhen Caratac hard tell that it wes so, 7755  
 Vespacian wes passit and ago,  
 He tuke no tarie that tyme to remane,  
 Bot for the battell bownit hes agane.  
 Ane messinger syne hes he send anone  
 Till all wer fled into the Yle of Mone, 7760  
 To caus thame for to conuene togidder,  
 And mony mo quhilk that tyme wes nocht lidder.  
 Fra all the pairtis than of Albione  
 Tha come till him rycht sone full many one ;  
 Syne tuke purpois with battell till persew 7765  
 This Planctius agane, for till reskew  
 Brigantia quhilk he befoir had lost,  
 And Pechtland als ; syne with ane mekle oist,  
 Syne passit forward euerie da by da,  
 Towart the place quhair that this Planctius la. 7770  
 Aule Planctius, quhair he la on ane plane,  
 Siclike for battell bownit hes agane ;  
 Syne come and met him manlie on a mure,  
 With baneris braid, and mony standert stuir ;  
 And mony stremer with the wind did steir, 7775  
 And buglis blast that hiddeous wes till heir.

- Lib. 3, f. 40. And joynit syne with mony stalwart straik,  
 Col. 1. And schouttis schill quhill all the schaw did schaik  
 And sic ane reird quhill all the rochis rang.  
 Into that stour, that stalwart wes and strang, 7780  
 The Scottis gaif richt monie deidlie dynt,  
 In that belief to wyn that thai had tynt.  
 The Romanis faucht that tyme baith les and moir,  
 To keip the thing that thai had win befor :  
 And thus thai faucht fra nune quhill neir the 7785  
 nycht.  
 The Romanis than sic power had and micht,  
 Sic policie and prattik into weir,  
 And als thai war sa garneist in thair geir,  
 King Caratac, suppois his hart wes hie,  
 That tyme on force zit wes he maid to flie. 7790  
 On to ane moss he fled that wes besyid ;  
 The Romanis still into the feild did byid,  
 And followit nocht, nor zit durst brek array,  
 Sa mony Romane slane wes thair that day.  
 Of this battell the aventure and chance, 7795  
 Quhen it was schawin with all the circumstance,  
 The mortall fait, and eik the grit mischeiffe,  
 All Albione it put out of beleiff  
 Neur in thair tyme thair richtis to reskew,  
 Or with battell the Romanis till persew. 7800  
 King Caratac and his lordis ilkone,  
 Efter this feild passit all till Ewone,  
 For till advise quhat best wes till be done.  
 King Caratac sic counsall he gaif sone,  
 With new power the Romanis till persew<sup>1</sup> 7805  
 In plane battell thair landis to reskew,  
 And tak the chance that godis wald thame send.  
 Bot wysar men the quhilk sic perrell kend  
 Thair counsall gaif, and namelie men of eild,  
 With haill power no moir to tak the feild, 7810

<sup>1</sup> Here in MS. "*King Caratac and his iordis ilhone*" inserted by mistake.

Quhill thai agane war growin to new strenth,  
 And recreat at greit laser and lenth;  
 And had forzet all displesour of deid,  
 With new curage ascending in thair heid;  
 And quhill zyoung childer cuming war till eild, 7815  
 Quhilk war vnabill that tyme for the feild.  
 Also to send rycht sone into that tyde  
 Wyss men of weir onto the bordour syid,  
 And till remane all in Saluria,  
 To keip that land with all power tha ma. 7820  
 And so thai did as ze sall wnderstand:  
 Rycht nobill men than out of euerie land  
 Tha haif chosin, with chiftanis that war gude,  
 Wyss into weir that richt weill wnderstude,  
 Of all prattik that neidfull war in weir, 7825  
 And in affray wald tak bot lytill feir;  
 The quhilk remanit in Saluria,  
 Dalie in weir the space of zeiris tua;  
 With mony skyrmyng oft syis to and fro,  
 With countereng and with carmuiches also; 7830  
 With mony forra baith on fitt and horss,  
 Quhair mony saidill temit wes on force.  
 Into sic stryfe thus dalie that tha stude,  
 Tua zeir and mair but grit slauchter and blude.

6  
 HOW PLANCTIUS TUKE INFIRMITIE TO THE DEID,  
 AND WRAIT TO CLAUDIUS SCHAWING HIM OF  
 HIS INFIRMITIE.

That<sup>1</sup> samyn tyme, my author tellis thus, 7835 Col. 2.  
 This Roman legat, Aulus Planctius,  
 Into the fluxis laborit to the deid;  
 No medicene nicht be till him remeid.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *That the.*

And quhen he saw approachand wes so fast  
 His latter end, and that his tyme wes past, 7840  
 And cuming wes the terme than of his end,  
 To Claudius ane epistill sone he send.  
 Schawand till him, now schortlie to conclude,  
 How in sic danger of his lyfe he stude,  
 And greit perrell the langar ay the moir, 7845  
 And mycht nocht walk as he had wynt befoir,  
 Nor travell mak, quhairfoir he did requeir,  
 For greit perrell the quhilk he saw appeir,  
 To send ane man in haist that wnderstude  
 Prattik of weir, quhilk wes of counsall gude, 7850  
 Baith war and wyss, that weill durst tak on hand;  
 Or suithlie than, he did him wnderstand,  
 Did he nocht so within les nor ane zeir,  
 All wald be lost that he had bocht so deir.

HOW CLAUDIUS SEND ANE NOBILL MAN CALLIT  
 OSTORIUS WITH ANE GREIT ARMIE, AND OF  
 PLANCTIUS DEID.

Quhen Claudius hes hard this epistill red, 7855  
 Into that tyme sumthing he wes adred,  
 Or dreid the Romanis suld tyne of thair rycht;  
 Quhairfoir rycht sone, with greit power and mycht,  
 Ane nobill man, callit Ostorius,  
 In Britane send, my author sayis thus. 7860  
 Syne efter sone this Aulus Planctius,  
 That cuming wes this ilk Ostorius,  
 Without respit or zit ony remeid  
 He previt hes the panis of strang deid.  
 Quhen that his dais endit war and gone, 7865  
 Departit hes into Camelidone,  
 Syne all his bodie brint wes untill ass,  
 As than the fassoun of the Romanis wes;  
 Syne in ane pig wouderfullie wes wrocht,  
 Tha war put in and to the tempill brocht, 7870

And erdit thair with mekill pomp and gloir,  
Vespacian had biggit of befoir.

HOW THE BRITIS, HEIRAND PLANCTIUS WAS DEID,  
SEND TO CARATACUS BESEIKAND HIM OF HELP.

Quhen that the Britis knew that he wes deid,  
Rycht haistelie thai haif tane in thair heid  
Agane the Romanis to rebell in hy. 7875  
Ane messinger [thai] send rycht suddantly  
To Caratac, and schew him all the cace;  
Beseikand him of his hienes and grace,  
With plane battell agane for till persew  
That Roman legat cuming of the new, 7880  
For than wes tyme, as tha did vnderstand,  
And tha suld be all reddie at command.

HOW OSTORIUS, OR THE BRITIS GATHERIT TOGID-  
DER, VINCUST THAME IN SINDRIE PARTIS THAME  
ALLANE.

Ostorius, fra tyme that he hard tell, Lib.3,f.405.  
How that the Britis schupe for to rebell, Col. 1.  
Rycht suddanelie than hes he tane the feild, 7885  
With beirnis bald that waponis weill culd weild,  
Or the Britis war congregat togither,  
But ony lat that tyme he wes nocht lidder.  
And at the Tegens first he did begyn,  
And vincust thame, and syne at Corymyn, 7890  
At Cornub syne, and als at Cambria,  
And vincust thame als of Damonia.  
The Icinieus<sup>1</sup> thai tuke at sic ane place  
Quhair thai to fie had nother tyme nor space;  
And quhen thai saw that thair wes no remeid, 7895  
Than thai decreittit to fecht all to the deid,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Citiens*.

Out of that feild ane fit or tha wald flie,  
 Or zit be tane or in thair wills be.  
 And so thai did, as my author did sa,  
 Faucht to the deid the leist ane man that da. 7900  
 Syne with haist that tyme, baith all and sum,  
 He passit hes into Carlialum,  
 Quhilk callit is now Carlill at this da ;  
 Syne efterwart on to Brigantia ;  
 And witht sic prattikis he did thame prevene, 7905  
 Or euir tha nicht togidder all convene.  
 Syne efter that, vpoun ane vther da,  
 He passit hes on to Saluria ;  
 And all that land he hereit far and neir,  
 Baith brint and slew that horribill wes till heir. 7910  
 Baith zyoung and ald that doucht nocht for to flie,  
 Without mercie thai maid all to die.  
 Thame that wer zyoung and of thair bodie rude,  
 He put thame all into vyle seruitude.

HOW CARATACUS PASSIT TO FEILD AGAINE THE  
 ROMANE LEGAT, AND HOW HE ORDORIT HIS  
 MEN, AND OF THE ORNAT ORISONE HE MAID  
 TO THAME.

King Caratac, quhen this was till him tald, 7915  
 As he that was baith bellicois and bald,  
 Furious and fell, and fers as ony fyre,  
 Into his mynd commovit all with ire,  
 To be revengit of that Roman prince,  
 The quhilk to him had done so greit offence, 7920  
 Greit travell tuke that tyme bayth nycht and da,  
 Quhill that he come into Pechlandia,  
 With mony berne rycht bellicois and bald ;  
 Fourtie thousand that tyme be tail wer tald,  
 Of Scot and Pecht, and Britis mony one, 7925  
 Fra all tne pairtis than of Albione,

Tha come till him as lord and governour,  
 Quhilk in his tyme that wes of sic honour,  
 For to defend thair lyfe and libertie,  
 Or on ane day all into battell de. 7930  
 King Caratac, with curage vnaffrayit,  
 Vpoun ane plane the battell hes arrayit,  
 Endlang ane flude, rycht neir behind thair bak,  
 But ony furd our passing for to mak;  
 Without refuge fie that tyme mycht thair nane, 7935  
 But other fecht or cowartlie be tane.  
 His quene and dochter liand wes thairby,  
 Of that battell the aventure till spy;  
 And out of number wemen, 3oung and ald,  
 Come thair that da the battell to behald. 7940  
 Then Caratac hes chosin for the feild,  
 3oung stark wemen that waponis weill mycht weild,  
 Amang thame all the best that thai culd ken,  
 Thair for to fecht mixt among the men.  
 The laif he rayit in ane battell arry,<sup>1</sup> 7945  
 Stonis to cast and for to schout and cry,  
 Quhen baith the battellis war togidder boun,  
 And cut the throttis of thame that war dung down.  
 Exhortand [thame] that tyme bayth les and moir,  
 For to think on thair fatheris of befoir, 7950  
 And of thair deidis cheif and chevalrous  
 Quhilk of befoir vincust greit Julius,  
 Ouir all the warld than wan sa greit honour,  
 And in his tyme of all Romanis was flour.  
 Beseikand thame in thair defence to stand 7955  
 For wyfe and barne, for libertie and land,  
 And in the battell all<sup>2</sup> erar to die  
 Nor to the Romanis bondis for till be.  
 Quhen this was said in presens of thame all,  
 Tha said ilkone, for ocht it mycht befall, 7960

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *awy*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *ar*.

Into that battell thai suld ilkane de,  
 Or than reskew baith land and libertie,  
 And put thame out of all such seruitude,  
 So odious tha held the Romane blude.  
 Syne sang with curage and with mirrie sound, 7965  
 Quhill all thair beir gart all the bankis rebound.  
 The trumpetis blew and talburnis vpoun hicht,  
 With pinsall proud and mony baner bricht,  
 And staitlie standartis in the air vpstent.  
 Ostorius neir by vpoun the bent, 7970  
 With mony berne rycht bellicois and bald,  
 Affrayit wes thair curage to behald,  
 And rycht commouit of that multitude,  
 And weill thai wist thair willis wes rycht gude.  
 And als thai knew thair desperatioun, 7975  
 As tha befoir hard be relatioun,  
 Flie wald thai nocht bot gif it wer perforce,  
 Thairfor he ordanit mony bairdit hors,  
 With leg harnes wnder speir and scheid,  
 Brek thair array quhair tha stude in the feild; 7980  
 Exhortand thame als for to tak na dreid  
 " Of barbour bodeis and so vyle ane leid,  
 " But wit, wisdom, or prattiks into weir,  
 " But hors, harnes, or any vther geir  
 " That neidfull is this tyme to do thame gude." 7985  
 Also he said, " Dreid nocht thair multitude,  
 " With us sa oft hes vincust bene befoir,  
 " And zit salbe for all thair bost and schoir;  
 " Thocht thai be thra thair power is bot small,  
 " Thairfoir," he said, " for ocht that ma befall, 7990  
 " Dreid nocht this da for thai sall all be ouris."  
 With that arrowis, scharpe as ony schouris  
 Of frost or hail that fallis fra the lift,  
 Als forsie flew as ony evin drift;  
 The bairdit hors, that prickit our the plane, 7995  
 With that counter wes maid to turne agane;



Of the bowmen sa mekle aw tha stude,  
 In that bikker wes spilt so mekill blude.  
 Ostorius seand that tyme on force  
 Resistit that tyme wes his bairdit horss, 8000  
 Vpoun the archearis maid ane new assay.  
 The bowmen baid rycht baldlie at array,  
 And with thair bowis bikkerit on the bent ; Lib. 3, f. 41.  
 Thair steill heidis wald nother stop nor stent, Col. 1.  
 Throw all thair geir that glitterand wes is gone, 8005  
 And maid no baid quhill thai come to the bone.  
 But neurtheles the Romanis held thair race  
 But ony stop quhill thai come to that place ;  
 Syne enterit sone without ony fray,  
 And brak the bowmen all out of array. 8010  
 Be that the laif wer enterit at thair bak ;  
 That countering wes lyke ane thunder crak,  
 Quhen speiris brak, and mony scheid clauē,  
 Helme and hewmat all in pecis rave ;  
 Ruscheand togidder with so rude ane reird, 8015  
 Quhill horss and men were drevin to the eird.  
 Aye quhen ane Roman than wes strikkin doun,  
 The wemen by thai war rycht reddie boun,  
 Cuttand thair throttis or thai raiss agane ;  
 With sic prattik wes mony Roman slane. 8020  
 The wemen als that faucht into the feild,  
 So worthelie thair wapyins thai did weild,  
 That ill it wes for to decerne or ken,  
 Quho had bene thair, quhilk wes wemen or men.  
 In Albione, sen weiris began, 8025  
 Wes neuer sene zit with na levand man,  
 Baldar bernis that better did abyde,  
 Na mycht be sene that tyme on euerilk syde.  
 Into that stour sa stoutlie that tha stude,  
 Quhill all the brais wer broudin our with blude ; 8030  
 The riuē als, befoir that wes rycht wan,  
 As rubecund roiss all of reid blude ran.

Into that stoure, that wes so stiff and strang,  
 The Albionis thai fochin had so lang,  
 And baid so boldlie on the bentis broun, 8035  
 Without reskew quhill thai war [all] slane down.  
 The Romanis als, vpoun the tother syid,  
 In perrell wes that tyme for all thair pryde,  
 Rycht haistelic quhill that thai gat reskew  
 Of new power quhilk did the feild renew ; 8040  
 And than the battell new begouth agane,  
 On euerie syid rycht mony ane wes slane ;  
 The Albionis thair hartis wes so hie,  
 Out of the feild thai wer so laith to fle.  
 The Romanis wes of sic power and mycht, 8045  
 And in battell sic prattik had and slycht,  
 The Albionis, thocht tha war neuir sa thra,  
 Out of the feild on force wer maid to ga.  
 King Caratac that battell deir hes coft,  
 Throw fals Fortoun faillit to him sua oft : 8050  
 Into the feild war tane that samin da  
 The quene, his dochter, and his brether tua ;  
 His men all slane, himself on force to flie,  
 And wist [nocht] quhair, but ony companie.  
 Syne at the last, to purpos he hes tane 8055  
 With few feris for to pas all alane,  
 Till his step mother for maist traist to ga,  
 Quhilk callit wes than Cartumandia.  
 And so he did rycht sone into the tyde,  
 On till hir castell wes neirhand besyde : 8060  
 He enterit in be cuming wes the nycht,  
 And quhen he come into this ladeis sycht,  
 Weipand for wo than scho begouth to greit,  
 And salust him with wordis hwny sweit,  
 Feinzeand rycht fair as scho had bene so kynd, 8065  
 With deidlie poysoon wirkand in hir mynd.  
 King Caratac that gestnyng bocht rycht deir,  
 Quhilk preuit weill, as ze sall efter heir.

HOW CARTUMANDIA<sup>1</sup> TUKE CARATACUS, THE KING  
OF SCOTTIS, WITH TRESSOUN IN HIR AWIN  
PLACE, AND DELYUERIT HIM TO OSTORIUS, THE  
ROMAN LEGAT.

Scho gaif his supper of ane gudlie gyiss,  
And seruit him of ane solempnit wyiss, 8070  
With all pleſour pertenyng to ane king,  
Thair wes no want of weilfair in all thing,  
Exhortand him for to be blyth anone ;  
Quhen tyme wes cuming till his rest is gone.  
This wickit woman all nycht tuke gude keip, 8075  
Quhill Caratac wes fallin sound on sleip ;  
Rycht quyetlie than till his chalmer led  
Weill armit men evin round about his bed ;  
And quhair he lay sleipand, I vnderstand,  
Of force that tyme thai band him fit and hand. 8080  
Syne on the morne, be that the da wes lycht,  
On to the Romanis raikit hes full richt  
With Caratac, my author sais thus,  
Deliuerit him syne to Ostorius,  
In that beleif to get thank and reward, 8085  
And with the Romanis all hir tyme be spaird,  
In pece and rest als for to bruke hir land.  
For that same caus, as ze ma vnderstand,  
Rycht weill scho wist and Caratac wer tane,  
Fra that tyme furth all weiris wald be gane. 8090

HOW OSTORIUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, QUHEN HE  
SAW CARATACUS, HAD GREIT COMPASSIOUN ON  
HIM.

Ostorius, this nobill Roman knycht,  
King Caratac quhen he beheld with sycht  
Lawit so far quhilk wes befoir so he,  
With fals Fortoun, the teir fell in his ee.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Cartumandia*.

Syne freindfullie he tuke him be the hand, 8095  
 And said till him as ze sall wnderstand :  
 " O Caratac ! O flour of cheualrie !  
 " Be blyth," he said, " for that is best for the ;  
 " And think na schame to be the Romanis pray :  
 " Full mony king befoir hes bene oft sway, 8100  
 " And loissit hes baith thair kinrik and croun,  
 ' Syne led in Rome with triumph throw the toun.  
 " Thow hes na wyit of this rycht weill I wait,  
 " Nane bot thi fortoun and thi mortall fait,  
 " Thi were, thi chance and infortunitie ; 8105  
 " Rycht weill I wait thair is no wyit in the.  
 " Ouir all the warld, as it is rycht weill kend,  
 " Thy greit vertew the moir is to commend."

HOW CARATACUS BEFOIR OSTORIUS BLAMIT FOR-  
 TOUN, AND NOCHT HIS FORTITUDE, OF HIS  
 TAKING.

King Caratac, sichand agane said he,  
 " Rycht weill I wyte my infortunitie 8110  
 " Hes maid me now this tyme so law to lycht,  
 " The quhilk befoir sic honour had and mycht,  
 Lib.3,f.41b. " Sic welth, sic riches and so gude commend,  
 Col. 1. " Quhilk now is brocht onto sum wretchit end ;  
 " And be na power of thi strenth or nicht, 8115  
 " Bot be the falset, grit tressoun and slicht,  
 " Of Ca[r]tumane, the quhilk that thocht na sin,  
 " Me to betrais in quhome I lipnit in.  
 " And zit I haif moir caus commouit be  
 " At fals Fortoun sa far hes faillit me, 8120  
 " At hir awin will wythout ressoun or rycht  
 " Hes presonit me so semple in thi sycht.  
 " Als neid it is to me, now sen that I  
 " Am in thy cuir, thi will to satisfie :  
 " Work as thow pleis now am I in thi will ; 8125  
 " To quhat purpois thow pleis to put me till.

“ And weill I wait it servis nocht for the,  
 “ That victour is, our crwell for to be ;  
 “ Bot for to be alwayes curtas and heynd,  
 “ To quhome Fortoun hes bene sa gude ane freind.” 8130

HOW OSTORIUS GART CONVOY KING CARATAC WITH  
 MEN OF GUDE, AND DO HIM ALL HONOUR  
 THAI MICHIT.

Ostorius, fra he hard him say so,  
 On till ane tent he maid him for till go,  
 With mony berne following at his bak,  
 War men of gude him seruice for to mak,  
 And him to pleis into all kynd of thing, 8135  
 With sic honour as did pertene ane king.  
 And so tha did in all thing that tha ma,  
 With dansing, singing, and all sport of pla.

HOW OSTORIUS SEND CARATACUS TO ROME, WITH  
 HIS WYFFE, DOCHTER, AND TUA BRETHER,  
 AND HOW ALL NATIONIS DID WOUNDER ON  
 CARATAC THAT FEILDIT THE ROMANIS SA  
 OFT.

Syne efterwart, quhen he had better tume,  
 Solempnitlie he send him on to Rome 8140  
 With wyfe and dochter, and his brether tua,  
 Greit men of gude gart pas with him alsua.  
 And as thai maid thair passage by the way,  
 Ouir all the warld, so did my author say,  
 Bayth far and neir, witht greit humanitie, 8145  
 Tha come that tyme king Caratac to se,  
 So manfullie agane the Romanis nicht  
 Nyne 3eir and mair defendit hes his richt,  
 And maid him self and pepill to leue fre,  
 And loissit nothing of his libertie. 8150

No z̄it had done for all the Romanis mycht,  
 Had he nocht bene dissaut with sic slicht,  
 Be fals tressoun of Cartumane the quene,  
 In thair bandoun z̄it had he neur bene.  
 Throw Italie, throw Flanderis, and throw France, 8155  
 And Lumbardie, his name thai did avance,  
 Quhilk faucht sa lang with puir power and small,  
 Agane Fortoun and the Romanis all.  
 For it wes said our all the warld hail,  
 Had Fortoun maid the Romanis for to fail 8160  
 In ony feild, and him victour to be,  
 All Albione he had maid to leue fre.

Col. 2.

## HOW CARATACUS WES HAD TO ROME.

Quhen he wes brocht to Rome, that nobill toun  
 Wes of sic honour, riches and renoun,  
 Of warldlie gloir<sup>1</sup> the diadame and flour, 8165  
 Befoir the princes and the emperour,  
 His nobilnes thair for to magnifie,  
 And the triumph of thair greit victorie,  
 Armit men, with mekill pomp and pryde,  
 Within the toun thai set on euirilk syid, 8170  
 In arrayit feild euin reddie as tha wald june.  
 At the tonn end set Cesar in his trune,  
 And at the tother stude king Caratac,  
 And all his men him seruice for to mak.  
 His clie[n]tis first befoir him throw thai past 8175  
 In golden chenis bundin war all fast;  
 Syne efter thame passit his brether tuo,  
 His dochter syne, and eik his quene also;  
 Him self come last, the quhilk sumtyme wes bald,  
 Quhair mony berne that tyme wes to behald. 8180

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *gloir and*.

HOW KING CARATAC QUHEN HE COME BEFOIR THE  
COUNSALL IN PRESENCE OF THAME ALL SPAK  
SO PERTLIE.

And quhen he come befoir this Claudius,  
 Into his trone that sat sa glorious,  
 Kneillit nocht doun to ask mercie and grace,  
 Bot like ane man held pertlie vp his face.  
 Befoir thame all quhair he did than compeir, 8185  
 To Claudius he said as ze sall heir :

“ O Claudius ! I mak it knawin to the,  
 “ Had Fortoun bene als gude ane freind to me,  
 “ As dame Nature quhilk gaif me strenth and  
 mycht,  
 “ With hie curage for to defend my rycht, 8190  
 “ Thy fame this da had nocht sa far bene sene,  
 “ No my honour sa maculat heir had bene.  
 “ Sum tyme [I] had rycht nobill men of weir  
 “ With horsse and harnes, gold and vther geir,  
 “ And bodie als that weill culd weild ane brand, 8195  
 “ Manheid and strenth in ony stour to stand,  
 “ Thocht I be now in sic miseritie,  
 “ Throw fals Fortoun, and nocht throw strenth  
 of the.  
 “ Displeis the nocht of this I say the till,  
 “ For weill I wait, sen I am in thi will, 8200  
 “ To the alway it is bot schame and lak  
 “ Of me this tyme ane bond or thrall to mak.  
 “ And gif it pleisis to thi hie majestie,  
 “ Now at this tyme to lat me pas hame fre,  
 “ Ouir all this warld rycht sone it wilbe knawin 8205  
 “ The greit gentreis to me that thow hes schawin,  
 “ On to thi self and to the Romanis all  
 “ In lestand honour imperpetuall.”

Quhen this wes said befoir the multitude,  
 Mony thocht mervell neir hand by him stude, 8210

Of his curage and greit audacitie,  
 His countenance and magnanimitie ;  
 So vnabassit bayth of toung and luke,  
 And perfytlie than the speche he vndertuke.

Lib. 3, f. 42.  
 Col. 1.

HOW CLAUDIUS AND HIS COUNSALL FRED CARATACUS TO PAS HAME WITH HIS WYIFF AND 3OUNGEST BRUTHER, AND GART RESTOIR BRIGANTIA TO HIM AGANE, AND HE WES OBLIST TO BE THE ROMANIS FREIND AND LEUE ALS FRIE AS OF BEFOIR.

Than Claudius, with his princis ilkone, 8215  
 That samin tyme to counsall all ar gone,  
 With Caratac quhat best wes to be done.  
 In that counsall it wes concludit sone,  
 King Caratac agane sould be maid frie,  
 Becaus he wes of sic nobilitie, 8220  
 So curious, so curtas, and so heynd,  
 And euir moir callit the Romanis freind.  
 Brigantia als thai gart till him restoir,  
 Vespacian had conquiest of befoir,  
 And he to thame suld keip gude peice and rest. 8225  
 The haille counsall said all that that wes best,  
 He sould pas hame him self bot ony skaith,  
 His 3oung bruther and hys wyffe als baith ;  
 His dochter till remane suld in ostage,  
 His eldest bruther siclike byde in pledge, 8230  
 In tyme to cum he sould be leill and trew,  
 With mort battell no moir suld thame persew ;  
 He and his lieges als, baith les and moir,  
 To leif all fre as thai had wynt befoir.



HOW CARATACUS WAS SEND HAME FRA ROME  
WITH GREIT TRIUMPH AND MONY GREIT  
REWAIRD.

Sone efter syne, quhen this counsall wes done, 8235  
King Caratac thai haif deliuerit sone  
With gloir, honour, and mony riche rewaird.  
No gold nor gude to him that tyme was spaird.  
With 3oungest bruther and his quene also,  
Tuke leif at thame, syne hamewart did tha go. 8240  
In Albione full mony freik wes fane,  
Quhen thai hard word of his cuming agane.  
Rycht mony ran and met him by the way,  
With dansing, singing, and with greit sport and play.  
Mony madyins in courtlie carraling, 8245  
Sum for to dance and vther sum to sing,  
With fair calling and huny wordis sweit,  
Greit joy it wes that tyme to se thame meit.  
Menstrallis playit with dulce musick and sang,  
And all the bellis in Albione thai rang 8250  
Of ilk tempill, as that tyme wes the gyiss,  
Solempnitlie makand thair sacrifice,  
Thankand thair godis with grit reuerence,  
To Caratac sic honour gaif and chance,  
Quhilk done to him wes with the emprioure 8255  
Of all Romanis in till his tyme wes floure.  
Ostorius also wes bayth blyth and glaid  
Of his cuming, and freindlie to him said:  
“ Welcum! thou art of cheualrie the flour  
“ Of Albione, and strangest in ane stour. 8260  
“ Suppois that Fortoun sum tyme wes thi fa,  
“ Thy greit vertew hes the exaltit sua,  
“ And to get peice and honour hes the brocht  
“ Agane Fortoun quhidder scho wold or nocht.  
“ Far better it is to be the Romanis freind, 8265  
“ In pece and rest at thi plesour to leind,

Col. 2.

“ And haif thi fredome and thi libertie,  
 “ Nor ay in battell and bargane to be.”

HOW CARATACUS COME HAME FRA ROME, AND HOW  
 OSTORIUS RESTORIT BRIGANTIA AGANE TO HIM.

To Caraccone, with laud, honour, and gloir,  
 He passit syne quhair he wes wont befoir, 8270  
 For to remane and mak his residence,  
 With all plesour pertening to ane prince.  
 Convoyit wes with mony nobill man  
 Of Scot and Pecht, and best of all Britane.  
 Ostorius syne did till him restoir 8275  
 Brigantia quhilk wes his awin befoir,  
 And all thair dayis ilkone luifit vther  
 Als tenderlie as his awin carnall bruther.  
 In all thair tyme greit plesour wes and peice ;  
 Fra that tyme furth the weiris all did ceis. 8280

HOW CARATACUS THROW HIS WISDOME CAUSIT THE  
 ROMANIS BE OBEYIT OUIR ALL ALBIONE, AND  
 HE KEIPAND HIS LIBERTIE.

King Caratac, fra tyme he wnderstude  
 Of peice and weir baith the ill and gude ;  
 The greit dampnage and trubill into weir,  
 The riches alss of gold and vther geir  
 In tyme of peice, with plesance and honour, 8285  
 And of battell the chance and aventour ;  
 Than da nor nycht he schupe nocht for to ceis,  
 All Albione quhill that he put in peice.  
 And with his wisdome plesit euerie wicht,  
 Sua that the Romanis wantit nocht thair richt, 8290  
 And do nothing bot with thair awin consent,  
 And euerie man he maid to be content.

HOW OSTORIUS WRAIT TO ROME AND SCHEW THE  
GREIT THANKFULNES OF CARATACUS TO THE  
ROMANIS.

Ostorius, of him quhen that he knew,  
To Claudius ane epistill wrait and schew  
Of Caratac the dalie diligence, 8295  
With all power to pleis ay the Romanis.  
Baith Brit and Pecht that tyme, but ony pley,  
With his wisdome he hes maid till obey.  
Throw lufe of him, and nocht throw force or mycht,  
In Albione the Romanis gettis rycht. 8300

HOW THE EMPRIOURE, HEIRAND THE KYNDNES OF  
CARATACUS, FRELIE WITH GREIT HONOUR SEND  
HAME HIS DOCHTER.

Quhen this wes red befor the empriour  
And the Romanis that maist wes of honour,  
With haill consent in Scotland haif tha send  
To Caratac his dochter with commend, Lib.3.f.42b.  
With greit honour and with sic reuerence, 8305 Col. 2.  
As did pertene the dochter of ane prince.  
His brother than befor schort quhile wes deid,  
No medycyne nicht mak to him remeid ;  
Of Ytalie the heit so copious  
To his compleccioun wes contrarious, 8310  
With sic alteratione of his qualitie  
That medycyne mycht mak him no supple.  
King Caratac syne efter mony da,  
In policie with all plesour and pla,  
In peice and rest with greit honour he rang ; 8315  
Syne efter that, quhen he had rung so lang,  
Fiftie zeir and four for till assigne,  
Efter the birth of Jesu hevyns king,

And of his ring the ane and twentie zeir,  
 He bad gude nycht, and baid no langer heir. 8320  
 He wes the best that euir wes in his dais,  
 Or zit befoir, as that my author sais,  
 Of manheid, curage, and of hie renoun,  
 In Albione sen ony king woir croun.  
 At Caraccone, quhair he wes wynt remane, 8325  
 Tha bureit him intill ane plesand plane ;  
 Syne on his graif tha set thairfoir to schaw  
 Ane mekill know that men mycht ken and knaw  
 Vnder the know that sic ane king thair la ;  
 Quhilk in that steid zit standis to this da, 8330  
 Witht cuntrie men as it is rycht weill kend.  
 Loving to God the thrid buik heir takis end.

Lib. 4.           HOW EFTER THE DEID OF NOBILL CARATACUS HIS  
                     BRUTHER CORBREDUS WAS CROWNIT, HIS SECUND  
                     BRUTHER [BEING] DEPARTIT IN ROME.

Efter the tyme of nobill Caratac,  
 In Albione had nother peir nor maik,  
 No barne had he that tyme les or moir, 8335  
 Bot ane dochter of quhome I spak befoir.  
 Thocht scho that tyme wes cuming to gude aige,  
 Zit neuirtheles scho forsuik hir mariage ;  
 Of fleschlie lust scho had bot lytill haist,  
 For all hir tyme scho chesit to leif chaist. 8340  
 Quhairfoir of hir that tyme thair come na ofspring,  
 And neid it wes the Scottis to haif ane king.  
 In Caraccone the lordis did convene,  
 At that semblie wes mony semelie sene,  
 For to provyid for mony sindrie thing, 8345  
 And speciallie for to croun ane king.  
 King Caratac, in storie as we reid,  
 Ane bruther had the quhilk callit wes Corbreid,

The 3oungest als, gif that I rycht presume,  
 Come hame with him quhen that he come fra Rome. 8350  
 The eldest deit as I haif said befoir;  
 Of him as now I neid to say no moir.  
 With hail consent that tyme of ald and 3ing,  
 This ilk Corbreid thai crownit to be king.  
 Of his wisdome rycht mony wes full fane; 8355  
 Sayand the sone of nobill Cadallane,  
 And bruther als to worthie Caratak,  
 That tuik and gaif sua mony stalwart straik, Col. 2.  
 Force wes till him of chevalrie be chois,  
 Come of ane kynd so bald and bellicois; 8360  
 That oft had bene in mony stalwart stour,  
 And in thair tyme that wan so greit honour.  
 Sone efter he ressaut had his croun,  
 He veseit all his kinrik vp and doun,  
 And gart reforme all faltis maid befoir; 8365  
 Baith thift and reif he gart agane restoir,  
 And puncist thame befoir that maid trespas;  
 No thingis than he leit vnpuncist pas.  
 Syne in the Ylis passit to mak peis,  
 All weir and wrang amang thame he gart ceiss. 8370  
 And syne in Cornana efterwart is gone,  
 The fairest pairt that wes in Albione;  
 All faltie folk that he fand in that steyde,  
 Sum he gart hang and vther sum he gart heid;  
 And thai that held the pepill in thair richt, 8375  
 Rewairdit thame at all power and nicht.  
 And sone he maid amang thame rycht gude peice,  
 And all faltis maid suddanelie to ceis.  
 Heir I will pance ane lytill in this place,  
 And of the Romanis speik I will ane space. 8380

HOW THE ROMANIS IN THE TYME OF CARATACUS  
WES GEVIN ALL TO IDILNES, QUHAIRFOIR THE  
PECHTIS EFTER HIS DEITH REBELLIT AGANIS  
THE ROMANIS.

Fra Caratac had maid sic rest and peice  
 In Albione, and had gart all weiris ceis,  
 Syne wes so lang disusit fra the weir,  
 Off all the laif the Romanis take na feir ;  
 And put thair cuir fra that furth nycht and day, 8385  
 In dansing, singing, and in sport and play ;  
 In Venus werkis as to walk and wow,  
 To dance and drink, and ay to fill thame fow.  
 Qubairfoir thai war vnabill for the weir,  
 And lute thair barnes with all vther geir 8390  
 Roust and rot, and thair waponis grow blunt,  
 And had no will to walk as thai war wont.  
 The proude Pechtis persauit weil that thing ;  
 Efter the deid of Caratac the king  
 Tha thocht best tyme thair landis to reskew, 8395  
 And maid ane king amang thame of the new,  
 Of Ordulus the lord of nobill fame,  
 And Conkestius he callit wes to name.  
 The Romanis all that tyme, I vnderstand,  
 In Ordulus, Dieria and Pechtland, 8400  
 Quhilk had the cuir than of thai cuntreis all,  
 Castellis<sup>1</sup> to big and townis for to wall,  
 Evin as thai list at lasar and at lenth,  
 Till fortifie and furneis euerie strench ;  
 Negligentlie thai did thair selffis ouirluke, 8405  
 And to na perrell that tyme tent thia tuke ;  
 Bot all thair plesour, as ze hard me sa,  
 Wes hail that tyme in sporting and in pla :  
 In sic folie as I haif said befoir,  
 Col. 1. And with greit lustie the langar ay the moir. 8410

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *cuntreis*.

In that same tyme, as my author did sa,  
 Ostorius wes in Britania,  
 In all that tyme dreidand for na deir,  
 In Lundoun la in na beleif of weir,  
 Sen Caratak, that maid him all the stryfe, 8415  
 Had tane his leif out of this present lyffe.

HOW THE ROMANIS TAKAND ANE PRAY OUT OF  
 ORDULUS WAS VMBESET WITH THE PECHTIS  
 AND SLANE ILK MAN.

Than quhen the Pechtis knew and vnderstude  
 That tyme for thame rycht ganand wes and gude,  
 Rycht suddantlie thai furneist for the feild  
 Baith 3oung and ald that waponis docht to weild; 8420  
 And scharplie syne the Romanis did persew,  
 And had nocht bene that thai gat sone<sup>1</sup> reskew  
 Of thair freindis fra monie sindrie steid,  
 Tha had bene slane ilkane without remeid.  
 And or tha culd reskewit be agane, 8425  
 Thair principall provest than wes slane,  
 With aucht chiftanis, and vtheris mony ane,  
 Of beirnis bald rycht big of blude and bane.  
 Sone efter that, within ane litill space,  
 The Romanis maid greit heirschip in ane place, 8430  
 In Ordulus, sone efter on ane da,  
 And mekill spuilze tuke with thame awa.  
 And as thai wer syne pairtand thame amang  
 The haill spuilze, and hamewart thocht to gang,  
 With scheip and hors, with swyne, oxin and ky, 8435  
 The Pechtis than wes buschit neir hand by,  
 Syne with ane schout thai come furth of a slak  
 Or euer thai wist, syne round about thame brak.  
 Than neid it wes the Romanis than to zeild,  
 Or manfullie to lycht and tane the feild; 8440

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *sonner*.

And so thai did, lichtit vpoune ane plane,  
And faucht that tyme quhill thai war ilkane slane.

HOW OSTORIUS AND THE PECHTIS FAUCHT QUHILL  
THE NYCHT DEPAIRTIT THAME, AND OSTORIUS  
WAS RYCHT ILL HURT.

Ostorius then, quhen he hard thame tell  
How that the Pechtis so baldlie did rebell,  
And als had spilt sa mekill Roman blude, 8445  
Rycht manfullie than with ane multitude,  
Bot ony stop, as ze sall wnderstand,  
And greit power he come into Pechland.  
The Pechtis pertlie baith on fit and horss,  
With mony freik for till resist his force, 8450  
Vpoune ane mure with all power and mycht  
Tha met him thair quhair mony deid was dicht,  
And preuit vther pertlie in the plane.  
On euerilk syid thair wes rycht mony slane.  
Tha feinzeit nocht thir weriouris that wer wycht, 8455  
Na twynnit nocht quhill cumin wes the nycht.  
Bot faucht als lang that tyme quhill tha mycht se,  
Syne drew abak and lute the bargane be.  
Ostorius, as my author did sa,  
Col. 2. Sair woundit wes into the feild that da, 8460  
In his bodie that did him mekill deir,  
And gart him grane throw all his glitterand geir.  
On euerilk syid that da into that feild  
Of nobill men sa mony thair wes keild,  
Fra mort battell ane lang quhill that thai la, 8465  
With countering and carmouche euerilk da,  
In sindrie boundis that wer bayth lang and braid,  
With thift and reif grit heirschip that tha maid.  
Lang thus<sup>1</sup> tha wrocht, as I haif said zow heir,  
Quhill efterwart that the lang da drew neir. 8470

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *thus haif*.



HOW OSTORIUS AND THE PECHTIS MET IN PLANE  
 BATTELL, AND OSTORIUS TYNT THE FEILD,  
 AND WES CHAISSIT.

Ostorius, with greit power and micht,  
 Hes tane the feild for to defend his rycht,  
 With mony wicht that worthie wer in weir,  
 Wes rycht perfite to ryde and rin ane speir.  
 The Pechtis als, vpone the tother syde, 8175  
 For battell maid and wald na langer byde,  
 With greit supple tha gat in that same quhile,  
 Of Albionis that wes in Mona Yle,  
 Quhilk to the Romanis no way wald obey,  
 Bot all thair tyme thai held thame ay in pley, 8480  
 Thair with the Pechtis arrayit thame on ane plane,  
 Agane the Romanis to gif feild agane.  
 And quhen tha saw tha wer sic multitude,  
 In till ane pairt the Pechtis sum all stude,  
 With plane battell sic power till persew, 8485  
 Thairfor rycht sone ane vther draucht tha drew.  
 Ane greit battell that tyme behind thair bak,  
 Of armit men thai laid intill ane slak,  
 Intill ane strenth that la neir by the plane,  
 Quhair that thai thocht to draw thame with ane 8490  
 trane.  
 Syne euerilk freik on fit the feild hes tane,  
 And straikis gaif and tuke rycht mony ane,  
 So baldlie than tha beirnis did all byde.  
 The Romanis als, vpoune the tother syid,  
 With dyntis dour ilkane on vther dang, 8495  
 With sic ane reird quhill all the rochis rang.  
 And quhen the Pechtis saw thair tyme to fle,  
 Turnit thair bak and luit the battell be ;  
 In rayit feild syne passit clois awa,  
 Towart the strenth quhair that thair buschment la. 8500

The Romanis than quhilk thair of lytill wist,<sup>1</sup>  
 Trowand that tyme for till ouirtak thair pray,  
 Quhill that thai brak ilkone out of array.  
 The Pechtis fled rycht fast into that place,  
 The Romanis follout fastar in the chace; 8505  
 Or euir tha wist, haifand na dreid nor dout,  
 Tha war closit with Pechtis round about,  
 Of thame that la that tyme to mak the trayne.  
 The laif that fled turnit rycht sone agane,  
 Of Romanis than, thoct tha wer neur so bald, 8510  
 Tha tuke and slew als mony as tha wald.  
 Ostorius out of the feild he drew  
 Onto ane strenth with ferlie feiris few,  
 For all the laif into the feild wer slane;  
 Lib.4,f.43b. Fra that day furth come nocht to feild agane. 8515  
 Col. 1.

HOW OSTORIUS SEND ANE EPISTILL TO THE EM-  
PRIoure.

To Cesar syne ane epistill that he send,  
 Quhilk [tald] till him ilk word fra end to end,  
 How that the Pechtis baldlie did rebell,  
 The haille fassoun as ze haif hard me tell;  
 The fortun, als the aventure and chance, 8520  
 Of thair last feild with all the circumstance.  
 Quhen this wes red befor Cesar in plane,  
 This wes the ansuer that he send agane:  
 As euir he thoct of him rewaird to haue,  
 In tyme to cum no moir he suld ressaue 8525  
 No kynd of Pecht vnto his peice agane,  
 And neur to ceiss quhilk thai war ilkane slane;  
 Exhortand him of gude confort to be,  
 And he rycht sone suld send to him supple.

---

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

HOW THE ROMANIS, MAKAND ANE FORRA IN  
PECHTLAND, WAR PREWENIT WITHT THE PECH-  
TIS, AND SLANE ILK MAN.

In that same tyme the Romanis on ane da, 8530  
Tua greit forrais maid in Pechtlandia,  
With greit heirschip thai raisit how and cry ;  
Wnwist of thame the Pechtis war neirby,  
On fot and horss, and mony royall men,  
Quhair that thai lay rycht cloiss into ane glen. 8535  
Neir hand thairby assignit wes and sett  
Ane place besyid quhair all the Romanis met,  
For till devyde thair spulze and thair pra.  
In the same tyme, quhen tha war doand sua,  
The Pechtis all set on thame with ane schout, 8540  
Or euir thai wist cloisit thame round about ;  
With swordis scharpe, and speiris that war lang,  
Vpone the Romanis dourlie that thai dang ;  
Withoutin stop into the samin steid,  
The Romanis all war in the feild left deid. 8545

HOW OSTORIUS, HEIRAND THE DESTRUCTION OF  
THE ROMANIS, FOR DISPLESOUR OF IT AND  
PANE OF HIS HURT DEPAIRTIT.

Ostorius, fra he hes hard this tald,  
His petieous spreit befoir that wes so bald,  
For verrie wo bayth meit<sup>1</sup> and drink forsuik ;  
And throw the hurt befoir in feild he take,  
With crwell pane wes puneist and opprest, 8550  
That he on lyfe na langar than mycht lest,  
Bot take his leif, syne to his rest he gais,  
With greit blythnes that same tyme of his fais.  
Efter the deid of this Ostorius,  
Tha eirdit him in the tempill of Claudius, 8555

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS, *meik*.

Solempnitlie with greit honour and gloir,  
 Vespacian had biggit of befoir.  
 Fra that this thing wes to the Pechtis knawin,  
 The suithfastnes and circumstance all schawin,  
 Ostorius hes maid ane finall end, 8560  
 And the ansuer that Cesar to him send,  
 On fit and horss rycht sone thai tuke the feild,  
 With young and ald that waponis docht to weild,  
 Out of thair realme the Romanis to repell.  
 Col. 2. Than Manlius, thairof quhen he hard tell, 8565  
 Wes lieutenand of Romanis in the steid  
 Efter the tyme that Ostorius wes deid,  
 Agane the Pechtis pertlie tuke the feild,  
 With mony thousand wnder speir and scheid.

HOW MANLIUS, EFTER THE DEID OF OSTORIUS,  
 FAUCHT WITH THE PECHTIS, AND TYNT THE  
 FEILD, AND WAS CHAISIT.

Thir tua pairteis vpoun ane plesand plane 8570  
 Rycht manfullie in feild hes met agane;  
 Quhair mony berne vpone his bak wes borne,  
 And mony schield with scharp scholderis<sup>1</sup> wer schorne,  
 And mony helme in ragis all wer revin,  
 And mony douchtie to the erth wes drevin, 8575  
 And mony ane la stickit in that steid,  
 With woundis wyde sair bleidand to the deid.  
 And so thai faucht that tyme ane weill lang space;  
 Quhill at the last it<sup>2</sup> hapnit vpone cace,  
 Fyve hundreth horssmen fra Candalia 8580  
 That samin tyme come to the feild that da,  
 And lichtit than the Pechtis to supplie;  
 That gart<sup>3</sup> the Romanis turne thair bak and flie,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *scolderis*.

<sup>2</sup> In MS. *it it*.

<sup>3</sup> In MS. *Thart gar*.

And baid na langar fra thai saw thame lycht,  
 Bot fled rycht fast with all power and mycht. 8585  
 One euerie syid richt mony thair wes slane ;  
 Of the Romanis thrie thousand on that plane  
 La deid that da, with bludie woundis wyde ;  
 Tua thousand als vpoune the tother syde.

HOW ANE NOBILL MAN CALLIT DEDIUS WAS SEND  
 FRO ROME FOR TO GYDE BRITANE.

In that same tyme, my storie tellis thus, 8590  
 Ane Roman legat callit Dedius,  
 Rycht baldlie than he come into Britane,  
 Fra Cesar send with mony nobill man ;  
 Chosin he wes for cheif and chevalrus,  
 For till succeid ontill Ostorius, 8595  
 For-quhy he wes bayth worthie, wyiss and wycht,  
 For till manteine the Romanis in thair rycht.  
 Thair commoun weill that tyme wes far abak  
 In Albione, and tholit had grit lak,  
 So mony Romane maid wes for to die ; 8600  
 And had not tha the soner maid supplie,  
 Tha had bene lost that tyme baith les and moir,  
 And all bene tynt that thai had wyn befoir.  
 This Dedius, fra that he wnderstude  
 In sic perrell the Romanis that tyme stude, 8605  
 Befoir thame all quhair thair wes mony man,  
 On this same wyiss his orisone began.

HOW DEDIUS, THE ROMANE LEGAT, QUHEN HE  
 COME IN BRITANE, MAID HIS ORESONE BEFOIR  
 THE ROMANIS BEAND THAIR.

“ The wyit,” he said, “ of all the greit offence  
 “ Of weir and wrang, [and] all sic violence,

- " That ze haif sufferit with your innimie, 8610  
 Lib. 4, f. 44. " Is in your self as apeiris weill to me.  
 Col. 1. " Forsuith," he said, " alss far as [I] haif feill,  
 " By sindrie [previs] I can preue richt weill,  
 " Sen Caratak the Scottis king wes tane,  
 " In that beleif all weiris had bene gane, 8615  
 " That ze forleit all wisdome into weir,  
 " As horss, harnes, ax, bow and speir;  
 " And gaif you all till ydilnis and eis,  
 " And all plesour<sup>1</sup> that tyme that mycht you  
 pleis,  
 " Evin lyke ane beist without ressonne or ryme. 8620  
 " Your ennemeis, quhen that thai saw thair tyme,  
 " Tha lachit nocht as thai war till allow,  
 " Thair vantage syne rycht sone thai tuke of you.  
 " Greit schame it is till you vineust to be  
 " With thame befor ze maid so oft to fle. 8625  
 " Traist weill," he said, " it is your negligence,  
 " And not thair strenth, nor zit thair greit prudence,  
 " Hes causit you sa oft to fall so far.  
 " My counsall is thairfoir that ze be war  
 " To gif your fais ony laud or gloir 8630  
 " Of ony feild that ze haif tynt befor,  
 " Bot put the wyte of all the hail mischance  
 " Till ill gyding and your misgouernance.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " syne [ze] ken how it standis  
 " The victorie lyes in oure awin handis, 8635  
 " My counsall is to be of confort gude,  
 " And to revenge the battell and the blude  
 " Of Brit and Pecht, also of all the laiff,  
 " To quhome befor sa mekill traist we gaif;  
 " And all the Pechtis at this tyme distroy, 8640  
 " Hes done till ws so greit injure and noy."

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that plesour*.

HOW THE ROMANIS MAID THAIR VOW TO BE  
 REVENGIT VPOUN THE PECHTIS, OR DIE ALL  
 ON ANE DA.

Quhen this wes said, amang thame euerie man  
 Rycht cruellie to sueirand so began,  
 All on ane da in mort battell to de,  
 Or of<sup>1</sup> the Pechtis to revengit be. 8645  
 Quhen all this cace wes to the Pechtis schawin,  
 Sumthing thai dred that tyme to be ourithrawin;  
 Zit neurtheles quhen it come in memoir  
 The tua battellis that thai had wyn befor,  
 In that belief all dreddour thai forsuik, 8650  
 And in thair mynd so greit curage tha tuke,  
 All on ane da that thai wald erar de  
 Na with the Romanis to subdewit be.

HOW THE PECHTIS SEND ANE HERAULD TO KING  
 CORBREID FOR HIS HELP AGANE THE ROMANIS.

An herauld sone tha send to king Corbreid,  
 Bescikand him in sic distres and neid, 8655  
 Of his gude help; also than till him schew  
 How that the Romanis than with ane power new,  
 War cumit in Britane with grit pomp and schoir,  
 For to revenge all skaith thai gat befor.  
 Ane new legat wes callit Dedius, 8660  
 Efter the deid of gude Ostorius,  
 Befoir Cesar rycht pertlie tuke on hand  
 For to distroy all Pechtis into Pechtland,  
 Of thair kinrik to clenge thame out alss clene  
 In Albione as thai had neur bene. 8665  
 And so hapnit that tyme, as God forbeid,  
 Him of his purpos alway for to speid,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Or of*.

- Col. 2. Traist weill efter he sall preve, and he ma,  
 To tak his plesour in Brigantia.  
 Rycht freindfullie thairfoir he him besocht 8670  
 Of his supple als guddie as he mocht,  
 Out of Brigance other moir or les,  
 And leif him nocht into that greit distres.

THE ANSUER OF KING CORBREID TO THE  
 HERAULD.

- Quhen that king Corbreid hard him sa so weill,  
 " Forsuith," he said, " thairof I haif ane feill, 8675  
 " How Dedius, with haltane mind and hie,  
 " Maliciouslie malingis agane me,  
 " And all my pepill also les and moir,  
 " Into his mind with greit malice and schoir.  
 " And weill I wait it is his purpois baill, 8680  
 " Bot gif that Fortoun mak him for to fail,  
 " As it to me is rycht weill knawin and kend,  
 " Allanerlie nocht at this tyme defend  
 " The Romanis rycht, bot mair conqueis to mak,  
 " Without throw battell he be put abak ; 8685  
 " Zit neurtheles at this time I no will  
 " Onto the Romanis do injure or ill ;  
 " No in contrair of thame to mak supple,  
 " Bot wranguslie that it be socht on me.  
 " Na in my tyme I sall proue nane vther, 8690  
 " Bot keip the band quhilk wes maid be my bruther,  
 " King Caratac, quhen that he wes in Rome.  
 " Zit neurtheles I haif ane gude presume  
 " He schaipis first to muthe battell on me ;  
 " Qulhairfoir I purpois sone and suddantlie, 8695  
 " With all power now at this tyme I ma,  
 " To pas and byde into Brigantia."



HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS HERAULD SCHEW THE  
ANSUER WAS GEVIN HIM BE THE KING OF  
SCOTTIS.

With this ansuer the herauld hame he zeid,  
And schew to thame how that the king Corbreid  
Hes said till him, as ze haif hard befor, 8700  
Ilk word by word at laser les and moir.  
The Pechtis war completit of that thing,  
Quhen that thai knew of this Corbredus king,  
Within the boundis of Brigantia,  
With greit power so neir thair landis la. 8705

HOW KING CORBREID COME IN BRIGANTIA, AND  
HOW THE ROMANE LEGAT COMMANDIT HIM TO  
PAS HIS WA.

In this same tyme as ze heir me sa,  
King Corbreid come in Brigantia,  
With ane grit ost that wes bayth lang and braid;  
Gif that the Romanis schuip him till invoid,  
In Brigantia other throw strenth or slycht, 8710  
His mynd wes alway to defend his rycht,  
With his power thair pryde for to repell.  
Then Dedius, thairof quhen he hard tell,  
Ane herauld send rycht sone and suddanelie  
To king Corbreid, commanding him in hy, 8715  
With all his power for to pas his wa  
Rycht hastelie out of Brigantia.  
Doand him weill that tyme to wnderstand  
Brigantia suld be the Romanis land, Lib.4,f.44b.  
Quhilk Cesar gaif to Caratac his bruther, Col. i.  
Bot for his tyme till him and for na vther. 8720  
Sayand rycht sone bot gif that he did so,  
Declarit him thairfoir the Romanis fo,

Syne suddantlie that he suld cum him till  
 With greit power, in mager of his will 8725  
 Sould gar him pas out of Brigantia,  
 Within schort quhile, and other landis ma :  
 Attoure, his bidding and he schupe to byde,  
 He suld nocht wit weill quhair his heid to hyde.  
 And be the herauld had his tydenis schawin, 8730  
 Thair come ane man and hes maid to tham knawin  
 Ane Roman, callit Cecius Nausica,<sup>1</sup>  
 With greit power come in Brigantia ;  
 Ane man of age and greit auctoritie,  
 Rycht weir in weir and circumspect wes he. 8735

HOW KING CORBREID REPROVIT THE ROMAN  
 HERALD, ACCUSAND HIM OF TRESSOUN.

This king Corbreid, sic thing quhen he did heir,  
 Commovit wes agane that messingeir ;  
 And said to him, " Quhat wes it movit the,  
 " With sic ane trane wald haif betraisit me?  
 " How durst thow be sa malepart ane knaif, 8740  
 " With sic tressoune come me for till dissaue?  
 " Thow seruis deid, fals tratour, for thi trane."  
 And, or he mycht mak ansuer him agane,  
 He wes preuenit with thame stude about,  
 Rycht suddanelie all cryand with ane schout, 8745  
 Be the leist lad that tyme amang thame aw,  
 With ane hie voce all cryit " Hing and draw."  
 Zit neuirtheles king Corbreid, of his grace,  
 Considerit weill the fassoun and the cace  
 Of commoun law, the quhilk forbad sic wrang 8750  
 Ane messinger other till heid or hang ;  
 Als saiffie thair as he come thair that da,  
 Als saiffie than he leit him pas his wa.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Manlita*.

HOW CORBREID BAID WITHIN ANE STRENGTH QUHILL  
ALL HIS MEN SULD CUM TO HIM.

This beand done as I haif said ȝow heir,  
This king Corbreid and all his folk in feir, 8755  
Includit thame within ane stalwart strench,  
Quhair thai mycht ly without perrell at lenth  
Of the Romanis bot ony skayth or ill,  
Quhill that his men wer cumin all him till,  
Quhilk cumand war fra mony sindrie pairt. 8760  
And so he schupe be sic ane subtill airt  
His rycht and pepill at that tyme to defend,  
Quhill efterwart he saw his tyme, and kend  
Quhan that he plesit for to tak his will.  
No moir of this; heir will I hald me still, 8765  
And turne agane befoir quhair I haif bene,  
And tell the laif of Cartumand the quene,  
That Caratacus to the Romanis sauld,  
In all hir tyme malicious wes and bald.  
Of Cadallane scho wes the latter wyfe, 8770  
Wes lord of Brigance sum tyme in his lyfe,  
And father als to this king Corbreid,  
And Caratac in storie as we reid.

HOW CART[UM]ANDES, THE WYFFE OF CADAL- Col. 2.  
LANUS, EFTER HIM WES WEDDIT ON ANE MAN  
CALLIT VENETIUS.

Efter the deid of nobill Cadalane,  
Weddit scho wes syne with ane vther man, 8775  
Venetius wes callit to his name,  
In all Brigance of most honour and fame;  
Quhilk wes defendit lang and mony da  
With the Romanis, as my author did sa,  
Fra all nychtbour on bordour layand by, 8780  
At him tha had sic malice and envy.

Nocht at himself for falt that he did maik,  
 Bot for his wyffe betraisit Carataic,  
 Quhilk wes the king of sic fame and honour,  
 And stude for thame in mony stalwart stour. 8785  
 Bot quhen this man, callit Venetius,  
 Persauit weill that Aulus Dedius,  
 As be relatione rycht weill that he knew,  
 King Corbreid with battell wald persew,  
 So louit he king Corbreid with his hart, 8790  
 He left the Romanis and tuke Corbredis part.

HOW CART[UM]ANDES GART PUT HIR HUSBAND  
 AND HIS BRUTHER AND ALL HIS FREINDIS IN  
 PRESOUN.

Quhen his wyfe persauit that in plane,  
 Rycht tressonable than with ane subtyll trane,  
 That scho hes wrocht that tyme within ane wall,  
 Him self, his bruther, and his freindis all, 8795  
 Scho has gart tak, and syne in presoun cast;  
 Syne festnit syne with mony fetteris fast,  
 Quhill efterwart impediment war nane  
 To the Romanis to deliner thame ilkane.  
 Quben this wes tald on to the king Corbreid, 8800  
 He sped him on into the tyme gude speid,  
 To Epiac he tuke the narrest way,  
 Quhill that he come quhair this Venetius lay  
 In presoun bund, and out he hes him tane,  
 And his bruther and freindis all ilkane. 8805  
 This Cartumand, that all the tressoun wrocht  
 To hir husband, that tyme forzet he nocht,  
 And the tressoun to Caratac the king;  
 With haill consent that tyme of all and zing,  
 Rewardit hir as scho wes worth to haif, 8810  
 Than for hir gilt tha pat hir quik in graue.

HOW THE ROMANIS MAID ANE TRANE TO THE TOUN  
OF EPIACUM, QUHAIRTHROW MONY WAR TANE  
AND SLANE.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me sa,  
The Romanis come into Brigantia,  
Befoir the portis with forra vp and doun  
Of Epiac quhilk wes ane nobill toun 8815  
Into Brigance, so starklie that tyme stude  
Vpoun ane strenth besyid ane rynnand flude,  
With mos and wod all parkit round about ;  
Bot at ane pairt mycht nane win in nor out.  
The Brigantinis that wes the toun within, 8820 Lib. 4, f. 45.  
Followit on horss the pray agane to win. Col. 1.  
The Romanis fled, and tha followit so fast,  
And wnwyislie thai war lachit at the last ;  
Ane staill of Romanis lay intill ane slak,  
Or euir thai wist than round about thame brak, 8825  
And tuke and slew als mony as thai wald.  
Syne quhen thir tydenis into the toun war tald  
To thame that tyme that baid into the toun,  
Sic reirdour raiss amang thame vp and doun,  
That thair provest grit trauell had and pane 8830  
Within the toun to gar thame still remane.  
Thair purpos wes al haillelie to fle,  
Sum to the mos, sum to the montanis he ;  
And throw the counsall that he gaif thame till,  
And sic confort, he gart them all byde still. 8835

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS COME AND MET  
CORBREDUS.

The king of Pechtis, in his weirlie weid,  
With his power come and met Corbreid.  
Thir tua kingis togidder quhen thai met,  
And baith thair poweris intill ane wes knet,

Ane royall ost thai war for to behald, 8840  
 Of mony berne that wes baith big and bald :  
 In guddie haist syne passit furth thair wa,  
 Towart the place quhair that the Romanis la.  
 This Nausica, the royall Romane knyecht,  
 Then chesit hes of weirmen that wer wicht, 8845  
 Thre hundreth horssmen of the best thair wes,  
 To Epiac on to that toun to pas,  
 About the wallis to ryde vp and doun,  
 To gif terroure to thame within the toun.  
 Him self syne folwes with his power hail, 8850  
 Sone witht ane salt the citie till assaill.  
 Ane spy of his syne come till him and tald,  
 How king Corbreid, rycht bellicois and bald,  
 And king of Pechtis baith intill ane band,  
 With greit power wer cumand at his hand ; 8855  
 Within thre myle and les thai war ilk man.  
 This Nausica hes left his purpois than ;  
 Syne on ane plane, that wes neir hand besyid,  
 Rayit his men thair battell for till byde.

HOW CORBREDUS AND NAUSICA FAUCHT QUHILL  
 THE NYCHT TWYNNIT THAME.

This king Corbreid, quhen he the Romanis saw, 8860  
 Rycht baldlie than thair buglis thai gart blaw,  
 And straik vp standartis staitlie vpoune licht,  
 With pinsell proude, and mony baner bricht ;  
 With sic ane rusche vpoun the Romanis ran,  
 And so gude will that tyme of euerilk man, 8865  
 That skantlie weil thair endis mycht thai draw  
 Sic haist thai had at that tyme ane and aw.  
 The Romanis stude arrayit in the feild,  
 Glemand as gold witht mony glitterand scheid ;  
 The fedderit flanis betuix the feildis flew, 8870  
 Als scharp as hail, and thik as ony dew ;

Their speiris brak and all in flendaris flaw,  
 Helme and hewmat hewit in pecis smaw ;  
 Syidis wer schorne quhill that the blude burst out, 8875  
 And mony kene knycht maid on force to lout.  
 In to that stour that wes baith stif and strang,  
 The Albionis that tyme tha faucht so lang, Col. 2.  
 Quhill that thair strenth than begouth to fail,  
 On thame the Romanis maid so scharpe assaill.

HOW THE SCOTTIS THAT WAR WITHIN THE TOUN  
 COME FURTH AND RESKEWIT CORBRED THE  
 KING.

The Brigantines, that war within the toun, 8880  
 War neirhand by, and sone thai made thame boun,  
 With swordis scharp and speiris that war lang,  
 And sone thai enterit in the thickest thrang.  
 Syne all in breif thair buglis that thai blew,  
 And with that blast the battell did renew, 8885  
 And bitter bargane at that tyme began ;  
 On euerie syid war loissit mony man.  
 The Romanis than thai thoct grit schame to fie,  
 Trowand befor tha had the victorie ;  
 The Albionis to fie also forsuik, 8890  
 So greit curage of that supplie thai tuke.  
 Thay faucht ay still als lang as tha had lycht,  
 Quhill da wes gone and cuming wes the nycht ;  
 Than force it wes till thame to draw abak  
 With mekill skayth on euerilk syid but lak. 8895  
 The Albionis than passit to ane hicht ;  
 The Romanis raikit to thair tentis rycht ;  
 Thairin ane quhill thai schupe for to remane,  
 Quhill on the morne for till gif battell agane.

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS AND KING OF PECHTIS  
ON THE MORNE POSTPONIT THE BATTELL FOR  
TO MAK PEICE.

Syne on the morne, quhen day begouth to ryiss, 8900  
This king Corbreid, that worthie wes and wyiss,  
And king of Pechtis, with thair lordis all,  
Considerand the greit mischeif did fall,  
Into that feild sa mony that wer slane,  
Grit dout it wes tha thoct to fecht agane. 8905  
Tha haif decreittit syne vpoune this mak,  
To purcheis peice gif that thai ma but lak ;  
And for that tyme to lat the battell be,  
Quhill efterwart that tha ma gudlie se  
To mak gude peice, as I haif said befor ; 8910  
Quhill this wes done thai thoct to fecht no moir.

HOW AULUS DEDIUS SEND TO NAUSICA, COMMAND-  
AND HIM TO TAK PEAX WITH CORBRED<sup>1</sup> AND  
HE MYCHT WITH HONESTIE.

In that same tyme, my author sais thus,  
This Roman legat Aulus Dedius,  
That wes that tyme into Camelidone,  
Fra him ane herald intill haist is gone 8915  
With letteris send vnto this Nausica,  
Commandand him, gif he mycht with his fa  
Be ony way ony peice to mak,  
Schort or lang sum trewis for to tak.  
For greit perrell that tyme he saw appeir 8920  
Into Kent schyre, as it wes lattin him heir,  
Be suithfast men sic thing that did him tell,  
How that the Britis thought for to rebell.  
Quhill he had maid that scisma for till ceis,  
He prayit him with king Corbred to tak peice ; 8925

Lib.4.f.45b.  
Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Combrcd.*



For to defend the landis thai war in,  
 And preis na mair landis for to win.  
 Quhen Nausica hes hard that it wes so,  
 Preisit no moir in battell for to go ;  
 Bot in that sted he schupe to hald him still, 8930  
 Quhill that he wist quhat wes king Corbredis will ;  
 Gif that he thocht he gif him feild agane,  
 In that beleif thair still he did remane.

HOW CORBREDUS AND THE KING OF PECHTIS SEND  
 ANE HERALD TO NAUSICA FOR TO TAK PEICE  
 WITH HIM.

In this same tyme, now that ze heir me sa,  
 Ane herauld come vnto this Nausica ; 8935  
 The quhilk wes send fra king Corbreid but leis,  
 With speciall power for to purches peice ;  
 And scalen tak fra all battell and weir,  
 Quhilk of befor hes done thame bayth greit deir.  
 On euerie syd cheis to that effect 8940  
 Wyss aigit men of lautie vnsuspect,  
 With quhat condition that euerie man thocht best,  
 Fra that da furth to leve in pece and rest.

HOW NAUSICA SEND ANE HERALD TO DEDIUS TO  
 WIT HIS WILL,<sup>1</sup> OR HE WALD TAK PEAX WITH  
 CORBREDUS AND THE PECHTIS.

This Nausica thairof wes weil content,  
 Quhen that he knew how that thir kingis ment ; 8945  
 Zit culd he nocht gif ansuer weil thairtill,  
 Quhill that he knew of Aulus Dedius will.  
 Quhairfoir ane herald hes he send anone  
 To him that tyme that wes in Camelidone,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Weill*.

Quhilk<sup>1</sup> all the secreitis of this thing he schew. 8950  
 This Dedius, fra he thair myndis knew,  
 He wes content of all thing les and moir,  
 Seand his men in sic perrell befoir,  
 Into the feild quhair thai had mony slane.  
 Rycht sone he send to Nausica agane, 8955  
 In that mater commandand of this mak,  
 With the tua kingis scaling for to tak;  
 Syne set ane da and place quhair tha suld meit,  
 In that mater to commoun and decreit;  
 Syne him aduerteis of the place and da, 8960  
 And he suld cum and keip it gif he ma.  
 And so he did, that tyme with waill gude speid,  
 Ane herald send on to king Corbreid,  
 Quhilk schew till him the fassoun all in feir,  
 Ilk word by word as I haif said zow heir. 8965

HOW CORBREDUS WRAIT TO DEDIUS, SETTAND HIM  
 DA AND PLACE QUHAIR THAI SULD MEIT WITH  
 EQUALL ARMOURE.

This king Corbred syne wrait till him agane,  
 The day and place assignand on ane plane,  
 Quhair thai suld meit with ten on euerie syid,  
 In that same place at thair purpos to byid,  
 Col. 2. Fra euerie oist ane hundreth pais and moir, 8970  
 To that effect as I haif said befoir.  
 Neir by the boundis of Brigantia thair stude  
 Ane end fast stane that wes bayth hie and rude,  
 Vpoun ane plane quhair that the tryist wes set;  
 On the thrid day thair baith the pairteis met. 8975

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Quhill*.

HOW DEDIUS FREINDFULLIE ACCUSIT CORBREDUS  
OF HIS VNTHANKFULNES TO THE ROMANIS.

This Dedijs, than of ane gude maneir,  
 To king Corbreid he said as ze sall heir.  
 " I mervill mekill of thi ingratitude,  
 " Considerand thow knawis how it stude  
 " With Caratac quhilk wes thi carnall bruther, 8980  
 " Sumtyme in Rome as wes done to na vther,  
 " With all the pepill and the empriour,  
 " So greit kyndnes thai schew him with honour,  
 " Qubair he wes than in thair captiuitie ;  
 " Zit neuirtheles thai maid him to be frie, 8985  
 " With greit rewaird, with honour and renoun,  
 " Restorit him baith to kinrik and croun,  
 " Without tribut, to him tha war so heind,  
 " Syne all his tyme callit the Romanis freind ;  
 " And all his leigis siclike les and moir, 8990  
 " With libertie as thai war wont befoir.  
 " His dochter als, for him in pledge that la,  
 " Wes send hame fre, thow can nocht vther sa,  
 " The hail honour the quhilk that did pertene,  
 " And plesure als, to princes and to quene. 8995  
 " Had thow bene leill or kynd, I the assuir,  
 " Thow suld fra ws haif keipit thi injure ;  
 " And nocht to ws sic malice to haif wrocht  
 " For the honour ze gat of ws for nocht.  
 " Zit neuirtheles can thow gif thi consent 9000  
 " Of thi awin kinrik for to be content,  
 " With all fredome siclyke as of befoir,  
 " In peice and rest for now and eur moir ;  
 " In tyme to cum for to be leill and trew,  
 " And preis no moir oure portis till persew, 9005  
 " Bot fra all weiris for to stanche and ceis,  
 " And mak the pepill for till leif in peice ;  
 " Syne all thi tyme no vther of ws weynd  
 " Bot ay to be thi gude fallow and freind.

“ And pleis thow [nocht] at this tyme till do sua, 9010  
 “ Heir I declair the for the Romanis fa,  
 “ And neur agane of ws for till haif peice  
 “ In tyme to cum as we sall neur ceiss,  
 “ For the quhilk wrang that ze haif till ws wrocht,  
 “ Quhill thow and thyne be all in bondage brocht; 9015  
 “ Work as [zow] lykis, zow haif it at zour will  
 “ And thi gyding now, baith the gude and ill.”

HOW KING CORBRED GAIF ANSJER AGANE TO DE-  
 DIUS, THE ROMANE LEGAT, BEFOIR THAME ALL.

Quhen this was said, as ze haif hard but baid,  
 The king Corbred sic ansuer to him maid.  
 “ Heir I tak witnes of oure godis all, 9020  
 “ My mynd wes nocht, nor zit neur befall,  
 “ On to the Romanis for to do injure,  
 Lib. 4. f. 46. “ Bot trewlie ay to thame to do my cuir.  
 Col. 1. “ Quhair ze alledge agane zow I haif wrocht  
 “ So greit injure, forsuith that haif I nocht. 9025  
 “ All that I did wes ay in my defence,  
 “ For till resist the wrang and violence  
 “ Wes done to me be Cesus Nausica,  
 “ Within the boundis of Brigantia,  
 “ Quhilk with<sup>1</sup> his raikis all that land our raid, 9030  
 “ In sindrie pairtis greit spulze thair he maid.  
 “ Considerand all falt, I bid nocht feyne  
 “ I haif moir cause be far on zow to plene;  
 “ My will was ay and zit salbe euirmoir,  
 “ For the greit wirschip, honour, laud and gloir, 9035  
 “ That Cesar did to Caratac our king,  
 “ With hart and mynd aboue all vther thing  
 “ To pleis the Romanis all tyme nycht and da,  
 “ And ay sall do as far as that I ma.  
 “ This is rycht suith that I haif said to the, 9040  
 “ Say as thow will the wyit is nocht in me.”

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *wes*.

HOW AULUS DEDIUS ACCUSIT THE KING OF PECHTIS  
RYCHT SCHARPLIE OF HIS INGRATITUDE TO THE  
ROMANIS.

This beand said, this Aulus Dedijs,  
In that same tyme into this Conquestus,  
The king of Pechtis, he said, " Quha mouit the,  
" So far this tyme out of ressoun to be, 9045  
" Agane the Romanis for till mak sic weir,  
" Considerand that tha did the na deir,  
" At thi awin will but ony caus or quhy,  
" Sen thai in the vsit na tirranie  
" Of vettigall, or zit vile seruitude, 9050  
" As victor nicht quhen plesis him till dude?  
" At your awin will ze war maid to be frie,  
" Bot in the taikin of oure autoritie  
" Ane small tribut zeirlie till ws to pa,  
" The Romanis freind callit to be alsua. 9055  
" Quhairfoir as now, schortlie I say to the,  
" Zit of thi battell and thou will lat be,  
" And leue in peice as that thow did befoir,  
" And vse as thi lawis also les and moir,  
" I sall ressaue the to the Romanis peice ; 9060  
" And will thow nocht, suithlie I sall neur ceis  
" Of mort battell to tak the chance and werd,  
" Quhill ane of your is levand on this erd."

HOW THE ROMANIS AND THIR TWA KINGIS CHEST  
RYCHT<sup>1</sup> WYSS LORDIS FOR TO AGRIE THAME.

Off this proffer than ilk man wes content.  
Syne suddanelie, with all thair hail consent, 9065  
Tha haif chosin rycht wyss men and discret,  
And causit thame in that same tyme to meit,  
And all this mater dres at thair awin will,  
With quhat conditione thai wald put thairtill,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Aucht*.

Among thir princes for to mak gude peice. 9070  
 And so thai did rycht sone or thai wald ceis.  
 Thrie Scottis lordis wer chosin in that tyde,  
 Thre Pechtis als that mekill wes of pryde,  
 Thre Romanis als rycht wyss and circumspect,  
 Syne all in feir on to that same effect, 9075  
 At quyet place togidder gart thame meit,  
 In that mater to commoun and decreit.  
 Col. 2. And so thai did thir folkis all in feir,  
 Decreittit hes as I sall schaw  $\zeta$ ow heir.

HOW THE ROMANIS AND THIR TUA KINGIS  
 WAR CONCORDIT VPOUN THE CONDITIONIS  
 FOLLOWING.

The Romanis than sall preis no moir persew, 9080  
 Na Scot or Pecht thair rentis till renew ;  
 And preis no moir new landis for till wyn,  
 Bot bruke in peice the landis thai war in.  
 Conkestus als into his realme suld ring,  
 Among the Pechtis for to be thair king ; 9085  
 As plesit him baith till halk and hunt,  
 And to the Romanis pay as thai war wont,  
 Bot small tribute for all sic seruitude,  
 And Romanis haif the hail power of blude.  
 The Scottis als suld bruke baith les and moir 9090  
 The landis all quhilk thai had of befoir,  
 Without tribute ay to be maid frie,  
 And vse thair law at thair awin libertie.  
 In tyme to cum for to ressaue no moir  
 The Romanis fais as thai did of befoir, 9095  
 Na with the Romanis no moir to mak weir ;  
 And tha siclike na Scot nor Pecht till deir.  
 The Scottis als suld do na violence  
 To Brit nor Pecht, bot in thair awin defence.  
 On this same wyss accordit than war tha, 9100  
 Syne tuke thair leif ilknan hame till ga.

Of this kyndnes wes euerie man content,  
 With greit blythnes syne braid thame our the bent.  
 In Albione, the space syne of sax ȝeir,  
 Greit peax and rest thair wes baith far and neir, 9105  
 Our all the pairtis than of Albione,  
 Traistand rycht weill all weiris had bene gone.

HOW AULUS DEDIUS, THROW GREIT INFIRMITIE, IN  
 TRYNOWANT DEPAIRTIT OUT OF THIS PRESENT  
 LYFFE.

In that same tyme, my storie tellis thus,  
 In Trynowant this Aulus Dedius,  
 Throw dynt of deith, quhome with he mycht 9110  
 nocht stryve,  
 He tuke his leif out of this present lyve.  
 After the deid of Aulus Dedius,  
 Ane greit Roman, callit Weranus,  
 Fra Nero send, gif that I rycht presume,  
 The quhilk that tyme wes emperour of Rome, 9115  
 In Britane come that tyme rycht glorious,  
 For to succeid to Aulus Dedius.  
 The boundis all of Britane vp and down  
 He viseit hes baith castell, tour, and toun.  
 And quhen thir pairtis he had our gone 9120  
 Rycht curioslie come till Camelidone;  
 To the tempill syne of Claudius is gane,  
 Quhilk biggit wes without tymmer or stane;  
 Onto thair goddis as than wes the gyiss  
 Solempnitlie hes maid his sacrifice, 9125  
 With game and gloir, with honour and renoun,  
 Quhen that wes done syne passit to the toun.  
 Thocht he wes wyiss, ȝit culd he nocht consent  
 To leue in pece and for to be content;  
 Sa couetous he wes that tyme of gloir, 9130  
 For to precell all vther him befor,

Lib.4,f.46b.  
 Col. 1.

Trowand sa weill, and he doucht to mak weir,  
 All Albione of him suld tak sic feir,  
 Suppois thai war baith stalwart, strang and stout,  
 Vnder him law he suld sone gar thame lout. 9135  
 Quhairfoir oft syis ane fenzeit caus hes socht,  
 Bayth da and nycht he hes done that he mocht  
 To brek the band that wes maid be Dedius ;  
 To leif in peice he thocht rycht tedius.

HOW THE SCOTTIS STAW FRA THE PECHTIS, AND  
 HOW WARANUS, THE ROMAN LEGATT, GART  
 TAK TWYSS AS MEKLE AGANE.

Syne efter sone it hapnit vpoun cace 9140  
 The Scottis staw out of ane Pechtis place,  
 Rycht mekill gude vpoun the nycht awa ;  
 Quhen it wes mist, efter on ane da,  
 The Roman legat quhilk thairof was blyth,  
 Agane the law rycht suddanelie and swyth 9145  
 Ane forra send that same tyme in Scotland,  
 And twyiss alss mekill take at thair awin hand.  
 Greit wrang it wes, as ze ma rycht weill gess,  
 Wald nocht bedene first for till ask redres.

HOW THE SCOTTIS BUT COMMAND OF THAIR KING  
 PASSIT IN PECHTLAND, AND TUKE MEKILL  
 GUDE AND BROCHT HAME WITH THAME IN  
 SCOTLAND.

The Scottis weill mycht nocht suffer sic thing. 9150  
 Rycht suddanelie, without command of king,  
 Into Pechtland vpoune ane da tha raid  
 With greit power, and thair greit spulze maid  
 Ouir all the partis that tyme bayth far and neir,  
 And syne come hame agane bayth haill and feir. 9155



Rycht oft thai raid on ilk syid out and in,  
 Quhair euir thai wist that thair wes ocht to wyn.  
 Rycht mekill preiking oftymes our the plane,  
 Greit spulzie maid, and no redres agane.  
 And thus thai wrocht all wynter our that zeir, 9160  
 Quhill efterwart hapnit as ze sall heir.

HOW WARANNUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, THROW THE  
 CALD WYNTER TUK INFIRMITIE AND DE-  
 PARTIT.

Varannus, that mycht nocht weill sustene  
 The wynter cald that bait him to the splene,  
 Rycht haistelie hes done him than sic harme,  
 The quhilk befor that nurischit wes so warme, 9165  
 In his bodie with sic alteratioun,  
 Contrarie the courss of his complectioun,  
 That sair seiknes, without ony remeid,  
 In that distres hes done him to the deid.  
 That samin tyme, into Camelidone, 9170  
 He take his leve and of this lyfe is gone.  
 Befor his deid, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 Ane epistill wrait and it to Cesar send; Col. 2.  
 In greit effect the quhilk till him did sa,  
 And he had fortoun to leve zeiris tua, 9175  
 All Albione, foroutin ony pley,  
 He suld haif maid all bundin till obey.

HOW NERO, THE EMPRIOUR, SEND ANE LEGAT IN  
 BRITANE CALLIT SWETONIUS, EFTER THE DEITH  
 OF WARANNUS.

Efter the deith of this Warannus,  
 Ane nobill man callit Swetonius,  
 Fra Nero send [wes] efter he wes deid, 9180  
 To gyde Britane and enterit in his steid.

Ane man of peax, withoutin ony cryme,  
 Luifit no wrang nor weir in all his tyme.  
 Quhairfoir he hes gart suddanelie restoir  
 To Scot and Pecht all spulzie maid befoir, 9185  
 And puneische thame that first begouth the wrang ;  
 Sum he gart heid, and vther sum gart hang.  
 Renewit syne with king Corbreid the band  
 Wes maid befoir, for all his tyme to stand.  
 Greit peax and rest he maid in Albione ; 9190  
 Syne efterwart zeid to the Ile of Mone,  
 With schip and boit, with bark and ballingair,  
 Subdewit all befoir him he fand thair.  
 Of Drowedes the tempill he caist doun,  
 Syne stuffit hes ilk castell, tour and toun, 9195  
 In that beleif, quhat euir efter befell,  
 Tha suld stand all aganis him to rebell.

HOW ANE HERALD COME FURTH OF GALLIA, AND  
 SCHEW TO SUETONIUS HOW THA REBELLIT.

In this same tyme come furth of Gallia  
 Ane seruand send the quhilk till him did sa,  
 Without in tyme he come to make supple, 9200  
 The Romanis wald rycht sone revit be.  
 Quhairfoir that tyme, I trow it he tareit nocht,  
 Bot sped him hyne in all the haist he mocht ;  
 Out throw Britane he tuke the reddie wa,  
 With gydis gude rycht on to Gallia, 9205  
 Quhilk callit is now in thir dais France.  
 I leif him thair ; let him stand to his chance,  
 In that effect his purpois to fulfill,  
 And to the Britis turne agane I will.

HOW THE EMPRIoure BRAK THE LEGACIE LEFT TO  
HIM BE ARWERAGUS, KING OF BRITIS, IN THE  
DEFENCE OF HIS HOUS AND HIS BARNIS,  
QUHAIRFOIR THE BRITIS REBELLIT EFTERWART.

- Schort quhile befoir [as] I haif to 3ow tald, 9210 Lib. 4. f. 47.  
Arweragus, of Britis blude richt bald, Col. 1.  
King of Britane in that time wes he,  
Full of riches and greit nobilitie,  
No childer had that tyme bot dochteris tua,  
With his gude quene wes callit Voeda, 9215  
Quhilk sister wes, befoir as I haif tald,  
To Caratae baith bellicois and bald ;  
And Corbred, als of Scotland that tyme king,  
Efter his tyme succedit to his ring.  
Arweragus, of quhome befoir I spak, 9220  
Befoir his deith his legacie did mak.  
His dochteris tua, that plesand wes and fair,  
Quhilk efter him succeid suld as his air,  
In tutorie to Cesar that he left,  
Into thair rycht for to kepe thame vnreft : 9225  
His hous also he did till him commend,  
Agane all wrang to warrand and defend.  
But sone efter it 3eid ane vther way,  
No king of Britis wes maid efter that day ;  
His hous dewydit wes till mony one, 9230  
His heretage in sindrie handis gone ;  
His tua dochteris, aganis ressoun and skill,  
Defowlit war richt soir agane thair will ;  
Als Voyda, that tyme in hir defence,  
Wes rycht euill dung and done to greit offence. 9235  
And speciallie, as my author did tell,  
That wes the caus the Britis did rebell,  
Quhen that thai saw thair tyme commodius,  
Efter the passage of Swetonius.  
Ane vther caus quha lykis to inqueir, 9240  
How I sall tell, tak tent, and 3e sall heir.

HOW GREIT WOUNDERIS FELL THAT TYME IN  
ALBIONE, AS ȜE SALL HEIR EFTER IN THIS  
CHEPTOUR.

In this same tyme now that Ȝe heir me tell,  
In Albione greit ferleis than befell.  
The se with blude wes lyke ane rois als reid ;  
Fund by the coist wes mony carioun deid, 9245  
Of greit stature, haifand the forme of men,  
Qubhat that thai war wes nane levand culd ken ;  
Bot weill thai wist thai signifeit to be  
Throw weir and battell greit mortalitie,  
Qubhairfoir the wemen oft thair handis wrang, 9250  
Neir hand reid wod out of thair wit to gang.  
The statue<sup>1</sup> als, quhilk wes of marbell stone,  
Of Claudius into Camelidone,  
Into the tempill fell with sic ane fall,  
Quhill that it brak that tyme in pecis all. 9255  
The ymage als of god of victorie,  
Fell down on groif vpoun the flure him by.  
Interpretaris, the quhilk war rycht discreit,  
Trowand thai had of prophecie the spreit,  
At thair lyking, evin as thair awin self lest, 9260  
All thing that tyme interpret to the best.  
The Romanis suld, thai said, for all thair mycht,  
In Albione baith rentis tyne and rycht ;  
Quhilk thai interpret be the ymage fall  
Of Claudius, that brak in pecis small. 9265  
The image als<sup>2</sup> of god of victorie,  
Quhilk fell on grouf and syne so still did ly,  
Ane taikin wes that the Romanis suld tyne  
The victorie, gif thai suld rycht diuynne.  
The deid bodeis that fund war by the flude, 9270  
Col. 2. And als the se that ran so reid of blude,  
That signifeit ane greit mortalitie  
In Albione of Romanis for till be.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *stature*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *all*.

HOW THE PECHTIS, HEIRAND OF THAI TAKYNIS,  
 TUKE GREIT CURAGE, QUHILK CAUSIT THAME  
 TO REBEL THAT TYME.

Quhair of the Pechtis tuke sic greit curage,  
 Baith ill and gude that cumin wer till age, 9275  
 Richt quyetlie, withoutin ony hyre,  
 Agane the Romanis rycht sone did conspyre.  
 And, or sic thing wes publicc made and plane,  
 Rycht mony Roman quietlie hes slane.  
 The law keiparis into Camelidone, 9280  
 That ordanit wer bot schort quhile of bygone  
 Be Vespacian thair for<sup>1</sup> to keip the law,  
 To keip the Pechtis into reull and aw,  
 Quhome at the Pechtis had rycht greit invye,  
 Quhairfoir that tyme rycht sone and suddanely 9285  
 The Pechtis pertlie did [thame] sune persew,  
 And in the tyme rycht mony of thame slew.  
 Bayth hous and land, gold and vther gude,  
 Confiscat all, so herd it with thame stude.  
 The laif on lyue than fled, bayth all and sum, 9290  
 Into Britane throw Ordulucium.  
 And as thai wer hyne passand by the way,  
 The cuntrie men pat thame in sic ane fray,  
 For to tak girth togidder all ar gane  
 On till aine tempill biggit wes of stane, 9295  
 Trowand that tyme thairin for to get girth ;  
 Bot all tha wylis wer than lytill wirth.  
 In that tempill, as my author did sa,  
 Tha war all slane ilkone that samin da.  
 Ane Roman knycht quhilk Petus hecht to name, 9300  
 Amang thame than of most honour and fame,  
 Into that tyme had sic auctoritie,  
 Efter Suetone thair governour wes he,  
 In Orduluyis with ane legioun he wend,  
 For to supple thair folkis and defend. 9305

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *thairfoir*.

He wes preventit rycht sone by the way,  
 His men wer slane ilkone that samin day;  
 Him self wes maid on to ane strenth to fle.  
 Syne on the morne, rycht sone and suddanelie,  
 Without tarie at that tyme nycht or da, 9310  
 On to Kentschyre he tuke the reddie wa,  
 To ane Roman, Catus wes callit than,  
 The protectour that tyme wes of Britane.  
 And fra Catus sic tydenis hard him tell,  
 In Albione so mony did rebell, 9315  
 He maid na tarie that tyme nycht nor da,  
 Bot in all haist passit in Gallia.

HOW QUENE VOYEDA MENIT HIR TO CORBREID,  
 HIR BRUTHER.

In that same tyme, as my author did mene,  
 Dame Voyeda, quhilk wes of Britane quene,  
 To Scotland send to king Corbreid hir bruther, 9320  
 Darrest to hir that tyme of ony vther;  
 Of quhome scho traistit for to haif supple,  
 Beseikand him than richt hartlie that he  
 To rew on hir quhilk wes ane wracchit wycht,  
 Fra quhome the Romanis had reft all hir rycht 9325  
 And put hir self in greit penurie.  
 Hir dochteris als of thair virginie  
 Defoullit had with so greit violence;  
 Hirsself also, quhilk schupe to mak defence,  
 Dung and ill drest neir hand to the deid, 9330  
 That scho mycht skantlie steir out of the steid;  
 Of all Bretane that tyme the nobill blude  
 Wer bondis maid, with sic vile seruitude,  
 Dalie in dreid and dolour for to duell,  
 That horribill is to ony tounge to tell. 9335  
 " Oure protectour, quhilk callit is Catus,  
 " Till all Britane is moir injurius  
 " Na tounge can tell or man with hart can think,  
 " Or ony clerk with paper writ and ink.

“ I the beseik,” scho said, “ of thi supplie, 9340  
 “ And leue me nocht in this necessitie ;  
 “ Bot for thi manheid help me in this mister,  
 “ And rew on me that is thi onlie sister.”

HOW CORBREDUS SEND TO CATUS TO HEIR HIS  
 MYND, OR HE WALD MOVE BATTELL AGANE  
 HIM.

Quhen this wes red befor the king Corbreid,  
 Rycht suddantlie he send with waill gude speid 9345  
 Ane messinger with all his haill intent  
 To this Catus, to wit quhat that he ment,  
 Quhilk cuming wes agane fra Gallia,  
 With greit power, as my author did sa.  
 Commanding him alway for to abstene 9350  
 His greit injure fra Voyada the quene,  
 And to reforme all faltis maid befor,  
 And all hir richt agane till hir restoir ;  
 And wald he nocht, schortlie, he said him till,  
 He suld be gart in mager of his will. 9355

HOW CATUS SEND ANSUER TO CORBREDUS AGANE,  
 FULL OF SCORNE AND GREIT DERISIOUN.

This being said quhair mony wes beforne,  
 This Catus leuche thairat and maid a scorne.  
 Sayand “ Rycht nocht perteinit sic ane thing  
 “ To sic ane pur, impotent, barbour king,  
 “ For till ask compt or thairof till tak cuir, 9360  
 “ Quhat euer he did be law or zit injure  
 “ To Voyada till him pertenit nocht ;  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ gif ony wrang wes wrocht  
 “ Till hir or hiris other in all or sun,  
 “ It suld be doublit into tyme to cum ; 9365  
 “ Quhen that wes done he rakit nocht ane stra,  
 “ Quhither he wer his freind or zit his fa.”

HOW CORBREDUS SEND TO CORANATUS,<sup>1</sup> THE KING  
OF PECHTIS, REQUIRAND HIS HELP AGANE THE  
ROMANIS.

Quhen this was said befor Corbreid the king,  
He wes displesit richt far of that thing.  
Rycht suddantlie thair hes he send ane man 9370  
To Coranat, wes king of Pechtis than,  
Requirand him at da and place to meit,  
With haill power his purpois to compleit.  
Col. 2. Sen ganand wes the tyme that he hard tell,  
Out of thair realme the Romanis to repell. 9375

HOW CORANATUS AND CORBREDUS MAID GREIT  
DISTRUCTIONE OF THE ROMANIS IN MONY  
PAIRTIS.

This Coranat thair of he wes rycht fane,  
And all his lordis quhilk lang tyme did remane  
Quhill thair thair tyme convenient mycht se,  
Waittand alway on his help and supple.  
Sone efter syne thir tua kingis ar met 9380  
In till ane place quhair that the tryst wes set.  
So greit power as wes thame tua betuene,  
In Albione befor wes neur sene.  
All Pechtland throw, and eik Egeria,  
All Ordulus, and als Candalia, 9385  
All auld and zoung that buir the Romanis name,  
Bayth ill and gude, for ony bost or blame,  
Puir or riche, wer fund in ony steid,  
Rycht crwellie thair pat thame all to deid.  
In Ordulus, ane nobill toun thair stude 9390  
Neirby the se, wes foundit on ane flude,  
Of policie rycht plesand and preclair,  
Quhair that the Romanis rycht oft maid repair ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Cronatus*.



Mony of thame wes in the toun that tyme,  
 In ane castell biggit with stane and lyme, 9395  
 Neirby the toun thai tuke for thair defence,  
 For to debait thame fra all violence.  
 Quhen this wes schawin to thir kingis tua,  
 Tha maid no tarie that tyme nycht nor da,  
 With bowis bent rycht baldlie maid thame boun, 9400  
 Syne laid ane seig evin round about the toun.  
 With litill laubour syne the toun thai wan,  
 And castell als, syne slew thame euerie man.  
 Tha brint the toun, and syne caist down the waw ;  
 The castell als thai gart it lig full law. 9405  
 That samin toun, as my author did sa,  
 Is callit Beruik at this present da.  
 Quhen this wes hard into the Yle of Mone,  
 Rycht gladlie all togidder are thai gone ;  
 Syne all the Romanis that wes that yle within, 9410  
 Slew thame ilkone that tyme bayth mair and myn.

HOW THE MORAVIENS COME FURTH OF GERMANIE  
 IN SCOTLAND, AND CALLIT THE LAND OF  
 MURRA EFTER THAME.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell,  
 In the eist land sic auenture befell.  
 Ane nobill man, hecht Rodoric to name,  
 In all his tyme of greit honour and fame, 9415  
 Ane lord he wes of greit Germania,  
 Intill ane land callit Morauia ;  
 Quhome fra the Romanis had reft all the rycht  
 Of land and gold, [of] riches and [of] nicht,  
 And flemit him and all his folk in feir, 9420  
 In sindrie pairtis that tyme far and neir.  
 Quhill efterwart met at the mouth of Ryne,  
 With mony schip to se burd passit syne ;  
 Sailland to seik quhair tha mycht get resset,  
 In other land sum duelling place to get, 9425

Lib. 4, f. 48. With ony pepill for to leif in peice.  
 Col. 1. Ay saling on or thai wald stynt or ceis,  
 In sindrie airthis baith be south and north,  
 Quhill at the last thai come sailland in Forth,  
 And fand ane hevin that wes bayth deip and 9430  
 wyde,  
 Thair thai tuke purpos to remane and byde,  
 Endlang the cost of Pechtland at ane schoir  
 Quhair thai tuke land that tyme baith les and  
 moir.  
 Of thair cuming the cuntrie men wes blyth,  
 And thame ressaut suddanelie and swyth; 9435  
 And schew to thame how thair kingis tua  
 Neir by the boundis of Britane la,  
 With greit power the Romanis till persew.  
 Rycht blyth thai wer thai tydenes quhen tha knew,  
 At the Romanis sa greit invy thai had; 9440  
 Within schort quhile sone hidder thai thame sped,  
 With gydis gude that knew rycht weill the way,  
 Quhill that thai come quhair that the kingis lay.

HOW RODORIK, THE CHIFTANE OF THE MORAUUIENS,  
 COME TO THIR TUA KINGIS QUHAIR THAI LAY  
 IN THAIR CAMP.

This Rodorik, quhilk wes ane man of gude,  
 Of greit vertew and als of nobill blude, 9445  
 Befoir the kingis that tyme reuerentlie  
 He hailsit thame inclynand on his knie,  
 And schew to thame that tyme bayth les and moir,  
 Ilk word by word as I haif said befor;  
 How the Romanis without ressoun or rycht, 9450  
 Had him ouirset throw greit maistres and mycht,  
 And him disheireist of his landis all,  
 Syne of him self thocht till haue maid ane thrall,  
 His men also in seruitude to be;  
 That wes the caus, he said, that gart him fle. 9455

Beseikand thame of thair excellent grace,  
 Quhair euir thai fuir to fecht in ony place,  
 That tha wald grant him for to gang thame with,  
 Agane the Romanis for to preif thair pith ;  
 That tha nicht knaw thair wisdome in to weir, 9460  
 Thair forwardnes and eik thair fresche effer,  
 Thair prattik als and eik thair policie,  
 Thair greit ingyne in euerie jeopardie.  
 Gif it hapnit thame greit vassalage to win  
 In ony feild that tyme that thai faucht in, 9465  
 Beseikand thame than of thair celsitude,  
 That thai wald grant thame of thair gratitude,  
 In ony ground, quhair thai thocht best mycht gane,  
 Ane duelling place with his men to remane.  
 No moir of thame that tyme he wald craif, 9470  
 Bot of thair wemen wyffis for till haif,  
 So that thair blude mycht mixit be togither,  
 Within schort quhile thai wald graw sib till vther.  
 Gif hapnit thame, as God forbid suld be,  
 In ony feild all fechtand than suld de, 9475  
 Tha had aneuch ; as than thai bad no moir,  
 Bot as thair kynd thair mortall fate imploir.

HOW THIR TUA KINGIS RESSAUIT RODORIK AND  
 ALL HIS MEN RYCHT THANKFULLIE AT THAT  
 TYME.

Thir kingis tua thairof wer weill content, Col. 2.  
 Fra tyme thai knew the maner how he ment ;  
 Seand him self in so gudlie ane gyss, 9480  
 Semand to be baith worthie, wicht and wyss. .  
 Rycht bald he wes, and big of bone and blude,  
 His men wer stout and of thair nature rude ;  
 Bald as ane bair to byde quhen it wes neid,  
 Wald nocht abhor for to se beirnis bleid. 9485  
 The Albionis of thame greit curage take,  
 With hartis lycht, quhen thai did on thame luke ;

Traistand rycht weill, throw thair help and supple,  
 Sone of the Romanis to reuengit be.  
 Thir tua kingis with greit glaidnes and gloir 9490  
 Ressaut thame ilkane baith les and moir,  
 At thair desyre in all thing as thai wald,  
 Of that asking befoir as ze hard tald.

HOW THIR TUA KINGIS WAN THE TOUN OF CAR-  
 LILL, AND CAIST ALL THE WALLIS<sup>1</sup> DOWN AND  
 BRINT THE TOUN.

Syne furth with thame attour the feild thai fuir,  
 To Carlill toun thair baner that thai buir. 9495  
 About the citie thair thai lichtit all,  
 Syne streikit up thair standartis at the wall.  
 The buglis blew, the trumpetis wald nocht tyre,  
 Syne sone thai set the zetis all in fyre,  
 And braid arrowis our the wall lute gang; 9500  
 And thai within greit stonis out tha slang.  
 Tha sparit nocht sic sport ane weill lang space,  
 Quhill tha without hes fund ane fautie place  
 In to the wall that wes baith lang and braid,  
 And at that place thair passage in tha maid. 9505  
 Bayth ald and zing that thai fand in the toun  
 Slew thame ilkane, syne caist the wallis down;  
 The stonis than thai brak als smal as glas,  
 The citie als thai brint it in till ass.  
 Of this slauchter wes maid with sic dispyte, 9510  
 The wemen had maist pairt of the wyte;  
 For thai war formest ay into the feild,  
 In ilk counter rycht mony thai haif keild  
 Without pietie, into thame wes na reuth,  
 Quha list this tyme of thame to tell the treuth 9515

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Vollis*.

HOW THIR TUA KINGIS COME TO QUENE WOIDA,  
 QUENE OF THE BRITIS AND SISTER TO COR-  
 BREDUS.

Towart Britane syne [thai] tuke the reddie wa  
 Quhill that tha come on to quene Voida ;  
 Quhair thai hir fand with all hir folk in feir,  
 With melodie wes hevinlie for to heir,  
 And mony nobill of the Britis blude, 9520  
 And vther mo ane rycht greit multitude.  
 And quhen scho saw that king Corbreid hir bruther  
 With king of Pechtis wes cuming thair togither,  
 With mony nobill by the way thame met,  
 Als weill with thame rycht gudlie scho thame gret ; 9525  
 Welcumand thame that plesour wes till heir,  
 With gudlie vult and with ane mirrie cheir ;  
 With countenance that humill wes and sueit. Lib.4.f.48b.  
 Greit blythnes wes that tyme to se thame meit. Col. 1.  
 And euerie lord also hes hailseit vther, 9530  
 Rycht tenderlie as he had bene his bruther.  
 At greit lasar I bid nocht for to lane,  
 Quhill baith thair oistis met vpoun the plane ;  
 The sound of solace, and the mirrie stevin  
 Of menstralie it rang into the hevin. 9535  
 The Britis wer so blyth into the tyde,  
 Thair hartis grew so full of licht and pryde,  
 Mixit so mekill with melancolie  
 Then of the Romanis to revengit be ;  
 So greit belief in king Corbred tha had, 9540  
 Traistand throw him thair purpois suld be sped,  
 With game and gle, with gladnes and greit gloir,  
 Welcum thai war that tyme baith les and moir.  
 Heir at this talk now I will leif thame still,  
 And of the Romanis speik sum thing I will. 9545

HOW CATUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, COME TO THE  
FEILD AGANE THIR TUA KINGIS.

Quhen thair cuming wes to this Catus tald,  
 This Roman legat, that busteous wes and bald,  
 Rycht mony man that waponis weill culd weild,  
 On fot and horsse he furneist for the feild ;  
 Rycht haistelie syne hes he sped him hidder, 9550  
 Quhill ilk of thame hes gottin sicht of vther.  
 The Albionis vpoun ane plane thai la,  
 Ane hundreth thousand thai war that same da ;  
 The Romanis als vpone the vther syde,  
 Neirby alss mony at the samin tyde. 9555  
 In Albione with no man as I weyne,  
 Ane fairar sicht befor wes neur sene.

HOW VOIDA THE QUENE MAID IIR ORESONE BEFOIR  
ALL THAT MULTITUDE,

The Albionis togidder quhair tha stude  
 In the middis of that greit multitude,  
 This Voida, in middis of thame all, 9560  
 Thir wordis said quhilk I reheirs heir sall.  
 " Ane man," scho said, " had Nature maid of me,  
 " As scho hes maid ane woman for to be,  
 " The nobill Britis quhill I had leuand bene,  
 " The greit injure quhilk dalie thai sustene, 9565  
 " To loiss thair land and thair libertie,  
 " Had nocht bene tholit at this tyme to be.  
 " Zit, neurtheles, I sall forzet my kynd,  
 " And preis to preif ane man into my mynd.  
 " Thocht in my persone I be maik of pith, 9570  
 " And lyke ane woman into lym and lith,  
 " Rycht weill I wait I haif ane mannis hart,  
 " And ay sall preif to tak ane mannis pairt.

- " And thocht I be ane woman, I suppois  
 " I salbe fund baith bald and bellicois. 9575  
 " Fyue thousand wemen I haif with me heir,  
 " Bayth bald and big, cled weill in armour cleir ;  
 " With thame my self sall fecht in feild befoir,  
 " And baldlie byde for all the Romanis schoir.  
 " And as this tyme we sall na terrour tak, 9580 Col. 2.  
 " For blude or battell for [to] draw abak,  
 " Thair is no slauchter that we dow to se,  
 " Of the feild ane fit sall gar ws flie.  
 " Bot baldlie byde and stoutlie to induir,  
 " For to revenge the greit lak and injure 9585  
 " Wes done to me without ressoun or rycht ;  
 " My dochteris baith defoullit [in] my sicht,  
 " Rycht wranguslie with opin violence ;  
 " My self euill drest and dung in thair defence ;  
 " My husbandis hous destroyit and put down ; 9590  
 " My airis als defraudit of thair croun ;  
 " My awin sone Guydeir had in pledge awa,  
 " Quhair he is deid rycht lang befoir his da ;  
 " Quhill that I leif zit sall I neur forzet,  
 " Quhill ane mendis or ane vengeance [I] get. 9595  
 " Quhairfoir," scho said, " I zow ilkone exhort  
 " To tak curage and be of gude confort ;  
 " And ze sall se als greit manheid and mycht  
 " In wemen now as ony vther wicht,  
 " Quhilk sall nocht schrink quhair nakit swordis 9600  
     ar drawin,  
 " Nor draw abak quhair mekill blude is sawin ;  
 " Or for na grym wound other grym or grow,  
 " Bot baldlie byde and ay hald to the brow ;  
 " And sall nocht spair with thame than quhen we meit  
 " In thair hart blude oure waponis for to weit, 9605  
 " Quhill that we be revengit of that lak.  
 " Gif ze be men exempill at ws tak :  
 " Out of this feild ane fit sall neur fle,  
 " All in this da bot other do or de."

Quhen this wes said as ze haif hard me sa, 9610  
 Amang thame all thair wes nocht ane that da  
 Bot he greitlie commendit hes the quene,  
 So pertlie than as scho spak fra the splene,  
 With knychtlie curage and with<sup>1</sup> afull luke.  
 Of hir curage greit confort all thai tuke, 9615  
 And said with hir thai wald byde lyfe and deid :  
 Syne till array thai zeid all in that steid.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE GREIT BATTELL BETUIX CATUS,  
 THE LEGAT OF ROME, AND CORBREID, THE  
 KING OF SCOTTIS, QUHA WAN THE FEILD.

The tother pairt be this wes cumand neir  
 Rycht knychtlie cled in curage that wes cleir ;  
 Into array thai raid at randoun richt, 9620  
 Buskit about with baneris that wer bricht.  
 Of bardit hors rudlie the renzeis rang,  
 Of trampand steidis stalwart that wer and strang,  
 Maid all the erth to trimill and to schaik ;  
 The licht of thame illuminit all the laik. 9625  
 The Albionis in rayit battell stude :  
 The rampand lyoun, reid as ony blude,  
 In till ane baner wes borne vp on licht,  
 With birneist gold bordorit about full bricht.  
 Fra Phebus face, that flammit as the fyre, 9630  
 The golden tresset glitterit as gold wyre.  
 Their standertis wauit with the wynd full wyde,  
 Their pinsallis proude that panetit wes with<sup>2</sup> pryde,  
 Their scheildis schene as sterne in frostie nycht,  
 With birny, basnat, as the buriall bricht ; 9635  
 The schalmes schoutit quhill the schawis schuke,  
 The buglis blast reboundit fra the bruik ;

Lib. 4, f. 49.  
 Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *with a.*

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *with wes.*



The clarions cleir clinkit as ony bell ;  
 The federit flanis, furious and fell,  
 Fra Albionis als ferslie that thai flaw, 9640  
 Scharpar nor hail and thikker nor ony snaw,  
 Vpoun thair basnetis baldlie that thai bait,  
 Quhair euir thai hit thai persit ay the plait,  
 Quhill that the blude burst out vpone the grene.  
 This Catus than, quhen he that sycht had sene, 9645  
 Ane furneist feild he send to that effect,  
 Of bairdit hors the bowmen for to brek.  
 Than king Corbred, fra he thair cuming knew,  
 Rycht sone he send, his archearis to reskew,  
 Ane bald battell with steill axis rycht strang, 9650  
 And speiris scharpe that wer bayth grit and lang,  
 That baldlie baid agane the bairdit hors ;  
 And in that feild tha faucht syne with sic force,  
 Quhill mony steid la steikit in the feild,  
 And mony knyecht full cald vnder his scheild. 9655  
 Or Catus culd mak thame reskew agane,  
 Bayth hors and men all in the feild wes slane.  
 Be that the grit stail enterit in the feild,  
 At thair counter rycht mony knyechtis wer keild ;  
 Thair speiris brak, and all thair scheildis claif, 9660  
 So doggitlie ilkane on vther draif.  
 Out of thair basnetis, as the buriall brycht,  
 The fyre that flew our all the land kest lycht.  
 Into that stour, that stalwart wes and strang,  
 Tha rappit on quhill all the rochis rang. 9665  
 Morauiens at that tyme leit thame wit  
 That thai wer men and keipit thair pronit  
 Tha maid befoir, as ze haif hard me sa ;  
 Siclike the quene als, gude dame Voyda,  
 With hir wemen than and with hir dochteris 9670  
 bayth,  
 Into that feild thai did full mekill skayth.  
 Thair wes no blude that tyme gart thame abhor  
 To cut throttis, to stob, to stik and gor.

- So strang thai war into that stalwart stryfe,  
 Quhair mony Romane loisit hes the lyfe ; 9675  
 And all the laif, rycht bludie and forbled,  
 Tha left the feild on force that tyme and fled.  
 This Catus als, into the strangest stound,  
 In his bodie buir mony werkand wound.  
 Had nocht ane seruand maid him sone supple 9680  
 Vpone ane hors quhilk causit him to fle  
 Out of the feild, syne zeid with him awa,  
 He had bene ather tane or slane that da.  
 Into that feild, as sais Tacitus,  
 The Roman scriptour, callit Cornelius, 9685  
 Of the Romanis, to say the suith but lane,  
 Sevintie thousand in that feild wes slane.  
 Of Albionis wer slane that samin da,  
 Threttie thousand, as Tacitus did sa.  
 Baith Scot and Pecht than spulzeit hes the feild, 9690  
 Of hors, harnes, and of mony scheild,  
 Of birny, brasar, and of basnet bricht,  
 Col. 2. Off gold and siluer, greit riches and mycht ;  
 Syne with the spulze passit hame in hy,  
 Morauiens with thame in cumpany. 9695

HOW THE BRITIS, EFTER THE FEILD WAS WYN,  
 DISTROYIT ALL THE ROMANIS THAT WAR NOCHT  
 IN STRENTHIS.

The Britis than, in Britane vp and doun,  
 Be firth and fell, in euerie tour and toun,  
 Quhair euir thai fand ane Roman in the steid,  
 But ony dout thai put thame all to deid.  
 In this same tyme now that ze heir me sa, 9700  
 This Catus passit into Gallia ;  
 Swetonius wes governour thai dais  
 In Gallia, as that my author sais ;  
 Quhome to he schew that tyme, [bayth] les and moir,  
 How all wes done as I haif said befoir. 9705

Swetonius quhen he sic thing did heir,  
 How the Romanis wer in sic dangeir  
 Into Britane, sum thing he wes adred,  
 Quhairfoir in haist richt sone hidder him sped,  
 With threttie thousand nobill men of weir, 9710  
 That weill culd ryde that tyme and ryn a speir.  
 And he had maid ony langar delay,  
 Romanis had loisit all Britane than for ay.  
 The Romanis all that tyme, bayth les and moir,  
 Out of the feild that fled had of befoir, 9715  
 With mony court that wer rycht curious,  
 Tha come and met this ilk Suetonius ;  
 So day by day his multitude ay grew,  
 Quhill at the last he wes evin anew.

HOW CORBRED AND THE KING OF PECHTIS CON-  
 VENIT AGANE WITH VOIDA, AGANE THE ROMAN  
 LEGAT CALLIT SÜETONIUS.

Quhen[e] Voida of this quhen scho did heir, 9720  
 Hir gaird agane scho gatherit far and neir ;  
 In schort quhile scho wes ane royall rout  
 Of Britis bald, that stalwart wer and stout.  
 The king of Scottis and Pechtis in hir defence  
 Come thair that da with the Morauiens. 9725  
 Into the camp togidder quhair tha stude,  
 Wit ze thai war ane meruelous multitude :  
 Of Scot and Pecht that tyme thai wer tald  
 Threttie thousand, and of the Britis bald  
 Thryss alss mony thai war that tyme be tail, 9730  
 Of men and wemen in the number haill.  
 Quhen[e] Voyda, with mony helme of steill,  
 And hir wemen enarmit wer full weill,  
 Hir dochteris bayth, quhilk war bayth stout and  
 sture,  
 With thame befoir into the feild scho fuir, 9735

With brandis brycht, that scharp as rasure schair,  
 And buklaris braid that hang law be thair geir,  
 Cled in cot armour all of clayth of gold,  
 Nane manliar wes markit on the mold.  
 Wicht Sampson, nor zit the fers Achill, 9740  
 No Troalus had neur better will  
 To fecht in feild for to revenge thair skayth,  
 Na Volda had and hir dochteris baith.  
 Lib.4,f.49b. Col. 1. Hir wemen als into thair weirlie weid,  
 Glemant as gold and glitterand as a gleid, 9745  
 With brandis bricht that bitterlie wald byte,  
 Rycht fers and fell baith for to fecht and flyte,  
 Rycht blyth thai war ay quhen the Romanis bled,  
 So greit invye all tyme at thame thai had.  
 The king Corbred than orderit hes the feild 9750  
 Of weirmen wicht that waponis weill culd weid;  
 The leg harnes in to the formast front,  
 With speiris lang, as then wes vse and wont,  
 Of ilk battell to be into the breist;  
 The hand axis syne he hes ordand neist; 9755  
 The lycht harnes syne efter to cum last,  
 Quhen the most pairt of the perrell wes past.  
 Of bowmen bald, the best that he culd get,  
 In furneist front befor the feild he set,  
 With bowis big and stringis of teuche tow 9760  
 Wald lest to draw as darflie as thai dow,  
 And mony flane that fedderit wer full weill,  
 Bayth greit and lang with scharp heidis of steill.  
 The greit battell in the middis to byde,  
 With wyngis to [hes] set on euerie syde 9765  
 Of waillit men, that worthie war and wycht,  
 In mulane maill, breist plait, and birny brycht.  
 Moraniens in the vangaird that da  
 Formeist tha faucht, the suith as I suld sa,  
 Bayth strang and stout thai wer to stand and 9770  
 stryke,  
 With thair chiftane wes callit Rodorik.

HOW QUENE VOIDA RAID OUIR ALL THE OIST,  
GIFFAND THAME ALL GREIT CURAGE TO BATTELL  
AGANIS THE ROMANIS.

Quhen in the feild thair wes sic ordour maid,  
 Quhen[e] Voida than round about thame raid,  
 Out throw the feild amang thame quhair scho fuir,  
 Ane birneist brand intill hir hand scho buir. 9775  
 With basnet brycht quhilk bemit lyke ane sterne,  
 In curage cleir, and als lycht as ane lanterne,  
 Discouerit wes hir visage in that tyde;  
 Plesand scho wes baith of hir hew and hyde,  
 With countenance wes gudlie to behald, 9780  
 As lyoun licht and as ane boir als bald.  
 Agamennon, quhilk wes of Greikis flour,  
 Nor zit of Troy the nobill wicht Hectour,  
 Na Darius for all his mekill nicht,  
 No Hercules quhilk wes so strang ane wicht, 9785  
 No Julius that so greit honour wan,  
 No zit no vther sen this warld began,  
 Wes moir knychtlike, that dar I hardlie sa,  
 In that same tyme nor wes quene Voida.  
 To euerie captane round about scho raid, 9790  
 Exhorting thame, and greit requeist hes maid,  
 For to be bald and byde vpoun the bent,  
 And for na terrour to turne thair intent.  
 "At me," scho said, "exempill ze ma tak;  
 "Out of the feild gif I move or fle abak, 9795  
 "Or ony woman that I haif with me heir,  
 "Traist weill," scho said, "it salbe coft full deir.  
 "Greit schame it is to tell in ony tyde,  
 "That men suld fle quhair wemen weill dar byde,  
 "And dyntis dour to gif and tak betuene 9800 Col. 2.  
 "Quhair men," scho said, "dar skantlie thair be  
 sene."  
 Witth sic curage scho confer thame ilkone;  
 To euerilk captane be him self is gone,

Exhortand thame, sen thai war wyss and wycht,  
 In battell baldlie to debait thair rycht, 9805  
 And libertie sic as thai had befoir.  
 " Or than," scho said, " for now and euir moir,  
 " With lak to loiss baith land and libertie,  
 " Syne all oure tyme to thame bondis be."  
 Quhen this wes said, wes nother 3oung nor ald 9810  
 Mycht wapoun weild, bot with gude will thai wald  
 Bleid of thair blude, and neur ane fit to flie,  
 Than of the Romanis to revengit be.  
 Be this wes said the Romanis come in sicht,  
 With mony berne that wes bayth bald and wicht. 9815  
 Auchtie thousand rycht semelie weill besene,  
 Quhilk oft befoir had all in battell bene ;  
 Expert thai wer in all prattik of weir,  
 On fit and horss thai war nocht for to leir.  
 Befoir thame all this ilk Swetonius, 9820  
 Thair captane than, quhilk wes so curious,  
 To euerie man he said with voce so cleir,  
 Thir same wordis that I sall schaw 3ow heir.

HOW SUTONIUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, MAID HIS  
 ORESOUN TO THE ROMANIS, EXHORTAND  
 THAME TO TAK CURAGE; AND SO THAI DID.

" Dreid nocht," he said, " for all 3one multitude ;  
 " For weill I wait, and 3e richt vnderstude, 9825  
 " As be my knowledge rycht weill that I ken,  
 " Amang thame all ar ma wemen nor men.  
 " All wicht wemen that waponis dow to weild,  
 " And 3oung childer nocht 3it of perfite eild,  
 " And euerie berne that ma ane burdone bair, 9830  
 " Ar in 3one feild at this tyme les and mair.  
 " 3one barbour bodeis, suppois that tha seme bald,  
 " Rycht litill force will mak thame for to fald.  
 " No hart thai haif, as it is rycht weill knawin,  
 " To byde in battell quhair that blude is drawin ; 9835

“ Without waponis or wisdome into weir,  
 “ Naikit also but hors, harnes or geir.  
 “ Dreid nocht,” he said, “ for all zone multitude,  
 “ The feild is ouris without battell or blude.  
 “ I zow beseik,” he said, “ into this tyde, 9840  
 “ Vpone the spulzie that no berne abyde,  
 “ Quhill weill ze wit that the battell be wyn,  
 “ And baith the pairteis passit far in twyn.”

OFF THE GREIT BATTELL BETUIX THE ROMANIS  
 AND THE ALBIONIS, QUHAIR THE ROMANIS  
 WAN THE FEILD AND HAD FOURTIE THOUSAND  
 SLANE.

Be this wes said tha war reddie till june :  
 The trumpetis blew all in ane sindrie tune. 9845  
 The Albionis, vpone the tother syid,  
 Thair trumpetis blew and tabernis in that tyde. Lib. 4, f. 50.  
 Th[a]ir bowmen bald forrest than tuke the feild, Col. 1.  
 With scharpe schutting tha schure throw mony  
 scheild.  
 The flanis flew like fyre out of the flint ; 9850  
 Throw all thair stufe, that tyme or tha wald  
 stynt,  
 Tha maid no baid qubill tha come to the bane ;  
 Throw all thair geir tha gart thame grow and  
 grane.  
 Lang so tha schot, ay flich[t] efter flicht.  
 Swetonius, that wes bayth wyss and wicht, 9855  
 Ane battell buskit all in curage clene,  
 With leg harnes like as the siluer schene,  
 Into the feild to enter with ane fray,  
 And brek the bowmen out of thair array.  
 Than king Corbreid persaut that in plane, 9860  
 And sone ane battell buskit hes agane  
 Of bernis bald, his bowmen to reskew,  
 And better bergane thair begouth of new.

HOW THE ROMANIS WES PUT ABAK, QUHILL SUE-  
TONIUS SEND THAME SONE GREIT RESKEW.

So dourlie than togidder that thai draif,  
 Quhill all thair scheildis into pecis raif; 9865  
 With swordis scharpe ilkone did vther smyte,  
 Thair mulane melzeis mendit nocht ane myte.  
 Thair brandis brycht that wes of mettell gude,  
 Rycht baldlie than thai batht in vtheris blude :  
 Had nocht the Romanis sonner gottin supple, 9870  
 Tha had bene vincust in that ilk mellie.

HOW SUETONIUS, THE ROMANE LEGAT, SEAND HIS  
 MEN FAILL, ENTERIT IN THE FEILD WITH ALL  
 HIS POWER.

Swetonius quhen that he saw thame faill,  
 With all his folk on to the feild alhaill  
 He enterit in rycht sone into the tyde ;  
 King Corbred als vpone the tother syde. 9875  
 Ane cruell counter men mycht thair behald,  
 Quhen mony berne that wes full big and bald  
 Wes berne down and laid vpone thair bak ;  
 Quhen scheildis claif and all thair speiris brak ;  
 Helmis wer hewin, and schorne all in schunder, 9880  
 Bayth breist and bak maid bludie that wes  
 vnder ;  
 Birneis did birst and all in cowponis claif,  
 Breist plattis brak and all the ruvis outrave.  
 Tha preuit vther so pertlie with thair pith,  
 Quhill leg and lym and all lap out of lith ; 9885  
 Wes nane so stout into that stour that stude,  
 Bot his bodie wes brodris our with blude.  
 Thair cot armouris, that pretious wes of pryss,  
 Wes maid als reid as roiss vnder the ryss.  
 With steill waponis, als stiff as ony aik, 9890  
 Ane thousand men were slane ay at ane straik.



HOW THE ALBIONIS TYNT THE FEILD, AND OF  
THAME THAT WAR SLANE ON EUERIE SYDE,  
AND OF THE DEID OF RODORICK, THE NOBILL  
DEYNE.

So lang that da tha fauch[t] on fit and horss,  
The Albionis were maid to fle on force ;  
And thoct the Romanis wald the feild that da,  
Tha bocht it deir, that dar I hardlie sa. 9895  
Off aughtie thousand tha brocht to the feild, Col. 2.  
The half of thame that da and ma wes keild :  
Of Albionis, vpoun the other syde,  
Aughtie thousand wer slane in that tyde :  
Morauiens, of most part in that steid, 9900  
With Rodorik thair gouvernour, la deid.  
In that battell it wes rycht euill to ken  
Quha previt best, the wemen or the men.  
Dame Pantasall, of Amasone the quene,  
Faucht neuir at Troy mair cruellie nor kene, 9905  
With hir dochteris, that dar I hardlie sa,  
No in that feild faucht gude quene Volda.  
Hir wemen all war slane that da ilkone,  
Hir dochteris baith into the feild were tone.  
Dreidand also or scho suld taikin be, 9910  
Thair with ane dart scho maid hir self to de.  
Hir dochteris bayth to the legat wer led,  
Evin as thai faucht into thair curage cled.

HOW WESTMARIA WAS CALLIT THAT NAME BE  
MAURIUS EFTER HIS NAME, QUHA<sup>1</sup> WES ANE  
GREIT NOBILL OF THE ROMANIS, AS EFTER  
FOLLOWIS.

Ane nobill man, callit wes Maurius,  
Of the Romanis with this Swetonius, 9915

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *quhair*.

Sone efter that wes king of Britane maid,  
 And brukit all tha landis that wer braid.  
 Ane plesand place, quhair he vsit to pla,  
 Wes efter him callit Westmaria ;  
 Quhilk at this tyme, 3e sall wnderstand, 9920  
 Is callit to name now Westmureland.  
 This Maurius, as my author did sa,  
 The eldest dochter of quene Volda  
 Schort quhile befor he reveschit had,  
 He weddit hir and brocht hir to his bed ; 9925  
 The air als of Arweragus the gude,  
 That last king wes of all the Britis blude ;  
 Traistand thairby in pece and rest he mycht  
 To bruke the croun of Britane be hir richt.

HOW CORBRED, KING OF SCOTTIS, PASSIT OF THE  
 FEILD AND SYNE TO SCOTLAND, AND THAIR  
 DID REMANE IN PEAX AY TO HIS DEID.

This king Corbred, with all his men ilkane, 9930  
 Out of the feild that come wnslane or tane,  
 Passit hame into Scotland agane,  
 Quhair all his tyme thairefter did remane.  
 Morauiens that tyme forzet he nocht,  
 Bot hame with him in Scotland he hes brocht. 9935  
 Into his sicht sic fauour that thai fand,  
 For thair reward he gaif thame all the land,  
 Of lenth and breid that same tyme as it la,  
 Betuix the flude of Nes and of Corna,  
 Quhilk Wares hecht, in storeis as I fand ; 9940  
 Syne efter thame wes callit Murray land.  
 Fra that tyme furth king Corbred had gude peice ;  
 In Albione the weiris all did ceis.  
 The Romanis als that same tyme wer content  
 For to remane into the land of Kent, 9945  
 Baith Scot and Pecht ane lang tyme did ouir luke,  
 In peice and rest gif thai mycht Britane bruke.

This king Corbred syne efter all his tyme,  
 In gude concord but ony caus of cryme,  
 With all his lordis ay he led the law, 9950  
 Bayth zyoung and ald of him tha stude sic aw.  
 Ane lang tyme so in peice his lyfe he led,  
 And with his legis lowit wes and dred.  
 Quhen of his ring compleit wes auchtene zeir,  
 He tuke his leif, and baid no langar heir, 9955  
 The zeir of God sewintie and als one;  
 With greit honour syne till his graif is gone.  
 Ane better king that tyme nor he wes ane,  
 In Albione zit wes thair neur nane.  
 Rycht leill he wes and full of libertie, 9960  
 To riche and pure with sic equalitie,  
 That euerie man did greitlie him commend.  
 At Ewone, quhair he maid his latter end,  
 Thair thai graifit him<sup>1</sup> of ane kinglie wyss,  
 With ceremonie and solemp sacrifice. 9965  
 Syne on his graif thai maid ane greit grene hill,  
 Quhilk in that steid standis thair stane still.

EFTER THE DEITH OF CORBREDUS, HOW THE  
 LORDIS CONVENTIT IN ARGATELIUM, AND CROWNIT  
 ANE MAN TO BE KING OF SCOTTIS WES CALLIT  
 DARDAN.

Efter the deith than of this nobill king,  
 Quhilk had thre sones that tyme that wes zing,  
 Corbreid the tane, Tulcanus hecht the tother, 9970  
 Brecus the thrid, that wes the zyoungest bruther.  
 This zyoung Corbred, as my author did sa,  
 Fosterit he wes with gude quene Voida,  
 Of Britane quene, befoir as ze ma reid,  
 And sister als scho wes to king Corbreid, 9975

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *him thair*.

- The Brit langage in youthheid for to leir,  
 And Romane leid quhair he aneuch mycht heir.  
 Abill he wes and rycht ingenius,  
 And in all craft cunnyng and curious ;  
 Becaus he wes nureist so far fra hame, 9980  
 Callit he wes ay Galdus to his name.  
 He and his bruther in that tyme ilkone,  
 With Drewedes wer in the Yle of Mone,  
 Vertu and sciens in thair youth to leir.  
 Sic wes the vse, befor as ze mycht heir, 9985  
 Of kingis sonis for to teichit be,  
 With sciens, nurtour and nobilitie.  
 The lordis all that tyme in till Ewone  
 Convenit hes, syne ar to counsall gone,  
 Dewysand than of mony sindrie thing, 9990  
 And specialle quhome thai wald mak thair king.  
 This young Galdus, of quhome befor I spak,  
 Ouir young he wes sic cuir on him till tak.  
 Ane greit nobill, that callit wes Dardane,  
 Col. 2. The pronevoy of gude king Metallane, 9995  
 Into that tyme that wes of maist renoun  
 And honour als, exceptand ay the croun.  
 Ane man he wes of greit nobillitie,  
 And in his coss of rycht greit quantitie ;  
 Bayth large and lang, rycht greit and gross 10,000  
 with all ;  
 Quhairfor to name Grand Dardane tha him call.  
 Witth greit plesour that tyme of ald and zing,  
 This Grand Dardane that tyme wes crownit king.  
 In his begynnyng gracious wes and gude,  
 And specialle ay to the nobill blude. 10,005  
 Crownit he wes than baith with riche and puir,  
 Curtas all tyme and tuke on him greit cuir.  
 Syne, or the thrid zeir of his ring began,  
 He changit sone intill ane vther man,  
 Throw ill counsall, and throw na vther thing, 10,010  
 Quhilk oft hes bene distructione of ane king.

Ane callit Conan<sup>1</sup> of rycht law degre,  
 Quhometo this king gaif sic auctoritie,  
 And of his cors he had alhail the cuir,  
 Syne wnder him sic office that he buir, 10,015  
 As cuir he wald all wes wrocht at his will,  
 Durst na man sa syne that he had done ill.  
 Throw the fals counsall to the king he gaif,  
 He causit him auctoreis mony ane knaif  
 Wes of his kin, and lychlie euerie lord, 10,020  
 Quhilk wes the caus sone efter of discord.  
 Thir harlottis, syne quhen that thai drew to hicht,  
 With sic desyre to riches and to mycht,  
 Rycht mony falt into thair tyme thai fand,  
 Fra lord and laird for to recogneis land ; 10,025  
 That mony ane forfaltit wes that tyme  
 Throw thair counsall, but ony caus or cryme;  
 Thair landis all gaif thame to thair reward :  
 Of euerilk loun so hes he maid ane laird.

HOW DARDAN GART SLA ANE GREIT MAN OF GUDE,  
 BECAUS HE GAIF HIM GUDE COUNSALL.

Ane man of gude, that tyme that had greit cuir, 10,030  
 That justice wes, and lang that office buir  
 Vnder Corbred, the quhilk wes king befor,  
 All man him louit that tyme les and moir,  
 Rycht quietlie hes accusit this king,  
 Beseikand him for to reforme sic thing. 10,035  
 And quhen this king his mynd so wnderstude,  
 To him that tyme he said nothing bot gude,  
 And him excusit alss weill as he mocht.  
 Sone efter that greit tressoun hes he wrocht :  
 With fals treittie, and ane subtill trane, 10,040  
 Rycht suddanelie this saikles man hes slane,  
 Be this counsall of quhome I tald befor.  
 And syne efter, the langar ay the moir,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *to name*.

He grew so wickit and so full of will,  
 So odious till all man and so ill, 10,045  
 That euerie man him haittit to the deid,  
 And as thair fa had him at als greit feid.

Lib. 4, f. 51.  
 Col. 1.

HOW KING DARDANE FEIT ANE TRATOURE TO SLA  
 THE THRIE SONIS OF KING CORBRED, AND  
 HOW THA ESCHAIPIT.

Efter ane falt thair followis sone ane vther ;  
 Ze knaw the tone, now sall ze heir the tother.  
 Throw greit desyre of vanitie and gloir, 10,050  
 Lyke in this lyfe he suld be euir moir,  
 Consaut hes sua curst ane crwell thing  
 Agane the barnis of gude Corbreid the king.  
 That is to say, he hes tane in his heid,  
 Rycht cruellie to put thame all to deid. 10,055  
 Ane lous lymmer to quhome he hes hecht land,  
 Full hardalie hes tane that thing on hand,  
 Rycht quyetlie, withoutin ony noy,  
 The thrie childer rycht sone for to distroy.  
 Syne tuke his leif and fra him hes he gone, 10,060  
 And passit hes onto the Yle of Mone ;  
 And thair he la lang waittand on his tyme  
 Convenient wes for to commit sic cryme.  
 So at the last this zyoung Corbreid and he  
 Secret alone hes hapnit for to be ; 10,065  
 And as he thocht his purpois to fulfill,  
 As fortoun wald, and so wes Godis will,  
 Rycht friendfull men come in the tyme and fand  
 This fals tratour with drawin knyfe in hand,  
 Behind his bak evin reddie for to smyte : 10,070  
 And sone in hand thai haif him tane full tyte.  
 And quhen he wes accusit of that thing,  
 He schew to thame that Dardanus the king  
 Had causit him, and all the maner how,  
 Ilk word by word as I haif schawin zow. 10,075

HOW THE LORDIS OF SCOTLAND CONSPYRIT AGANIS  
DARDANE, MAKAND ȜOUNG CORBRED THAIR  
CAPTANE, AND SLEW DARDANE.

This cruell thing fra tyme that it wes knawin  
Ouir all the land, and to the lordis schawin,  
Rycht suddantlie, and for the samin thing,  
Conspyrit hes aganis this erwell king.  
This Ȝoung Galdus quhilk wes of lauchfull eild 10,080  
Rycht sone with him thai haif all tane the feild.  
This ilk Conan, of quhome befor I tald,  
Trowand on force to gar thai lordis fald,  
Forzet him self wes of sua law degrie,  
And preissit hes than for to clim ouir hie. 10,085  
Quhilk preuit weill, as I sall efter tell,  
With mony berne he bownit to battell,  
Of Dardanus for to defend the rycht.  
Bot fra thai come into Ȝoung Galdus sycht,  
His men all fled and left him in that steid, 10,090  
Him self wes tane and hangit to the deid.  
He maid sic end as he seruit to haif;  
First he begouth in Ȝouthheid of a knaif;  
Syne efterwart he causit greit discord,  
And ceissit nocht quhill he wes maid ane lord; 10,095  
Syne, for his malice and his greit mischief,  
In his last hour he endit lyke ane theif; Col. 2.  
As mony Ȝit sall do, I am rycht suir,  
Of king or prince and thai haif ouir greit cuir,  
Bot thai be wyss and gyde thame self rycht 10,100  
weill.  
This Dardanus, thairof quhen he had feill,  
And of all thing quhen that he knew the cace,  
Knewand also he had no suir place  
Quhair he him self nicht suirlye remane,  
He drew ane knyfe his awin self to haif slane. 10,105  
Bot or he drew ane drop than of his blude,  
With his seruand, that neir hand by him stude,

Stopit he wes his awin blude for to spill,  
 And bundin syne he brocht him Galdus till.  
 This Galdus than he gart stryke of his heid 10,110  
 With ane braid ax, and syne quhen he wes deid,  
 Tha had ane carle that stalwart wes and stout,  
 Vpone ane speir buir it all the ost about;  
 Becaus he wes but virtu sa ill taucht,  
 His bodie syne gart cast in till ane draucht. 10,115  
 And thus he endit for his wickit deid.  
 Mony siclike as ze ma efter reid;  
 Quhilk wounder [is], quha that can weill consider,  
 Ane will not tak exempill by ane vther.  
 This Dardane, quhilk wes ane cruell king, 10,120  
 He endit thus the fourt zeir of his ring,  
 And of oure Lord the saxtie and fyftene;  
 Quha lykis to luke, the suith may weill be sene.

HOW ZOUNG GALDUS WES CROWNIT EFTER THE  
 DEITH OF THIS ILK DARDANE, AND OFF HIS  
 NOBILL DEIDIS.

Quhen this Dardanus of this wyss wes deid,  
 The lordis all conuenit at ane steid; 10,125  
 Syne on the marbell set zounG Galdus doun,  
 And on his heid thai pat ane goldin croun;  
 With rob royall, with sword, sceptour and ring,  
 And greit blythnes thair wes he crownit king.  
 Formois he wes, and of his fassoun fair, 10,130  
 Clenelie of corce, richt plesand and preclair;  
 Lustie and large of stature, strang and stuir,  
 And rycht weill doucht greit dalians [till] induir;  
 Mansueit and meit, and full of gentres,  
 Curtas and kynd, rycht circumspect and wyss; 10,135  
 And kest him ay his kinrik to decoir,  
 Lovit he wes richt weill with les and moir.  
 Quhen he his croun ressaut on this wyss,  
 Amang thame all vpone his feit did ryss,



And thankit thame with countenance bening, 10,140  
 Of thair kyndnes the quhilk had maid him king.  
 Syne he hes sworne befor his lordis all,  
 For ony thing that efter may befall,  
 But thair counsall that he sall do na thing,  
 Gude or zit ill, belangand to ane king. 10,145  
 Quhilk causit him greit kyndnes for to haif  
 Of his lordis, siclyke of all the laif.  
 Ane greit nobill wes this ilk king Corbreid ;  
 The king of Pechtis dochter sone we reid,  
 To king Corbreid the eldest sone alsua, 10,150  
 And bruther sone to gude quene Voida,  
 The oy also of nobill Cadallane,  
 That in his tyme sa mekill worschip wan. Lib.4.f.51b  
 Quhairfoir on force behouit him till be Col. 1.  
 Baith wyss and wicht, richt curtas and hardie. 10,155

HOW GALDUS THE FIRST ZEIR OF HIS RING  
 PUNEIST MONY THEIFF AND REVAR.

Into the first zeir of Galdus ring  
 He hes reformit mony faltie thing,  
 That faillit hes vnder Dardane befor ;  
 Of thift and reif he gart agane restoir.  
 In all his tyme he sufferit neur no wrang 10,160  
 In ony pairt be vnpuneist ocht lang.  
 Into the Ylis he passit witht ane oist ;  
 Quhair euer he come it wes ay on thair cost,  
 For thair he tuke rycht mony tratour strang,  
 Syne on ane gallous maid thame all to hang. 10,165  
 In the Skyan, and also in the Lewis,  
 He passit syne, quhair he fand mony schrewis :  
 Fra he come thair it wes nocht lang to craif  
 Siclike reward as he gaif to the laif.  
 Quhen in the Ylis he had maid gude rest, 10,170  
 He passit syne, quhen that him pleisit best,

In Lugia, quhair he hard thame rebell,  
 Now callit Ross, befoir as ze hard tell.  
 Rycht mekill stouth wes maid into that steid,  
 Quhome of the doaris he hes gart put to deid; 10,175  
 Oppressioun, reif, and all sic oppin wrang,  
 Into na pairt he lute vnpuneist gang.

HOW KING GALDUS MAID ANE COUNSALL FOR TO  
 DISTROY EWENUS THE THRID HIS LAWIS,  
 AND CULD NOCHT DO IT.

Quhen he had put his kinrik to gude rest,  
 Sone efter syne, quhen he thocht tyme wes best,  
 He maid ane counsall with his lordis aw, 10,180  
 For to distroy the thrid Ewenus law,  
 So vitious wes and full of vilitie,  
 In the defoulling of virginitie,  
 On the first nycht quhen weddit wes ane maid,  
 In the secund befoir as I haif said. 10,185  
 It neidis nocht na mair now to reheress,  
 Quha lykis luke sall find it thair in verss.  
 Bot for na meyne that tyme that he culd mak,  
 For aw or dreid, for schame or zit for lak,  
 Na for na terror he culd schaw thame till, 10,190  
 He culd nocht brek wirth ane hair of thair will.  
 And quhen he saw that he culd cum na speid,  
 As force it wes into that tyme and neid,  
 He leit it pas, thocht he forthocht it soir.  
 Fra that tyme furtht he spak of it no moir. 10,195

HOW ANE PECHT COME AND SCHEW GALDUS OF  
 ANE ROMAN LEGAT, CALLIT PETTELLIUS.

In this same tyme thair come ane Pecht that schew  
 To king Galdus greit tydenis of the new,

Of ane legat callit Petellius,  
 With mony knycht and capitane curious, Col. 2.  
 Wes send, he said, fra gude Vespacian, 10,200  
 The quhilk in Rome the emprioure wes than,  
 Syne cuning wes throw all Britania,  
 With ane greit oist neirby his boundis la.  
 Als far, he said, as he<sup>1</sup> culd wnderstand,  
 He schupe rycht sone for to invaid his land. 10,205  
 Quhen this was said, rycht haistilie in hy,  
 Scharpe men on horss he hes send for to spy,  
 Quhilk wer expert and had ane rycht greit feill  
 Of all thing thai saw for to considder weill.  
 And so thai did, and spyit all the plane; 10,210  
 Quhen tha had done come hame rycht sone agane,  
 And schew till him of all thing ill and gude,  
 Of all the Romanis, and thair multitude;  
 Sa mony knichtis wnder scheild and speir,  
 So greit ordour and prouisioun of weir, 10,215  
 Wes neur sene zit with na leuand man  
 In Albione sen weiris first began.  
 In that same tyme thai schew till him alsua,  
 How all the nobillis of Deria  
 And Ordolus had gevin the Romanis feild 10,220  
 Rycht crwellie, quhair thai wer ilkane keild.  
 This king Galdus, and his lordis ilkane,  
 Of tha tydenis greit terrour thai haif tane,  
 Sayand the Britis fremit war and fals;  
 Accusand thame of thair vnkyndnes als, 10,225  
 The quhilk for thame in mony stour that stude,  
 In thair defence had bled so mekill blude,  
 That wald nocht send ane boy anis with ane bill  
 To lat thame witt quhat wes the Romanis will.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *I*.

HOW GALDUS HEIRAND OFF THE ROMANIS, PRO-  
CLAMIT THAT ALL MAN SOULD BE REDDIE AT  
ANE SET DAY.

This king Galdus hes maid ane opin cry,                    10,230  
But ony tarie haistilie in hy,  
That euerilk man that mycht ane wapone weild,  
On fit and horsse sould follow him on feild.  
And so thai did that tyme baith far and neir,  
Quhill at the last he wes ane greit power                    10,235  
Of mony berne that wes full big and bald :  
Fiftie thousand that tyme by taill weill tald.

HOW THAT TYME ANE EGILL WES SENE ABOVE THE  
ROMANIS DALIE FLEAND IN THE AIR.

In this same tyme, now that ze heir me mene,  
Ane fleand egill in the air wes sene,  
Aboue the Romanis fleand all the da                    10,240  
With greit laubour, at evin syne zeid hir awa.  
Ane armit knycht als, fleand in the air,  
Aboue the oist ay round about alquhair ;  
Quhen he had done syne vaneist out of sicht.  
And sindrie fowleis<sup>1</sup> fell ypoune the nycht,                    10,245  
Doun fra the hevin quhilk did like siluer schene,  
Sielike befor wer never nane zit sene ;<sup>2</sup>  
And all the feild wes browdin our with blude.  
And quhen the pepill sic thing wnderstude,  
The takynnis all did signifie bot gude ;                    10,250  
And vther sum interpret thame till ill.  
No moir of this, thairfoir I hald me still :  
For weill I wait thai ar bot phantasie,  
And fals illusioun of the innimie.

Lib. 4, f. 52.  
Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *farleis*.

| <sup>2</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

Richt seindill sic is sene in ony place, 10,255  
 Amang gude men the quhilk hes faith and grace :  
 No marvell wes than sic thing for to se  
 Amang sic folk of infedilitie.  
 Bot now on dais richt seindill, as ze ken,  
 Sic thing ar sene amang gude Cristin men ; 10,260  
 Thairfoir as now, heir will I hald me still,  
 And to my purpois pas agane I will.

HOW EXPLORATOURIS SCHEW GILDUS OF THE GREIT  
 POWER OF THE ROMANIS, AND HIS LORDIS  
 GAIF HIM COUNSALL NOCHT TO GIF BATTELL.

Exploratouris come till him and tald  
 How the Romanis, thair innimies of ald,  
 Come in thair boundis with greit boist and 10,265  
 schoir,  
 Of sic ane fassoun come thai neur befor ;  
 With so greit pryde, sic power and sic mycht,  
 As Albione had bene thair awin of richt,  
 In that beleif to conqueis all the land  
 But ony sturt, as nane durst make ganestand. 10,270  
 The lordis than sic counsall gaif the king,  
 For to be war and wyss in to that thing,  
 And nocht the battell our sone till assaill  
 Agane the Romanis and thair power hail ;  
 Bot wyislie wirk that tyme for the nanis, 10,275  
 And put thame nocht in perrell all at anis ;  
 Bot byde neirby togidder in thair sicht,  
 With counterene and skirmusche da and nycht ;  
 With sic ane trane to hald thame ay on flocht,  
 And lang tarie, to preve gif that tha mocht 10,280  
 With walking, fasting and penuritie,  
 Gar thame be fane out of tha feildis to fle.  
 For weill thai wist sic tarie and tha maid,  
 Within tha boundis oucht lang and tha baid,

Thair<sup>1</sup> furneissing sone wald be maid to fail, 10,285  
 And euerilk da be wantand of thair tail;  
 And gif sua war, as thai wist weill wald be,  
 Tha suld be fane without battell to fle.

HOW GALDUS SCHEW AGANE THAT BETTER WAS TO  
 FECHT AND GIF BATTELL NOR TO DEFER ONY  
 LANGAR, ON THIR RESSONIS THAT FOLLOWIS  
 HEIR EFTER.

Quhen this wes said, then gude Galdus the king  
 Sic ansuer maid agane to that thing : 10,290  
 " Lordis," he said, " I traist richt weill ze ken,  
 " It wes the vse zit euir of Scottis men,  
 " Quhen that thai war vnfenzeit into weir,  
 " Mycht fast and walk and do thame litill deir,  
 " Tha ar for battell bald as ony boir. 10,295  
 " Ouir thair intent fra tyme thai tarie moir,  
 " Thair curage than begynniss for to slaik,  
 " Waxand als dull and sad as ony aik;  
 " Thame self also will febill be and fant,  
 " And ofoure number we will ilk da want. 10,300  
 Col. 2. " Thairfoir," he said, " it is my counsall haill,  
 " Witht plane battell the Romanis till assaill;  
 " Als lang as we ar all in this will,  
 " And tak sic chance as God will send ws till."  
 Of this counsall than wer thai all content, 10,305  
 And baldlie syne thai bownit ouir the bent;  
 With mony berne that wes bayth bald and wycht  
 On the thrid day come in the Romanis sycht.  
 And quhen thai saw thame of sic multitude,  
 With greit terrour in aw of thame tha stude, 10,310  
 For-quhy thai had thame previt of befoir,  
 And for that caus thai dred thame weill the moir.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *That*.

HOW GALDUS, SEING HIS MEN ABHOR WITH BATTLE,  
MAID HIS ORESOUN TO THAME.

- Quhen king Galdus hes sene thame in sic feir,  
He said to thame as I sall schaw zow heir.  
“ Dreid nocht,” he said, “for all zone multi- 10,315  
tude,  
“ For weill I wait and ze rycht wnderstude  
“ Zone folk,” he said, “that travellit hes so far,  
“ Rycht eith it is to put thame to the war;  
“ Quhilk on thair fit sa mony myle hes gane,  
“ And in thair travell hes sic trubill tane, 10,320  
“ And of weillfair also hes had greit want,  
“ Quhairfoir thai ar maid febill, waik,<sup>1</sup> and fant,  
“ And all thair bodie tyrit and rycht sair,  
“ That thai dow nocht thair harnes for to bair;  
“ Quhairfoir in feild thai may nocht weill indure. 10,325  
“ And of ane thing I am sicker and suir,  
“ Within our self vnbrokin now at hame,  
“ Ane of ws may stand for tua of thame;  
“ For thai haif tynt baith power, strenth, and  
mycht,  
“ And suith it is that we haif all the rycht. 10,330  
“ Traist weill,” he said, “withouttin ony fail,  
“ Suppois rycht lang that thai haif done prewail,  
“ That our goddis, for all thair strenth and  
mycht,  
“ Sum tyme will mak thame rycht law for to  
lycht,  
“ The quhilk hes bene richt obstinat so lang, 10,335  
“ Our all the warld wirkand so mekill wrang,  
“ And throw thair pryde hes spilt so mekle blude.  
“ Traist weill,” he said, “it may nocht turne to gude.”

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *maid*.

HOW GALDUS WITH HIS ORISONE CAUSIT ALL HIS  
MEN TO TAK CURAGE AND DESYRE BATTELL.

Quhen euerie man hes hard how Galdus spak,  
 Of his talking sic curage all did tak, 10,340  
 With egr will, and ardent greit desyre,  
 Als fers as flynt that fleis fra the fyre,  
 Than euirilk man, that wapone docht to weild,  
 Rycht manfullie hes maid him for the feild.  
 With that thai streikit standartis vpone hicht, 10,345  
 With baneris braid that browdin wes full brycht,  
 Aganis the schyning of the sone did schyne,  
 With purple, asure, gold and cristillyne.  
 The buglis blew, the schalmes schoutit schill ;  
 Lib.4,f.52b. The men of armes than with eger will, 10,350  
 Col. 1. For battell boun als bald as ony boir,  
 In gude ordour hes tane the feild befoir.  
 The bowmen big sterit thair stringis weill  
 With mony flane with scharpe heidis of steill ;  
 Fra thame thai flaw, als ferce as ony fyre, 10,355  
 Throw birneis brycht thai maid thame bludie lyre.  
 The nobill men than of Saluria,  
 Into the feild formest thai faucht that da.  
 Galdus him self, weill schrudit wnder scheid,  
 With thame that da faucht in the formest feild. 10,360  
 Rycht stalwart straikis that tyme mycht be sene,  
 Quhen berneis brist and blude ran on the grene ;  
 That mony leid thairat hes lykit ill,  
 And mony freik of fechting had his fill.  
 Salurians, thai wer so stout and strang, 10,365  
 And in the feild that da tha faucht so lang,  
 On force thai maid the Romanis for to fail,  
 That in the feild thai war confoundit haill.



HOW PETELIUS, SEING HIS MEN FAIL IN THE  
FEILD, SEND THAME RICHT SONE SUPPLIE AND  
RENEWIT THE BATELL.

Petelius thairto he take gude tent,  
 And sone to thame rycht greit supple he sent 10,370  
 Of mony berne buskit in armour bricht.  
 Saluriens, quhen that thai saw that sicht,  
 Tha carit nocht for all thair greit reskew,  
 Bot baldlie baid the battell till renew.  
 With that the Scottis enterit all at onis, 10,375  
 Quhair mekill blude and mony brokin bonis,  
 And mony syde wes sowand maid and sair,  
 And mony pallat peillit wes full bair,  
 And mony freik wes fellit in the feild,  
 And mony knycht la stikkit wnder scheid, 10,380  
 And mony helme wer revin all in schunder,  
 And mony bodie bla and bludie vnder.  
 Into that feild, that furious wes and fell,  
 Thair wes na toung ane lang quhile that culd tell  
 Quha wes maist lyke to wyn or zit to tyne. 10,385  
 Fra morne airlie quhill it wes ouris nyne,  
 Petelius raid round about his oist,  
 With fair treittie and vther quhile with boist;  
 At his bidding he maid thame all to byde,  
 In thair bodeis thoct thai buir woundis wyde. 10,390  
 The Romanis than wer of sic multitude,  
 And in that stour so stranglie that thai stude,  
 And als thai wer so weill graithit into geir,  
 And had sic vse and prattik into weir,  
 Great schame tha thoct out of the feild to fle, 10,395  
 With barbour bodeis for to vincust be.  
 The Scottis als, suppois thai wer bot few,  
 Zit neurtheles thai wer baith trest and trew;  
 And laikit nocht into nothing for to leir,  
 That did pertene till ony man of weir. 10,400

HOW GALDUS WAS HURT IN THE FACE, AND HAD  
OUT OF THE FEILD VPONE HORS WITH HIS  
MEN.

- Col. 2. Than king Galdus into the strangest stour,  
 Quhair that he faucht in till his cot armour,  
 Ane werkand wound he buir into the tyde,  
 Into his face that wes baitht deip and wyde.  
 His men that war by hes maid him sone 10,405  
 reskew,  
 And horsit him vpone ane cursour new ;  
 Out of the stour that wes bayth stiff and strang  
 Magir his will thai maid him for to gang.  
 And quhen the Scottis saw thair king so ryde,  
 Into the feild thai wald no langar byde ; 10,410  
 Bot take the flicht all efter him and fled  
 To sindrie strenthis neirhand by tha had.  
 Tha take thair rest all nycht thair to remane,  
 Syne on the morne convenit all agane,  
 And with the king to Alcheth ar tha gone, 10,415  
 Ane strong castell stude on ane roche of stone,  
 With stone and lyme that tyme rycht weill wes  
 wallit,  
 And now to name Dumbartane it is callit.  
 In this battell, as that my author tald,  
 Tuelf thousand Scottis rycht bellicois and bald, 10,420  
 That worthie wer, that samin day wer keild :  
 Sex thousand Romanis siclike in that feild.  
 To Epiac Petelius is gone,  
 And his men with him that tyme ilk one.

HOW PETELIUS IN THE NIXT SYMMER PASSIT TO  
THE FEILD AGANE GALDUS, THE KING OF  
SCOTTIS. .

- Quhen winter passit syne with his wodris wan, 10,425  
 About Beltane quhen grene leuis began  
 To spring and spreid, and dier Flora the quene  
 Bayth craig and cleuche had all our cled in grene,

And euerie bank with brycht blosum had beild,  
 Petelius than fuir furth to the feild ; 10,430  
 And in his strenth wald na langar remane,  
 Bot with his power passit to the plane.  
 This Galdus than, with his counsall alhaill,  
 Decreittit hes no moir for to assaill  
 With plane power agane the Romanis mycht, 10,435  
 In sic battell nother be da nor nycht.  
 For-quhy thai thoct sic thing wes rycht vnsuir,  
 All on ane da to put in aventure,  
 As thai war wont rycht oft befoir till do,  
 Bo[t] tak the Romanis as thai mycht win to ; 10,440  
 Buschit about neir hand thame for to ly,  
 Our all the plane expertlie for till spy  
 Quhen ony Roman raikit fra his oist,  
 To call him hame agane of his awin cost.  
 And so thai did rycht lang, I bid nocht lane, 10,445  
 And mekill prickin oft maid our the plane.  
 The Brigantinis, for all the Romanis bost,  
 Full oft thai raid rycht neir the Romanis ost,  
 And mony saidill temit as I hard tell,  
 Quhill efterwart sic aventure befell. 10,450

HOW WODICIA, THE DOCHTER OF VOYEDA, COME Lib. 4, f. 53.  
 ON THE NYCHT IN BRIGANTIA VPON THE Col. 1.  
 ROMANIS, AND GAIF THAME ANE FRAY AND  
 SLEW MONY OF THAME.

The zoungest dochter of quene Woyeda,  
 Quhilk callit wes to name Wodicia,  
 The eldest than wes weddit with ane ring  
 With Marius that wes of Britane king,  
 Into Britane he wald nocht lat hir dwell. 10,455  
 That samin tyme, as my author did tell,  
 Into Brigance scho come vpoun ane nycht ;  
 With hir that tyme war mony worthie wicht,  
 That flemit war fra the Romanis and fled ;  
 Scho wes thair gyde, thair leidar that thame led. 10,460

Vpoun the Romanis, that tyme quhair thai lay,  
 Scho maid ane carmusche lang befor the day,  
 With mony schout and mony buglis blast,  
 Quhilk maid the Romanis all that tyme agast.  
 Tha tuke sic feir than of that fell affray, 10,465  
 Tha thocht thame neuir into sa sair assay.  
 It wes so mirk ane styme thai nicht nocht se,  
 Bot still thai stude durst nother fell nor fle,  
 And thocht thai wald, thai wist nocht weill thame  
 quhair,  
 Thair wes sic mirknes that tyme in the air: 10,470  
 And for to fecht also greit aw thai stude,  
 Trowand thai had bene of sic multitude.  
 And as thai stude rycht lang in sic dispair,  
 With brandis brycht, that scharpe as rasure schair,  
 And fedderit flanis in the feild that flew, 10,475  
 Rycht mony Romane in that tyme tha slew.  
 Rycht dourie than thai dang thame to the deid,  
 Without ganestand wes nane maid in that steid.  
 The Romanis all had loissit bene that nycht,  
 Had nocht thair legat sonner maid thame lycht, 10,480  
 Sa mony bleises into the tyme hes brint  
 Of pik and tar, of brintstone and of lynt,  
 Of wax and rosat, of tauche and sindrie tow,  
 Quhilk kest greit licht thair with ane large low,  
 That tha mycht se rycht far ouir all the feild, 10,485  
 To stand and stryke, and waponis for to weild:  
 Syne with thair speiris, that wer large and lang,  
 Tha held thame of quhair it wes thickest thrang.  
 Wodicia, vpoun the tother syde,  
 And hir bernis rycht baldlie did abyde: 10,490  
 In that counter, that erwell wes and kene,  
 Rycht mony grume scho hes laid on the grene.  
 And thus thai faucht ane lang part of the nycht,  
 Quhill on the morne that it wes fair da lycht,  
 Ane litill efter that the da sky brak, 10,495  
 In rayit feild thai passit all abak;

On to ane strenth thai haistit thame in hy,  
 Or dreid the Romanis suld thair number spy.  
 Tha war our few to fecht vpone da lycht,  
 Suppois thai wer rycht hardie on the nycht, 10,500  
 Bot held [thame] with the honour that thai gat.  
 Petelius, quhen he persauit that,  
 That thai had fled so fast out of that place,  
 Forbad his men to follow or to chace; Col. 2.  
 Bot in that feild in ordour till remane, 10,505  
 Trowand that tyme it wes done for ane trane.

HOW WODICIA SEIGIT EPIACUM, AND SYNE WAS  
TANE WITH TRESSOUN AND HAD TO PETELIUS.

Vodicea vpoun the tother morne,  
 With all [hir] bernis baldlie blew hir horne,  
 With haltand hart that holie wes and hie,  
 So blyth thai wer than of that victorie. 10,510  
 To Epiacum syne thai maid thame boun,  
 And set ane seig rycht sone about the toun.  
 With lytill laubour sone the toun thai wan,  
 And euerie Roman that tyme, wyfe and man,  
 Bayth 3young and ald, that thai fand in that 10,515  
 steid,  
 Without mercie thai pat thame all to deid.  
 Petelius, of this quhen he herd tald,  
 Of mony berne that wer bayth big and bald,  
 Ane staill gart la in till ane quyet place,  
 Out of the toun syne drew thame with ane 10,520  
 chace.  
 Or euir scho wist, thair with hir weir men all,  
 The buschment brak about hir like ane wall.  
 In to that place thair war tha slane ilkone ;  
 Vodicia<sup>1</sup> in handis als wes tone,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS., and subsequently, *Vociada*.

With all the harnes that scho on hir had, 10,525  
 Befoir the legat siclike wes scho led.  
 Rycht crabitlie than with ane aull cheir,  
 He said till hir as I sall say 3ow heir.

HOW WOCIADA WES ACCUSIT WITH PETELIUS, AND  
 SLANE BE ANE SERUAND OF HIS.

“ Sen Nature hes ane woman maid of the,  
 “ Quhy art thou full of sic crudelitie, 10,530  
 “ Quhilk is sua far aganis ane womanis kynd,  
 “ That suld be meik and mercifull in mynd?  
 “ And thou syne art sa doggit and sa dour,  
 “ Cruell and kene, sa tur in mynd and sour,  
 “ With sic desyre of battell and of blude.” 10,535  
 Wociada, befoir him quhair scho stude,  
 Rycht vnabasis answere maid agane,  
 And pertlie spak hir purposis furth rycht plane.  
 “ And I had strenth,” scho said, “ as I haif will,  
 “ Now at this tyme my purposis to fulfill, 10,540  
 “ 3e suld all find that I suld be 3our fa,  
 “ For the slaughter of gude quene Woyada,  
 “ Quhilk wes my mother, and my fatheris hous  
 “ 3e haif put down and done me sic rebous.  
 “ Traist weill,” scho said, “ and I had strenth 10,545  
 to stryfe,  
 “ Ilk da with 3ow quhill that I wer on lyfe,  
 “ Suppois 3e war ane hundreth thousand ma,  
 “ 3e suld find me ay for 3our felloun fa.  
 “ Thair is nothing moir plesand now to me,  
 “ In all this warld na 3our adversitie.” 10,550  
 Lib.4, f.53b. Quhen this wes said his men that stude neirby,  
 Col. 1. With drawin swordis sone and suddanelie  
 Tha bertynd hir, baith bodie, bane and blude,  
 In that same sted befoir him quhair scho stude.

HOW THAIR COME ANE MESSINGER TO PETELIUS  
AND SCHEW HIM HOW ALL THE BRITIS HAD  
REBELLIT AGANE HIM, AND OF HIS PASSING  
THAT TYME INTO KENTSCHYRE.

Sone efter this thair come ane messingeir 10,555  
To him fra Kent, the quhilk hes lattin him heir  
Of mony freik, that fersie wes and fell,  
Ouir all Britane agane him did rebell ;  
And Marius, befoir that he maid king  
Tha wald nocht thoill him into that land to 10,560  
ring ;  
Quhairfoir, he said, rycht sone and he cum nocht,  
All wald be loist so deir that thai had bocht.  
Petelius, quhen he knew that it wes sua,  
With mony berne he bownit him till ga ;  
And tuke na tume into that tyme to tarie, 10,565  
Bot set his courss and fast hidder did carie.  
Lang thair he had penuritie and pane,  
Or he thame brocht to his bondage agane.  
The laif he left behind him in Brigance,  
Tha wald nocht put thair sickernes in chance, 10,570  
Keipit the strenthis that tyme that tha war in,  
And wes content to hald that thai had wyn.

HOW PETELIUS DEPARTIT THIS LYFE INTO TRY-  
NOVANT, AND HOW JULIUS FRONTICIUS WES  
SEND IN BRITANE.

Sone efter that this ilk Petelius,  
In Trynovant, my author sais thus,  
Throw sad seiknes assaillit him so soir, 10,575  
He tuke his leif for he mycht leve no moir.  
Quhen that his deith to Cesar wes maid kend,  
Ane new legat in Britane sone he send,  
Julius Fronticius callit wes to name.  
In Rome that tyme quhen that he come fra hame, 10,580

Of nobill men tua legioun with him brocht,  
 Quir se and sand sone hidder hes he socht,  
 Quhill that he met with Maur[i]us the king,  
 Quhilk him resauit blythlie and bening.  
 Quhen his knychtis wer recreat ilkane 10,585  
 Of the trubill in travell thai had tane,  
 This Julius, that tyme I vnderstand,  
 With Maurius perhustrit all the land.  
 Quhen he persauit all thing wes at peice,  
 Siclike the weiris schupe that tyme to ceis, 10,590  
 This Maur[i]us he left to be thair gyde;  
 And with greit power efter did provyde  
 Of Albione to visie all the north,  
 And for to pas attour the watter of Forth,  
 Col. 2. At his awin will to weild that land alhaill, 10,595  
 Or than fortoun sould mak him for to fail.  
 Syne efter that, rycht sone vpone ane da,  
 With greit power come to Brigantia;  
 Befoir him thair rycht mony Romane fand,  
 Petelius had left in to that land. 10,600  
 And efter that he veseit vp and down  
 Then euerie strenth, bayth castell, tour and toun;  
 And quhen he saw the ordour that tha maid,  
 Of stankis strang and fousseis deip and braid,  
 With doubill dykis and draw brigis alsua, 10,605  
 And portculeis for to hald out thair fa,  
 Rycht gritlie thame commendit than hes he  
 Of that prattik and of sic policie.  
 To Epiacum syne he take the way,  
 Till tak him rest; syne efter on ane day, 10,610  
 To king of Pechtis ane herauld hes he send,  
 Of freindlie wayes with hartlie recommend,  
 Desyrand him rycht curtaslie and heind,  
 With greit effect to be the Romanis freind;  
 And tak thair pairt that he mycht leve in pece, 10,615  
 And leve the leid that neur wes leill but leis,



The cankarit Scottis that neur zit wes trew,  
 And leid but lautie as he rycht weill knew ;  
 Sayand, Cesar and his counsall that tyde  
 Decretit had fra battell neur to byde, 10,620  
 Quhill the leist boy of all the Scottis blude  
 Distroyit wer or put in seruitude.  
 Remember als of the greit harme and skaith,  
 Ostorius and Aulus Dedius baith  
 Had win to thame, bot schort quhile of befor, 10,625  
 The quhilk to thame, he said, zit sat full soir :  
 And gif he thocht that he wald nocht do sua,  
 He him declarit for the Romanis fa.

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS MAID ANSUER TO THE  
 HERALD SEND TO HIM BE JULIUS FRONTICIUS.

This king agane sic ansuer than maid he,  
 Sayand, "It is greit mervell vnto me, 10,630  
 " Quhat causis thame sic querrell for to haue .  
 " Agane the Scottis, or be quhat law thai haif  
 " Thair heretage, suppois it be bot small,  
 " Quhilk gevin is thame be thair godis all.  
 " And sen it is thai wirk efter thair will, 10,635  
 " But rycht or resson, justice or but skill,  
 " Takand no tent to law nor equitie,  
 " Quhairfoir I traist that all sic greit wrang be ;  
 " And for the Scottis that thai call so fals,  
 " So full of tressoun and als so vntrew als, 10,640  
 " Rycht weill I wait thairof falslie thai leid,  
 " Tha ar rycht trew bayth into word and deid.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, "for buit or zit for bail,  
 " To thame I think neur for to falt nor fail ;  
 " Nor brek the band to thame that I haif maid, 10,645 Lib. 4, f.54.  
 " That we haif bund with baith our seillis braid. Col. 1.  
 " Greit wrang it wer my oblissing to brek :  
 " This is my ansuer," said he, "in effect."

This messinger no langar did remane,  
 Bot with his ansuer passit hame agane, 10,650  
 And schawin hes the fassoun all in feir  
 To Julius, as I haif said 3ow heir.  
 And quhen he hard sic ansuer as he gat,  
 Greit heching maid and lichlie leuch at that :  
 For him, he said, or any vther wicht, 10,655  
 Quhither he war into the wrang or richt,  
 He wald nocht lat no tyme to tak his will,  
 For ony compt that he wald gif him till.  
 Also he said, rycht sone that he sould preve,  
 Gif that he durst do ocht without his levè. 10,660

HOW JULIUS FRONTICIUS PASSIT TO SUBDEW  
 SALURIA, AND LAY LANG THAIR AND COME  
 NO SPEID.

Sone efter this that 3e heir me sa,  
 He passit is on to Saluria,  
 With all his power, baith on fit and horsse,  
 Of mony freik that wes of mekill forcé,  
 Of that cuntrie haill conquais for to mak ; 10,665  
 He thocht with no beirne to be put abak.  
 Saluriens, that wer baith wyss and wycht,  
 With all the power that tyme tha mycht,  
 Of 3oung and ald without tarie that tyde,  
 Tha come and met thame on the bordour syde, 10,670  
 And held thame ay in the Romanis sycht.  
 For dreid of thame the Romanis day and nycht,  
 Tha durst nocht brek, bot held thame ay togidder ;  
 Thai dred dissait, as 3e may weill consider.  
 And so for dred, and greit vnwisdomè baith, 10,675  
 Tha lang still [la] and did bot litill skaith.

HOW GALDUS COME TO SALURIA WITH ANE GREIT  
 ARMIE, AND DEFENDIT THE BORDOUR ALL  
 THAT TYME MANFULLIE.

In this same tyme, king Galdus with ane oist,  
 He come throw Kyle in by the west se cost,  
 With mony one that worthie wes and wicht,  
 In breist plait, birny, and in brasar bricht; 10,680  
 In helme and hewmat with bricht brand and speir,  
 And all wapoun that neidfull war in weir :  
 Syne plantit palzeonis doun vpoun the plane.  
 Of his cuming Saluriens wer fane;  
 Decreittit hes, as I haif said befor, 10,685  
 With hail power to gif thame feild no moir,  
 Thinkand that wes wnsicker and wusuir,  
 To put thame all in sic aventure.  
 Of fals Fortoun thai had so fremmit feill,  
 So contrair wes in turning of hir quheill; 10,690  
 It wes na speid that tyme tha vnderstude,  
 To put in perrell all the multitude. Col. 2.  
 Bot quhilis on fit to feir thame with ane fray,  
 Sumtyme on hors thair gyding till assay,  
 Sumtyme with bowmen for to mak ane bikker, 10,695  
 And keip the greit stail out of danger sicker,  
 Neirby in sicht the forrow to reskew,  
 Gif that thai preis with pricking thame persew;  
 And so on force that tyme thai sould be fane  
 To turne bakwart into Brigance agane. 10,700  
 And so thai wrocht ane lang tyme of the zeir,  
 With so greit sturt thai held thame ay on steir,  
 With mony forra oft syis to and fra,  
 With countering and carmusche euerilk da.  
 The grumes gay hes oft met on the grene 10,705  
 Quhair mony saidill temit wes betuene,  
 Rycht mekill blude, and mony brokin bane;  
 Of presoneris on euerie syde wes tane,

With litill slauchter of the pairteis bayth,  
 The Scottis than tha gat sum part of skayth. 10,710  
 The Romanis als, vpoun the vther syde,  
 Tha<sup>1</sup> tynt the pryss for all thair mekill pryde,  
 And tynt the feild far oftar nor thai wan,  
 And in thai weiris loissit mony man.  
 The Scottis had sic vantage of thair fa, 10,715  
 Tha war nocht wild, tha wist weill quhair to ga,  
 Ouir firth and fell, ouir feildis quhair thai fuir,  
 Thai knew rycht weill bayth moss, montane and  
 mure,  
 To wail the gait about the mirk midnycht,  
 As<sup>2</sup> on the da quhen that the sone wes brycht. 10,720  
 The Romanes als, vpoun the vther syde,  
 Misknew the ground and also had no gyde;  
 That causit thame rycht oft for to ga will  
 In craig and cleuche, and mony hadrie hill;  
 In moss and mure, and mony sinkand sand, 10,725  
 And syne on force come in thair fais hand.

HOW GALDUS NICHT NOCHT CUM TO THE FEILD,  
 BEAND WNHAILLIT OF THE HURT HE GAT  
 BEFOIR IN THE FEILD.

In all this tyme that I haif to zow tald,  
 This king Galdus, thocht he wes big and bald,  
 Out of his bed he mycht nocht ane fit ryss,  
 His woundis wyde thai werkit on sic wyss, 10,730  
 That he had tane into the feild befoir,  
 With greit panis the langar ay the moir.  
 And, quhen he saw that thair wes no remeid,  
 He hes gart stuff than euerie streith and steid  
 With men and meit, with hors, harnes and geir, 10,735  
 And all sic thing that neidfull war in weir.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *The*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *Ay*.

Fyve thousand men, that weill culd weild a brand,  
 He hes left thame for to defend the land  
 Aganis the Romanis of sic boist and schoir,  
 Of the same fassoun as he did befoir. 10,740  
 And syne efter, with greit difficultie,  
 On ane horss litter that wes maid of tre,  
 In to ane bed rycht softlie tha him buir  
 To Argatill our mony moss and mure :  
 And all the laif ar passit hame agane, 10,745 Lib.4,f.54b.  
 Exceptand thame wes maid thair to remane. Col. 1.  
 Efter that Galdus passit hes awa  
 Tha tuke na scaling nother nycht nor da ;  
 Bot furiouslie, siclike as of beforne,  
 Of greit heirschip of victuall<sup>1</sup> and of corne, 10,750  
 On euerilk syde with battell and greit blude,  
 The victorie richt oft in doubt it stude.  
 And thus thai wrocht ane lang quhile into weir,  
 Quhill efterwart hapnit as ze sall heir.

HOW THAT THE SCOTTIS, WNWITTAND OF ONY  
 EUILL, WES VMBESET WITH THE ROMANIS AND  
 THRIE THOUSAND OF THAME SLANE.

Vpoun ane tyme it hapnit so on cace, 10,755  
 The Scottis all convenit in ane place,  
 Into counsall thair ordinance to mak ;  
 Vnwist of thame the Romanis at thair bak  
 So neir thai la the Scottis mycht nocht fle,  
 That force it wes other to do or de. 10,760  
 The Scottis men, quhilk war bayth stout and  
 strang,  
 In [to] the feild that da [tha] faucht so lang,  
 Thre thousand men that tyme of thame wer slane ;  
 The laif all fled na langer mycht remane.  
 Off this battell the infortunitie, 10,765  
 The wratchit end and greit miseritie,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *battell*.

Our all the cuntrie causit hes sic dreid,  
 With greit despair in tyme till cum [ocht] speid.  
 Galdus wihth seiknes wes in sic distres,  
 That he no help nicht mak thame mor or les. 10,770  
 And quhen thai saw it nicht na better be,  
 Out of that land the nobillis all did fle,  
 With wyfe and barne; the puir pepill baid still,  
 And pat thame all into the Romanis will.  
 Thairof the Romanis wes rycht weill content; 10,775  
 With bissines and cuir rycht diligent,  
 Ressaut hes ilk castell, tour and toun;  
 Syne in ane sait ilk man hes sittin down  
 Qubair that thai thocht wes best for to remane,  
 Quhill winter went and symmer come agane. 10,780

HOW JULIUS FRONTICIUS TUKE SEIKNES AND  
 PASSIT IN ITALIE FOR MEDICYNE, AND COME  
 NOCHT AGANE IN BRITANE.

Quhen symmer als wes passit and ago,  
 And wynter come with scharp schouris also,  
 With freissand frost and mony bitter blast,  
 That cruell cald maid mony grome agast;  
 The snaw so snell ay dryvand with sic drift, 10,785  
 And haill schouris descendand fra the lift,  
 With mekill mist vpoun the montanis hie,  
 And stormis strang also vpone the se,  
 Semdill or nocht to end ane da wes fair.  
 Col. 2. The grit corruptione that wes in the air 10,790  
 This Julius hes hurt and done greit harme,  
 Quhilk vsit wes in winter ay so warme.  
 That cruell cald hes saillit him so soir  
 With greit seiknes, the langer ay the moir,  
 In sic despair, with greit dreddour of deid, 10,795  
 Thair wes no Romane mycht mak him remeid.  
 And quhen he knew that na better mycht be,  
 His purpos wes to pas in Italie,

To cunnyng men that wer expert and fyne  
 In all science, phisick and medicyne. 10,800  
 And so he did ; sone efter on ane da,  
 He take his leif and passit hame awa.  
 Quhat auenture that he efter befell  
 Than lyfe and deid I can nocht to 3ow tell.  
 Thairfoir I lyke nocht in sic thing remane, 10,805  
 Bot to my taill now turne will I agane.

HOW DOMITIANUS THE EMPRIoure, EFTER THE  
 PASSAGE OF FRONTICIUS, SEND JULIUS AGRICOLA  
 IN BRITANE.

In Rome that tyme thair wes ane empriour,  
 Hecht Domitian, quhilk wes of greit honour ;  
 And quhen he knew Fronticius left Britane,  
 And cumin wes in Italie richt than, 10,810  
 Ane nobill man, my author tellis thus,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Julius  
 Agricola, with mony nobill man,  
 Directit hes to pas into Britane,  
 Efter Fronticius for till haif the cuir ; 10,815  
 His leif he take, syne furth with thame he fuir.  
 Of all the Romanis that tyme les and moir,  
 The maik of him come neur thair 3it befoir  
 Into Britane for till haif ony steir,  
 Quhilk previt weill as 3e sall efter heir ; 10,820  
 He did als far excell thame euerie wycht,  
 As dois the mone the sternis in the nycht.

HOW THE ROMANIS PASSIT TO SPUII3IE ORDALICUM,  
 AND HOW THE MEN OF ORDALIS SLEW  
 ALL THE ROMANIS.

In the same tyme the legat wes absent,  
 The Romanis raid rycht baldlie our the bent,

	With greit power than to tak ane pray.	10,825
	Of Ordolus the nobill men alsuay, Rycht suddantlie thai met thame in ane slak, Quhair that the Romanis mycht nocht fle abak ; And in that place the Romanis all tha slew, Withoutin stop, than thair wes no reskew.	10,830
	The Brigantynis thairof thai wer full fane, Quhen that thai knew how the Romanis wer slane. That tyme tha ceissit nother nycht nor da,	
Lib. 4, f. 55. Col. 1.	And all the men als of Saluria, Agane the Romanis baklie did rebell.	10,835
	Agricola thairof quhen he hard tell, With saxtie thousand wnder targe and scheild, The quhilk befor had bene in mony feild, Out-throw Britane he sped him nycht and da, To Ordulus he tuke the narrest wa.	10,840
	And fra he come with sic power thame till, Tha come ilkone and pat thame in his will ; Syne all that land, at greit lasar and lenth, He veseit hes and stuffit euerie strenth ; Syne with his ost he fuir forward anone,	10,845
	Towart the toun than of Camelidone.	

HOW THE PECHTIS GAIF FEILD TO JULIUS  
AGRICOLA, AND TYNT THE FEILD AND WAS  
CHAISSIT.

	The king of Pechtis, callit Caronat, Throw greit folie, and sua wes sene of that, With his power contrair Agricola He tuke the feild sone efter on ane da,	10,850
	With mony man that worthie war and wycht, On fit and hors all intill armour bricht. Thir stalwart men, that war baith stout and strang, So stoutlie straik quhill that the rochis rang. The bairdit horss come formest in the feild,	10,855
	Gart mony knycht full cald ly wnder scheild.	



The Romanis had sic ordinance in weir,  
 The Pechtis docht to do thame lytill deir.  
 Amang thair feit thair fell baith zoung and ald  
 Als thik as scheip that lysis in ane fald, 10,860  
 That force it wes the Pechtis for till fle,  
 Or in that feild all fechtand for till de.  
 And quhen tha saw sic trubill thame betyde,  
 Turnit thair bak and wald no langer byde :  
 Syne to the citie of Camelidone, 10,865  
 King Caronat with all the laif is gone.

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS GAVE FEILD AGANE  
 TO JULIUS AGRICOLA, AND TYNT THAT FEILD  
 SICLYKE AS THE TOTHER.

This Caronat, that wes bayth wyss and wycht,  
 Greit diligence he hes done da and nycht,  
 And his lordis that wer nothing liddir,  
 Richt mony grume quhill tha gatherit togidder. 10,870  
 Syne with thair power passit to the plane  
 On the thrid day to gif thame feild agane,  
 With far war fortoun nor tha had befoir,  
 And war mycht be, and eik thairto far moir.  
 The nobillis all that da wer maid to de, 10,875  
 The king him self and all the laif to fle ;  
 The toun wes tane als of Camelidone,  
 The citineris wer slane that tyme ilkone.  
 The king him self syne fled in to the north  
 With waill few folk bezond the watter of Forth, 10,880 Col. 2.  
 Till Otolyn, and thair ane quhile he la,  
 Quhilk Fyffe is callit now at this same da.  
 This Julius than wnderstude full weill,  
 Into his mynd als far as he had feill,  
 Greit perrell wes the North for till persew ; 10,885  
 Full weill he wist that all the South wes trew.

And fra he knew that all the South wes leill,  
 No danger wes than with the North to deill.  
 Quhen that wes done he purposit in the North,  
 With all his power for till pas our Forth. 10,890

HOW JULIUS AGRICOLA PASSIT TO ORDALUCIUM,  
 AND HOW THE MEN THAIROF FAUCHT WITH  
 HIM TO DEID.

Sone efter that, this Jule Agricola  
 With all his power passit on ane da  
 To Ordulus, quhair that he hard thame tell  
 Tha beirmis bald agane him did rebell ;  
 Quhilk now contenis, ze sall wnderstand, 10,895  
 Eskdail, Ewisdail and Vallis Annand.  
 Of his cuming quhen that thai haif hard tell,  
 Tha left the plane and passit to the fell ;  
 In craig and cleuche, in mony wod and glen,  
 Bayth zyoung and ald that tyme la all the men. 10,900  
 In that same tyme this Jule Agricola,  
 Wnwist of thame, sone efter on ane da  
 He hes thame fund quhair that thai mycht nocht  
 fle,  
 That force it wes other to do or de.  
 And quhen thai saw that thair wes no remeid, 10,905  
 Tha chesit erar for to fecht to deid,  
 And tak thair chance, nor cum into thair will,  
 Quhat euir it war than other gude or ill.  
 Rycht manfullie vpoune that samin plane,  
 Tha tuke the feild and faucht quhill tha wer 10,910  
 slane,  
 Except rycht few out of that feild that fled.  
 That samin nycht, syne efter in thair bed,  
 Sic aventure that tyme did thame befall,  
 With thair wyvis than wer thai worreit all.

That wes the vse of ilk flear that fled, 10,915  
 To mak ane end siclike in till his bed,  
 That samin nycht sone efter he come hame,  
 With his awin wyfe, of him scho had sic schame.

HOW JULIUS AGRICOLA TUKE PLEDGIS OF THE  
 MEN OF ORDOLUS, AND SYNE PASSIT TO THE  
 YLE OF MONA.

This beand done, this Jule Agricola,  
 Still in that steid ane lang quhile that he la, 10,920  
 With his plesour, at greit laser and lenth,  
 Quhill he that tyme had furneist euerilk strenth,  
 And pledgis tuke, syne passit is anone  
 With haill power on to the Yle of Mone.  
 With schip and boit, with ballingar and barge, 10,925  
 With carvall, colluin, and with craik full large,  
 He frauchtit thame, syne fur on to the Ile. Lib.4,f.55b.  
 And all the men that he fand thair that quhile, Col. 1.  
 Tha come and pat thame ilkane in his will,  
 As plesit him than other gude or ill. 10,930  
 And he agane, richt curtaslie and heynd,  
 Ressaut thame richt tenderlie as freind,  
 And hes thame fred that tyme for to leif frie  
 In thair awin land with law and libertie,  
 With all fredome siclike as he thame fand, 10,935  
 Except he tuke the strenthis in his hand;  
 And of thame selffis also greit pledgis tuke,  
 And gart thame sweir on mony bell and buke,  
 For to be trew to him baith nicht and da.  
 And passit syne into Brigantia, 10,940  
 And thair remanit the laif of the zeir,  
 All wynter our quhill symmer suld draw neir.

HOW THE MEN OF BRIGANTIA AND SALURIA, IN  
THE NIXT SYMMER, HEIRAND OF JULIUS CUM-  
MYNG, FLED OUT OF THA LANDIS.

Quhen symmer come syne with his schawis schene,  
 And euerie garth wes growand our full grene,  
 And passit wes the wynter witht his rane, 10,945  
 He left the strenth and passit to the plane.  
 The men of Brigance and Saluria,  
 Quhilk did rebell befor as ze hard sa,  
 Of his cuming thai wer so soir adred,  
 With wyffe and barnis rycht far awa tha fled. 10,950  
 Agricola that tyme without ganestand,  
 And his lordis, perlustrit all the land,  
 And euerie berne did blythlie obey;  
 Without perrell that tyme he had no pley.  
 And thair he baid that symmer all till end, 10,955  
 And preissit than no forder for till wend.  
 That same symmer, with his lordis ilkone  
 That him obeyit into Albione,  
 Greit diligence he hes done da and nycht,  
 Perswading thame with all power he mycht, 10,960  
 To leif thair fassoun that wes so wnfair,  
 And for to leir efter the Romane<sup>1</sup> lair;  
 Tempillis to big of ane gudlie gyss,  
 And vse thair habite<sup>2</sup> of the Romane<sup>1</sup> wyss;  
 And put thair barnis to the seullis syne 10,965  
 Wirtour to leir, science and disciplyne,  
 And eloquence quhilk sould be to thame kend:  
 And thus tha wrocht that winter all to end.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *commoun*.

<sup>2</sup> In MS. *about*.

HOW JULIUS IN THE NIXT SYMMER PASSIT TO  
VICOMAGIA, AND SYNE THROW CALIDONIA WOD.

Quhen winter went with wedderis wan and weit,  
 And symmer come with soft sesoun and sweet, 10,970  
 With bemes bricht blenkand on euerilk beuch,  
 And all in clauer wes cled craig and cleuch,  
 The feildis fair, cled our witht sindrie hew,  
 Departit war with reid, zallow and blew ;  
 The samin tyme Julius Agricola, 10,975  
 Within his strenth no langar that he la,  
 Bot to the feild he fuir with mony feir, Col. 2.  
 And mony knicht weill cled in armour cleir ;  
 Syne passit is to Vicomagia,  
 Quhilk callit is now Stirling schire this da. 10,980  
 Out-throw the wod that tyme of Calidone,  
 With mony gydis hastelie is he gone ;  
 That wod contenit in tha tymes ald  
 Fra Locquhaber at lenth to Cummernald ;  
 Syne cuming is, at his plesour and will, 10,985  
 Into ane place callit the Dolorus Hill ;  
 Quhair now standis the castell and the toun  
 Of fair Stirling quhilk is of sic renoun,  
 Quhilk callit wes the Dolorus Hill for-thi  
 Into the nycht thair hard wes mony cry 10,990  
 Rycht dolorous, with mony hiddeous schout,  
 With all the pepill duelt neirhand about.  
 Vpone the craig quhair the castell dois stand  
 Agricola ane failzeit place thair fand,  
 Of litill fect and falling to the ground. 10,995  
 Agricola, quhen he that place had fund,  
 Remanit thair at greit lasar and lenth,  
 Quhill he of new reformit had that strenth  
 Of nobill werk ane castell richt decoir,  
 Farar befar nor euer it wes befor ; 11,000  
 Syne efter that ane brig our Forth he maid,  
 Rycht stark of tymmer baith lang and braid,

Brandit and bond, and festnit richt fast,  
 Quhair all his ost but perrell our hes past.

HOW JULIUS SEIGIT THE CASTELL OF BENARTHY,  
 AND HOW THE PECHTIS THOCHT TO DISTROY  
 THE BRIG OF FORTH.

In Otholyn, richt heiche aboue ane gill, 11,005  
 Ane craig thair stude callit the Craftishill,  
 Kinrache now is callit at this da,  
 Ane castell stude as my author did sa,  
 And king of Pechtis wes wont [thair] to remane.  
 To Julius wes schawin than in plane, 11,010  
 The king of Pechtis at that samin da  
 Rycht quietlie within that castell la.  
 Agrecola, quhen that he wnderstude  
 That all his folk wer passit our the flude,  
 With mony one that tyme to wirk his will, 11,015  
 He passit syne on to Bynarthy hill,  
 Trowand that tyme the king had bene thairin.  
 About the hous or he wald langer blyn,  
 Ane seig he set at mony sindrie place.  
 That samin tyme it hapnit vpone cace, 11,020  
 The king of Pechtis passit furth befoir,  
 With all his power that tyme les and moir,  
 And tuke his purpois on the nycht to pas  
 Quhair that the brige attour Forth biggit wes,  
 Rycht suddanelie that brig for till destroy, 11,025  
 And quietlie, withoutin dyn or noy,  
 To clois the Romanis betuix Forth and Tay,  
 Without passage that tyme to pas away.  
 Syne passit hes his purpois to assaill,  
 Bot of his jorney he wes maid to fail ; 11,030  
 Full mony freik, that sturdie wer and stout,  
 To keip the brig was bydand thairabout,  
 Quhilk stoppit him his purpois for till tak.  
 Syne with ane bikker hes him put abak

Far fra the brig than and the barris baith, 11,035  
 Sua at that tyme that lute him do na skayth.  
 Agricola, tha tydenis quhen he knew,  
 With ferme purpois the brig for to reskew,  
 With mony berne that wes fell bald and big,  
 He left the seig and passit to the brig. 11,040

HOW AGRICOLA WAN THE FEILD, AND CHAISSIT  
 THE KING OF PECHTIS, AND PAT HIM OUR  
 TAY.

And as the da depairtit fra the nycht,  
 The Pechtis come into the Romanis sycht,  
 In sic ane place quhair tha mycht nocht weill fle ;  
 And quhen tha saw it nicht na better be,  
 Tha tuke the feild that tyme baith gude and ill, 11,045  
 And tuke the chance Fortoun wald send thame till.  
 The Romanis wes than of sic multitude,  
 Sic fortoun had and als sic fortitude,  
 The Pechtis sone in that feild wer confoundit ;  
 Mony war slane and mony deidlie woundit. 11,050  
 The king him self wes maid to flie his way,  
 And chasit als quhill that he come till Tay ;  
 And on the flude ane bot thairat he fand,  
 Quhairin he passit to the tother land.  
 Vpone the north syde of the samin flude 11,055  
 Ane strang castell vpone ane strenth thair stude,  
 The quhilk Alloctum callit wes to name,  
 Into that tyme of greit honour and fame,  
 With mony tour and turrat that wes hie,  
 Quhair now standis the gude toun of Dundie. 11,060  
 The king of Pechtis ane lang tyme of the 3eir  
 Remanit thair, as 3e sall efter heir.

HOW JULIUS WAN THE CASTELL OF BYNARTIE,  
AND ALL OTHYLYN OBEYIT HIM BUT PLEY.

Qubhen this wes done, Julius Agricola  
 On to Bynarthly tuke the narrest wa ;  
 And set ane seig about the hous agane, 11,065  
 And wan it sone but ony sturt or pane.  
 Our Otholyn the fame richt sone it spred  
 The feild wes tynt, and that the king wes fled  
 That tyme our Tay, and als the castell wyn.  
 Than all the laif that duelt in Otholyn, 11,070  
 Rycht reuerentlie thai come the Romanis till,  
 Bayth zyoung and ald, and pat thame in thair will.

HOW THE PECHT LORDIS COME TO THE CASTELL  
OF ALLOCTUM VPON TAY TO THAIR KYNG,  
ANE GAIFF HIM COUNSALL AND CONFORT.

Col. 2.

This king befoir, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Remanand wes into Orestia,  
 Quhilk now contenis, ze sall vnderstand, 11,075  
 The Mernis, Angus, and all Gowrie land,  
 Into the castell I spak of befoir,  
 With all his lordis that tyme les and moir.  
 To confort him greit mirrines thai mak,  
 And sindrie syis of curage to him spak, 11,080  
 Sayand the Romanis mycht nocht rax rycht lang,  
 That vsit hes sa greit injure and wrang  
 So cruellie agane so mony king,  
 Gode wald nocht lang, tha said, [allowe] sic thing.  
 Experiens hes maid it to thame kend, 11,085  
 Thair wickit lyfe suld make ane rycht euill end.  
 Exhortand him to be of confort gude,  
 Sayand, als far as thai rycht vnderstude,



Thocht tha war lordis of this warld all,  
 Fortoun richt sone suld mak thame for to fall, 11,090  
 And him agane restorit for to be,  
 Baith to his land and eik his libertie ;  
 And bad him nocht na vther till presume,  
 Godis, thai said, had gevin that saune dome.  
 For all the confort that tyme thai culd mak, 11,095  
 It causit him na curage for to tak ;  
 He knew the Romanis had sic strenth and mycht  
 And sic fortoun in all tyme da and nycht,  
 Vnpossibill wes thair power to ganestand,  
 That victor was in all and sindrie land. 11,100  
 With lang adwysing oftymes to and fro,  
 Syne at the last it wes devysit so,  
 In haist ane herald to send to Galdus king,  
 And schew till him the maner of this thing ;  
 And beseik him with all humilitie, 11,105  
 Him for to help in sic necessitie,  
 Quhilk did appeir the langar ay the moir,  
 And for the freindschip langtyme of befoir,  
 With greit bandis betuix thame that had bene  
 Ay to that tyme vnumaculat so clene. 11,110

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS SEND ANE HERALD  
 TO KING GALDUS FOR HIS SUPPLIE, AND OF  
 HIS ANSUER AGANE.

Thair wes no moir to mute into that thing,  
 Quhill sone the herauld passit to the king.  
 Syne on his kne befoir him that he fell,  
 Syne word by word, as ze haif hard me tell,  
 He schew till him with sircumstance rycht haill, 11,115  
 Fra end to end the text of all this taill.  
 Quhen that wes said befoir gude Galdus king,  
 Rycht sone agane he ansuerit to that thing :

- " Forsuith," he said, "rycht soir forthinkis me  
 " **Z**our febill fait and infortunitie, 11,120  
 " Now in sic stait as I heir tell **z**e stand,  
 " And how the Romanis hes reft all **z**our land.  
 Lib.4,f.56b. " Sic mayne for **z**ow suppois this tyme I mak,  
 Col. 1. " Of my awin self I may exempill tak,  
 " For all the boundis of Brigantia 11,125  
 " I haif loisit, and eik Saluria,  
 " Be the Romanis quhilk hes reft ws our richt,  
 " Throw pryde and powrie, maistrie and mycht.  
 " Thair appetyte so ardent is and he,  
 " Vnsaciabill without securitie, 11,130  
 " Throw couetyce culd neur **z**it be content  
 " Of all the Austure and the Orient;  
 " Evin as thai wald thai weild this world all.  
 " Now in oure boundis of the Borecall  
 " Fra blude and battell schaipis nocht to blin, 11,135  
 " Quhill we to thame subdewit be and win.  
 " Quhairfoir I traist that oure goddis abuif,  
 " Quhome that we aucht to honour and to luif,  
 " Richt suddandlie sall mak thame for to fall,  
 " With sic exempill to this world all, 11,140  
 " Sall caus men efter for to be content,  
 " To leif in peice bot with rycht sobir rent.  
 " Thairfoir," he said, " as **z**e ma weill confyde,  
 " My purpois is with all power provyde  
 " For my awin proffeit and thair supplic, 11,145  
 " At tyme and place thair think I for till be.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " of me **z**e tak no dreid,  
 " I salbe reddie all tyme in **z**our neid."

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS HERALD TUKE HIS  
 LEIF AT GALDUS, AND PASSIT HAME AND  
 SCHEW HIS ANSUER.

- Off this ansuer the herald wes rycht fane.  
 With that report he passit hame agane, 11,150

Befoir thame thair wes than baith zyoung and ald,  
 As I haif said the leist ane word he tald.  
 The Pechtis all thairof war weill content,  
 Heirand the ansner that king Galdus sent ;  
 Greit diligence thai haif done da and nycht, 11,155  
 Thair king to confort in all thing tha mycht.

HOW THE MEN OF SALURIA PUT OUT BE JULIUS  
 OF BEFOIR, COME IN AGANE AND SLEW ALL  
 THE ROMANIS THAT THAI FAND THAIR.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me sa,  
 The men that fled out of Saluria,  
 As ze haif hard bot schort quhile of befoir,  
 Thay come agane that same tyme les and moir, 11,160  
 With greit power into that samin land ;  
 And all the Romanis that tyme thairin thai fand,  
 Be Julius war left in euerie steid,  
 But dout that tyme thai pat thame all to deid.  
 And euerilk strench, baith castell, tour and toun, 11,165  
 Evin to the erd richt law thai kest thame doun ;  
 Syne corne and cattell all hes led awa,  
 And all the laif, as my author did sa,  
 Of that spuilzie that micht nocht with thame pas,  
 In ane baill fyre thai brint [it] all in as. 11,170

HOW JULIUS PASSIT AGANE TO SALURIA, AND HOW Col. 2.  
 THE SCOTTIS HEIRAND OF HIS CUMMYNG FLED  
 OUT OF THAT LAND.

Quhen this wes tald to Jule Agricola,  
 Rycht sone he passit to Saluria,  
 With mony one that worthie wer and wycht ;  
 He maid no tarie that tyme da nor nycht.

Of his cuming fra tyme that thai hard tell, 11,175  
 Tha fled richt fast full far attour the fell ;  
 And all the gude tha nicht nocht turs awa,  
 Tha brint in fyre befoir as ze hard sa.  
 The Romanis all wes left thair to remane,  
 In that semblie richt suddanelie wes slane. 11,180  
 Thair wes nothing wes softer nor the flint  
 Left in that land, bot all in powlder brint.  
 This Romane legat sufferit hes grit pane  
 For to reforme tha faltis all agane ;  
 Masone and wrycht he hes gart hak and hew, 11,185  
 And all thai strenthis did agane renew ;  
 Syne out of Britane victuall he hes brocht,  
 To furneis thame sua that thai suld want nocht.

HOW IT WES SCHAWIN TO JULIUS THAT THE  
 SCOTTIS WAR CONVENIT TOGETHER, AND HOW  
 HE HAD PERSWASIOUN.

In this mene tyme wes schawin him be ane spy,  
 Of mony Scott wes neir hand buskit by. 11,190  
 Weill wist he nocht that tyme quhat wes thair will,  
 Bot sone in haist he hyit hes thame till,  
 With his power that mekill wes of pryde.  
 Quhen tha that knew, out our the tother syid  
 Of Clyde tha zeid but ony harme awa, 11,195  
 And in that feild at lasar thair thai la.  
 Vpone the north side of the watter of Clyde,  
 Quhair Levin enteris in the samin syde,  
 Ane castell standis on ane roche of stone,  
 Ane strentheat zit wes thair neuir none. 11,200  
 The riche Romanis for all thair strenth and mycht,  
 Be way of deid or zit be force or slycht,  
 Wan neuir that hous out of the Scottis handis,  
 Thocht tha war lordis sumtyme of all tha landis.  
 This Roman legat, callit Agricola, 11,205  
 Baid all that symmer in Saluria,

With greit laubour, with travell and with pane,  
 Or he reformit all thing new agane.  
 Of his cuming this ilk wes the ferd 3eir  
 In Albione, quha lykis for till heir. 11,210  
 Quhen this wes done and symmer all wes past,  
 And winter come with mony bitter blast,  
 With frost and snaw and haill schouris rycht cald,  
 The Romanis drew to mony sindrie hald.

HOW JULIUS GAIF HIS SCHIPPIS COMMAND TO PAS Lib.4, f.56.<sup>1</sup>  
 ABOUT THE YLE, AND VISIE THE NORTH PART Col. 1.  
 OF ALBIONE.

In symmer syne quhen the wadder grew warme, 11,215  
 That men mycht hald the licht withoutin harme,  
 In Aprile, quhen weill lang wes the da,  
 Ane grit navin of mony schip thai la  
 Befoir the coist of Carrik and of Kyle,  
 Witht armit men to pas about the yle, 11,220  
 To serche and seik the north pairt of the land.  
 Than Julius hes gevin thame command  
 To wey anker and for to wend thair wa,  
 And so thai did sone efter on ane da,  
 Ay sailland furth aucht dayes still or nyne, 11,225  
 On till ane place that callit is Lochfyne;  
 In Argatill syne straik into the raid,  
 And in that place ane weill lang quhile thai baid.  
 In that same tyme this ilk Agricola  
 Departit hes out of Saluria, 11,230  
 With all his power passit syne our Clyde.  
 Sone be he come vpon the other syde,  
 Ane letter send thair come till him anone,  
 Than fra the captane of Camelidone.

Of that letter the tennour wes to tell, 11,235  
 How in Pechtland the Pechtis did rebell,  
 And come he nocht with his supple rycht sone,  
 All wes for nocht befoir that he had done.  
 Quhen he that hard he wald no langar byde,  
 His armie all he left lyand on Clyde ; 11,240  
 Qubat suld be done he gaif thame in command,  
 Syne with greit power passit in Pechtland.  
 And fra he come, within ane lytill space,  
 Reformit hes in euerilk part and place  
 All faltis maid befoir into that tyme, 11,245  
 And puneist hes committeris of the cryme.  
 Quhen this wes done he take his leif to ryde  
 On to the laif wes liand vpoun Clyde ;  
 Gydit he wes with thame the cuntrie kend,  
 Remanit thair syne all winter to end. 11,250

HOW JULIUS AGRICOLA IN THE NIXT SYMMER PASSIT  
 OUR LEVIN TO ARGATILL, AND QUHEN THAI  
 [SAW] THE GREIT MONTANIS THAY ABHORRIT  
 WITH THAME.

In symmer syne, quhen that the air wes cleir,  
 Of his cuming quhilk wes the sext 3eir,  
 In Albione sen that his weir began,  
 With all his oist our Levin he passit than.  
 Commandit syne his schippis in Argyle, 11,255  
 To pas and spy about our all the yle ;  
 And leif na place vnspyit in that tyde,  
 Quhair schip mycht saill or 3it with anker ryde.  
 Syne with his oist him self vpone ane day  
 To Argatill be land he take the way, 11,260  
 Col. 2. Doand his fais than till vnderstand  
 That<sup>1</sup> na refuge thai had be se nor land ;

<sup>1</sup>In MS. *than*.

Trowand thairfoir thai suld cum in his will.  
 The Romanis than quhen tha saw Argatill,  
 With montanis hie ascendand to the air, 11,265  
 With craig and cleuche and [mony] holtis hair,  
 With mos and mure and mony wodis wyld,  
 And ron and roche with mony rammall<sup>1</sup> ouirsyld,  
 So fleit all thai wer at the first luke,  
 And in thair mynd greit terror als tha tuke, 11,270  
 Tha thoct it wes impossibill to be  
 To thame to pas attour the hillis he.  
 Zit neurtheles so greit curage tha tuke,  
 For na travell that tyme that thai forsuik,  
 Als licht as lyn or ony leif of tre, 11,275  
 Tha passit all attour thai hillis hie,  
 Qubill that thai come efter till Argatill,  
 Qubair thai remanit lang at thair awin will,  
 And ilk ane strenth befor thame that thai fand,  
 Tha occupeit but stop or zit ganestand. 11,280  
 The pepill all that duelt in Argatill  
 Tha fled richt fast that tyme fra hill to hill,  
 In craig and cleuche thair self and gude to hyde;  
 Within thai boundis thai durst nocht thair abyde.  
 And thus the Romanis raid bayth vp and doun 11,285  
 In Argatill throw castell, tour and toun,

HOW ANE DISCORD FELL HAISTELIE AMANG THE  
 PECHTIS, AND IN SEISSING OF THAT DISCORD  
 THAIR KING WES SLANE.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell,  
 Harkin and heir sic aventure befell.  
 Corbredus Gald, that wes of Scottis king,  
 With all his lordis duchtie and conding, 11,290

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *rammall all*.

Into Athall with ane greit oist he la,  
 Quhair he had sett the king of Pechtis a da,  
 Quhair tha suld meit togidder in the tyde.  
 The king of Pechtis, on the vther syde,  
 Rycht mony wicht man into that tyme to waill, 11,295  
 Fyftene thousand thai war that tyme be taill,  
 In Albione nane better men thair wes,  
 With haill purpois to king Galdus to pas.  
 And as tha raid richt hulie our the fell,  
 Ane suddane scisma rais amang thame sell, 11,300  
 With greit discord and mekill brag and bost,  
 In tua pairteis diuydit all the ost ;  
 With mekill blude than of the pairteis bayth,  
 And greit apperance of richt mekill skayth.  
 This Caronat, quhilk wes of Pechtis king, 11,305  
 Wes nocht content quhen he beheld that thing,  
 With bissines oftymes to and fro  
 To stop that stryfe he maid him self to go.  
 So hapnit him vnarmit for to gang  
 Quhair that thai straif into the thickest thrang, 11,310  
 But cott armour or ony siclike thing,  
 Vnknawin he wes at that tyme for thair king ;  
 Syne rakleslie amang thair handis than,  
 Thair wes he slane bot as ane vther man.  
 Lib. 4, f. 56 b.<sup>1</sup> Quhen that this cace wes than amang thame 11,315  
 Col. 1. kend,  
 The stryfe stoppit and suddanelie tuke end.  
 Than euerie man for petie of his prince,  
 Weipit and wrang richt will of thair defence ;  
 And in that feild no langar wald remane,  
 Skailit thair ost and passit hame agane. 11,320

---

<sup>1</sup> Second fol. 56 b.



HOW GALDUS TUKE GREIT DISPLESOUR QUHEN HE  
HARD TELL OF THE SLAUCHTER OF THE KING  
OF, PECHTIS.

Quhen this wes schawin to gude Galdus the king,  
Rycht sad he wes and sorrowfull for that thing ;  
And mad in mynd with dirk and havie cheir,  
Than for the slauchter of his cousing deir,  
Quhause that he louit as his hart alhail, 11,325  
And weill he wist that his purpos wald fail.  
His lordis all befor him he hes gart call,  
That present wes that tyme bayth ane and all,  
The commoun weill than in sic perrell stude ;  
Beseikand thame thair of thair counsall gude, 11,330  
Than to devyss the best way that tha mycht  
Aganes the Romanis for to defend thair rycht.

HOW GALDUS AND HIS LORDIS DEVYSIT HOW THAI  
SULD MAK CONCORD AMANG THE PECHTIS.

Than suddantlie to counsall ar tha went,  
With mynd mature and mony argument ;  
So at the last togidder thai conclude 11,335  
Wyse aigit men that wer of counsall gude,  
Amang thame thair the most abill wer kend,  
Rycht suddanelie than to the Pechtis send,  
To caus that scisma rycht sone to be smord  
And bring thame self agane to gude concord. 11,340  
Syne efterwart, quhen tha had tyme and space,  
For to convenc together in ane place,  
Into ane feild quhair that tha suld nocht fail,  
With plane battell the Romanis to assaill,  
All on ane da in that beleif to be 11,345  
Bondis for ay or euer moir be frie.

HOW GILDUS SEND WYSS MEN OF HIS FOR TO MAK  
CONCORD AMANG THE PECHTIS.

The counsall thocht than that that wes best ;  
 With thair directioun dewlie thai haif drest  
 The wysest men that wes amang thame thair,  
 Wes maid that tyme the bodwart for to bair. 11,350  
 Tha tuke thair leif rycht sone and passit hidder,  
 Quhair that the Pechtis convenit war togidder,  
 And sindrie syis exempill to thame schew ;  
 Sayand to thame perfitlie that thai knew  
 Without rycht wyslie in that tyme tha wrocht, 11,355  
 That inwart battell wald bring thame to nocht.  
 And for to caus that scisma for to slokin,  
 And all thair ire to stanchit be and brokin,  
 And to reforme that freindschip of the new,  
 Col. 2. Rycht mekill terrour of to thame tha schew, 11,360  
 And in thair mynd sic thingis gart remord,  
 Quhill at tha last tha maid thame till accord.  
 Syne euerilkane remittit hes till vther  
 Rancour and yre, and hartlie as his bruther  
 With all fauour in freindschip than hes tane; 11,365  
 Forgiffand thair all gilt that wes bygane.

HOW THE PECHTIS WAR ACCORDIT AMANG THAME  
SELFF, AND SYNE CROWNIT GARMARDUS TO BE  
THAIR KING.

Syne at the plesour baith of ald and zing  
 Crownit thai haif Garmardus to be king.  
 And suddantlie sone efter on ane day,  
 Ane messinger thai send to Norroway, 11,370  
 Beseikand thame of thair help and supple,  
 Aganis the Romanes in thair necessitie.

And thai agane hes grantit with gude will,  
 Sayand thai suld thair appetyte fulfill,  
 In the nixt symmer quhen tha mycht provyde, 11,375  
 Traist weill, tha said, tha sould na langer byde.  
 Galdus siclike in Yreland he hes send  
 For thair supple, syne as it wes weill kend,  
 That he and tha wer of the ald beforne  
 Baith of ane blude and of ane natione borne. 11,380  
 And thai siclyke promittit with gude will  
 Rycht sone in symmer for to cum thame till.  
 This king Galdus diuydit hes his ost  
 In sindrie pairtis, and syne endlang the cost  
 Of Calidone, neir by the wod thai lay, 11,385  
 That tha sould lat the Romanis of that way,  
 In mony strenth that eith wes to defend.  
 Agricola, quhen he thair counsall kend,  
 Na tuke mair feir thairof nor he had neid,  
 Vnknawin caicis causit oft greit dreid : 11,390  
 And for that caus full still he lay alone,  
 All that symmer come nocht throw Calidone.  
 Syne winter come with woderis cuill and cald,  
 And frost and snaw wes hiddeous to behald,  
 With bitter blastis baith of wynd and weit, 11,395  
 With furius flaggis of scharpe haill and sleit ;  
 Sic erwell cald wes neuir sene beforne  
 In Albione sen ony berne wes borne ;  
 Quhairfoir all battell of tha bernis bald,  
 Ceissit in winter for that cruell cald. 11,400  
 Quhen Aprile wes passit and ago,  
 And symmer come with soft seasoun also,  
 And birdis sang in to the schawes schene,  
 And euerie garth wes growand our all grene,  
 The feildis with flouris fretand flureist fair, 11,405  
 And all the hicht ourheild with hailsum air,  
 Galdus the king, quhome of befoir I spak,  
 As that my author did me mentioun mak,

With mony freik he fuir on to the feild,  
 Bayth big and bald that wapynis weill culd weild, 11,410  
 Than of the Romanis to revengit be,  
 Had wrocht to him so greit crudelitie.

Lib. 4, f. 57.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THAIR COME TEN THOUSAND MEN OUT OF  
 YBERNIA TO KING GALDUS IN HIS SUPPLIE.

In that same tyme sone efter on ane da,  
 Ten thousand men out of Ybernia,  
 With mony saill thai passit to the se, 11,415  
 To king Galdus thai come to mak supple  
 Agane the Romanis wes his mortall fa ;  
 Out throw the se thai set thair cours to ga,  
 In by the Ylis richt to Albione,  
 With bark and barge tuke land at Berigone. 11,420  
 Of thair cuming ryecht blyth and glaid wes he,  
 With greit honour and all humanitie  
 Ressauit thame als as gudlie as he mocht,  
 For his supplie that our the se had socht.

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS MET WITH THE KING  
 OF PECHTIS.

[Be] this Garmard wes lichtit in the feild, 11,425  
 The king of Pechtis with mony semelie scheild,  
 And mony leid<sup>1</sup> weill cled in curage cleir,  
 With barronis bald, burges and bachleir.  
 Greit plesour wes quha had bene in that place  
 Quben ane king thair met [uther] face for face, 11,430  
 With humbill hailsing, and with honour eik,  
 With countenance as ony may als meik ;  
 Quha had bene thair that tyme for till haif sene  
 So greit gladnes as wes tha tua betuene.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *clad*.

HOW KING GALDUS WAS MAID GREIT GOVERNOUR  
OF BAITH THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS.

Than with consent that tyme of ald and zing, 11,435  
 The hail impyre thai gaif Galdus the king,  
 For all that ost for to be principall,  
 At his awin will ay for to weild thame all.  
 Fiftie thousand thai war be tail weill tald  
 Of mony berne that wes baith big and bald, 11,440  
 In breistplait, brasar, and in birny bricht,  
 Wes semblit thair befor him in his sicht.  
 That samin tyme tha schew him on ane da,  
 In Calidone wod quhair that the Romanis la  
 Without ordour, wer skailit to and fra, 11,445  
 So lytill dreid tha had than of thair fa.  
 Than king Galdus, for moir securitie,  
 Dewydit hes his greit ost into thrie ;  
 Syne haistelie he thocht that samin da  
 To set on thame but ordour as thai la. 11,450  
 Zit neurtheles his counsall wes maid knawin  
 To Julius, be ane spy it wes schawin ;  
 Qubairfoir siclike quhair he lay by that cost,  
 In thre pairtis diuidit hes his ost,  
 With mony freik wes furneist for the feild. 11,455  
 Quhen Galdus knew his counsall wes reveild,  
 And of his purpois prevail mycht he nocht,  
 Rycht suddanelie he changit than his thocht.  
 The narrest wing than of his ost he tuke Col. 2.  
 Of bernis bald, and bund attour the bruik ; 11,460  
 Syne to the Romanis richt on raikit he,  
 Quhair that thai la diuidit into thrie.  
 On the first feild thair sleipand quhair thai la,  
 He maid on set richt lang befor the da ;  
 And all the watchis suddantlie thai slew, 11,465  
 Or euer the laif mycht mak ony reskew ;

And or thai war all in curage cled,  
 Rycht mony Romane slane wes in his bed.  
 Agricola thairto quhen he tuke heid,  
 Rycht suddantlie for to supplie that neid, 11,470  
 On fit and horss ane greit forra gart mak,  
 Syne haistelie to cum behind thair bak,  
 And for to enter with ane schout and cry;  
 And so thai did richt sone and suddantlie,  
 Behind thair bak thai lichtit sone but lat. 11,475  
 Galdus the gude quhen he persauit that,  
 For all that speid he thocht that thai suld spur[ne],  
 And sone he maid the Scottis for till turne  
 So manfullie, and met thame with sic mycht,  
 That mony Roman to the deid wes dicht. 11,480  
 Tha[ir] wes na Pechtis<sup>1</sup> in that forrow slane,  
 Na of the Scottis that tyme for all thair trane;  
 In the grit battell fechtand still thai baid,  
 On euerilk syde greit slauchter thair wes maid.  
 Ay still tha faucht all our the hinder nycht, 11,485  
 Quhill on the morne that it wes fair da lycht,  
 Agricola than sone and suddanelie,  
 Seand all his men into sic jepardie,  
 Of beirnis bald that wapynis weill culd weild,  
 With haille power he enterit in the feild. 11,490  
 That king Galdus thairto he tuke gude heid;  
 Out of the feild he gart thame pas gude speid,  
 In gude ordour on to ane strenth neirby,  
 Without perrell saiffie quhair thai mycht ly.  
 Quhen that this feild wes done, as ze ma heir, 11,495  
 Proclomit wes than with ane voce full cleir,  
 Be the decreit thair of the lordis all,  
 For ony thing that efter may befall,  
 With haille power no moir for till assay  
 In plane battell the Romanis nor ane day, 11,500

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Romane*.

Befoir to byde on the help and supple  
 Out of Denmark wes cumand be the se;  
 And for to mak, with commonis to and fro,  
 Impediment to the Romanis to go  
 Out of the cuntrie that tyme thai war in, 11,505  
 Forder till go new landis for to wyn.

HOW JULIUS PASSIT THROW CALIDONIA OUR  
 AWMOUND TO TAY, AND MAID ANE BRIG OF  
 TYMMER OUR TAY.

Agricola so wes of his intent,  
 Trowand nothing mycht mak impediment,  
 He and his oist with thair gydis ar gone  
 Out throw the wod that tyme of Calidone, 11,510  
 And syne our Awmound take the narrest way,  
 Quhill that he come on till the water of Tay,  
 Quhair brig or furd in that tyme fand he nane. Lib.4,f.57b.  
 Than on the watter vpwart ar thai gane, Col. 1.  
 Seikand ane furd, bot zit thai fund it nocht. 11,515  
 Syne quhen thai saw all wes in vane tha wrocht,  
 Into ane place quhair he thocht best to big  
 Attour the flude that tyme ane tymmer brig,  
 In that same place remanit still and la,  
 Quhill efterwart hapnit as I sall sa. 11,520

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS GART DISTROY THE  
 TOUN OF COLENUM, THAT THE ROMANIS SULD  
 NOCHT LUGE IN IT.

Vpone the north syid of the water of Ta,  
 Foirnent the place quhair the Romanis la,  
 Ane toun thair stude of greit honour and fame,  
 The quhilk Colenum callit wes to name;  
 Within ane plane vpoun ane plesand hycht, 11,525  
 With dowbill dykis and wallis that wer wycht,

So mekill bigging in that place hes bene,  
 As I my self at this tyme hes sene.  
 Vpoun ane strenth rycht starklie that it stude,  
 With mony foussie fillit witht the flude, 11,530  
 Betuix ane moss and the watter of Ta,  
 Enehcuthill now is callit at this da.  
 Or dreid the Romanis suld the citie win,  
 And all that winter for to ludge thairin,  
 This king Garmard hes gart spulze that toun, 11,535  
 Brint it in as, and kest the wallis down:  
 Syne ald and zyoung with all thair guidis is gone,  
 For till remane bezond Mont Grampione.  
 Tha[t] nobill toun that stude sa weil on Ta,  
 Wes neur zit reformit to this da. 11,540  
 Aneuche of this: now will I to zow tell  
 Of aventure in that same tyme befell.

HOW THE ALMANS IN BRITANE VNDER CAPTIUITIE,  
 STAW ANE SCHIP OUT OF TAMIS, AND COME  
 EFFERWART INTO TAY.

Fra Rynis mouth, ane flude [of] Almane,  
 Ane kynd of pepill in captiuitie  
 Be the Romanis in Britane than wer brocht, 11,545  
 Lang vnder thame in seruitude had wrocht.  
 Syne efterwart it hapnit vpone caice,  
 Thair captanis all wer slane in till ane place,  
 And thai war maid quhair that thame list to go,  
 Into the cuntrie that tyme to and fro. 11,550  
 Quhen that the wynd wes fair in to the south,  
 Tha staw ane schip out of Tames mouth,  
 And in that schip thai passit to the se,  
 Out of the Romanis bandon for to be.  
 In that same tyme, as my author did sa, 11,555  
 Thair schip arryvit in the mouth of Ta.



This king Galdus, thair cuming quhen he knew,  
 And of the causs of thair cuming than schew, Col. 2.  
 Ilk word by word thair gart thame vnderstand,  
 He grantit thame than into Murra land 11,560  
 Amang thair freindis to remane and dwell ;  
 Morauiens, as ze mycht heir me tell,  
 Schort quhile befor come furth of Almanie ;  
 The quhilk wer baith of ane genelogie.

HOW ANE GREIT ARMIE COME OUT OF DENMARK  
 BE SE AND ARRYUIT INTO TAY, FOR TO SUP-  
 PLIE THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS.

Sone efter that, within ane litill quhile, 11,565  
 Out of Denmark be se burd mony myle,  
 Ane greit armie in Albione wes send  
 Of Scot and Pecht the richtis to defend,  
 Agane the Romanis quhilk hes wrocht sic wrang  
 Within thair<sup>1</sup> boundis quhair tha lay so lang. 11,570  
 In that same tyme, sone efter on ane day,  
 With all thair schippis in the watter of Tay  
 Tha enterit in and passit to the land,  
 And left thair schippis rydand be the sand.  
 Ten thousand men tha war be taill weil tald, 11,575  
 With thair capitane baith bellicois and bald,  
 Gildo to name ; ane greit nobill wes he,  
 In all Denmark most of auctoritie ;  
 With wyne and victuall, hors, harnes, and geir,  
 And all sic thing that neidfull war in weir. 11,580

HOW GARMARDUS, THE KING OF PECHTIS, COME  
 AND MET THIS GILDO OR HE COME TO THE  
 TOUN.

This king Garmard, no langar he wald duell,  
 Of his cuming quhen that he hard tell.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *our*.

With mony nobill and greit statinitie  
 He met this Gildo new cumin of the se.  
 Na toung can tell, nor zit no pen can write, 11,585  
 The greit thanking, the quhilk wes infinite,  
 That king Garmard maid to this ilk Gildo.  
 Syne tenderlie he maid him for till go  
 Onto Alectum, till that hous of stone,  
 And gair till him rewairdis mony one ; 11,590  
 And ilk captane siclyke as did effeir,  
 Efter thair estait, with blyth and mirrie cheir.

HOW KING GALDUS, HEIRING THE CUMMYNG OF  
 GILDO, COME TO THE PLACE QUHAIR HE WES  
 TO SPEIK WITHT HIM.

Lib. 4, f. 58. Quhen king Galdus hard tell of that,  
 Col. 1. Without delay thair wes no langar lat ;  
 With mony lord in till his cumpany 11,595  
 Onto this Gildo passit hes in hy,  
 With mony freik he fur attouir the fell.  
 Of his cuming quhen this Gildo hard tell,  
 Come furth and met him that tyme by the way  
 With trappit steid and mony proude palfray. 11,600  
 Quho had bene thair that tyme for till haif sene  
 So knichtlie kneilling as wes thame betuene,  
 So hamelie hailsing and so ornat speich,  
 Thair laureat langage neidit nocht ane leich ;  
 Thair goldin toungis in rethorik did fleit 11,605  
 With sugrit sermone rycht swaue and sweit.  
 Quhen euerilk freik hes fangit him ane feir,  
 This king Galdus than said as ze sall heir :  
 " Welcum," he said, "oure traistest freind of all,  
 " And best belouit, and euir moir be sall ; 11,610  
 " Oure hoip, oure traist, oure gude beleif in the  
 " Hes bene richt lang and zit I think salbe,

“ And in thy beirnes standand heir about,  
 “ Quhilk of thair bodie ar bayth bald and stout.  
 “ Throw 3ow we traist for to releuit be 11,615  
 “ Of seruitude and greit miseritie,  
 “ Of travell and trubill that we haif suffrit lang  
 “ Be the Romanis quhilk wirkis ws sic wrang.  
 “ And now I traist into oure goddis all,  
 “ Fortoun sum tyme sall mak thame for to fall, 11,620  
 “ And we haif thame haill victor for to be ;  
 “ So gude beleif,” he said, “ we haif in the.”  
 Quhen that king Galdus had said till him so,  
 Meklie agane than said this ilk Gildo :  
 “ Excelland prince, thow may rycht weill beleve 11,625  
 “ My purpois is as I think for to preif,  
 “ In gude or ill efter my facultie,  
 “ With all power and possibilitie,  
 “ In word and werk ay for to wirk 3our will,  
 “ And for that caus I am cuming 3ow till 11,630  
 “ Aganis the Romanis revis 3ow 3our rycht.  
 “ Traist weill,” he said, “ and I had strenth or mycht  
 “ As I haif will, 3e suld revengit be  
 “ Of tha catevis full of crudelitie.  
 “ Beleif,” he said, “ that it sall ay be so, 11,635  
 “ Out of this warld quhill I be maid till go.”

HOW GALDUS AND GARMARDUS CONVOYIT THIR  
 DAYNIS TO THE TOUN, AND SYNE GART BRING  
 THAIR SCHIPPIS ABOUT TO FORFAIR FOR MOIR  
 SECURITIE.

Quhen this wes said, tha kingis of renoun  
 Talkand thai raid togidder to the toun,  
 Hand for hand rycht hamelie he and he,  
 Remanit thair syne dayis tua or thre. 11,640  
 Syne efterwart, for greit danger and dout,  
 Thair schippis all thai haif gart bring about

On till Forfair thair till remane and byde,  
 Col. 2. Quhilk wes ane toum into that tyme of pryde. 11,645  
 And in that toum thir tua kingis thair la,  
 With secreit counsall ay on da be da,  
 For till aduiss quhat best is till be done ;  
 So at the last thair haif concludit sone,  
 Out of ane strenth that no man than suld steir,  
 Quhill passit wes the winter of that zeir. 11,650  
 In symmer syne quhen softar wes the air,  
 The woddis grene and all the feildis fair,  
 With hail power than for to tak the plane,  
 And to reskew thair landis all agane.  
 To this counsall consentit gude and ill : 11,655  
 With king Garmard this ilk Gildo baid still.  
 Galdus the king into Atholia  
 Baid with thame all come fra Ybernia,  
 With greit blythnes quhill winter passit by,  
 In sport and play and plesand company. 11,660

HOW AGRICOLA IN SYMMER CAUSIT ALL HIS  
 SCHIPPIS TO CONVENE TOGIDDER AND PAS  
 ABOUT SCOTLAND.

Quhen winter went, and symmer syne drew neir,  
 Agricola he hes gart spy and speir  
 Ouir all the cost, in euerie port and raid,  
 Quhair all his schippis in that winter baid ; 11,665  
 And bade thame sone that thair suld reddie be  
 But ony baid and boum thame to the se,  
 And for to meit within ane lytill quhile,  
 Syne altogidder pas about the yle.  
 Expertlie als about thame for to spy  
 All firth and flude ay as thair passit by ; 11,670  
 The quantitie also of euerie yle,  
 The lenth and breid, and als how mony myle  
 That cuerilk yle that tyme la fra the land,  
 And for to noit all farleis that thair fand ;

And keip the se that nane suld fle away, 11,675  
 Syne for to meit him at Moravia.  
 At his command tha take the se ilkone,  
 Syne north about the narrest way is gone,  
 Endlang by Lorne and als Lochqhabria,  
 Throw all the ylis sailland to and fra. 11,680  
 Quhilis on se, and quhilis on [the] land,  
 Greit spulze maid of all thing that tha fand ;  
 Rycht lang sailling thai<sup>1</sup> maid baith da and nycht,  
 Of Orkna quhill that thai come in sycht.  
 And quhen thai knew so greit perrell it wes, 11,685  
 Throw Pechtland Furth without ane gyde to pas,  
 Into ane yle thair befor thame fand  
 The best schipman that wes in all that land,  
 Oft throw that firth had saillit to and fro,  
 In thair schippis thai maid thame for till go, 11,690  
 And rycht greit tretie maid him in that tyde,  
 Out throw the firth thame saiffie for till gyde ;  
 Quhill at the last thai take the gyde on hand,  
 But ony stop thai gart thame vnderstand,  
 On throw the firth that thai suld gyde thame 11,695  
 frie,  
 Without perrell on to the greit mayne se.  
 Ane vther way thai had than in thair heid ;  
 Tha thoct rycht weill that warit war the deid  
 To drowne thame all so mekill wrang had wrocht,  
 Of thair awin self that tyme thai raikit nocht. 11,700  
 The saillis all thai gart thame draw to top,  
 Sayand to thame that thai suld find na stop  
 In all that firth quhill thai war passit throw.  
 Syne as the flude begouth for till reflow,  
 Baith bark and barge, and vtheris grit and small, 11,705  
 Quhair that the perrell grittest wes of all,  
 Tha led thame in with musall, fuk, and mane,  
 Quhill be no way thai mycht returne agane.

Lib.4,f.58b.  
 Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.

The flude so forcie<sup>1</sup> that ran by the sand,  
 And contra tyde rynnand fra land to land, 11,710  
 The schippis draif on forland and on craigis,  
 And maid thame all that tyme to ryve in ragis;  
 Rycht mony sunk vpone the schald that rave,  
 The laif ilkone vpoun the craigis clave.  
 Into that tyme thair chaipit ferlie few, 11,715  
 Bot tua or thrie that fra the perrell drew,  
 Quhill that thai knew ane better tyme and tyde;  
 They wer suspect that same tyme of thair gyde.  
 Thir gydis all, the quhilk culd sowme sa weil,  
 Saiffit thame self fra drowning euery deill: 11,720  
 Rycht fast thai leuche quhen tha come to the land,  
 Seand the schippis sinkand on the sand.  
 The Romanis than quhilk wer in sic dispair,  
 Sum vpone plank and vther sum on air,  
 As fortoun wes come levand to the land; 11,725  
 And quhen the Scottis levand thair thame fand,  
 Sum that thai slew and sum drowne in the flude,  
 And vther sum put in vile seruitude.  
 That Romane navin maid sic wratchit end  
 In Pechtland Firth, the quhilk wes rycht weil 11,730  
 kend.

HOW JULIUS AGRICOLA GART BIG ANE BRIG OF  
 TRE OUIR THE WATTER OF TAY BESYID  
 COLENUM.

This Roman legat, Jule Agricola,  
 Quhair he remanit on the water of Ta,  
 Out of the wod rycht mony tre hes brocht,  
 Syne quietlie with wrichtis he hes wrocht  
 Amang thame self that tyme rycht secretlie, 11,735  
 Attour the flude ane stalwart brig of tre;  
 That wes weil wone with mony staik and stowr,  
 Quhair that his ost but perrell mycht pas ouir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *fercie*.

In sindrie pairtis syne about that brig,  
 Of stane and tymmer strenthis hes gart big, 11,740  
 And stuffit thame with mony weirmen wycht,  
 To keip that brig and walk vpon the nycht;  
 For all that tyme that it suld tak na skayth  
 Of Scot and Pecht, the quhilk that thai dred bayth.  
 Syne with his ost and his gydis ar gone, 11,745  
 Neirby the fut of the Mont Grampione,  
 Quhilk callit is, befor as it wes wont  
 In generall our all, the Scottis Mont. Col. 2.  
 Besyde ane flude, vpon ane plesand plane,  
 Thair he tuke purpois for to remane. 11,750

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS SEND ANE HERAULD  
 TO GALDUS, AND SCHEW HIM THAT AGRICOLA  
 WES CUM OUR TAY.

The king of Pechtis, that tyme quhair he la  
 With all his lordis in Arestia,  
 Quhen that he knew rycht weil and vnderstude  
 Agricola wes passit our the flude,  
 Ane herald sone to king Galdus he send, 11,755  
 That of his cuming hes maid till him kend.  
 And quhen king Galdus sic thing vnderstude,  
 Convenit hes with ane greit multitude  
 Of mony berne, that weil durst byde thair bost,  
 Fourtie thousand he had into his ost, 11,760  
 Out-throw the mont quhill he come to the plane,  
 Quhair this king Garmard that tyme did remane,  
 With him Gildo he had that samin da,  
 Neirby the place quhair that the Romanis la.  
 Quhen that thir princes met vpoun the plane, 11,765  
 That euerie freik wes of his fallow fane,  
 In counsall all togidder syne is gone,  
 Bayth king and knycht witht vther mony one.  
 Efter lang speiking than of mony thing,  
 Amang thame all this nobill Galdus king, 11,770

To quhome that tyme the haill gouerning thai gaif,  
 Of all that oist the senzeorie to haif,  
 At his awin will to gyde vnder his wand,  
 And thai to be all tyme at his command ;  
 With countenance als meik as ony maid, 11,775  
 Befoir thame all on this same wyss he said :

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE ORESOUN THAT GALDUS MAID  
 BEFOIR ALL THE MULTITUDE, QUHEN HE WES  
 MAID GREIT GOVERNOURE OF ALL THE AL-  
 BIONIS.

“ The ma causis of battell that we se,  
 “ The mair apperance is of oure libertie  
 “ In Albione grantit with goddis all,  
 “ The quhilk sall mak the Romanis for to fall 11,780  
 “ Rycht sone,” he said, “ and be<sup>1</sup> sua far at vnder,  
 “ Till all this warld quhill that tha be ane blunder.  
 “ Thair is no wicht so plesand and perfyte  
 “ Ma satisfie thair gredie appetyte ;  
 “ Nor zit na riches ma gar thame cry ho, 11,785  
 “ Ouir all this warld so gredilie thai go,  
 “ Riches to reif, and landis for to wyn,  
 “ Fra this fals warld as thai suld neur twyn.  
 “ For all this warld, bayth be land and se,  
 “ Tha haif this tyme in thair captiuitie, 11,790  
 “ Throw dreid and aw, far rather than for lufe,  
 Lib. 4, f. 59. “ The quhilk richt sone I traist efter sall pruf.  
 Col. 1. “ For aw and dreid, ze ma weill vnderstand,  
 “ Of cheritie is ane vnsicker band :  
 “ Quhen dreid hapnis to fail in ony caice, 11,795  
 “ Than greit haitrent succedis in his place,  
 “ And all thir thingis dois now signifie  
 “ Greit apperance of our victorie  
 “ Of the Romanis, quhilk ar so far fra hame,  
 “ Now thocht tha flie is nane to say thame 11,800  
 schame,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hc.*



“ Wyfe nor man, freind nor ony vther,  
 “ Ant or eme, sister or zit bruther;  
 “ Ane man to flie will think bot lytill rak,  
 “ Quhair na man is to speik of him greit lak.  
 “ Lo quhair tha ly includit round about 11,805  
 “ With wod and watter, quhair thai may nocht win out;  
 “ Bot at oure will, how lang that euir it be,  
 “ Closit thai ar in oure captiuitie.  
 “ Oure goddis hes thame festnit in zone band,  
 “ At thair plesour to put thame in oure hand. 11,810  
 “ I zow beseik,” he said, “ with greit effect,  
 “ To tak na terrour of zone vane effect  
 “ Of<sup>1</sup> glitterand gold that ze se on thair geir,  
 “ Or schynand siluer that now on thame thai weir.  
 “ Zone ma nocht saif thair bodie with ane 11,815  
     snude,  
 “ Nor zit dow nocht of ws for to draw blude.”  
 Far mair he said na I will now reheress,  
 So langsum wer<sup>2</sup> to me to put in verss.  
 Quhen this wes said, thai bernis bald and stout,  
 For blythnes than thai sang all with ane schout 11,820  
 Into that steid with sic ane stalwart stevin,  
 Quhill that thair noyes rang vp to the hevin.  
 This wes thair sang, gif I richt wnderstude;  
 “ O thow flour of knychtheid! O thow Galdus the  
     gude!  
 “ Oure law, oure lyfe, oure libertie and land, 11,825  
 “ Oure hoip, oure heill, is all into thi hand.  
 “ Heir we beseik,” tha said, “ oure<sup>3</sup> godis all,  
 “ That thow this tyme sa fair fertoun befall,  
 “ That throw thi strenth and greit nobilitie,  
 “ All Albione be maid for to leve frie.” 11,830  
 And thus thai sang in mony royall rout,  
 With greit laser, and mony rycht loud schout.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *on*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *now*.| <sup>3</sup> In MS. *thair*.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE ORESOUN THAT JULIUS AGRICOLA  
MAID TO THE ROMANIS BEFOIR THE  
FEILD.

This Romane legat, Jul[e] Agricola,  
Persauit that rycht weill thair quhair he la  
Thair greit blythnes, and thair ardent desyr, 11,835  
Als ferce to fecht as thai war ony fyre.  
Thairfoir but lat, that tyme he wes nocht liddir,  
His captanis all hes gart convene togidder,  
Syne in the presens of thame all in feir,  
He said to thame as I sall schaw  $\text{zow}$  heir, 11,840  
Ilk word by word withoutin variance,  
Evin as he said with all the circumstance:  
" My freindis all, the quhilk ar present heir,  
"  $\text{Ze}$  knaw," he said, " this is the auchtane  $\text{zeir}$   
" Of oure cuming this tyme into Britane, 11,845  
Col. 2. " Quhair we haif dantit mony nobill man,  
" And mony landis subdewit [hes] and wyn,  
" The quhilk to rackin now I will begin.  
" Remember first in Ordolutia,  
" Mona, Brigance, and Saluria, 11,850  
" Suppois tha pepill war bayth strang and stout,  
" We maid thame sone rycht lawlie for to lout.  
" The king of Pechtis under speir and schield  
" Rycht forsely we wan him thryss in feild,  
" And gart him flie out of his awin land, 11,855  
" And  $\text{zit}$  sensyne he maid ws no ganestand.  
"  $\text{Zone}$  king Galdus that makis all this schoir,  
"  $\text{Ze}$  knaw  $\text{zour}$  self this  $\text{zeir}$  bigane befoir  
" Rycht preualie on ws ane feild he staw,  
" Trowand sensyne of him we stand sic aw. 11,860  
" No caus thair is for [ $\text{ze}$ ] to be agast,  
"  $\text{Ze}$  war befar in mair perrell bipast;  
" And  $\text{zit}$   $\text{ze}$  knaw hes win rycht weill awa,  
" So sall we now [agane] this samin da.

“ Zone folk fra ws rycht oft befoir hes fled, 11,865  
 “ Qubairfoir as now thai neid nocht to be dred.  
 “ Zone blait barbouris, but armour and but geir,  
 “ But wit, wisdom, or prattik into weir,  
 “ Far<sup>1</sup> eith tha ar now at this tyme to win :  
 “ The feild is ouris or we battell begin.” 11,870  
 Of this talking so greit curage thai take,  
 All dred and dreddour in that tyme forsuik ;  
 But ony stop siclyke or tha wald stint,  
 Als ferce to fecht as fyre out of the flynt.

HOW AGRICOLA, SEAND THE ALBIONIS OF SIC  
 POWER, ARRAYIT ALL HIS MEN WITHIN ANE  
 STRENTHT.

Agricola quhen he [than] vnderstude 11,875  
 The Albionis wer of sic multitude,  
 Arrayit hes his men within ane strentht  
 Qubair thai mycht ly into rycht litill lenth,  
 On euerie syde quhair tha wer out of dout  
 Of ony battell to cum thame about. 11,880  
 This king Galdus thairof did him begyle,  
 For euerilk wrink thair hes he fund ane wyle.  
 He set his feild furth on ane rowmar plane,  
 Qubair euerie grume mycht gang vther forgane ;  
 Ane wyng also he set in euerie syde, 11,885  
 With thame till ga rycht mony gudlie gyde ;  
 Syne streikit standartis heiche vpon the hevin.  
 Of trumpettis, tabernis, stalwart wes the stevin,  
 The clarione clinkit with ane mirrie cheir,  
 The bugillis blast wes hiddeous for till heir. 11,890  
 Thair stryvand stremaris wrocht all of greit gold wyre,  
 Thair browdin baneris flammand like the fyre,  
 Thair pensallis payntit all of sindrie hew,  
 Agane the schyning of the sone thai schew.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *For.*

Thair basnetis brycht as on[y] bureall stone, 11,895  
 Circulit with sapheris as the siluer schone;  
 Thair coit armour of most courtlie hew,  
 Lib.4,f.59b. With rubeis reid and mony saphair blew,  
 Col. 1. With poleist peirle depantit our throw pryde,  
 And birneist gold bordourit throw bak and syde. 11,900  
 Ane fairar sicht befor saw neur man  
 Off Adames seid, sen that the warld began.

HOW THE BOWMEN OF ALBIONE INTERIT IN THE  
 FEILD, AND HOW AGRICOLA SEND MEN IN  
 LEG HARNES TO BREK THAME.

Off Albione the bowmen strang and stuir,  
 Onto the feild befor on fute thai fuir  
 With bowis big, quhilk war of nobill tre, 11,905  
 Bayth stark and teuch and of thair schutting fre,  
 And felloun flanis heidit with hard steill,  
 Bayth greit and lang fedderit to flie rycht weill,  
 And on the Romanis lousit sone ane ficht,  
 And thoct<sup>1</sup> tha war bayth stalwart, stout and 11,910  
 wycht,  
 Tha gart thame wink that tyme in weir to se,  
 Quhill that the blude hes blindit mony ee.  
 Thair followit syne ane vther in the tail,  
 That scharper wer nor ony schour or hail,  
 Throw all thair weid tha wrocht thame wondis 11,915  
 wyde,  
 And schoudaris sair with mony sowand syde.  
 Agricola, quhen he saw it wes so,  
 His leg harnes than hes he maid till go,  
 With lang speiris and mony targe and scheid,  
 To brek the bowmen schot into the feild. 11,920  
 With targis that war braid, and speiris that wer  
 lang,  
 Tha enterit in sone into the thickest thrang,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *this*.

And erwell counter at thair cuming maid.  
 The bowmen still zit at thair bikker baid,  
 And of thair schutting lute the Romanis feill 11,925  
 Tha maid na stynt, but out-throw all thair steill,  
 Quhill that the schaftis schuke all into schunder,  
 Als reid as roiss the blude birst out wes vnder.  
 With targis braid, and mony glitterand scheild,  
 The Romanis ruddie ruschit in the feild. 11,930  
 The bowmen than to byde it wes na bute,  
 Tha had no lasar langar for to schute,  
 That force it was to lat thair bowis faw,  
 With buklaris braid brycht brandis out to draw ;  
 And faucht so lang quhill thair wer neir con- 11,935  
     foundit,  
 Mony war slane and mony deiddie woundit.  
 Thair waponis waldin war nocht worth ane myte,  
 So blunt thair war on basnet wald nocht byte ;  
 Leicht as ane leif, and waldin as ane wand,  
 At euerilk straik tha faldit to thair hand. 11,940

HOW KING GALDUS, SEAND HIS ARCHARIS IN SIC  
 DISTRES, SEND THAME RYCHT SONE SUPPLE.

This king Galdus persauit that rycht weill :  
 Richt stalwart men with stiff axis of steill,  
 Buskit for battell all in till breith hew,  
 He send richt sone his archearis to reskew ;  
 Quhilk enterit sone into the thickest thrang, 11,945 Col. 2.  
 And rappit<sup>1</sup> on quhill all the ruvis rang.  
 At that counter full mony Romane knyght  
 Vpone the land full law wes maid to lycht ;  
 With greit axis, weill grundin of hard steill,  
 Rycht mony kniecht tha leirit thame to kneill. 11,950  
 The speiris lang, that wer bayth scharpe and squair,  
 In splendaris sprang aboue thame in the air ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *rappand*.

So mony burdoun vpone basnetis brak,  
 Quhill mony berne wes laid vpone his bak.

HOW THE ROMANIS WAR IN RYCHT GREIT PER-  
 RELLE QUHILL JULIUS AGRICOLA RESISTIT THE  
 SCOTTIS.

Agricola, than sone and suddantlie, 11,955  
 Ane new battell wes reddie buskit by,  
 Of nobill men duelt in Germania,  
 Pertrebit war into Britania,  
 Of stabill men that wer bayth stout and strang,  
 Agricola hes maid thame for till gang 11,960  
 Rycht suddanelie his men for to reskew:  
 At thair cuming the battell did renew.  
 The Romanis had bene maid to rew for ay,  
 And all thair strenth had stanchit bene that day,  
 Had nocht the Almanis sonner with supplie 11,965  
 Reskewit thame into that mad mellie.  
 Tha enterit sone into the strangest stour,  
 And dogitlie, with mony dyntis dour,  
 Rycht dourlie than ilk on vther dang.  
 The Albionis that fochtin had so lang 11,970  
 Into the feild, as ze haif hard befor,  
 So irkit war skantlie mycht thai moir.  
 Zit neurtheles, quhen thai the perrell knew,  
 Thair greit curage thair strenthis did renew,  
 And ardent will, that leit thame feill no pane, 11,975  
 Gart thame grow fresche as ony eill agane,  
 And stoutlie straik with greit curage on new,  
 Vpon thair basnetis hardalie did hew.  
 Thair freikis fell with mony forcie<sup>1</sup> flap,  
 Quhill ruvis raif and steill stapillis out lap; 11,980

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *ferie*.

Helme and hewmont wer hewin in schunder,  
 And heid and halss all hakkit that wes vnder ;  
 Lymmis war lachit hard of be the kne,  
 Hanchis wer hewin hingand by the thie ;  
 Sydis wer schorne with cruell waponis kene, 11,985  
 Quhill all the bowellis birst out on the grene ;  
 Chowppis wer choppit of hard be the chin,  
 Baith heid and [h]als hewin war in twyn ;  
 The brandis bryecht batht in vthers blude,  
 Into that stour so stiffie that thai stude. 11,990  
 Wes neuir sene with na berne that wes borne  
 So fell ane faucht fyve hundreth 3eir beforne ;  
 Nocht into Perss with knichtis curious,  
 Quhen Alexander slew king Darius ;  
 No 3it in Troy, quhen that the ferce Hector 11,995 Lib. 4, f. 60.  
 Fechtand wes slane, quhilk wes of sic honor ; Col. 1.  
 Nor 3it in Aphrik, weill I wat also,  
 Quhen that the Romanis seigit Carthago.  
 Greit Julius, that wes of Romanis flour,  
 In till his tyme stude neuir in sic ane stour. 12,000  
 The Romanes faucht with prattik and with slicht,  
 The Albionis with strenth, force and mycht.  
 This king Galdus, [quhilk] wes bayth strang and stout,  
 Till all his captanis he raid round about,  
 And till his men quhair tha faucht in the feild, 12,005  
 Exhortand thame, quhill thai nicht waponis weild,  
 Think on thair land, thair lyfe and libertie,  
 And of the Romanis to revengit be.  
 At his command so greit curage thai tuke,  
 That euerie berne, quhill he his lyfe mycht 12,010  
 bruke,  
 Into that feild he thoct farair to de,  
 Out of that feild ane fute or he wald fle.

HOW KING GALDUS AND JULIUS AGRICOLA FAUCHT  
 QUHILL THE NYCHT DEPARTIT THAME, AND  
 MONY SLANE ON ILK SYDE.

Agrecola, fra that he vnderstude  
 So mekill spilt wes of the Romane blude,  
 Ane new battell buskit in armour bricht, 12,015  
 Of mony berne that wes baith bald and wycht,  
 And with him self ane refuge for till be  
 Till all the laif that hapnit for to fle,  
 To keip ane mister gif thair had bene neid.  
 Thir weirreouris into thair weirlie weid, 12,020  
 With scheildis braid,<sup>1</sup> and speiris that war lang,  
 He gart thame enter in the thickest thrang.  
 The battell than richt baldlie did renew,  
 Ilk on vther hardelie did hew,  
 Tha beirnes bald with mony bitter blaw, 12,025  
 Quhill that the fyre like ony flynt outflaw;  
 Thair scheildis rave and all thair speiris brak,  
 With sic ane thude evin lyke ane thunder crak.  
 The Albionis, als strang as ony aik,  
 Baldlie thai baid and ryecht stoutlie tha straik; 12,030  
 For na mellie the Romanis doucht to mak,  
 Ane fit on force nicht gar thame pas abak.  
 The Albionis so lytill armour hed,  
 And in thair cors naikit wer vneled,  
 Without waponis or vther weirlie weid, 12,035  
 That causit thame ryecht off the war to speid.  
 The Romanis war weill graithit in thair geir,  
 With all wapin that neidfull war in weir;  
 And with sic ordour to battell ar thai gone  
 Als euill to brek as ony wall of stone, 12,040  
 Nocht ane fra vther in the feild wes sene.  
 As Albionis had thai als naikit bene,  
 That stalwart stour, that wes sa stif and strang,  
 Ryecht weill I wait had nocht lestit so lang.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *scharpe*.



Stone still thai faucht fra morne at hour [of] 12,045  
 nyne

Quhill that the sone begouth for to declyne ; Col. 2.  
 And quhen tha saw the da wes neir hand gone,  
 With greit curage, and sic desyre ilkone  
 Of ilk partie for till draw vtheris blude,  
 Into that stour so stranglie that thai stude, 12,050  
 Greit wounder wes other till heir or se,  
 Sen man wes maid, of sic ane mad<sup>1</sup> mellie.  
 The Albionis quhen that thair wapynis brak,  
 So laith tha war that tyme to tak ane lak,  
 Togidder ran, als round as ony roit, 12,055  
 And thrang thair thowmes in the Romanis throt.  
 The laif siclyke that fell into the feild,  
 Vpoun the Romanis quhair that thai lay keild,  
 Then with thair teith thai bait thame quhair tha la,  
 So greit invy at thame tha had that da. 12,060  
 Stone still tha faucht als lang as tha had lycht,  
 Quhill da wes gone and cumin wes the nycht ;  
 Out of the feild neuir ane of thame wald flie,  
 Quhill it wes lait tha mycht na langar se.  
 With mekill skaith, but ony schame or lak, 12,065  
 Than<sup>2</sup> bayth the pairteis passit hes abak ;  
 Fra tha mycht nocht ane freind ken be ane fa,  
 That causit thame out of the feild to ga.

TWENTIE THOUSAND WAR SLANE OF ALBIONIS AND  
 DANIS, WITH THAIR CAPTANE GILDO, AND  
 XII. THOWSAND ROMANIS.

This battell wes rycht bludie to thame bayth,  
 On euerie syde tha gat so mekle skayth ; 12,070  
 Twentie thousand that worthie war and wycht  
 Of Albionis war slane that samin nycht ;

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *maid*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *That*.

And of the Danis deit thair also,  
 With thair captane the nobill gude Gildo :  
 Tuelf thousand als vpoun the tother syde, 12,075  
 With mony prince that mekill wes of pryde.  
 This king Galdus, that tyme quhair that he la,  
 Gart fyris mak all nycht quhill it wes da.  
 The pepill come fra euerie pairt about,  
 Fra hand to hand rydand in mony rout, 12,080  
 Euirilkone efter thair freind to speir ;  
 Amang thame than thair wes ane bailfull beir  
 Of wemen wod, out of thair wit gane wyld,  
 Sum for hir husband, and vther sum for hir chyld.  
 Sum maid greit beir baith for father and bruther, 12,085  
 Sum for ane, and vther sum for other,  
 Quhill all the camp wes in ane cairfull cry,  
 With rude rumour that rang vp to the sky.

HOW GALDUS CAUSIT ALL HIS MEN TO SING, THAT  
 THE ROMANIS SOULD NOCHT HEIR THE LAMEN-  
 TATIONE OF THE COMMOUN PEPILL.

Quhen Galdus hard tha maid so hiddeous beir,  
 So red he wes that the Romanis suld heir ; 12,090  
 Thair buglis baldlie than he hes gart blaw,  
 Lib.4.f.60b. Trumpettis and talburnis red vp all on raw,  
 Col. 1. And euerilk man intill ane sindrie tune  
 Ane sang of solace hes gart sing rycht sone.  
 And so thai did all with ane voce full cleir, 12,095  
 That all the Romanis did thair noyis heir,  
 Quhill all the wemen in ane lytill space  
 Removit war richt far out of that place.  
 In counsall syne togidder all ar gone,  
 Baith king and king with vtheris mony one. 12,100  
 Into that counsall, as it wes weill knawin,  
 Full mony resson in the tyme war schawin,  
 By sic exempill as thai had sene beforene,  
 To leve the feild and nocht fecht on the morne.

For Galdus wes that tyme so full of cair 12,105  
 For gude Gildo that thai had loisit thair,  
 And mony mo that mekill wer to mene,  
 The bitter teiris birst fra baith his ene;  
 For than his mynd so mekill than wes marrit,  
 And fo[r] that caus the feild wes than deferrit, 12,110  
 Quhill efterwart thair strenthis nicht renew,  
 And zyoung childer to grittar stature grew.  
 This king Galdus, and king Garmard also,  
 With euerilk Dene and mony vther mo,  
 Tha tuke the mont ane lytill forrow da, 12,115  
 And all the laif thai gart gang hame thair wa;  
 Levit part into the feild all nicht,  
 To heit the fyris and gar thame burne rycht brycht,  
 And hornis blaw all nycht quhill it wes da,  
 Syne on the morne that thai suld cum thair wa. 12,120

HOW THE ROMANIS STUDE ALL NYCHT VPONE THAIR  
 FEIT IN ARRAY, BYDAND BATTELL QUHILL ON  
 THE MORNE.

The Romanis stude all nycht into the feild,  
 In all thair armour baith with speir and scheidl,  
 Into gude ordour rayit weill at richt,  
 Bydand battell quhen the da wes licht.  
 Syne on the morne, quhen that the da wes cleir, 12,125  
 Tha saw na thing about thame far or neir,  
 Man or beist appeirand thair that da,  
 Bot deid bodeis into the feild that la.  
 Thairof the Romanis tuke rycht sone consait,  
 That that wes done throw tressone and dissait; 12,130  
 Trowand king Galdus maid all for ane trane,  
 Without ordour to draw [thame] on the plane.  
 And vther sum, that wes no thing agast,  
 Stark counsall gaif to follow on thame fast,  
 Quhair euir thai fled that thai suld follout be, 12,135  
 Trowand that tyme for feuenes thai did fle.

Fywe thousand men that waldin wer and wucht,  
 All vpoune fit than passit our the hicht,  
 Without chiftane, followand on the chace,  
 Heir and thair in mony sindrie place, 12,140  
 Our craig and cleuche in mony sindrie glen ;  
 Or euir tha wist, king Galdus and his men  
 Quhair that tha h set on thame with ane schout,  
 And with ane clap hes cloisit thame about.  
 Fecht gif thai wald that tyme tha mycht nocht 12,145  
 flie,

Thair wes no wane bot outhur do or die.  
 Col. 2. And so tha did vpoun that samin plane,  
 With small defence faucht quhill tha wer all slane.  
 Ane Scot on hors preikit to ane heicht,  
 Quhill that he come into the Romanis sicht, 12,150  
 In till ane place quhair that he saw thame ly,  
 He raid so neir quhill tha mycht heir him cry,  
 And with ane schout he schew thair all in plane,  
 Ilk word by word how that thair men wes slane.  
 Agricola thairof lykit full ill, 12,155  
 Zit neurtheles as than he held him still ;  
 Suppois he wes commouit in his thoct,  
 Think quhat he wald as than he said rycht nocht.  
 And quhen he knew na perrell in that tyde,  
 Onto the feild richt softlie he did ryde, 12,160  
 And all the spulze tuke with him awa,  
 Syne passit hes on till Orestia :  
 Thair with his men all winter for till byde,  
 Quhill thai war haillit of thair woundis wyde.

HOW IT WES SCHAWIN TO JULIUS BE MEN THAT  
 COME FRA ARGATILIUM THAT ALL HIS SCHIPPIS  
 WER DROUND.

Sone efter syne, within ane lytill quhile, 12,165  
 Sic word till him [hes] come out of Argyle,

Fra his schippis that new wer cumin hame,  
 That all the laif wer drownit in to the fame  
 Be greit perrell that tyme in Pechtland Firth,  
 Trowand throw gydis to haif gottin girth;      12,170  
 Into that place thair wer thair perreist all  
 With storme and streme, with mekill wynd and wall;  
 And how thair gydis did thame all begyle,  
 That thair befor thame fand in till ane yle,  
 Evin word be word the veritie he schew.      12,175  
 Agricola, quhilk changit nocht his hew  
 Na countenance, quhen that he hard that tald,  
 With blumand vult vnabasit rycht bald,  
 And lauchand luke, as he had ailit nocht,  
 Rycht litill said quhat cuir wes in his thocht.      12,180  
 Zit neurtheles he thocht into his mynd,  
 Fortoun to him wes growand rycht vnkynd;  
 So mony men had dround vpon the se,  
 And mony slane befor at the mellie,  
 He dred full soir efter it sould be war,      12,185  
 Quhen he saw Fortoun fail to him so far.  
 And zit he thocht with Fortoun for till stryve,  
 Rycht mony schip agane gart grayth belyue,  
 With men and meit and gydis gude ar gone,  
 Syne set thair cours about all Albione.      12,190  
 The wind wes fair and seruit thame rycht weil,  
 And all thair gydis had ane fell gude feill;  
 Syne throw the Ylis saillit nycht and da,  
 Quhill that thair come in sicht of Orkna,  
 Throw Pantland Firth to row and saill also,      12,195  
 With thair gydis than wer tha maid till go,  
 But ony perrell tha war all fred rycht fre,  
 Syne set thair cours out-throw the greit mayne se.  
 Quhill efterwart, vpon ane vther da,  
 They come syne quhair thir Danis schippis la;      12,200  
 They take the best than at thair awin desyir,      Lib. 4, f. 61.  
 And all the laif thair brint in till ane fyre.      Col. 1.

HOW SCHIPPIS WAR SENE IN ALBIONE IN THE AIR  
SALAND, AND SICLYIK ARMIT MEN FECHTAND  
IN THE AIR.

Lang forrow this now that ze heir me mene,  
In Albione greit farleis thair wes sene.  
Calidone wod, ane wynter nycht all throw, 12,205  
Ouir all partis birnand in ane low ;  
And mony nycht, quhen the wadder wes fair,  
Ane schip wes sene saling in the air.  
In Athole als thair fell into ane place  
Ane schour of stonis in till ane weill lang space ; 12,210  
Rycht so siclyke into Arestia,  
Ane schour of paddokis fell vpone ane da ;  
And sindrie syis wes sene vpoun the nycht,  
Lyke<sup>1</sup> birnand fyre in curage mony knicht  
Into the air fechtand with greit force, 12,215  
In rayit battell baith on fit and hors.  
Quhat all thir thingis than suld signifie,  
I gif na cuir sen tha ar passit by :  
Bot to my purpois forder will I ga,  
And tell the laif of Jul[e] Agricola. 12,220

HOW GUDE VERTUOUS MEN AR AY INVYIT BE  
VITIOUS MEN, AND OFTYMES BE THAME DIS-  
TROYIT.

As that he dred, rycht sone it come till hand ;  
Harkin and heir that ze ma vnderstand.  
Tha virtuous men thai ar invyit ay,  
Quhat euir thai be that dar I hardlie say,  
Be vitious men that may nocht clym so hie 12,225  
Into the branchis of nobillitie.  
For quhen thai heir thair greit honour and fame  
Maid publicat, and eik thair nobill name,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Liand*.

And thair awin self than with no man set by,  
 That is the causs that than tha haif invy. 12,230  
 Rycht as the sone quhen that it schynis bricht,  
 That of the mone obscuris all the licht;  
 Rycht so ane man of vertew and gude name,  
 Of vitious men obfukkis all the fame.  
 And be this causs ze ma rycht weill wit quhy 12,235  
 At vertuous men rycht mony hes invy.  
 This same exempill that ze heir me sa,  
 May weill be said be gude Agricola,  
 That in his tyme of all Romanis wes flour,  
 In Albione quhilk conquaist greit honour, 12,240  
 Our all the warld as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 The quhilk invy brocht till sa wratchit end.

HOW DOMITIANUS THE EMPRIoure SEND FOR  
 JULIUS TO ROME, AND SYNE GART SLAY HIM  
 WITH TRESSONE.

In Rome that tyme ane emprioure wes than, Col. 2.  
 Quhilk to his name wes callit Domitiane.  
 And quhen he hard Agricolais fame 12,245  
 So far excellit aboue his awin name,  
 That tyme in Rome and vther landis by,  
 Thairat he had greit malice and invy;  
 And thocht rycht sone, gif that he mycht but blame,  
 For to distroy this Julius and his fame. 12,250  
 Ane messenger rycht sone he to him send,  
 Rycht fenzetlie with hartlie recommend,  
 Commandand him that he sould cum his wa;  
 For-quhy he said in till Asseria  
 That he behouit to remane and duell, 12,255  
 To stop that land that it sould nocht rebell.  
 Sone efter syne, quhen that he come till Rome,  
 As all men knew, be Domitianus dome  
 He poysonit wes but ony remeid,  
 And throw invy than sufferit hes the deid. 12,260

Efter the greit laubour lang and mony da,  
 That wes the end of gude Agricola.  
 Now to my purpos, quhair I left rycht now,  
 Heir will I pas and tell the laif to 3ow.

HOW THE EMPRIOUR SEND ANE LEGAT CALLIT CNEO  
 INTO BRITANE TO GOVERNE THE ROMANIS.

Than furth of Rome wes send ane legat than, 12,265  
 Cneo to name, to cum into Britane ;  
 Fra Cesar send be his auctoritie,  
 With mony knycht into his companie,  
 Long tyme befor Agricolais deid,  
 In Albione for to ring in his steid. 12,270  
 Ane man he left quhilk wes of nobill fame,  
 Trebelleus<sup>1</sup> he callit wes to name,  
 Auctoritie he had<sup>2</sup> rycht mony da  
 Of the Romanis wnder Agricola :  
 In Albione, baith be laud and se, 12,275  
 Of all his oist the lieutenand wes he.  
 Sone efter this, as my author did tell,  
 Ane greit discord betuix thir tua tha fell,  
 And all that stryfe wes for auctoritie,  
 Quhilk of thame tua most principall suld be. 12,280  
 The Romanis all that wer in Albione  
 Weill louit tha Trabellione ilkone,  
 For his fredome and liberalitie,  
 And haittit Cneo for his negartie.  
 And for this caus rycht oft thai maid discord, 12,285  
 Amang thame all wes nother knycht nor lord  
 That culd caus thame at gude concord to be ;  
 Richt lang tha stude at sic diuersitie.  
 Trebelion quhen he saw it wes sua,  
 With mony knycht he tuke his leif to ga 12,290

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS., and twice subsequently, | the initial letter is C.      <sup>2</sup> In MS. *hard*.



In Gallia, quhair he did still remane,  
And zit sensyne he come nocht thair agane.

HOW GALDUS, HEIRAND THE DISCORD AMANG THE  
ROMANIS, SPED HIM TO THE FEILD IN ALL  
HAIST.

Quhen this discord to king Galdus wes tald,  
Quhilk all his tyme wes bellicois and bald,  
He tuke na rest than langar to remane, 12,295  
With all his power passit hes richt plane  
Agane the Romanis in Arestia,  
With all thair power that tyme quhair tha la ;  
And with the power of the Pechtis togidder,  
Rycht sone in all haist thai sped thame bayth 12,300  
sone hidder.

Lib.4.f.61b.  
Col. 1.

HOW THE ROMANIS, SEAND CNEO SO ABASIT AND  
VNABILL TO THE FEILD, THA CHESIT ANE VTHIR  
NOBILL MAN CALLIT CECYNEUS, THE BRUTHER  
GERMANE OF TRABELLIO.

Quhen this Cneo hard of his cuming tald,  
Affrayit wes quhairfoir rycht mony fald ;  
For-quhy he knew richt weill and vnderstude  
With all the Romanis he wes rich[t] weill lude,  
And for that causs he wes in sic affray, 12,305  
That he wist nother quhat to do or say.  
And quhen the Romanis saw<sup>1</sup> him in that stait,  
So blunt ane berne so baisit and so blait,  
Ane vther chiftane haif tha chosin than,  
The bruther germane of Trabellian. 12,310  
Ane berne he wes withoutin ony blame,  
Cyceneus quhilk callit wes to name,  
And he rycht sone the senzeorie forsuik :  
On force Cneo till captane than tha tuke.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *sawin*.

And or tha war accordit of that thing, 12,315  
 Rycht suddanelie that nobill Galdus king  
 Come at thair hand with mekle boist and schoir,  
 And all his bowmen in the feild befoir.

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS, GALDUS, ARRAYIT  
 HIM TO THE FEILD AGANIS THE ROMANIS.

With baneris braid displayit vpon licht,  
 Flammand as Phebus with ane leivand lycht, 12,320  
 Thair staitlie standertis stikit in the air  
 Of fynest gold wer all our fret full fair.  
 The schalmes schouttit quhill the schawis schuik ;  
 The buglis blast reboundit fra the bruke ;  
 The clarione clynkit quhill the rochis rang, 12,325  
 And sic ane sound quhill that the mavis sang.  
 Thair basnatis brycht, lyke to the buriall brycht,  
 As ony siluer our the schaw tha schone als lycht.  
 The riche Romanis in thair royall weid,  
 With glitterand gold tha glemit as on gleid, 12,330  
 With mony perle that poleist wer perfite,  
 And diamantis deir mony dantie of delyte.  
 Thair cot armouris wer of ane hevinlie hew,  
 With rubeis reid and mony sapheir blew ;  
 Moir semelie sicht wes neur sene beforne 12,335  
 Into this erd sen ony man wes <sup>1</sup> borne.

Col. 2. HOW GALDUS GAIF BATTELL TO THE ROMANIS,  
 AND WAN THAME MANFULLIE, AND SLEW MONY  
 OF THAME.

Witht that the archearis tuke the feild befoir,  
 And scharplie schot the langar ay the moir.  
 Throw thair schutting that wes so scharpe and  
 snell,  
 Befoir thair face rycht mony freik thair fell. 12,340

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *wes wes*.

With speiris lang syne enterit in the feild,  
 So scharp thai war thair sauit thame no scheild ;  
 Throw all thair geir that glitterand wes ar gone,  
 Tha maid no baid quhill thai come to the bone.  
 The crwell Scottis tha war bayth stout and 12,345  
   strang,  
 Into the feild quhair thai saw thickest thrang,  
 Tha ruschit in with stif axis of steill,  
 And mony knycht than haif tha maid to kneill ;  
 And mony founder, and mony hes gart faw,  
 Wes none so big of thame mycht byde ane blaw. 12,350  
 As Fortoun wald, suppois scho fikkell be,  
 Vnstabill als without stabilitie,  
 Quhen eur scho list hir counter quheill to turne,  
 Sum for to lauch and vther sum for to murne ;  
 Rycht seindill lang scho standis in ane stait, 12,355  
 Quhen scho will turne, suppois that it be lait,  
 Scho makis ane man rycht lawlie for to lycht,  
 Quhome of befor scho set so hie on hicht.  
 This by the Romanis suithlie I now say,  
 Quhome on befor scho lewche sa mony day, 12,360  
 And now fra thame scho turnit hes hir face,  
 As previt weill in to that samin place.  
 So lang tha faucht thai wer confoundit all,  
 Mony on force that da wes maid to fall ;  
 And mony one vnto the deid wes dicht, 12,365  
 And all the laif on force put to the flycht.  
 Cyceneus in to that stalwart stonde,  
 Into his bodie buir mony werkand wound,  
 That in that battell no langer mycht byde,  
 That force it wes to flie into the tyde. 12,370  
 The Romanis hartis thocht tha war neuer so hie,  
 Tha fled ilkone quhen that thai saw him fle.

HOW GALDUS BLEW ANE TRUMPET TO CAUS HIS  
MEN TO LEIF CHAIS,<sup>1</sup> AND WALD NOCHT LEUE  
BOT FOLLOUIT AY QUHILL NYCHT.

The Albionis fast follout on the chace,  
 Quhair that thai fled to mony sindrie place  
 Without ordour, that tyme tha chaipit nane, 12,375  
 In ony pairt quhair tha mycht be our tane.  
 King Galdus than thairof he wes sone war,  
 Quhen<sup>1</sup> that he saw tha followit on so far,  
 Dreidand the Romanis than had sum reskew,  
 Lib. 4, f. 62. Quhairfoir ane trumpet hastelie he blew, 12,380  
 Col. 1. To gar thame byde and intill ordour draw.  
 Bot for na blast that tyme that he culd blaw,  
 Tha wald nocht byde als lang as tha had lycht,  
 Greit slauchter maid or cuming wes the nycht.  
 Into that chace far ma Romanis war slane 12,385  
 Na in the feild quhair tha faucht on the plane.  
 Our all the feild quhair that the Romanis fled,  
 Sa abundantlie thair of thair blude tha bled,  
 That euerie garth befoir that grew full grene,  
 Als reid as ross of Romanis blude wes sene. 12,390  
 The deid bodeis that la als deid vntald,  
 As euir did scheip that la intill ane fald.

HOW GALDUS THAT NYCHT HELD THE FEILD, GAR-  
 RAND BURNE MONY FYRIS, AND ALL THE PEPILL  
 THAIRABGUT COME TO HIM THAT NYCHT WITH  
 GREIT LOVING, SINGAND WITH HIM ALL THE  
 NYCHT OUR.

Quhen this wes done and cumin wes the nycht,  
 The Albionis than het the fyris bricht

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Quhat*.

Into thair tentis that tyme quhair tha la, 12,395  
 With dansing, singing, mekill sport and pla.  
 The trumpettis blew, the buglis maid greit beir,  
 With schalmes schill and mony clarioun cleir,  
 With lute and pype, witht harp and symphony,  
 Mellifuat than wes thair menstrallie. 12,400  
 Quhen euerilk ane playit in ane tune,  
 Thair melodie ascendit to the mone.  
 The madynis come in mony courtlie ring,  
 Sum for to dance and vther sum to sing,  
 With hevinlie voice that courtlie wes and cleir, 12,405  
 And thus tha sang, as I sall schaw ȝow heir.

HOW THE MADYNIS AND ALL VOTHER WEMEN MAID  
 SANGIS, AND SANG IN THE LOVING OF GALDUS.

“ O thow Galdus, the flour of knychtis all,  
 “ That is, or was, or in this world be sall !  
 “ Oure auefald freind, oure force and oure defence,  
 “ Vnmensurabill is thi magnificence. 12,410  
 “ Invinsall victour, full of laud and gloir,  
 “ Thy nobill name thairfoir sall lest euermoir.  
 “ Oure hoip, our heill, hes ay bene into the,  
 “ Oure law, oure land, oure lyfe and libertie,  
 “ Oure strangest strenth, and tour inexpugnabill, 12,415  
 “ With greit curage quhilk is incomparabill.  
 “ Loving mot be now to oure goddis all,  
 “ And thow Fortoun als fair mot the befall,  
 “ So blythlie blenkit on Galdus oure king,  
 “ And makis ws with sic solace to sing.” 12,420  
 And thus tha sang all nycht our till da,  
 With greit plesour in sporting and in pla.  
 Fra mony tempill that tyme to and fra  
 The preistis come to pater and to pra ;  
 On buik and bell thai red rycht fast and rang 12,425  
 Solempnitlie thair sacrifice and sang,

Into the loving of thair godis all,  
 With sound of sang quhilk wes celestiall.  
 And ay tha sang, " O gude Galdusoure king  
 " Loving be thow aboue all erthlie thing, 12,430  
 " Quhilk sufferit hes penuritie and pane,  
 " For till reskewoure libertie agane,  
 " Neir fiftie ȝeir, or thair about sa lang,  
 " Hes vexit bene with mekill weir and wrang,  
 " In dreid and dolour baith be da and nycht; 12,435  
 " And now we traist throw thi strenthis and mycht,  
 " Thy kinglie curage and nobilitie,  
 " Tha we ar fred and euir mair salbe fre."

HOW THE ROMANIS PASSIT OUR TAY ON THE  
 BRIG THAT THA BIGGIT BEFOIR, AND SYNE  
 KEST IT DOUN.

That samyn nycht quhair that the Romanis la,  
 Tha tuke purpois that tyme to pas awa; 12,440  
 Traistand nycht weil thaimicht nocht sicker be,  
 And thaila thair in sic greit jeopardie.  
 That samyn nycht tha passit les and moir  
 To Ta this brig that thaimaid befoir,  
 Besyde Beling befoir as I haif tald, 12,445  
 Syne our the brig thaimpassit ȝoung and ald.  
 Syne kest [it] doun that tyme baith stik and  
 stour,  
 That Albionis micht nocht follow thame our.  
 Syne on the morne, quhen it wes fair da lycht,  
 And blisfull Phebus blenkit vp full brycht, 12,450  
 This king Galdus on to the feildis is gone,  
 With lord and laird and all the laif ilkone.  
 The spulze all befoir him he gart bring,  
 Syne equallie devydit all that thing,  
 To euerie man than as he wes of vaill, 12,455  
 Efter his deid tha gaif him to his daill,

Rycht mony tent, and proude palzeone of pryce,  
 And coistlie clething wrocht at all devyce,  
 Sic as the Romanis vsit for till weir,  
 With gold and siluer and mekle vther geir, 12,460  
 With all kin riches maid wes in the mold,  
 The quhilk wes worth than fyve milzeoun of gold.  
 For all the riches that the Romanis wan  
 In Albione fra mony nobill man,  
 Tha tynt it all into that samin feild; 12,465  
 Ten thousand men of thame that da wes keild.

HOW GALDUS PROCLAMIT THAT ALL MAN SOULD  
 BE REDDIE ON THE THRID DAY TO FOLLOW  
 THE ROMANIS.

Decretit wes than bayth with ald and zing,  
 Proclomit syne with gude Galdus the king,  
 That euerilk man, als gudlie as he may,  
 Sould reddie be sone efter the thrid day, 12,470  
 Vpone the Romanis for to follow rycht,  
 But ony sujeorne other da or nycht,  
 To baneis thame rycht sone out of thair boundis, Lib.4,f.62b.  
 Or than to suffer mony werkand woundis. Col 1.  
 And syne thai passit to the brig of Ta, 12,475  
 The Romanis biggit as ze hard me sa,  
 And fand it doun quhair thai thocht our till go.  
 And quhen thai saw richt weil that it wes so,  
 On to Dunkeld thai tuke the narrest way;  
 Betuix tha brais on the watter of Tay, 12,480  
 That lay richt neir, as zit is for to se,  
 Thair our the watter tha maid ane brig of tre,  
 Of sic greit breid that other thrie or four  
 Ay syde for syde but perrell nicht pas our.  
 Syne our tha zeid sone efter on ane da, 12,485  
 Quhill thai come neir hand quhair the Romanis la.

QUHEN THE ROMANIS HARD OF THE CUMING OF  
GALDUS THA TUKE CNEO AND BAND HYM  
FAST, AND CHESIT TITUS LIVIUS TO BE THAIR  
GOVERNOUR THAT TYME.

Syne quhen the Romanis of thair cuming knew,  
And kend rycht weill thai wald thame sone persew,  
And tha that tyme withouttin gyde or lord,  
Amang thame fell sic scisma and discord, 12,490  
This Cneo than sone haif thai tane in handis,  
And bund him fast with mony sicker bandis.  
Sesenius, the quhilk wes hurt befor,  
His woundis wyde thai werkit than so soir,  
That he nicht nocht do that tyme bot ly. 12,495  
Than haif tha chosin rycht sone and suddantly,  
Ane nobill man of greit honour and fame,  
Quhilk Titus Levius callit wes to name,  
Befor in Rome the quhilk greit office buir,  
To quhome that tyme thai gaif alhail the cuir, 12,500  
To be thair lord, thair gyde and governour,  
Amang thame all that wes of maist honour,  
And thai to be alhail at his command;  
And he agane hes tane the gyde on hand.

HOW GALDUS VINCUST THE ROMANIS THE SECUND  
TYME AND SLEW FYVE THOUSAND OF THAME,  
AND CHAISSIT ALL THE LAIF TO CALIDONE  
WOD, MAKAND GREIT SLAUCHTER.

The Albionis, be thai war into sicht, 12,505  
With baneris braid that brodin wes full brycht,  
And staitlie standertis all of sindrie hew,  
Agane the schyning of the sone tha schew.  
With buglis blast that hiddeous wes till heir,  
With schalmes schill and clarions clinkand cleir, 12,510



In armour bricht and cot armour weill cled,  
 The same sumtyme befor the Romanis hed,  
 Cirklit with sapheir, and mony targe and schield,  
 The quhilk befor that thai wan in the feild.  
 The Romanis als vpoun the tother syde, 12,515  
 With baneris brycht and proude pynsallis of  
 pryde,  
 Of perfite prent all wrocht our with gold wyre, Col. 2.  
 Fra Phebus face thai flammit as the fyre.  
 The bureall bemes of thair basnetis brycht  
 Baith land and laik illuminat with thair lycht, 12,520  
 With trumpetis blawand all of sindrie tune.  
 Be that thai wer evin reddie for till june,  
 King Galdus bowmen in the feild befor  
 Rycht scharplie schot the langar ay the moir ;  
 Thair wes na stuffe thair steill harnes ganestude, 12,525  
 Quhair eur thai hit tha drew rycht mekle blude.  
 Titus Leuius quhen he persauit that,  
 Without lathin he maid no langar lat ;  
 The Romanis all that mycht anc wapin weild,  
 With felloun force hes enterit in the feild. 12,530  
 In that counter thair wes anc rycht loud crak,  
 Quhen birneis brist and all thair speiris brak,  
 And mony scheild in schunder all wes schorne,  
 And mony berne vpone his bak wer borne,  
 And mony freik wer fellit in the feild, 12,535  
 And mony knicht calddie thair la keild.  
 The Romanis knew it nicht nocht ellis be,  
 Bot other do into that tyme or de,  
 And mak debait than baldlie with thair brandis,  
 For all thair help than stude in thair awin 12,540  
 handis,  
 That causit thame the baldar to abyde.  
 The Albionis als on the vther syde,  
 So glaid thai wer of victorie and gloir,  
 That thai had wyn into the feild befor,

Thair wes na wound that tyme mycht wirk      12,545  
     thame wo,  
 So ferce thai war to fecht aganis thair fo.  
 Bald as ane boir into that stour thai stude,  
 Onsatisfait ay of the Romanis blude,  
 In brich[t] armour and mony suir scheild,  
 The quhilk befor thai wan into the feild,      12,550  
 And pansis proude of plaven plait of pryde,  
 Quhairfor in battell tha mycht the better byde.  
 Out of that stour that stalwert wes and strang  
 The Romanis fled, quhilk fochin had so lang,  
 To Calidone that tyme bayth les and moir,      12,555  
 On till the wod quhair thai had bene befor,  
 Within ane strenth quhair tha wer wont to ly.  
 The Albionis fast followit into hy,  
 And left thame neur als lang as tha had lycht,  
 Quhill da wes gone and cuming wes the nycht.      12,560  
 Fyve thousand men, as my author did sa,  
 Of the Romanis wer slane thair that same da,  
 In that battell so baldlie thai did byde :  
 Tua thousand als vpone the vther syde.  
 This king Galdus baid in the feild all da,      12,565  
 Syne all the spulze take with him awa,  
 And equallie devydit thame amang,  
 Syne efter that with greit solace thai sang.

HOW THAIR COME TO CALDUS GREIT REWARDIS  
 FRA ALL PARTIS, HEIRAND THAT HE HAD WYN  
 SIC VICTORIE OF THE ROMANIS.

Lib. 4, f. 63.      Our Albione the rumour rudlie rang,  
     Col. 1.      How gude Galdus had sufferit so lang      12,570  
     Trubill and travell, greit vneis and pane,  
     Syne manfullie reskewit had agane  
     His landis efter that tyme les and moir,  
     The quhilk the Romanis reft hade of befor,

And vincust had thame twyiss into the feild, 12,575  
 And manfullie richt mony thousand keild ;  
 The laif all left but governour or gyde,  
 And wist nocht weill thair heidis for to hyde.  
 Fra euerie pairt quhen tha sic thing did heir,  
 To king Galdus thai come baith far and neir, 12,580  
 With greit reward and thankand him also,  
 Quhair euir he list with him reddie till go,  
 Agane the Romanes to revengit be,  
 Quhilk lang had vsit greit crudelitie,  
 Quhill thai war baneist fra thair boundis haill, 12,585  
 Or than Fortoun sould mak thame for to fail.  
 Ouir all Britane quhen thai hard of this tell,  
 Agane the Romanis baldlie did rebell,  
 Traistand thai suld thair libertie reskew,  
 And mony Romane in the tyme tha slew, 12,590  
 The nobillis all that duelt in Cambria,  
 Tegen, Cornub, and als Candalia,  
 Rycht copious to king Galdus thai send  
 Gold and siluer at his plesour to spend ;  
 And hors and harnes, and all vther geir, 12,595  
 That ganand wes for ony man of weir,  
 To fortife him in his querrell gude,  
 With euerilk wicht so weill than wes he lude :  
 Traistand by him richt sone that thai sould be  
 Deliuirit out of all captiuite. 12,600

HOW THE ROMANIS SEND IN BRITANE TO MAU-  
 R[I]US FOR SUPPLIE, AND WAS DENYIT THAT  
 TYME.

In this same tyme the Romanis quhair tha la,  
 Ane servand send into Britania  
 To Maurius, the quhilk that tyme wes king,  
 That schew till him the fassone of that thing,

- Beseikand him that tyme to send supplie 12,605  
 The quhilk that had sa grit necessitie ;  
 And did he nocht thai wald loiss all agane  
 That thai had wyn with sic travell and pane,  
 And thai on force be maid to flie also,  
 With lak and schame out of that land till go. 12,610  
 Quhen Maurius hard, now as ze nicht heir,  
 Sic ansuer maid vnto this messingeir :  
 " Forsuith," he said, " it standis sua with me,  
 " Now at this tyme I ma mak na supple ;  
 " In so greit dreid I stand of my awin lyfe, 12,615  
 " And in sic danger bayth of barne and wyfe,  
 " Weill wait I nocht quhair I ride or ga,  
 " Quha is my freind or zit quha is my fa.  
 " Thair is no Brit this day of Britane borne,  
 " That I ma traist in other evin or morne, 12,620  
 " Rycht fane thai ar that ze haif tynt the feild,  
 " With greit blythnes baith men and cheild,  
 Col. 2. " Baith zoung and ald, with greit solace thai sing,  
 " In so greit loving of Galdus that king,  
 " In gloir of him and in till oure dispyte, 12,625  
 " Till say and sing thai haif sic appetyte,  
 " How he so far hes put zow all at vnder,  
 " With sic dispite to heir it is greit wonder."  
 And als he said, gif he suith suld tell,  
 He dred richt sair tha suld rycht sone rebell, 12,630  
 The apperance that it suld rycht sone preve,  
 In king Galdus tha had so gude beleve,  
 Traistand be him and his fortunitie,  
 Out of all bondage till deliuerit be.  
 Also thairof he had ane greit presume 12,635  
 Rycht greit scisma that tyme thair wes in Rome,  
 Quhairfoir he traistit that it sould trew be  
 No moir in Britane thai suld send supple.  
 " Thairfoir," he said, " in all the haist ze ma,  
 " My counsall is ze cum rycht sone awa, 12,640

" To keip this kinrik now that we ar in,  
 " And schaip zow nocht ma landis for to wyn :  
 " Or dreid rycht sone, with mekill lak and schame,  
 " And greit defamyng of the Romanis name,  
 " That all the Romanis at this tyme ilkone, 12,645  
 " Be exull maid richt far fra Albione."

HOW THE ROMANIS, HEIRAND THE ANSUER OF  
 MAURIUS, FOR DREID OF GALDUS PASSIT IN  
 SALURIA.

Quhen this ansuer wes to the Romanis schawin,  
 Tha dred rycht soir sone till be ourthrawin.  
 Siclike that tyme wes tald thame be ane spy,  
 Within ten myle king Galdus wes neirby, 12,650  
 With greit power evin eumand at the hand,  
 But ony stop or zit without ganestand.  
 Fra Calidone, quhair that the Romanis la,  
 Rycht sone thai passit to Saluria.  
 Saluriens at thame had sic invie, 12,655  
 Into that land thai durst nocht rycht lang ly,  
 Bot sped thame hyne in all the haist tha ma,  
 Quhill that thai come on till Brigantia,  
 To Epiac, quhilk wes ane toun of strenth,  
 And thair tha la at greit laser and lenth. 12,660

HOW GALDUS MAID ANE PROCLAMATIOUN TO ALL  
 MEN TO FOLLOW HIM.

In this same tyme king Galdus maid a cry,  
 That euerilk man suld sone and suddantlie  
 Sone reddie be weill grathit in his geir,  
 And ilk woman that harnes docht to weir,  
 Or that the Romanes sould refreschit be, 12,665  
 And out of Britane to get mair supple,

To baneische thame out of thair boundis hail,  
 Or than Fortoun suld mak thame for to fail.  
 Lib.4,f.63b. Quhen that the Romanis hard tell of that cry,  
 Col. 1. Into all boundis neir about thairby, 12,670  
 As Ordulus and eik Dieria,  
 Ethalyn, Pechtland and Saluria,  
 Tha Romanis all, that duelt bayth far and neir,  
 At Epiac thai causit to compeir.

HOW MAURIUS, THE KING OF BRITANE, SEND GREIT  
 SUPPLIE TO THE ROMANIS IN BRIGANTIA AGANE  
 KING GALDUS.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me sa, 12,675  
 This Maurius, king of Britania,  
 Full mony berne buskit in armour bricht,  
 Of Britis bald and mony vther wicht,  
 That worthie war in ony weir to wend,  
 Syne into Brigance to the Romanis he send. 12,680  
 Be this king Galdus cuning wes richt neir,  
 With mony knycht weill cled in armour cleir;  
 Than fourtie thousand furneist for the feild,  
 He wes that tyme, that waponis weill culd weild.  
 The Romanis than wer rayit weill at rycht 12,685  
 With staitlie standartis strikand to the hicht,  
 And mony pynsall panetit wes full proude,  
 With schalmes schill and hornis blawand loud,  
 Other that da all for to do or de,  
 Without refuge tha wist nocht quhair to fle. 12,690  
 Into that tyme rycht weill thai vnderstude  
 The Albionis wer of sic multitude,  
 And so greit curage had bayth les and moir,  
 Of baith the feildis thai had win befoir,  
 So manlie war with hartis that wer hie, 12,695  
 Rycht ill it wes that tyme to gar thame fle.

HOW KING GALDUS STRAIK THE THIRID FEILD WITH  
THE ROMANIS, AND RYCHT MONY OF THIAME  
SLANE, AND PUT THE LAIF IN STRENTHTIS.

With that king Galdus lichtit in the feild,  
 With mony wicht that waponis weill culd weild,  
 And baneris braid that brodin wer full bricht,  
 With glitterand gold as ony lantryne licht, 12,700  
 And standartis streikit strak vp in the air,  
 With fynest gold wer all our fret full fair;  
 And coit armour quhilk wer of cullour cleir,  
 With rubeis reid and diamontis so deir,  
 With semelic sapheir as the siluer schone, 12,705  
 Poleist with perle and mony pretious stone;  
 With breist plait, birny, as the bureall bricht,  
 As ony lanterne lemit all of licht.  
 Ane farar sicht quha had bene thair to se,  
 Sen God wes borne saw neur man with ee. 12,710  
 Of Albione the bowmen big and bald,  
 Thre thousand than tha wer be taill weill tald;  
 With bowis big and stringis that war teuche,  
 And fedderit flanis wald flie weill aneuche,  
 Als thik thai flaw as ony deuis drop, 12,715  
 Throw all thair stuff tha maid bot litill stop.  
 The Britis than, fra Maurius wes send  
 Into Brigance the Romanis to defend,  
 Turnit thair bak vpoune the Romanis than,  
 And come till Galdus or the feild began. 12,720  
 Thair at the Romanis mony lykit ill,  
 And vther sum faucht with the better will,  
 With speiris lang syne enterit in the feild,  
 Quhair mony targe and mony schynand scheid  
 Wer schorne and sched, and all schaikin in 12,725  
 schunder;  
 Bayth bla and bludie breistis that wer vnder.  
 So thralie than togidder that thai thrist,  
 That speiris brak and birneis all did brist;

Col. 2.

Helmes wer hewin to the schulderis doun,  
 Rycht mony suelt and mony fell in swoun. 12,730  
 Wes nane so bald that in that battell baid,  
 Bot of his blude thai gart him bleid full braid.  
 Sa mony rout amang thame thair wes raucht,  
 On the left syid quhair that the wemen faucht,  
 No wounder wes that tyme thai wer so woundit, 12,735  
 That in that feild thai wer neir all confoundit.  
 That king Galdus alss sone as he that knew,  
 Rycht suddanelie he send to thame reskew  
 Of stalwart men that wer bayth stout and strang,  
 Quhilk enterit sone into the thickest thrang, 12,740  
 And mony burdoun on thair basnatis brak;  
 On force the Romanis thair wer put abak.  
 The laif saw that and tuke the flycht ilkane in hy;  
 And had nocht bene thair strenth wer neir hand by,  
 And als thairwith keipit sa weill thair tyme, 12,745  
 Tha had bene lampit all in till ane lyme.<sup>1</sup>  
 Thair wes na Romane in the feild thai fand,  
 Wes saiff that da that come vnder thair hand;  
 For ony mercie that thai culd ask or cry,  
 Tha gart thame all with bludie throttis ly. 12,750  
 The Albionis fast followit on the chace,  
 Quhill that thai come on to the samin place  
 Quhair that the Romanis had thair strenthis maid,  
 With stankis greit and mony foussie braid.  
 Out of the feild the deid bodeis tha brocht, 12,755  
 Wer slane that da als mony as thai mocht,  
 Befoir thair face into the fowseis flang,  
 To mak the gait quhair tha thoct in to gang.  
 The Romanes than, quhilk wer of gyding gude,  
 Into that strenth sua stoutlie than tha stude, 12,760  
 Quhairat the entrie narrow wes and wicht,  
 Stane still thai faucht quhill cuming wes the nycht.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *lyne*.



The Albionis syne woik quhill it wes da  
 About the place quhair that the Romanis la,  
 In till all pairt quhair neid wes round about, 12,765  
 In that beleif that neuir ane sould win out.  
 Syne on the morne, quhen it wes fair da lycht,  
 The Albionis tha raikit on full rycht  
 On till ane wod wes neir hand by besyid,  
 And mony tre tha cuttit in that tyde; 12,770  
 Syne mony draucht thai drew with thame awa,  
 To fill the fowseis quhair the Romanis la,  
 Syne for to set ane seig round about. Lib. 4, f.64.  
 The Romanis saw tha stude into sic dout, Col. 1.  
 Richt sone thai set ane sing vpoun the wall; 12,775  
 Syne with ane voice rycht loud furth tham[e]  
 did call,  
 Of souerance quhill thai had said sum thing,  
 Desyrand than for to pas to the king,  
 Beseikand him to souer than and ceis,  
 Quhill thai cum furth and speik with him for 12,780  
 peice.  
 Quhen this wes tald to king Galdus the gude  
 And king Garmard togidder quhair tha stude,  
 Sum gaiff counsall nocht to heir of peice,  
 Fra blude and battell neuir for to ceis,  
 Quhill tha had wrocht vpoun thame all thair will, 12,785  
 To thame befor had done sic skayth and ill;  
 Till all vther it sould exampill be  
 To conqueis kinrikis with crudelitie,  
 Our all this world sa mekle wrang has wrocht,  
 Withoutin caus so lang on ws hes socht. 12,790  
 Than vther sum, of mair humanitie,  
 Was moir courtas without crudelitie,  
 That counsall gaif to heir quhat tha wald sa,  
 And syne at plesour lat thame pas thair wa,  
 Quhen tha had hard quhat tha wald sa thame 12,795  
 till;  
 Wirk as tha wald syne efter thair awin will,

And tempt nocht Fortoun at that tyme our far,  
 Or dreid sone efter that it suld be war ;  
 In ony tyme gif it hapnis thame to be  
 Throw Fortoun brocht in sic miseritie, 12,800  
 The same sentence that tha did now propone,  
 Agane thame self wald giffin be anone ;  
 The haill counsall thoct weill that that wes best.  
 King Galdus than commandit all to rest,  
 Syne ceiss the seige and souer thame till gang 12,805  
 Baith out and in withoutin ony wrang,  
 And pledgis gaif that thai sould tak na skayth  
 Quhill tha had commonit with thai kingis bayth,  
 And tald thame all thair purpois into plane,  
 Syne at thair plesour till pas in agane. 12,810  
 Four Romanis than that wer most principall,  
 And wysast als, that wer amang thame all,  
 Rycht clynlie cled of clayth of fynest gold,  
 With semelic schap most gudlie to behold,  
 And poleist perlis of the orient, 12,815  
 Thay raikit on than to the royall tent,  
 Quhair bayth thir kingis with greit royaltie,  
 Wer set in sait of hie auctoritie ;  
 And all thair lordis also, les and moir,  
 Into that tyme wes present than befoir, 12,820  
 Into ane cirkill stude about thame still,  
 Quhill thai had hard quhat wes the Romanis will.

HOW THE ROMANIS SAT DOUN ON THAIR KNEIS  
 BEFOIR THIR TUA KINGIS GREITAND AND  
 ASKAND AT THAME GRACE.

The Romanis syne, of quhome ze haif hard tell,  
 Befoir thair kingis doun on kneis fell  
 In thair presence, at that tyme wes the gyss, 12,825  
 And sone thir kingis maid thame for till ryss

Vpoun thair feit befor thame for till stand.  
 Than ane of thame that take the speche on hand, Col. 2.  
 Into the presens of thame all ilk man,  
 As I sall say, he hes said to thame than. 12,830

HOW THE ROMANIS, SITTAND ON THAIR KNEIS,  
 MAID THAIR ORESOUN BEFOR THIR TUA  
 KINGIS FOR MERCIE AND GRACE.

“ O thow Galdus, of all knychtheid the flour,  
 “ And thi colliggis quhilkis ar of hie honour,  
 “ How can thow haif so hie honour and gloir,  
 “ As for to se ws standand zow befor,  
 “ Quhilk victoris wer of all this warld hail, 12835  
 “ That Fortoun now hes maid so far to fail!  
 “ Vnfeinzeitlie we ar befor zour face,  
 “ Rycht fane this tyme to ask mercie and grace.  
 “ How can ze haif ane grittar honour now,  
 “ And zour successioun rycht lang efter zow, 12,840  
 “ With greit blythnes also till all zour kin,  
 “ To se ws heir quhilk all this warld hes wyn;  
 “ The nobill Romanis lyand vnder zour feit,  
 “ So piteouslie on zow for mercie greit!  
 “ We grant zow weill that we haif done zow 12,845  
 wrang,  
 “ Persewand zow but ony caus sa lang,  
 “ Quhill now,” he said, “ that oure fortoun is past,  
 “ And goddis ws als hes lichlyit at<sup>1</sup> the last,  
 “ Aganis quhome is na power may stryfe.  
 “ In zour handis is baith oure deith and lyfe; 12,850  
 “ Victoris ze ar, and ma wirk as ze will,  
 “ As plesis zow this tyme to put ws till.”  
 And syne all four fell down befor thair feit,  
 Quhen this wes said, and piteouslie did greit ;

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *as*.

Attour thair cheikis, that wer so pail and      12,855  
 wan,  
 Like ony rane the bitter teiris ran ;  
 Thair havie chance so changit hes thair cheir,  
 Weipand for wo that petie wes till heir,  
 Wirk as tha wald tha pat thame in thair will.  
 Then king Galdus sic ansuer gaif thame till :      12,860

HEIR FOLLOUIS THE TENNOUR OF KING GALDUS  
 ORESONE THAT HE MAID TO THE ROMANIS  
 QUHEN THAI ASKIT HIM GRACE.

“ Scottis,” he said, “ and Pechtis in this place  
 “ Quhome to oure goddis of excelland grace,  
 “ Quhilk gevin hes the boundis les and mair,  
 “ Oure fatheris ald lang brukit of befoir ;  
 “ Off quhome,” he said, “ zit we war ay con-      12,865  
 tent,  
 “ And all oure dayes wer rycht diligent  
 “ To keip oure landis the quhilk we war in,  
 “ And preissit neuir no farder for to win.  
 “ And ze,” he said, “ throw your maistrie and  
 mycht,  
 “ Sa mony kinrik conqueist hes but rycht,      12,870  
 “ And mony roy that wes of greit renoun,  
 “ Rycht crwellic had put to confusioun,  
 “ This hundreth zeir as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 Lib.3,f.64b. “ And fiftie als, heir at the warldis end,  
 Col. 1.      “ In Albione with mekill weir and wrang      12,875  
 “ Remanit hes with greit oppressioun lang ;  
 “ And now with ws quhilk ze contempnit far,  
 “ And als of you sa lang that vexit war,  
 “ Ascryvand you of your hie mortall fait,  
 “ And calland ws sa bestiall bodeis blait,      12,880  
 “ But wit, wisdom, or policie in weir,  
 “ But mycht and strenth, but armour and geir,

- “ Now ar ze vineust thryss into plane feild,  
 “ And mony thousand of 3our men als keild ;  
 “ 3our self chaissit our mony moss and mure 12,885  
 “ Into na place can sicker be or suir ;  
 “ Quhill ze ar fane richt law befori our feit,  
 “ Vpoun 3our kneis to ask mercie and greit,  
 “ Beseikand ws rycht puirlic with pitie  
 “ Of 3our mischeif this tyme to haif mercie. 12,890  
 “ How can Fortoun gif 3ow a grittar fall,  
 “ With sic exempill to this warld all,  
 “ In tyme till cum mair mercifull to be  
 “ In the vsing of 3our auctoritie ?  
 “ Richt mony of ws present in this place, 12,895  
 “ Decretit hes, without mercie or grace,  
 “ 3ow and 3our power to distroy to nocht,  
 “ For the greit wrang to ws that ze haif wrocht ;  
 “ Till all this warld it sould exempill be  
 “ In tyme till cum of 3our crudelitie, 12,900  
 “ That euerilk man may vnderstand and knaw,  
 “ How ze haif wrocht agane ordour of law.  
 “ 3it neurtheles we will moir gentill be  
 “ To 3ow this tyme, and fullar of petie,  
 “ Gif it plesis 3ow thir pointis to fulfill, 12,905  
 “ As ze haif said quhilk we sall put 3ow till.  
 “ Into the first, to pas out of our landis,  
 “ And all the strenthis ze haif in 3our handis  
 “ To leif thame all this tyme bayth les and moir,  
 “ And all the riches till ws agane restoir, 12,910  
 “ That ze haif tane our all bayth far and neir,  
 “ To ws agane with pledge and presoneir.  
 “ And secundlie, to sweir befori ws all,  
 “ For ony thing that efter may befall,  
 “ Never moir agane for to invaid our land ; 12,915  
 “ And als with ws for to mak ane band,  
 “ And we with 3ow siclyke, to leve in peice,  
 “ Fra this tyme furth all weiris for till ceiss,

" In gude freindschip withoutin ony fo."  
 With this ansuer thai tuke thair leve till go 12,920  
 Vnto the laif that lay within thair strenth,  
 And word by word thai schew thame all at lenth.  
 Quhen the Romanis had hard as thai haif tald,  
 Content thai war thair of baith zoung and ald ;  
 And syne to thir kingis come furth into plane, 12,925  
 And all that thing rehersit hes agane,  
 Ilk word by word befor as I zow schew,  
 To keip promit, and in all thing be trew.  
 On baith the sydis sworne thair till also,  
 Syne tuke thair leif ; the Romanis for till go 12,930  
 To Maurius, that king wes of Britane,  
 In zork schyre quhilk wes remanand than.  
 Sextie thousand sum tyme by taill weill tald,  
 Agricola, quhilk wes bayth big and bald,  
 Col. 2. He brocht with him rycht far in to the north, 12,935  
 Quhen he come first attour the watter of Forth.  
 Tuentie thousand or thair about, few ma,  
 zeid hame agane out of Brigantia.  
 The laif wer slane in Galdus weir ilkone,  
 Except so few in Britane syne ar gone. 12,940  
 Syne land and strenth agane thai did restoir,  
 Fra Scot and Pecht that thai had win befor ;  
 The pledgis all with pray and presoneir,  
 And all the spulzie tha tuke far and neir,  
 Restorit hes agane to enerilk man, 12,945  
 Bayth gold and gude fra thame befor tha wan.

OFF THE INSTABILITIE AND FICKILNES OF FORTOUN,  
 AS ZE SALL EFTER HEIR IN THIS PRESENT  
 CHAPTOURE.

O fekill<sup>1</sup> Fortoun, without stabilitie,  
 Is none in erth that ma gif trust in the !

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *febill*.

Thy strange acquaintance is ay to mak of new,  
 Thy feinzzeit face, of mony diueriss hew, 12,950  
 With hevinlie visage sum tyme amiabill,  
 And lauchand luke so dulce and delectabill,  
 With amorus ene, as ony cristall cleir,  
 Blenkand so blythlie with ane balmy cheir :  
 Syne in les space nor twynkling of ane ee, 12,955  
 Crabit as Saturne, full of crudelitie,  
 With attrie visage droppand full of sweit,  
 With glowrand ene and girmand gammais greit,  
 With busteous browis glowmand on hir brie,  
 With lyoun luke richt awfull for to se ; 12,960  
 And thus thow changis all tyme as thow will,  
 Neur in ane stait can stabill be and still,  
 Quhen euir thow list the counter quheill to turne,  
 Sum for to lauch and vther sum for to murne,  
 Sum for to fall, sum to felicitie, 12,965  
 Sum till plesance and sum till povertie,  
 Sum to greit<sup>1</sup> welth, sum to greit wretchitnes,  
 Ay as scho list scho gydis moir and les.  
 Thair is no leid this day levand on lyve,  
 Tha[t] ma haif strenth agane hir for to stryve, 12,970  
 Or zit wisdome, or sic subtilitie,  
 Of hir all tyme that ay ma sicker be,  
 Bot suffer ay and wait the tyme and place,  
 Or cast the neur to cum in till hir grace.  
 By the Romanis weill ma be said sic thing, 12,975  
 And gude Galdus of Scotland that wes king,  
 That Fortoun maid so lang abject to be,  
 And set the Romanis on hir quheill so hic ;  
 Syne suddantlie scho maid thame for to fall,  
 With greit confusioun of thair stait royall, 12,980  
 Fra weill till wo richt law scho gart thame lycht,  
 And king Galdus syne set als far on hicht ;

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *greith*.

Lukeand on him with lustie lauchand ene,  
 Sa lang befoir his mortall fa had bene ;  
 And the Romanis so suddantlie forsuik, 12,985  
 Turnit hir bak and wald nocht on thame luik.  
 As suith is said, be exempill we se  
 The heiar ay men clym in till ane tre,  
 Lib. 4, f. 65. Bot he be wyiss and warlie wirk with all,  
 Col. 1. In his discence far sarar is the fall. 12,990  
 No moir of this ; heir will I hald me still,  
 And to my purpois pas agane I will.

HOW GALDUS, KING OF SCOTTIS, WITH HIS  
 LORDIS, HES REFORMIT ALL FALTIS WITHIN  
 HIS KINRIK.

This king Galdus of quhome I spak befoir,  
 With all his lordis than bayth les and moir,  
 Perlustrit hes ourir all Saluria, 12,995  
 And all the boundis of Brigantia,  
 And stuffit hes all strenthis to and fro.  
 To Epiac syne efterwart did go,  
 Quhair he remanit thair ane weill lang space,  
 And all his lordis in the samyn place. 13,000  
 Efter lang avysing oftymes to and fro,  
 Syne at the last it wes decreitit so,  
 That thai suld put vpoun the bordour syid,  
 In the strenthis to remane and byde,  
 The ydill men had nother hous nor geir, 13,005  
 That faucht befoir so weill into the weir,  
 Thair to remane and win baith meit and fe,  
 That thai sould nocht fall in sic povertie,  
 Quhairthrow thai sould inclynit be to steill :  
 Full fane wald he that thai sould all be leill. 13,010  
 Syne euerie nobill efter his degrie,  
 Full richelic that tyme rewardit he ;  
 Syne raid ourir all his kinrik vp and down,  
 And as he come to euerie place and toun,



The pepill all met him by the way, 13,015  
 With dansing, singing, with greit sport and play.  
 Thair sangis all that tyme that tha did sing,  
 Wes in the loving of gude Galdus the king.  
 " Welcum," thai said, " of all knichtheid the flour,  
 " Oure stalwart strenth, strangest in euerilk stour, 13,020  
 " Oure governour and als oure gracious gyde,  
 " The worthiest in all the warld so wyde!  
 " The riche Romanes proude of imperiall,  
 " Thocht thai war victouris of this warld all,  
 " Thow hes vincust for all thair strenth and 13,025  
     mycht,  
 " And manfullie reskewit thi awin richt ;  
 " And all thi pepill [out] of bondage brocht,  
 " Full deir ws all with thi blude thow hes bocht."  
 Rycht so thai sang with plesand voicis cleir,  
 On lute and harp playand with mirrie cheir ; 13,030  
 Quhair euer he come, ather be nycht or da,  
 With sic solace thai met him by the wa.

HOW ILL DISPOSIT PERSONIS WALD HAIF PUT DIS-  
CORDE BETUIX THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS.

In this same tyme, as my author did tell,  
 Ane greit discord rycht suddantlie thai[r] fell  
 Betuix the Scottis and the Pechtis than, 13,035  
 Be the fals counsall of ane wickit man.  
 Seand greit apperance of peice to be,  
 Dreidand full soir that he, and sic as he,  
 Haiffand na way to wirk and to wyn geir,  
 Nor to be tretit bot in land of weir, 13,040  
 In land of peice kennand he culd do nocht, Col. 2.  
 Quhairfoir richt sone ane subtill way hes socht.  
 Betuix the Scottis and the Pechtis land,  
 Vpoun the bordour by ane litill strand,  
 Ane rycht small pece that lang tyme had lyne ley, 13,045  
 For rycht thairof he raisit hes greit play,

Ilk da be da, with mekill bost and schoir,  
 Ane greit discord the langar ay the moir.  
 Thir kingis baith, fra that thai knew the caice,  
 In Calidone wod, at set day and place, 13,050  
 Thair haif thai met togidder king and king,  
 And suddantlie considerit all that thing.  
 Syne quhen thai knew it of so litill availl,  
 And hes him fund that first gart mak that fail,  
 Vpoun ane gallous hes him maid to de; 13,055  
 And all the laif fra that furth to leif in le,  
 Neur ane agane suld efter vther greif.  
 Syne king at king that same tyme tuke thair leif,  
 Quhen thai lykit no langar to remane,  
 With all thair lordis passit hame agane. 13,060  
 Lang efter that this nobill Galdus king  
 In peice and rest mony da did ring,  
 But outward weir or ony inward wrang.  
 Our all the warld the rumour of him rang,  
 His knichtlie name amang thame so did spreid, 13,065  
 With cuerie man in greit honour wes hed;  
 In everie land he wes of sic valour,  
 Callit he wes of all the warld the flour.

THE COMMENDATIONE OF GUDE KING GALDUS BE  
THIS AUTHOR.

Ane better king na he wes in his dais,  
 Nor zit befor, as that my author sais, 13,070  
 Na zit nane vther that hes bene sensyne,  
 Wes neur none of all the nobillis nyne  
 Mycht praisit be aboue him worth ane peir,  
 And say the suith, other in peice or weir.  
 Nobill Hector, the kingis sone of Troy, 13,075  
 Quhilk wes ane toun of sic riches and joy,  
 With aboundans of hors, harnes and geir,  
 And multitude of men als for the weir,

The quhilk Hector had at his gyding hail,  
 Na ferlie wes thocht seindill he suld fail. 13,080  
 Greit Alexander, our all the world that rang,  
 Sic multitude had of the Greikis strang,  
 With promptitude and prattik into weir,  
 Rycht circumspect in nothing for to leir,  
 His partie ay wes equal or than les, 13,085  
 And he him self wist neur of no distres;  
 Fortoun his freind as all man knew rycht weil,  
 Scho festnit him so fast vpone hir quheill,  
 Quhair euir it turnit, other hie or law,  
 So sicker sat that he mycht neur faw; 13,090  
 Throw hir fauour thus mycht he neur fail,  
 Quhat wounder wes how oft he did preuail?  
 Als Julius, sa oft greit honour that he wan,  
 At his command had mony nobill man,  
 Of thair knowledge quhilk wer incomparabill, 13,095  
 Off nicht and riches als inestimabill;  
 Quhairfoir it wes impossibill to be,  
 That he sould tyne in ony jeopardie.  
 Bot gude Galdus, his power wes so puir,  
 Small wes the kimrik that he had in cuir, 13,100  
 Without riches of hors, harnes and geir,  
 But policie or prattik into weir.  
 And als thairwith, as my author did wryte,  
 His pairtie wes of power infynyte  
 Of men and money in that tyme vntald, 13,105  
 For all this world thai weild it as thai wald;  
 Thair honour than wes far aboue all vther,  
 Dame Fortoun als wes ay thair foster mother.<sup>1</sup>  
 Quhat farlie wes thocht Galdus sufferit pane,  
 Quhen strenth and Fortoun baith wer him agane? 13,110  
 Dalie with thame into greit stryfe he stude,  
 Rycht mony zeir with mort battell and blude,

<sup>1</sup> These last six lines should, apparently, precede line 13,099.

Quhair mony thousand of thair men wer slane,  
 Syne efterwart he gart thame be full fane  
 On kneis fall richt law befor his feit, 13,115  
 Askand mercie and for thair giit to greit,  
 As thai did neur, efter nor zit beforme,  
 Into this warld till no berne that wes borne.  
 Had gude Homeir than levand bene on lyfe,  
 And bene ane Scot quhilk culd so weill discryve, 13,120  
 And louit Galdus with sic hart and will,  
 As in his tyme he louit wicht Achill,  
 Gude Galdus name, I wait, had bene sensyne  
 Extollit far aboue the nobillis nyne.  
 The Scottis than wer of so litill vail, 13,125  
 But eloquence or toung to tell thair tail ;  
 And thocht sensyne wer mony cunnyng clerk,  
 Rycht negligent thai wer into sic werk,  
 And litill tent to sic mater tha tuke,  
 Sleipit full sound quhen other poetis woik, 13,130  
 And wald nocht sturt thame with sa small ane thing ;  
 That wes the caus that gude Galdus the king,  
 And mony mo richt worthie till advance,  
 Hes bene so lang out of remembrance.  
 Of all thir thingis I haif said befor 13,135  
 Of gude Galdus, traist weill, bayth les and moir,  
 Of Corbreid als, and nobill Caratac,  
 Of manlines the quhilk had neur maik,  
 Thocht I wald lie, gude witnes tha ma ta  
 Be Tacitus, quhilk wes thair mortall fa. 13,140

OF THE DEITH OF KING GALDUS.

Syne gude Galdus, this nobill worthie king,  
 Efter threttie and fyve zeir of his ring,  
 Ane hundreth als and threttie efter oure Lord,  
 At Epiac, in pece and gude concord,

He tuke his leif and bad thame all gude nycht. 13,145  
 For wo of him thair weipit mony knycht,  
 And mony ladie quhit as quhalis bane,  
 The lordis all and commonis als ilkane.  
 Syne till his graif thai haif him grathit sone,  
 With all honour sould till anc king be done; 13,150  
 With sence and singing, and sic sacrifice,  
 Solempnitlie as that tyme wes the gyiss.  
 The lordis all, as to thair cheif and heid, Col. 2.  
 So greit honour did him efter his deid,  
 Tha landis all callit Brigantia, 13,155  
 Efter his name is callit Galdia.  
 So that his name most knychtlie till advance,  
 Sall euer remane in till remembrance,  
 To signifie efter to euerie man,  
 Into that place the Romanis last he wan; 13,160  
 As ze ma reid quha lykis for to luke.  
 Loving to God, heir endis the ferd buke.

HOW LUGTATUS, THE SONE OF NOBILL GALDUS, WAS Lib. 5.  
 CROWNIT EFTER THE DEITH OF HIS FATHER,  
 QUHOME OF ALL THE LORDIS AND PEPILL WAR  
 REJOSIT, TRAISTAND THAT HE SOULD FOLLOW  
 THE TRED OF HIS FATHER; [OF] QUHOME  
 SONE EFTER THAI WAR ALL BEGYLIT.

## LIBER 5.

Efter the deith of nobill Galdus king,  
 Lugtat his sone succedit to his ring.  
 I schame rycht sar the suith of him to tell, 13,165  
 So crewell wes, baith furious and fell.  
 Thre ill vices in his persone did ring,  
 Contagious are for ony prince or king;  
 Full couetous, and greit crudelitie,  
 Rycht lubrius and full of licherie. 13,170

Thir thre richt oft in him causit greit noy,  
 And haillalie his kinrik till distroy.  
 I will nocht heir rehers ilk thing be name,  
 For the degrading of gude Galdus fame,  
 As oft is kend, fra vengeance and fra wraik 13,175  
 The sone is sparit for the fatheris saik ;  
 Bot ane thing suithlie dar I say 3ow till,  
 Ane war nor he, or skantlie half so ill,  
 In Albione wes nocht in all his dais,  
 Gif all be suith of him my author sais. 13,180  
 He wes neur gydit be the men of gude,  
 Bot be trumpouris that nothing vnderstude ;  
 Richt mekill wrang be thair counsall he wrocht  
 Quhill he and thair wer sone put all to nocht.  
 In all this world 3it wes thair neur ane war, 13,185  
 Degenerit fra his father so far.  
 Quhairat the lordis had rycht greit dispyte ;  
 And for till wit thair of quha had the wyte,  
 Into Ewone ane counsall thair gart call,  
 Quhair king and lordis hes convenit all. 13,190

HOW THE LORDIS OF SCOTLAND IN EWONE AT  
 ANE COUNSALL ACCUSIT THAIR KING OF HIS  
 VICIS.

In that counsall accusit hes thair king,  
 And his counsall, of mony sundrie thing.  
 Requyring him fra sic faltis to turne,  
 And with fauour all thingis to reforme.  
 This wes the ansuer that he gaif him till : 13,195  
 Sayand alway he wald do his awin will,  
 And wald nocht lat for thame nor all the laif;  
 Thairwith, he said, ane mendis he sould haif,  
 Of thame ilk ane promuvit had sic thing.  
 And quhen thair hard the ansuer of thair king, 13,200  
 Amang thame than, as ordand wes befoir,  
 Tha fell to fecht and ilkaane ane vther schoir.

And syne with that bricht brandis out tha drew,  
 Quhair suddantlie this Lugtatus thai slew,  
 And all his counsall standand at his bak ; 13,205  
 Sic end thai maid as worthie wes to mak.  
 Into the thrid 3eir efter of his ring,  
 So wes the end of this Lugtatus king,  
 And his counsall misgydit hym so far.  
 My counsall is that all sic like be war, 13,210  
 That cuming ar of sic sempill degrie,  
 To king or prince ane counsallor to be ;  
 For and tha do, traist weill tha will nocht chaip  
 Sielike ane deid, or than de in ane raip.  
 Also ane king sould ay be circumspect, 13,215  
 Or dreid sic thing sone stryik him in the nec,  
 Quhen he hes nother tyme nor space to fle :  
 Thairfoir in tyme be war of sic folie.  
 He ma weill wit, and he rycht wnderstude,  
 Displesour is to euerie man of gude, 13,220  
 Quhen that thai se thair prince, or 3it thair king,  
 Misgyde him self in ony kynd of thing.  
 For-quhy ane seiknes that is into the heid,  
 Without the soner that it get remeid,  
 To caus the seiknes fra the heid to slaik, 13,225  
 The memberis all will rycht sone tyne and traik.  
 Rycht so it is quhen other prince or king,  
 Quhilk sould be heid and rewwlar of his ring,  
 Into him self and he misgydit be,  
 His realme can nocht leif in tranquillitie ; 13,230  
 Na with his lordis in till ane effect,  
 Ilkane of vther all thair tyme suspect,  
 With greit abusioun ay amang the best,  
 In all thair tyme withoutin pece or rest.  
 Thairfoir ane king sould ay at counsall be 13,235  
 Of men of gude quhilk war of equitie,  
 That conscience knew to execute the law,  
 And keip justice for other before aw ;

And nocht infect him with sic fals uyce  
 Quhilk hes no knowledge bot of cartis and dyce, 13,240  
 To drink and dance, and fo' to play the fule,  
 Quhilk all thair tyme wer trowanis at the scuill.  
 I pray to Jesu, for his woundis fyve,  
 To keipoure king this da levand on lyve,  
 And prent his passioun in his mynd rycht deip, 13,245  
 Gyffand him grace this counsall for to keip.  
 In this mater no moir I will remane,  
 Bot to my purpois pas I will agane.

HOW THE DOCHTER SONE OF GALDUS, CALLIT  
 MOGALLUS, WES CROWNIT KING OF SCOTTIS  
 EFTER THE DEID OF LUGTATUS.

Col. 2. Quhen Lugtatus, as ze haif hard me tell,  
 Into Ewone sic auenture befell; 13,250  
 Ane nobill man wes callit Mogallus,  
 Wes dochter sone to worthie king Galdus,  
 And lauchfull air also to that ring,  
 Crownit he wes of Scottis to be king.  
 In his begynnyng gracious wes and gude, 13,255  
 Weill louit als with all the nobill blude,  
 And preissit hes, the langar ay the moir,  
 Equale to be with gude Galdus in gloir.  
 Quhair ony prattik wes all tyme till preif,  
 In him ilkone thai had ane gude beleif; 13,260  
 So that thair traist in him alhail it stude,  
 Quhilk cuming wes of king Galdus so gude.  
 Of thair beleif begylit wer thai nocht;  
 Bayth nycht and da he hes done that he mocht  
 For to reforme all faltis les and moir, 13,265  
 The quhilk Lugtatus maid had of befoir.  
 With diligence he gart agane redres  
 To thair goddis the teyndis moir and les;



Distroyaris into Lugtatus tyme  
 Accusit hes committaris of sic cryme ; 13,270  
 Quhair thai war fund in ony toun or steid,  
 Without delay gart put thame all to deid.

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS SEND TO MOGALLUS  
 FOR SUPPLIE AGANIS THE ROMANIS AND THE  
 BRITIS.

In this same tyme that I haif said zow heir,  
 To Mogallus thair come ane messingeir  
 Fra king of Pechtis, quhilk did him wnderstand 13,275  
 How that the Romanis come into Pechtland,  
 And Britis baith with thair power in ane,  
 And of his men had mony slane and tane ;  
 Quhilk petiouslie that did him than imploir  
 Of his supplie for the kyndnes befoir, 13,280  
 And band also betuix thame lang had bene  
 Vnmaculat on to that day ay clene.

HOW MOGALLUS PROMITTIT HELP TO THE KING OF  
 PECHTIS INCONTINENT.

Off this desyre Mogallus wes content,  
 And suddanelie thairto gaif his consent.  
 Sayand richt sone he sould send him reskew, 13,285  
 Bot first he thoct the Romanis till persew,  
 Requyrand thame than to keip thair band  
 Tha maid till Galdus in Brigantia land,  
 And all the spulze also les and moir  
 That tha had tane agane for till restoir, 13,290  
 With sic plesure as he thoct than first to pruve,  
 Or he sone wald weir or battell muve, Lib.5,f.66b.  
 To mak it knawin till all the world hail, Col. 1.  
 Tha suld be first that sould begin to fail.  
 In that same tyme come furth of Gallia, 13,295  
 Quhilk callit wes befoir Brigantia,

To Mogallus ane man, the quhilk him schew  
 How that the Romanis cumin wes of new,  
 Within thair boundis that wer lang and braid,  
 Bayth brint and slew and rycht greit spulze 13,300  
 maid.

Of tha tythandes Mogallus lykit ill,  
 Zit neuirtheles he gart thame thair byde still,  
 Into that place with him for to remane,  
 Quhill that he hard quhat ansuer come agane.  
 The messinger has tane his leif and gone, 13,305  
 Without tarie is passit to Lundone,  
 Quhair Lucius Antonius<sup>1</sup> than la,  
 That legat wes of all Britania;  
 And schew till him his criddens les and moir,  
 Fra end till end as I haif said befor. 13,310

OF THE LYCHTLIE ANSUER THAT LUCIUS GAIFF  
 TO MOGALLUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, HIS  
 HERALD.

This Lucius, that busteous wes and bald,  
 Befor thame all quhen thir tydenis wer tald,  
 Lichtlie he leuche with greit hething and scorne;  
 And Scot and Pecht, he said, had bayth bene sworne,  
 In thair boundis all winter he sould byde, 13,315  
 For all thair prysis he suld pair of thair pryde.  
 Sayand, it wes into the Romanis will,  
 With thair lyvis to lat thame leve thair still,  
 And to the Romanis hindis for till be,  
 Thairfoir to keip thair flokis for thair fe. 13,320  
 For tha of ressoun culd nocht be content,  
 He said he suld leir thame ane document,  
 Laithar to be agane in all thair lyve,  
 Agane the victoris of the warld to stryve.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Antoitus*.

HOW THE SCOTTIS HERALD SCHEW HIS ANSUER  
BEFOIR THE KING AND ALL HIS LORDIS.

With this ansuer the herald passit hame, 13,325  
 Quhen he hes hard the caus of that reclame;  
 And tuke na rest that tyme for to remane  
 Qubill he come hame into Scotland agane.  
 Befoir the lordis and the kingis grace,  
 Fra end to end he schew thame all the cace. 13,330  
 And quhen the king hes hard the haill mancir,  
 He said agane as I sall schaw zow heir:  
 " Heir I tak witnes of our godis all,  
 " Quhat efterwart may hapin or befall,  
 " Now at this tyme that we be nocht mensworne, 13,335  
 " Nor brek no band that Galdus maid beforne  
 " To the Romanis to wirk no violence;  
 " For-quhy," he said, " it is in oure awin defence,  
 " That force it is now at this tyme to be, Col. 2.  
 " So greit injure that thai haif done to me. 13,340  
 " O ze goddis, zour grace heir I beseik,  
 " As ze ar just, richt mercifull and meik,  
 " That all the perrell at this tyme and plicht,  
 " And sword of vengeance also on thame licht,  
 " That maid the falt and first begouth to fail; 13,345  
 " And als siclike ze caus thame till prevaill  
 " Quhilk innocent and saikles in this tyme,  
 " And pumeische thame committit hes the cryme!"

HOW MOGALLUS, HEIRAND SIC ANSUER FRA LU-  
CIUS, INCONTINENT RAISIT HIS ARMIE AND  
PASSIT TO RESIST HIM.

Quhen this wes said as I haif said zow till,  
 No moir as than he said bot heid him still. 13,350  
 Sone efter syne proclamit with ane cry,  
 That euerilk man suld reddie be in hy,

To follow him quhair he wald went alway.  
 And so thai did vpoun the auchtane day,  
 On fot and hors with mony man of gude, 13,355  
 Conuenit hes ane richt grit multitude  
 Of barronis bald that waponis weill culd weild,  
 That forsie wes to fecht in ony feild.  
 Tha maid no tarie that tyme nyecht nor da,  
 Quhill that thai come all into Gallia, 13,360  
 Brigantia wes namit of the ald,  
 Schort quhill befor as I haif to zow tald.  
 To Galdus graif togidder syne ar gone  
 With Drewedes and vtheris mony one,  
 And on his graue thair seruice syne thai sang 13,365  
 Solempnitlie quhill all the bellis rang ;  
 And euerilk man than kneilland on his knie,  
 Haldand his handis to the hevin on hie,  
 Beseikand godis of thair grace and nicht  
 That sic ane vengeance on the Romanis licht, 13,370  
 To all the warld it sould exempill be  
 In tyme to cum to leif in equitie.  
 Mogallus syne befor thame all ilkone,  
 The image tuke that wes of marbell stone  
 Of king Galdus in till his armis fast, 13,375  
 Syne said to him thir wordis vnagast :

HOW MOGALLUS DID IMPLOR THE HELPE OF  
 GALDUS VPONE GRAIF AS HE HAD BENE ANE  
 GOD.

“ O thow Galdus, O tour inexpugnabill,  
 “ Of strongest strenth and victour invincibill !  
 “ Efter greit pane of weir and oppin wrang  
 “ The quhilk thow sufferit of the Romanis lang, 13,380  
 “ Sone efter syne throw greit curage and mycht  
 “ Rycht manfullie bestowit all thi richt,

“ And vincust thame thryss into feild agane,  
 “ Quhair fourtie thousand of thair men wes slane ;  
 “ Syne all the laif thow maid at thi command 13,385  
 “ With thair lyuis rycht fane to leue the land ;  
 “ I the beseik, sen thow art da and nycht  
 “ Familiar with oure godis of mycht, Lib 5, f. 67.  
 “ As thow wald with thame ma wirk thi will, Col. 1.  
 “ Tak tent till ws now cumyng heir the till ; 13,390  
 “ In thair seruice committit neuir ane cryme,  
 “ Quhilk louit the so weill into thy tyme,  
 “ Into this tyme oure aduocate to be,  
 “ Befoir oure godis in thair majesticie :  
 “ That thai ma grant ws of thair speciall grace 13,395  
 “ The victorie in till all tyme and place.”  
 The laiff siclike, quhair tha stude round about,  
 Bayth zyoung and ald, with mony cryand schout,  
 On gude Galdus thai cryit loud on licht,  
 Beseikand him for to defend thair richt. 13,400

HOW THE DREWEDES AND THE WEMEN THAT WAR  
WICHIS WARNIT THE ROMANIS.

The wemen syne, quhilk war rycht perqueir  
 Of negromancie aneuche wes than to leir,  
 And Drowedes with bibill, bell and buik,  
 Haldand thair handis to the hevin and luik,  
 Witth cruell cursing and with cummerance 13,405  
 Thair wareit hes rycht rudlie the Romans ;  
 Beteiching thame to Pluto, prince of hell,  
 And Cerberus, quhilk is baith fers and fell,  
 With all the godis mager to thair meid,  
 To gif thame grace in na jorney to speid, 13,410  
 And lat thame neuir be maister of thair fa.  
 Quhen this wes done tha tuke thair leif to ga.

HOW MOGALLUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, MET WITH  
VNISPANUS, KING OF PECHTIS.

To Ordolus rycht sone thai passit than  
To king of Pechtis, callit wes Wnispán,  
Wes bydand thame with mony worthie wyeht, 13,415  
In breist plait, braser, and in birny brycht.  
In ane grene meid to gidder syne ar met,  
At tyme and place quhair at the tryst wes set;  
And fuir furth on to Westmaria,  
With greit heirstschip throw all Candalia. 13,420  
Tha left no thing befoir thame that tha fand,  
With fyre and blude distroyit all the land.  
The pepill all for ferdnes fled awa  
To Eborac, that tyme quhair Lucius la;  
And all this thing at lenth to him tha schew. 13,425  
This Lucius that quhen he hard and knew  
That it wes so, our all Britane in hy  
Hes<sup>1</sup> gart proclame than with ane opin cry,  
To meit him thair vpoun the auchtane day,  
Intill all haist als gudlie as tha may. 13,430

HOW LUCIUS THE LEGAT, HEIRAND OFF THAIR  
CUMMYNG, GATHERIT ANE ARMIE INCONTINENT.

Col. 2. And so thai did rycht mony 3oung and ald,  
Full mony berne wes bellicois and bald,  
Vpoun ane laik with Lucius tha met,  
In the same place quhair that the tryst wes set.  
Quhen thair cuming wes to Mogallus knawin, 13,435  
His oist in one togidder hes he drawin;  
Quhairat thai war dispersit on the plane,  
Togither sone he gatherit thame agane.  
And syne in middis of thame quhair he stude,  
Befoir tha baronis war of nobill blude, 13,440

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *And hes.*

And in the presens of thame euerie man,  
 His oresone richt lustelic began ;  
 And opinlie befor thame did rehers  
 All fatheris deidis that I haif put in verss.  
 As gude Edeir that faucht with Julius, 13,445  
 And Caratac that wes so curious,  
 And Corbreid als, the quhilk than wan Catus  
 Into Britane, my storie tellis thus ;  
 And of Galdus the greit triumph and gloir,  
 As ze haif hard nocht lang gane syne befor. 13,450  
 Thair deidis all als far than as he kend,  
 Ilk word by word rehersit to the hend ;  
 To that effect gif that he culd thame mak  
 Of gude beleif and moir curage to tak,  
 That da to fecht and erar thair to de, 13,455  
 Out of that feild ane fut or thai wald fle.

HOW LUCIUS THE LEGAT, IN PRESENS OF HIS  
 ARMIE, TO GIFF THAME CURAGE, REHEIRSIT  
 THE NOBILLIS DEIDIS OF ALD ROMANIS.

This Lucius, siclyke he wes nocht lidder,  
 Quhen all his men convenit war togidder,  
 Siclike to thame wes thair, bayth les and moir,  
 Rehersit hes all thing wes done befor. 13,460  
 Begynnand first at Aulus Plantius,  
 Ostorius and Aulus Dedius,  
 Suetonius, and mony vther ma,  
 Petelius and gude Agricola ;  
 Thair deidis all he brocht in memorie, 13,465  
 Thair greit triumph and all hie victorie ;  
 So plesandlie amang thame that he spak.  
 Beseikand thame exempill for till tak  
 Be<sup>1</sup> thair fatheris schort quhile of befor,  
 And to pretend to sic honour and gloir 13,470  
 Amang thair peiris for till prysit be,  
 Or in battell all in ane da to de.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *That*.

THE ORDOUR AND ENTERING OF THE GREIT BAT-  
TELL BETUIX MOGALLUS, KING OFF SCOTTIS,  
AND THE ROMANE LEGAT.

Lib.5,f.67b. Be this wes said thai war all rayit rycht,  
Col. 1. With baneris braid displayit vpoun hycht,  
And schalmes schill schouttand on euerie syde, 13,475  
And standertis waifing with the wynd full wyde ;  
In curage cleir as ony buriall bricht,  
As lamp or lanterne with ane hevinlie lycht ;  
The plesand sound of euerilk menstrallie,  
Mellifluat and full of melodie, 13,480  
Of trumpet, talburne into sindric tune,  
Sum in bas and sum into alt abone.  
Syne on a mure togidder that tha met,  
Thir freikis fell quhair that the feild wes set ;  
The Romane knichtis that wer stout and strang, 13,485  
The awfull dartis so slelie than thai flang,  
Quhilk wrocht greit wo with woundis that wer wyde ;  
The bowmen bald vpoun the tother syde,  
With bowis big that war baith traist and trew,  
And mony flane weill fedderit fra thame flew, 13,490  
With hard heidis all forgit of fyne steill,  
That scharplie schuir, that nicht the Romane feill.  
Thair scharpe schutting maid mony syde till sow,  
Throw all thair geir tha gart thame grame and  
grow,  
Quhill that the blude brist out vpone the grene ; 13,495  
That ilk counter so cruell wes and kene.

HOW LUCIUS THE LEGAT, SEAND HIS MEN FAILL  
IN THE FEILD, SEND NEW SUPPLE TO THAME,  
AND SICLYKE MOGALLUS.

This Lucius, seand his men so faill,  
With new power he maid ane scharpe assaill,  
Quhair that the stour wes strangest in the tyde.  
Mogallus als, vpoune the tother syde, 13,500



Hes enterit in with sic ane rous and reird,  
 Quhill rochis rang and trimlit all the erd.  
 With dyntis dour ilk ane on vther draue,  
 Quhill all thair scheildis into pecis raue ;  
 In that same tyme it wes rycht ill to ken 13,505  
 Quha buir best hand the wemen or the men,  
 So stifflic than into that stour thai stude  
 Vnabasit other for boist or blude.  
 The mo woundis thai sufferit in that tyde,  
 The baldar war and schupe langar to byde. 13,510  
 Thair wes no wapin that mycht gar thame wynk,  
 Na swordis scharpe quhairfoir that tha wald schrink.  
 Into thame wes sic curage, strenth and mycht,  
 That wounder wes to ony war[l]ddie wycht  
 Quha had bene thair that semlic till haif sene, 13,515  
 Of tha wemen sa cruell wes and kene.  
 Wes neur sene with na berne that wes borne  
 So fell ane faucht fyve hundreth 3eir before.  
 The Romanis faucht for till vmschew greit schame,  
 Tha thoct it wes degrading to thair name, 13,520  
 With barbour bodeis for till vincust be,  
 That wes the caus thai wer so laith to fie.  
 The Albiones with grit curage and mycht,  
 Tha faucht that tyme fer to defend thair rycht  
 And victorie that thai befor had wyn ; 13,525  
 Rycht layth tha war with sic honour till twyn.  
 Greit wounder wes how thir bernis mycht byde Col. 2.  
 In thair bodeis that buir sic woundis wyde ;  
 Quha had bene thair that same tyme till haif sene  
 Sa mony berne ly bleidand on the grene, 13,530  
 That wounder wes till ony war[l]ddie wycht  
 How that thai sould haif curage, strenth or mycht,  
 Thoct thai wer neur so stalwart and so sture,  
 To stand so lang and sic dyntis indure.  
 On euerilk syid thair captanis raid about, 13,535  
 Exhortand thame with mony cry and schout,

Baldie to byde and be of confort gude ;  
 That wes the caus so stranglie that tha stude,  
 That euerie freik that fochin had his fill,  
 Tha kest fra thame in yre with eger will 13,540  
 Thair brandis bricht, and out lang knyvis drew,  
 Ane bitter battell than begouth of new.  
 Tha war so hardie bayth of hart and hand,  
 Thair wes na stuff thair straikis mycht ganestand.  
 Tha knyvis kene, quhilk wes of mettell gude, 13,545  
 Throw all thair armour baitht in vtheris blude ;  
 Thair mulane melzeis mendit nocht ane myte,  
 Tha blaidis brycht so bitterlie did byte.  
 With all the strenth that wes within thame left,  
 Tha stentit neur quhill thai come to the heft : 13,550  
 With so grit pith thair plaittis tha did pers,  
 Greit petie war to heir or zit rehers :  
 Sa mony freik fell into deidlie swoun,  
 Als thick as dew dois of the berrie down.  
 Ilk captane thair that tyme in his intent, 13,555  
 On euerie syid richt soir he did repent  
 That euir tha mixt into that mad mellie,  
 Seand that da sa mony douchtie die.

HOW LUCIUS BANERMAN FLED OUT OF THE FEILD  
 SOIR WOUNDIT, QUHILK CAUSIT ALL THE  
 ROMANIS TO FLIE SONE EFTER.

The Albionis that wer bayth stout and strang,  
 Quhair that tha faucht into the thickest thrang, 13,560  
 Tha maid ane counter lyke ane thunder crak,  
 Quhilk maid the Romanis for till pas abak  
 Out of the feild that tyme ane lytill we.  
 Then Lucius that ficht quhen he did se,  
 With ane loud schout he cryit vpone hicht, 13,565  
 Exhortand thame that worthie war and wicht,

Lat not thair tryne of sic auctoritie  
 With barbour bodeis so defoullit be ;  
 Nor maculat so far the Romanes name  
 For ony feir to fle with sic infame. 13,570  
 Thair banerman, wes bald as ony boir,  
 With ane braid arrow woundit wes so soir,  
 In the bodie he mycht na langer byde ;  
 Quhairfoir to fle he tuke purpos that tyde,  
 Waittand on him rycht mony worthie wyeht, 13,575  
 Followand rycht fast quhen that he tuke the flycht.  
 And quhen the laif beheld and saw thame fle,  
 Rycht sua tha fled and lute the fechting be,  
 On till ane wod that wes neirhand besyid, Lib. 5, f. 68.  
 In that beleif thair saiffie for till byde. 13,580 Col. 1.  
 Be this wes done than cumin wes the nyecht,  
 And euerilk syde of vther hes tynt sycht,  
 The Albionis thair buglis baldlie blew,  
 And all thair men together gart renew  
 On to the feild quhair that tha faucht befoir, 13,585  
 Thair to remane that nycht baith les and moir.  
 With trumpet, tabborne, and with clarione cleir,  
 Thair dulce musick wes hevinlie for till heir,  
 The lang nycht our with sic sporting and pla,  
 In greit solace quhill on the morne wes da. 13,590  
 Syne on the morne, be that the lauerok sang,  
 Deuydit hes the spulze thame amang ;  
 Rycht equallie to lad, to lord and laird,  
 As he wes worth, gaif him to his reward.

HOW EFTER THE FEILD ANE CUMPANY OF ROMANIS  
 FLEAND WALD NOCHT BE TANE, QUHILL THAI  
 WAR SLANE ILK MAN.

In that same tyme thair schew to thame ane 13,595  
 spy,  
 Ane multitude of Romanis wer neirby,

Into ane place quhair thai war nocht weill kend,  
 And knew na way that tyme quhair tha sould  
     wend,  
 For mos and myre, for mony hill and heuche,  
 Within tua myle wer liand in ane cleuche. 13,600  
 This Mogallus, that wes bayth wyss and wicht,  
 Mony berne all intill armour brycht,  
 The wichtest than amang thame he culd wail,  
 Rycht sone he send tha Romanis till assaill.  
 And fra the Romanis saw thame into sicht, 13,605  
 Tha put thame self in gude array full rycht,  
 Fechtand in feild thai thocht erar to de  
 But straik that tyme nor for till zoldin be.  
 The Albionis quhen that thai vnderstude  
 The Romanis power and thair multitude, 13,610  
 In the respect of thairis wes bot small,  
 Quhairfoir rycht loud on the Romanis did call ;  
 Biddand thame cum and put thame in thair will,  
 And tha of thame suld get na skayth or ill.  
 All thair desyre the Romanis did deny, 13,615  
 So mad thai war full of melancoly,  
 And thocht it farar in that feild to de,  
 Efter that day na for to levand be.  
 The Albionis, scand that it wes so,  
 With swordis scharpe rycht haistelie but ho, 13,620  
 Ane semble maid that wes bayth sad and sour,  
 Syne dang on thame with dyntis that war dour.  
 Bayth helme and heid in pecis all tha hew,  
 Without petie the Romanis ilkane slew ;  
 Syne to thair prince passit agane rycht sone, 13,625  
 And schew till him all how that tha had done.

HOW MOGALLUS AND THE KING OF PECHTIS, ON  
 THE MORNE EFTER THAI WAN THE FEILD, Col. 2.  
 MAID THAR ORESOUN AND OFFERAND IN THE  
 LOVING OF GOD.

Syne on the morne, that tyme as wes the gyiss,  
 Solempnitlie thai maid thair sacrifice ;  
 Thankand thair godis thair bayth anc and all,  
 Sic adventure had maid thame for till call. 13,630  
 Syne euerie man efter his facultie,  
 Rewardit hes quhilk had auctoritie.  
 Ilk captane and euerie courtas knycht  
 Richt richelie rewardit euerie wicht,  
 Efter his work that tyme as he hes wrocht, 13,635  
 Young nor ald at that tyme forzet he nocht,  
 Without reward till [no] man les and moir ;  
 Syne passit hame with greit honour and gloir.

HOW LUCIUS, EFTER THAT HE HAD TYNT THE  
 FEILD, SEND ANE EPISTILL TILL ROME SCHAW-  
 AND HIS INFORTUNITIE.

This Lucius, of quhome befor I spak,  
 Quhilk sufferit hes so mekill skayth and lak, 13,640  
 To Cesar sone ane epistill that he send,  
 Quhilk schew till him at lenth fra end till end,  
 How all wes done as ze haif hard befor ;  
 Complend and als into the tyme rycht soir  
 Of Scot and Pecht, full of crudelitie, 13,645  
 Rycht furious without humanitie,  
 With fyre and blude distroyit hes his land,  
 Wes nothing frie befor that tha fand.  
 Rycht so he said, als far as he culd ken,  
 That thair wemen wes far war nor the men ; 13,650  
 Baldar in blude, and wald no tyme abhor  
 Throttis to cut, and for to stik and gor :

Sayand, richt sone and he send not supple,  
 Richt schamefullie behuift him to fle,  
 Or cruellie ilkane of thame be slane 13,655  
 Without remeid, did thai langar remane.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE, CALLIT ADRIANUS, COME  
 INTO BRITANE WITH GREIT POWER AND PRO-  
 UTSIOUN.

The emprioure, ane worthie nobill man,  
 Quhilk to his name wes callit Adriane,  
 This sair complaint quhen that he hard compleit,  
 Befoir thame all hes giffin his decret, 13,660  
 Himself richt sone to cum into Britane;  
 And so he did with mony nobill man.

Throw Italie he tuke the narrest wa,  
 Throw Lumbartie, and syne throw Gallia;  
 So lang travell he maid than with his oist 13,665  
 Quhill at the last he come till the se coist,  
 Onto ane plane quhair he purposit to byde,  
 The quhilk Calice is callit in this tyde.

Sone efter syne he passit to the flude,  
 With bark and barge, and gala gay and gude; 13,670  
 Without perrell out throw the pais is gone,

Lib.5,f.68b.  
 Col. 1.

Syne at the last tuke land in Albione.  
 The Romanis all of his cuning wes glaid;  
 This Lucius, of quhome befor I said,  
 With mony berne that wes bayth bald and 13,675  
 wycht,

In curage cleir, with mony courtas knycht,  
 On bairdit hors with mony proude pamfray,  
 Tha wend richt sone and met him by the way,  
 With trumpet, talborne, and with clarione cleir,  
 And schalmes schill that hevinlie wes till heir; 13,680  
 And syne to Lundoun tuke the way full richt,  
 In company with mony courtas knicht.

To Adriane that tyme ane come and schew,  
 How Scot and Pecht wer cumin of the new  
 In his boundis with mekill boist and schoir, 13,685  
 And moir power nor euir thai did befoir;  
 Fra blude and battell schupe nocht for to blin  
 Of victorie befoir that thai had win.  
 Thair haltane hartis grew on licht so lie,  
 So full of curage and crudelitie, 13,690  
 In blude and battell baith busteous and bald,  
 Without mercie other to 3oung or ald,  
 In to his ward so mekill wrang had wrocht  
 Cattell and corne and insicht sparit nocht;  
 And all the laif, but stop or thai wald stint, 13,695  
 That wald nocht turs in to ane bailfyre brint.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE ADRIANUS COME WITH HIS  
 ARMIE FIRST TO 3ORK AND SYNE OUR TYNE,  
 AND SYNE TUKE HAILL PURPOIS TO FOLLOW  
 ON THE SCOTTIS.

Quhen Adriane thir tythandis hes hard tell,  
 Without dilay he wald no langar dwell.  
 To Eborac he haistit him in hy,  
 And thair he tuke him lasar for to ly 13,700  
 Quhill all his men wer garneist in thair geir,  
 With fourtie dais victuall for the weir.  
 With haille power he sped him rycht sone syne,  
 Quhill that he come on to the watter of Tyne;  
 And as he come our to the hidder syde, 13,705  
 That da till end throw waist land he did ryde,  
 Quhair thai saw nother corne, cattell, nor ky,  
 But hald or hous, withoutin harberye;  
 In that cuntrie that tyme culd nane be kend.  
 Rycht so thai raid the secund da till end, 13,710  
 And saw nothing bot naikit feild and bair  
 In all thai boundis other les or mair.

This Adriane seand so waist that ground,  
 He franit fast quhair that tha sould be fund  
 The rank revaris that all that wrang had wroecht, 13,715  
 Within thai boundis quhen he fand than nocht.  
 The men befor that duelt in to that land,  
 That tyme thai did him for till wnderstand  
 Tha pepill war nocht eith to apprehend,  
 And ill to wit quhat way that thai had wend; 13,720  
 Sic plesour had to walk vpoun the plane,  
 In frost and snaw, in wynd and als in rane,  
 To sic thing ay had greit affectioun,  
 So rude thai wer of thair complexioun;  
 To ryde on hors, or zit on fute to gang, 13,725  
 Col. 2. To stand and stryke, tha wer bayth stout and strang.  
 Rycht so thai said amang thame wes nocht ane,  
 That tyme culd tell quhair away tha wer gane;  
 Nor zit wist weill quhair away for till wend,  
 The gait wes sa vnreddy and miskend. 13,730  
 And planelie als till him ilkone tha schew,  
 Greit perrell wes sic purpois to persew;  
 As he suld se, and he persauit sone,  
 Without danger it mycht nocht weill be done,  
 Tha pepill wes so bellicois and bald; 13,735  
 Sayand also, rycht weill tha wist tha wald  
 Nocht eith be wyn, gif thai rycht wnderstude,  
 Without greit skayth and spilling of greit blude.

HOW ADRIANE LEFT THE FOLLOWING OF THE  
 ALBIONIS, AND GART BIG ANE STARK WALL  
 BETUIX THE MOUTH OF ESK AND TYNE.

Quhen Adriane hes hard that man sa so,  
 He tuke purpois agane than for till go, 13,740  
 And of that jornay to decist and ceis,  
 And mak all Britane for till leue in pece.  
 He thocht richt weill that wes aneuche for him,  
 And preis no heiar on the quheill to clym,



Or dreid Fortoun sould mak him for to fail. 13,745  
 Syne efterwart, with all thair counsall haill,  
 Fra Tynis mouth anc wall of stane and lyme,  
 To Esk mouth he biggit in that tyme ;  
 Quhilk lang efter, with the induellaris all,  
 To name wes callit Adrianis wall. 13,750  
 Fra Sulwa sand it streikit rycht eist, syne  
 To New-Castell vpone the mouth of Tyne,  
 Rycht stark and strang, and of ane rycht greit  
 strenth,  
 Quhilk fourtie myle contenit als of lenth ;  
 Fra the west se on to the eist also, 13,755  
 This yle diuydand equalie in tuo.  
 In mony place remanes zit to se  
 Of that same wall greit pairtis lang and hie ;  
 With greit takynis quhair strang touris hes bene,  
 As I myself in this same tyme hes sene. 13,760  
 To force the wall, wes maid on cuirilk syde  
 Stankis rycht strang that wer bayth deip and wyde,  
 Rycht mony one that wer nocht far in twyn,  
 That Scot and Pecht be no way our mycht wyn,  
 Within thai boundis for till bring ane oist : 13,765  
 He omittit nocht, suppois he maid greit coist,  
 With all power the pepill for till pleis,  
 Fra Scott and Pecht to gar thame leve in pece.  
 Quhen this wes done, out-throw Westmawria  
 And Tegen als, passit in Cambria ; 13,770  
 Quhair that he did ane litill space remane,  
 Quhill that he had reformat all agane ;  
 And euerie berne rebellit had befoir,  
 Into that tyme he puneist hes rycht soir,  
 And pledgis tuke with greit securitie : 13,775  
 To Lundoun toun syne efter that went he.  
 The nobillis all that wer into Britane,  
 In Loundoun toun come to this Adriane,  
 Thankand him greitlie witht humilitie ;  
 And he agane, with all humanitie, 13,780

Lib. 5, f. 69. Ressaunt thame richt hartlie with gude will,  
 Col. 2. And giftis greit richt mony gaif thame till.  
 Quhairthrow he maid thame all sa weill content,  
 That in thair mynd thai did na thing repent  
 Vnto the Romanis subjungat to be, 13,785  
 Fra that thai knew his liberalitie.

HOW THE EMPRIoure ADRIANE, EFTER THE WALL  
 WAS COMPLEIT, PASSIT HAME, AND LEFT AULUS  
 VICTORII IN BRITANE.

Quhen this wes done he take his leif to go,  
 And Lucius Antone take with him also.  
 Ane nobill man left in his place thair syne,  
 Quhilk to his name wes callit Aulus Victoryne, 13,790  
 With men of weir that worthie wer and wucht  
 For to defend the Romanis in thair richt ;  
 And keip the wall with men of armes strang  
 Fra Scott and Pecht that thai sould tak na wrang.  
 To schip he went, syne saillit throw the se 13,795  
 To Gallia syne, and throw Lumbardie  
 Be land he went but ony delay,  
 Syne come to Rome lang efter on ane day.  
 In his stait royall heir I leif him still,  
 And to my purpos turne agane I will. 13,800

HOW THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS DIUIDIT ALL THE  
 LAND BETUIX THAME LYAND BETUIX THE  
 WALL AND THE WATTER OF TWEID.

This wall biggit, as ze haif hard me sa,  
 In peice and rest richt lang and mony da  
 Into Britane the Romanis than thai rang,  
 Of Scot or Pecht but ony weir or wrang.  
 The landis all liand in lenth and breid 13,805  
 Without the wall fra Tynis mouth to Tweid,  
 Sua endlang west rycht on to Sulwa sand,  
 To the north merche vpoun the tother hand,

This Mogallus and Vnispan also  
 Rycht equalie diuidit hes in tuo. 13,810  
 The Scottis take the west pairt of that land,  
 Fra Cheueot rycht on to Sulwa sand;  
 The strenthis all that thai kest doun befor,  
 Gart big agane at laser les and moir,  
 Rycht sone that tyme and farar als befar, 13,815  
 And of moir strenth befor nor eur thai wer;  
 Syne stuffit thame with men of armes strang,  
 With nychtlie wache that thai sould tak na wrang  
 Of Brit or Roman, other da or nycht;  
 Syne euerie man hes raikit on full richt. 13,820  
 In peice and rest syne leuit mony da,  
 Quhill efterwart hapnit as I sall sa.

HOW MOGALLUS, QUHILK WAS SO NOBILL IN HIS  
 BEGYNNYNG, DREW TO SIC VICIS IN HIS AIGE,  
 QUHAIR HE WAS DISTROYIT.

Sanct Paule sayis in his narratioun,  
 In seiknes oft and tribulatioun  
 Vertew is maid to grow and till incres, 13,825 Col. 2  
 And vice to menische and be maid les.  
 As be the contrair we ma rycht weill se,  
 Quhen men ar in our greit prosperitie,  
 Without ane fall in oucht him till offend,  
 Vice growis quent and vertu is miskend. 13,830  
 Quhairfor me think als far as I haif feill,  
 For this same caus I ma conclude rycht weill,  
 The most perrell in all this warld I se,  
 Is perfite heill with greit prosperitie.  
 As suith is said, that wyiss men sais thair till, 13,835  
 That our grit welth makis wit for to gang will.  
 This ilk exempill that ze heir me sa,  
 Ma weill be said be Mogallus alwa,  
 That Fortoun set so hie vpone hir quheill,  
 Culd nocht be war in tyme quhen he wes weill. 13,840

Of the Romanis quhilk wan sic victorie,  
 Himself also in greit tranquillitie,  
 Sic peice and rest and welth that he had than,  
 Gart him misknaw rycht far bayth God and man,  
 Wyslie in welth for he culd nocht be war. 13,845  
 Infectit wes with tua vycis rycht far,  
 Foull venerie, that rang in him so ryfe,  
 He sparit nother maid nor mannis wyfe,  
 Into his eild, and that I think mest nyiss,  
 To lerne folie quhen tyme is to grow wyss. 13,850  
 In all this warld is moir deformitie,  
 Ane aigit man to vse sic venerie,  
 Without power to haif sic ardent will,  
 Quben litill ma thair appetyte fulfill.  
 And secundlie, wes infectit also 13,855  
 With auerice that no tyme can cry ho ;  
 Into the eild, quhen all vice is maid les,  
 Than auerice begynniss till increas ;  
 And ay the moir [in] riches men abound,  
 The wydar ay and moir werkis the wound ; 13,860  
 And quhen ane man is in penuritie  
 It sowis soir without saturitie ;  
 The oftar ay that plastrit be the wound,  
 With gredie glit far mair it dois abound ;  
 Vnsaturabil bayth in ald and ȝouth, 13,865  
 The moir thai drink the moir thai<sup>1</sup> haif of drouth ;  
 Syne in the eild it growes but remeid,  
 And stanchis nocht quhill it induis strang deid.  
 Quhilk preuit weill by Mogallus this king,  
 That wes so far infectit to sic thing, 13,870  
 That<sup>2</sup> in his ȝouth sic honour wan and gloir,  
 Syne in his eild sic vicis did devoir,  
 That sumtyme wes ane of the nobillist sort,  
 My pen for petie ma nocht weill report.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *Than*.

And thocht I nicht, I think schame to reveild 13,875  
 The foull vices he vsit in to his eild;  
 Of venerie vice, as I haif said befoir,  
 And auerice the langar ay the moir,  
 Quhilk causit him to do rycht mony thing  
 Agane the honour of ane prince or king, 13,880  
 The commoun welth and his kinrik alss bayth,  
 And all his liegis greit dammage and skayth.  
 He maid ane law, the quhilk does zit remane, Lib.5.f.69b.  
 For ony cryme gif that ane man wes slane, Col. 1.  
 Or exull maid for ony kind<sup>1</sup> of thing, 13,885  
 That all his gude sould escheit be to the king.  
 This law wes nocht maid for the commoun weill,  
 Bot for him self, as far as I haif feill,  
 To find ane falt be ony subtill slicht,  
 Quhair plesit him to win rycht or mycht. 13,890  
 Be sic lawis he wrocht rycht mekill wrang;  
 Mony gart heid and mony als gart hang,  
 Baith of the pepill and of the nobill blude,  
 But ony caus to wyn riches and gude.  
 His lordis seand that it wald be so, 13,895  
 In quyet counsall did togidder go;  
 And secretlie, or knawin wes sie thing,  
 Conspyrit hes that tyme agane thair king.  
 So quietlie this thing wes nocht done,  
 Quhill to the king ane come and schew him 13,900  
 sone,  
 That knew thair counsall bayth in ill and gude.  
 This Mogallus than quhen he vnderstude  
 Of thair counsall baith for gude and ill,  
 He dred full soir to cum into thair will;  
 Knawand so weill his awin iniquitie, 13,905  
 For verra dreid tuke ferme purpois to fle,  
 Or tak his chance, thair wes na vther chois,  
 He knew him self that tyme so criminois.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *king*.

Syne on the nycht, quhen all men wes at rest,  
 With tuo feiris quhome that he lykit best, 13,910  
 But feris mo he wes so soir adred,  
 On to ane wod that was besyde he fled.  
 Syne on the morne quhen that this thing wes  
 knawin,  
 The king wes fled, and to the lordis schawin ;  
 Rycht haistelie, fra tyme that thai gat wit, 13,915  
 Tha followit fast bayth vpone hors and fit.  
 Of thair cuming quhen Mogallus hard tell,  
 He dred so soir he durst na langar dwell ;  
 Out throw the forrest tuke the way to fle  
 Vnto the Ylis, trowand thair saif to be. 13,920  
 And suddanelie, vnknawand how it standis,  
 Or cuir he wist come in his fais handis ;  
 Quhair he wes slane but ony remeid,  
 Rycht crewallie at him thai had sic feid.  
 The sept zeir and threttie of his ring, 13,925  
 So wes the end of this Mogallus king ;  
 Ane hundreth zeir fourtie and aucht wes than,  
 Efter that Chryst incarnat was ane man.  
 This Mogallus, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 Throw ill counsall maid ane wratchit end, 13,930  
 Into his aige quhen he best wnderstude ;  
 In his youthheid so nobill wes and gude,  
 Wes nane better na he wes callit than,  
 Of the Romanis sic victorie that wan.  
 Petie it wes that sic ane nobill king, 13,935  
 Throw ill counsall and throw na vther thing,  
 Sould fail so far, and out of number be  
 Of nobill knightis and thair greit cheualrie.  
 Lat ilk man say at plesour as he list,  
 As for my self, I say as I think best ; 13,940  
 Als far of him as I can heir or se,  
 His lordis war far moir to wyte nor he ;  
 And had greit wyte thairwith of all his wrang,  
 That saw him faill, and sufferit him so lang :

And sall gif comp rycht so of all his cryme, 13,945  
 Wald nocht resist quhen that tha mich[t] in tyme.  
 He faillis farrar that sould the faltar mend,  
 Fra that the falt be cleirlie to him kend,  
 That sould correct and dois nocht in tyme,  
 No he that is committar of the cryme. 13,950  
 In this mater I will na mair remane,  
 But to my purpois pas I will agane.

HOW EFTER THE DEITH OF MOGALLUS, CONARUS  
 HIS SONE WAS CROWNIT KING OF SCOTTIS ;  
 THE QUHILK SONE EFTER WAS FUND RYCHT  
 EUILL.

Efter the tyme of this ilk Mogallus,  
 Ane sone he had wes callit Conarus,  
 That crownit wes sone efter he wes deid, 13,955  
 For to be king and ring into his steid.  
 At his begynnyng fenzeit wes richt fair,  
 Syne efterwart the langar ay the wair,  
 With mony falt mycht nocht be fra him reft,  
 Begynnyng than quhair that his father left. 13,960  
 Rycht fremmit wes ay to the men of gude,  
 And tretit nane bot brybouris of vyld blude,  
 Rycht mony dastart that full lytill docht,  
 And at thair counsall all thing ay he wrocht.  
 Bayth land and gude in to that graceles gaird, 13,965  
 He sparit nocht to gif thame in rewaird.  
 Syne efterwart into the parliament,  
 Quhair all his lordis that tyme wer present,  
 Complenit planelie thair befor thame all,  
 That his rentis wer so puir and small, 13,970  
 Quhilk mycht nocht weill his stait royall sustene,  
 In sic honour as his eldaris hes bene.  
 Quhairfoir he hes desyrit of thame all  
 Ane small tribute and zeirlie victuall,  
 Sen that his rentis war our small ane thing, 13,975  
 For to sustene the honour of ane king.

HOW THE LORDIS, THAT CULD NOCHT WEILL MAK  
ANSUER AT THAT TYME, TUKE ANE AUYSMENT  
TO GIFF ANSUER.

The lordis all that present war thair plane,  
Knew nocht weill how thair sould ansuer agane,  
In sic ane thing so suddanelie to say,  
Bot tuke ane respit till ane vther day. 13,980  
That samin nycht syne, or thair zeid to rest,  
To counsall went to do as thair thocht best.  
In that counsall than thair decreittit ilkone  
That this ilk king in handis sould be tone,  
And put in ward quhill endit be this stryffe, 13,985  
Lib. 5, f. 70. And thair remane for terme of all his lyfe.  
Col. 1. Syne all his court quhilk war bot lad and knaif,  
To hang thame all that him sic counsall gaif,  
Till all vther ane document till be  
To vse justice, resoun and equitie. 13,990  
Syne efterwart, quhair that the tryst wes set,  
The lordis all thair with this king hes met;  
Ane agit lord that tyme in hand hes tane  
To mak ansuer at thair command ilkane,  
Greit prattik had and in wisdome perqueir, 13,995  
Sic ansuer maid as I sall schaw zow heir.

HOW THE LORDIS, EFTER THAIR COUNSALL, GAIFF  
ANE RICHT SCHARPE ANSUER AGANE TO THAIR  
KING.

“ We mervell mekill how sic thing ma be,  
“ Quhairfoir ze plene of sic necessitie,  
“ And greit mister so oft we heir zow mene,  
“ Sayand zour rentis ma zow nocht sustene, 14,000  
“ Considerand ze haif baith les and moir  
“ The rentis all that zour eldaris had befoir,  
“ In peice and rest withoutin ony weir,  
“ But ennimye to do zow ony deir.



- “ Quhen gude Galdus, in all his grittest stres, 14,005  
 “ Nocht wi[r]th ane myte desyrit moir or les,  
 “ Quhilk in his weiris wagit mony knight,  
 “ And worthelie rewardit euerie wicht ;  
 “ Greit travell tuke to keip him on ouirthrawin,  
 “ And all that tyme content ay of his awin, 14,010  
 “ And had aneuche ay of his awin to spend,  
 “ With sufficians vnto his latter end.  
 “ Rycht full he wes of liberalitie,  
 “ But auerice or prodigalitie,  
 “ And at the counsall of his lordis wrocht ; 14,015  
 “ In all his tyme without thame did he nocht.  
 “ Into his tyme authorizit neur ane knave,  
 “ No nane that wes unproffittabill to haif ;  
 “ Bot fra his realme excludit thame rycht far.  
 “ Wes nane so pert into that tyme that dar 14,020  
 “ Be send agane, wnder the pane of deid,  
 “ In his boundis for wanting of his heid.  
 “ And ze,” he said, “ quhilk<sup>1</sup> I dar rycht weill say,  
 “ Without wisdom gangis ane vther way ;  
 “ So glittuslie full of gulositie, 14,025  
 “ Of meit and drink with sie pluralitie ;  
 “ Into sic daffing putting your delyte,  
 “ As brutell beist that followis appetyte,  
 “ Makand thair self so pair and indigent ;  
 “ Consumand all thair riches and thair rent, 14,030  
 “ On huris, harlottis, and in hasartry,  
 “ With sic plesour your purpois till apply,  
 “ With gredines and greit vngratitude,  
 “ And tretis nane but brybouris of vyld blude ;  
 “ At that counsall hes bene led all your tyme 14,035  
 “ Evin like ane bird is lampit in the lyme ;<sup>2</sup>  
 “ And euerie lad syne haif ze maid a lord ;  
 “ Your riches thus is waistit and euill waird. Col. 2.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *quhill*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *lyne*.

“ And now,” he said, “ ze ask at ws and crave  
 “ Ane zeirlic tribute of ws for till haif, 14,040  
 “ The quhilk befoir, as that we wnderstand,  
 “ Wes neur done with na king in this land.  
 “ Quhairfoir as now tha bad me sa zow till,  
 “ Bot ze reforme sic appetit and will  
 “ Now into tyme, and nocht to byde our lait, 14,045  
 “ Thay sall zow bring to sic ane febill stait,  
 “ That ze sall neid na tribut for till haif,  
 “ And zour counsall als be the leist ane knaif,  
 “ That efterwart it sall exempill be,  
 “ Till all knaifes to tak auctoritie, 14,050  
 “ Or zit ane king, thoct he be neuer so strang,  
 “ Amang his liegis for to wirk sic wrang.”

HOW THE KING CONARUS WAS RYCHT DISPLESIT  
 AT THAT ANSUER, ACCUSAND THE LORDIS HOW  
 THAI DURST BE SO PEIRT.

Quhen this wes said, this king Conarus than,  
 Rycht haistelic, as vnauisit man,  
 He said agane, with greit anger and fume, 14,055  
 “ How durst ze be so pert all to presume  
 “ Me till impung of my plesour or will,  
 “ Or presuppone me to constrane thair till,  
 “ Or in my presens with sic ansuer compeir?  
 “ I make ane vow it salbe coft full deir.” 14,060

HOW CONARUS WAS TANE AND PUT IN PRESOUN,  
 AND ARGADUS, LORD OF ARGYLE, MAID GO-  
 VERNOUR.

The lordis all that sittand war about,  
 Rycht suddanelic thai rais all in ane rout;  
 And said he wes vnworthie in all thing,  
 For to succeid to Fergus wes thair king.

Syne handis laid vpone him haistelic, And in ane cell that secret wes neirby, Inclisit him but companie alane; Syne all the laif of his counsall ilkane, Baith young and ald, but patience or petie, Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to de.	14,065     14,070	
In that presoun, with displesour and pane, For all his tyme thai gart him thair remane. Ane nobill man of greit honour and fame, That callit wes Argadus to his name, Of Argatill the lord and prince wes he, To him thai gaif the hail auctoritie, Quhill efterwart that tha mycht weill provyde To cheis ane king thair kinrik for till gyde. This Argadus, quhilk wes ane nobill man, His regimen rycht royallie began.	     14,075     14,080	
Bayth thift and reif, slauchtter and oppressioun, He puneist all at counsall with discretioun; And but counsall nothing he tuke on hand, Greit peice he maid rycht sone our all the land; And in his tyme he wes as traist as steill, Quhairfoir the lordis louit him rycht weill. The pair pepill luift him with thair hart, For he to thame keipit sa gude ane pairt. Sen quhen he wes of maist auctoritie, And in thair fauour dalie stude sa hie, He changit sone in till ane vther man, And left the gait quhairin he first began. Without consent than of his lordis all, With priuat counsall sic as he wald call, Quhause he vsit, that said ay as he wald.	    14,085             14,095	Lib.5,f.70b. Col. 1.
And so he wrocht richt lang and monyfeld, And blythast wes quhen he saw maist discord, And grittest stryffe betuix ilkane lord, Traistand thairfoir mair sicker for till be, Without trubill in his autoritie.	    14,100	

Ane ladie bricht, quhilk wes of nobill kin,  
 The lordis dochter wes of Otholyn,  
 Of Pechtis blude vnto his wyfe tuke he,  
 Traistand rycht weill throw that affinitie,  
 In peax and rest for terme of all his lyfe, 14,105  
 His office bruke but other sturt or stryffe.  
 Quhairat the lordis had rycht greit invye,  
 Ay moir and moir with sic melancolye,  
 Into thair mynd with greit anger and tene,  
 So that tha mycht noch[t] langar weill sustene: 14,110  
 Syne in ane counsall quhair thai did compeir,  
 Accusit him as I sall schaw 3ow heir.

HOW THE LORDIS ACCUSIT ARGADUS, THAIR GO-  
 VERNOUR, THAT HAD MAREIT ANE PECHTIS  
 DOCHTER BUT THAIR CONSENT.

“ Quhen we,” thai said, “ of oure beneuolens  
 “ Hes chesit the to gyde ws as oure prince,  
 “ Throw greit beleif of sic vertew in the, 14,115  
 “ Quhilk hes the maid oure governour to be,  
 “ Depryuit hes oure lauchfull prince and king,  
 “ And ordanit the in to his place to ring;  
 “ And now thow hes, but oure auctoritie,  
 “ With Pechtis blude vnwyislie mixit the; 14,120  
 “ Quhilk is contemptioun to the stait royall  
 “ Baith of oure croun and of the lordis all.  
 “ And als thairwith we think thow hes done war,  
 “ Incontrair the commoun weal rycht far,  
 “ With priuat counsall that so lang hes wrocht, 14,125  
 “ And of the lordis rakit hes richt nocht,  
 “ In the degrading of oure gloir and fame,  
 “ Quhairfoir we think thow hes seruit grit blame.”

HOW ARGADUS, SEAND THAT HE CULD NOCHT  
EXCUISS HIS FALT, FELL DOUN ON HIS KNEIS  
ASKAND THAME GRACE.

This Argadus befor thame all that da,  
So abasit wes wist nocht weill quhat to sa ; 14,130  
Beacus ke kend that all that thing wes trew,  
Wox reid for schame and changit oft his hew,  
Excusand him als far as [that] he mocht ; Col. 2.  
Bot all sic langage wes that tyme for nocht.  
Thair wes no way by thame that he mycht gang, 14,135  
By sic resoun thair fand him in the wrang.  
And quhen he saw that he culd not prevail,  
The langar ay the lykar for to fail,  
Doun on his kneis he fell befor thair feit,  
And for his gilt thair he begouth to greit. 14,140  
Sayand he wald at thair willis rycht one  
Amend all thing befor that wes misdome,  
Beseikand thame to haif him of petie,  
Sen in thair will so far that tyme wes he.  
Thocht he that tyme had seruit weill his deid, 14,145  
Zit neuirtheles thair was better remeid,  
Sen that his will was alway for till mend,  
In tyme to cum the quhilk sall weill be kend.  
Syne puirlic thair he put him in thair will,  
As plesit thame other to gude or ill ; 14,150  
Bayth land and gude, freindis and all the laif,  
Evin at thair will, as plesit thame till haif.

HOW THE LORDIS OF SCOTLAND, HEIRAND THIS  
ARGADUS SO PENITENT, TUKE HIM IN THAIR  
GRACE, AND RESSAVIT HIM TO ALL AUCTORITIE  
QUHILK HE HAD OF BEFOIR.

The lordis all considerit weill sic thing,  
His wordis meik, rycht laulie and bening,

His bitter teiris and his havie caice ; 14,155  
 Rycht meiklie than thai tuke him in thair grace,  
 And to his stait agane did him restoir,  
 With all fredome sic as he had befoir.  
 His fals counsall all ar in handis tane,  
 In presoun syne thai gart thame lig thair 14,160  
 allane ;  
 Quhair thai remanit to thair latter end,  
 For thair counsall, as it wes rycht weill kend.  
 Ay efter that this Argadus the gude  
 Weill louit wes with all the nobill blude ; 14,165  
 In peice and rest he gydit all that ring,  
 With greit plesour baith of ald and zing,  
 And all faltis he maid rycht sone to ceis ;  
 In all that tyme greit plentie wes of peice ;  
 And euirilk lord he causit to keip law 14,170  
 Within him self of thingis that wer smaw ;  
 And greit mater, as for to heid and hyng,  
 Referrit all to cum befoir the king,  
 Or his justice, quha enir wes for the tyme,  
 For till decyde all sic causis and cryme, 14,175  
 And all sic thingis thairfoir till declair ;  
 Quhilk callit is this tyme the Justice Air.

HOW CONARUS SONE EFTER SYNE TUKE SEIKNES  
 IN PRESOUN, OFF THE QUHILK HE DEPAIRTIT.

Sone efter that, as aventure befell,  
 This Conarus of quhome ze haif hard tell,  
 Sic dolour tuke in presoun da and nycht, 14,180  
 Lib. 5. f. 71. Langar to leve had nother strenth nor nycht.  
 Col. 1. Quhen sair seiknes, that nane can satisfie,  
 Commux[i]t is with mad melancolie,  
 In all this world thair is no ertylie wycht  
 Hes strenth to stand agane it half anc nycht. 14,185

As nicht be said of this Conarus king ;  
 The fourtene zeir then efter of his ring,  
 And aucht of thame in presoun than he la,  
 And in the last cloisit his latter da.

HOW ETHODEUS, THE SISTER SONE OF MOGALLUS,  
 EFTER THE DEID OF CONARUS, WES CROWNIT  
 KING, AND WES EFTER ALL HIS TYME ANE  
 NOBILL PRINCE.

Ane nobill man callit Ethodeus, 14,190  
 Wes sister sone to the king Mogallus,  
 That father was to this Conarus king,  
 Was crownit than in Scotland for to ring,  
 And he that wes the narrest lauchtfull air,  
 Ane priuce he wes rycht plesand and preclair, 14,195  
 With hail consent, my storie tellis thus,  
 And speciallic of nobill Argadus,  
 To quhome that king greit credens gaif,  
 And thankit him heichlie attour the laif  
 Of nobill deidis he had done befoir, 14,200  
 Befoir thame all that present than wes thoir.  
 Rewardand him, as ze sall wnderstand,  
 Rycht richelie with gold, guidis and land ;  
 With hail consent gaiff him autoritie,  
 Of all Scotland the lieutenantand to be ; 14,205  
 Quhilk in his tyme did mony nobill deid,  
 As ze ma se quha lykis of him to reid.  
 Syne efter that, this nobill king with croun  
 Ouir all his kinrik raid baith vp and doun,  
 With greit plesour ouir all baith far and neir, 14,210  
 To euerie man he wes haldin so deir.

HOW THE KING SEND ARGADUS IN THE YLIS  
WITH ANE ARMIE, THE QUHILK BROCHT MONY  
WITH HIM THAT MAID SLAUCHTER.

In this same tyme that ze heir me tell,  
Into the Ylis sic aventure befell.  
Ane greit discord, and of ane litill caus,  
Quhilk wes begun of euill disposit sawis, 14,215  
That efterwart causit richt mekill stryfe,  
Quhair throw richt mony loissit hes the lyfe  
I[n] mort battell quhair mekill blude wes drawin.  
And fra that cace vnto the king wes schawin,  
Without delay he passit hes richt sone 14,220  
Onto the Ylis quhair that the deid wes done.  
This Argadus, of quhome befor I tald,  
Directit wes, quhilk wes ane berne full bald,  
To tak thir folk quhair euir tha mycht be fund,  
Syne to the law befor him bring thame bund. 14,225  
And so he did sone efter on ane da,  
Rycht suddantlie he tuke thame quhair tha la,  
Vpoun the nycht, convoyit be ane spy,  
Within ane strenth quhair thai kest thame to ly.  
Col. 2. In raipis rude gart bind thame ald and zing; 14,230  
Syne on the morne presentit befor the king  
All thame ilk one in quhome begouth that wrang,  
Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to hang.  
And euerie man efter the quantitie  
He gart puneis of his iniquitie; 14,235  
Sum of his gude, and vther sum of land,  
In tyme to cum moir aw to gar thame stand.  
Syne witht his lordis that wer thair ilkone,  
Went to the se and come in Albione,  
To Enverlochty, on to that royall toun 14,240  
In Lochquhaber, quhilk than wes of renoun.



HOW ANE MESSINGER COME AND SCHEW TO THE  
KING HOW THE BRITIS AND THE ROMANIS  
HAD HEREIT GALDIA.

Sone efter syne, vpoun the secund da,  
Ane messinger come furth of Galdia ;  
Schawand to him [how] the Britis gart brak  
The stark stone wall quhilk Adriane gart mak, 14,245  
And wylt the Romanis come into thair land,  
Makand greit forray vpone euerie hand ;  
And all the gude within thai boundis la,  
Of Scotland, Pechtland, thai draif with thame awa.  
The cuntrie men that follout on the fray, 14,250  
On fit and hors come till thame in array,  
And gaif thame feild than or thai fordert fuir,  
And faucht als lang as thai docht till induir ;  
Quhill mony one on euerie syde wes keild,  
Syne at the last the Romanis wan the feild ; 14,255  
The quhilk richt lang stude betuix thame in weir,  
Ȝit neuirtheles thai haif it coft full deir.  
Of thair forra thai neid nocht to be fane,  
Thair nobillis all come thair that da ar slane.

HOW ETHODEUS SEND ANE HERAULD TO THE  
LEGAT, ASKAND REDRES OF THE WRANGIS  
DONE TO HIM.

Ethodeus, quhen he hard it was so, 14,260  
In haist ane herald hes he maid till go  
With his credence, and send him sone on syne,  
To thair legat, this Aulus Victoryne,  
To ask redres of all that thai had done ;  
And wald he nocht, declair him battell sone, 14,265  
Within schort quhile that he sould cum him till,  
And tak ane mendis in mager of his will.

Sayand till him thir wordis in effect,  
 For all his trane he wald no trewis brek,  
 No wirk na wrang with oppin violence, 14,270  
 No more battell bot in his awin defence ;  
 Quhairfoir he did him than to vnderstand,  
 The pleicht of all sould fall on his awin hand.  
 This herald come befoir this Romane knycht,  
 And raknit him thir wordis all at richt ; 14,275  
 And quhen he hard tha wordis all in plane,  
 This wes the ansuer that he gaif agane.

Lib.5,f.71b.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THE ROMANE LEGAT GAIFF SO LICHLIEFULL  
 ANE ANSUER TO THE KING OF SCOTTIS HERALD.

“ Gude freind,” he said, “ ze sall wit or ze gang,  
 “ How that your self wes first into the wrang.  
 “ Bayth Scot and Pecht come with thair powar 14,280  
 hail,  
 “ And in aue place, quhairat thai brak the wall,  
 “ Biggit aue tour of tymmer and of stone,  
 “ And keipit it this lang tyme bigone,  
 “ Quhairby tha maid thair passage nycht and da,  
 “ And mekle gude with thame thai drave awa, 14,285  
 “ And of oure men richt mony els hes slane ;  
 “ And quhen that we ask redres agane  
 “ At your wardane, he dryvis ws bot to scorne,  
 “ Sayand thai men war at the king[is] horne,  
 “ Aganis quhome we nicht mak na remeid ; 14,290  
 “ And thus on force we sufferit lang your feid,  
 “ Quhairfoir we knaw without ony reprove,  
 “ We haif just caus on your battell to move,  
 “ The quhilk I dar avow your king befoir ;  
 “ Of me,” he said, “ thow gettis now no moir.” 14,295

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS, HEIRAND THE ANSUER  
OF VICTORYNE, WRAIT TO THE KING OF  
PECHTIS SCHAWAND HIM THE SAME ANSUER.

Quhen this wes said the herald leif hes tane  
 Befoir thame all wes present thair ilkane,  
 And word by word as ze haif hard he schew.  
 This nobill king, quhen he that ansuer knew,  
 Ane epistill wrait, and suddanelic it sent 14,300  
 To king of Pechtis with his hail intent,  
 Beseikand him of his help and supplie,  
 At da and place that he sould reddie be  
 To meit with him, and he sould tak the cuir  
 Till be revengit of the greit injure, 14,305  
 And to reforme the greit dampnage and cryme  
 Tha had sustenit laitlie in that tyme ;  
 The lichtlie langage of ilk lad and knave,  
 And the ansuer the Romane legat gave.  
 The messinger this epistill hes present 14,310  
 To king of Pechtis in his parliament.  
 Befoir thame all quhen it wes red alone,  
 Tha war content of that desyre ilkone,  
 Grantand thair that thai sould reddie be  
 Richt suddantlie to cum in his supple, 14,315  
 At da and place quhair he plesit to meit ;  
 Of that counsall so wes the hail decret.  
 This messinger no langer wald remane,  
 With that ansuer he passit hame agane ;  
 And schew till thame as ze haif hard me sa, 14,320  
 Tha suld be reddie baith at place and da,  
 At his plesour to meit in ony place ;  
 And so thai did within ane litill space.

HOW ETHODEUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, AND THE  
KING OFF PECHTIS CONVENIT TOGIDDIR IN  
ANE PLACE.

- Col. 2. Vpoun ane plane quhair that the tryst wes set,  
Thir kingis tuo togidder thair thai met. 14,325  
Ane royall oist thai war than to behald,  
Of mony berne richt bellicois and bald.  
And sone thai set ane salt vnto the wall,  
In sindrie pairtis quhair thai gart it fall ;  
Syne enterit in without ony ganestand, 14,330  
With greit heirschip richt far into the land,  
Fra fyre and blude that tyme tha ceissit nocht,  
At thair awin will ane lang [quhile] sa tha wrocht.

HOW AULUS VICTORYNUS THAT NYCHT PASSIT  
QUIETLIE BY THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS  
QUHILL HE COME IN SCOTLAND.

- Aule Victoryn, that weill thair cuming knew,  
Come with ane oist his landis till reskew. 14,335  
Syne on the nycht he passit our the wall,  
And by thair oist richt quietlie he stall,  
And lay that nicht within the Scottis land,  
In that beleif as ze may vnderstand.  
Ethodeus, fra he thair cuming knew, 14,340  
Sone sped him hame thair power till persew ;  
And left the waisting of thair land he maid,  
And greit heirschip within tha boundis braid.  
So quyetlie zit this thing wes nocht done,  
Ethodeus gat wit of it richt sone 14,345  
Be vther men that weill thair cuming knew,  
Richt suddantlie the suith to him that schew.  
Ethodeus, fra he hard tell of that,  
Without delay thair wes no langer lat,

That samyn nycht, anc lytill forrow da, 14,350  
 Come neir the place quhair that the Romanis la;  
 Sone as the day depairtit fra the nycht,  
 Apperit hes into the Romanis sycht,  
 Without tarie into that samin tyde,  
 Bownyng for battell vpone cuerie syde. 14,355

HOW AULUS VICTORYN AND ETHODEUS, THE KING  
 OF SCOTTIS, FAUCHT QUHILL THE NYCHT DE-  
 PARTIT THAME.

Sone on the bent thir bernis that war bald,  
 Togidder met with mony straik wntald;  
 Quhair mony douchtie dung wes fra his hors,  
 And mony freik fellit also on force,  
 And mony berne withoutin bute or beild, 14,360  
 In that counter rycht cruellie wer keild.  
 Thair dyntis dour, sua awfull till sustene,  
 With mekle blude hes spilt vpoune the grene;  
 Wes nane that day sic curage had in bart,  
 Or all wes done he wes full of his pairt. 14,365  
 Fra morne airlie that tha mycht ken the lycht  
 Continewallie thai faucht on to the nycht;  
 That wounder wes till ony creature,  
 Sic dyntis dour sua lang thai mycht indure;  
 And syne had bled so mekle of thair blude, 14,370  
 In so greit dreid and danger ay tha stude,  
 Wounder it wes thai sould had hart or hand,  
 Or ony strenth so lang to stryke and stand. Lib. 5, f. 72.  
 The Romanis had sic prattik into weir, Col. 1.  
 And furneist war so weill into thair geir, 14,375  
 That wes the caus quhairfoir tha mycht weill byde.  
 The Albionis vpoun the tother syde,  
 At the Romanis thai had so greit invy,  
 For that same caus and for na vther quhy,

Tha thocht better all on ane da to de, 14,380  
 Out of that feild ane fit or tha wald fle.  
 So lang thai faucht thir worthie men and wycht  
 But victorie quhill euning wes the nycht,  
 That force it wes to pairt and pas in twyn,  
 Quhill on the morne new battell to begyn. 14,385

HOW THE ROMANIS AND THE ALBIONIS ON ILK  
 SYDE WAR SO BROKIN IN THE BATTEL THAT  
 EFTERWART BAITH REFUSIT FEILD.

That samyn [tyme] ilk syde quhen that thai saw  
 Thair power wes so brokin and so smaw,  
 Sa mony als on euerie syde wes slane,  
 Ilk syde forsuke for till fecht agane.  
 For dreid thairof ilkone gart vther fle 14,390  
 That samyn nycht hame in thair awin cuntrie ;  
 And left the feild as thai had vincust bene,  
 That on the morne neur ane of thame wes sene.  
 The Scottis wemen, and the Pechtis baith,  
 Come on the morne to se and pryf the skaith ; 14,395  
 And saw na man in all that part appeir,  
 Freind or zit fa, other far or neur.  
 Vnto the feild thai passit than but fail,  
 And at thair plesour tuke the spulze hail,  
 And broch[t] with thame without ony ganestand, 14,400  
 At greit lasar hame in thair awin land.  
 This ilk battell of quhilk befoir I tald,  
 To euerie syde so deir that it wes sald,  
 And als thairwith it set thame bayth so sair,  
 For all that zeir tha faucht agane na mair. 14,405

HOW VICTORYN WRAIT ANE EPISTILL TO MARCUS  
ANTONIUS THE EMPRIoure, COMPLENAND OFF  
THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS.

In this same tyme this Aulus Victoryn  
Ane epistill wrait to Rome, and send it syne  
To Mark Antone, wes emprioure for the tyme,  
Complemand soir of greit injure and cryme  
Wes done till him be Scot and Pechtis bayth, 14,410  
With fyre and blude rycht greit damnage and skayth.  
And how thai had met planelie into feild,  
On cuerilk syde sa mony thousand keild;  
And how thai faucht fra morne that it wes lycht  
But victorie quhill twynnit thame the nycht. 14,415  
The king of Scottis, he said, that tyme alsua  
Passit he wes agane in Galdia;  
The king of Pechtis sielike in his awin land,  
To that effect he did him wnderstand,  
With new power agane him till persew; 14,420  
Quhilk and he did, without he gat reskew,  
Force that it wes the Romanis all till fle  
Out of Britane, or than ilkone till de. Col. 2.  
In his epistill also that tyme he writis,  
That he mycht put no traist into the Britis, 14,425  
Sa fals thai wer with grit subillitie,  
With sic affectioun to thair libertie;  
Quhairfoir rycht soir he wes of thame adred.  
This Mark Antone, heirand that epistill red,  
How that it said and circumstance all syne, 14,430  
Considerit weill of Aulus Victoryne,  
His negligens without humanitie  
Had all the wyit of his calamitie,  
Traistand he wes vnabill for sic thing.  
Rycht suddanelie thairfoir he did assing 14,435  
Calphurneus to pas in that jorna,  
Quhilk nevoy wes to Jule Agricola,

Quhome of befoir I haif oft mentioun maid.  
 Calphurneus, withoutin mair abaid,  
 With ane greit oist he travellit mony day, 14,440  
 Throw Italie and Lumbertie the way ;  
 Throw Gallia rycht suddanelie is gone,  
 Quhill that he come syne into Albione,  
 Of his cuming the Romanes wer rycht fane,  
 The quhilk in Britane that tyme did remane, 14,445  
 And baith thair power put hes intill one,  
 Syne furth with him to Eborac ar gone,  
 With mony one that worthie war and wicht,  
 In breist plait, braser, and in birny bricht,  
 Of Scot and Pecht baith to revengit be ; 14,450  
 Ane semelie sicht that tyme tha war to se.  
 Fordward tha fuir tha forsie freikis all,  
 Ay quhill thai come till Adrianis wall,  
 Quhome of befoir sehort quhile ze hard me tell ;  
 And thair thai wald nocht lang remane nor 14,455  
     duell,  
 Bot fordward ay with greit effect on fundis,  
 Quhill that thai come into the Scottis boundis,  
 The quhilk that lay as I said zow lang syne,  
 Betuix the wall and the watter of Tyne.  
 Thir kingis tuo, ane litill quhile befoir, 14,460  
 Gart bring away baith insicht, corne and stoir,  
 And all guidis away that mycht be brocht,  
 Within thai boundis that tyme left rycht nocht  
 To turs with thame, for na travell wald tyre,  
 Syne all the townis set in till ane fyre, 14,465  
 To that effect the Romanes sould not get  
 Within tha boundis lusing or resset.  
 And quhen thai saw thai boundis waistit so,  
 Thay tuke purpos ay fordward for till go,  
 And enterit syne in Ordolucia, 14,470  
 With greit heirschip ouir all Dieria ;  
 With fyre and blude quhair thai gat na ganestand,  
 Syne efter that thai enterit into Pechtland.



And thair thai lay rycht lang at greit laser,  
 And waistit all that land bayth far and ner, 14,475  
 Quhill wynter come that the wedder vox cald,  
 That euerie man suld draw him till ane hald.  
 Thocht he wes nevoy till Agricolay  
 He durst nocht put him self in sie assay,  
 As that he did with his armie ilkone, 14,480  
 So lang that lay into Camelidone ;  
 Bot zeid abak as my author did sa  
 To Eborac, and thair all winter la. Lib.5.f,72b.  
Col. 1.

HOW CALPHURNEUS, THE ROMAN LEGAT, THE  
 NIXT SYMMER PASSIT TO THE FEILD AGANE  
 THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS, AND IN THE SAMYN  
 TYME WAS SCHAWIN HIM HOW THAI REBELLIT  
 IN CAMBRIA.

Syne efterwart, quhen symmer come in sycht,  
 Calfurneus with mony worthie wicht 14,485  
 Prouydit hes within ane certane day,  
 Baith Scot and Pecht with battell till assay.  
 In that same tyme ane come till him and schew  
 Of greit perrell apperit of the new ;  
 In Cambria how that thai did rebell, 14,490  
 And mair attour that tyme he did him tell,  
 Of mony Romanis that the Britis slew,  
 Without mercie, quhair thai gat na reskew ;  
 The Romanis all within thame that had cuir  
 Wer slane ilk one that tyme bayth riche and 14,495  
 puir.  
 Calfurneus, tha tydenis quhen that he knew,  
 Changit his mynd and tuke ane purpos new,  
 And left the jornay he wes to begyn,  
 To keip the land befor that tha had wyn,  
 And mak remeid quhair that rebell wes maid, 14,500  
 And thocht no moir thair kingdomes till inuaid.

For perrell syne [that] efter nicht befall,  
 Or he wald pas he gart reforme the wall  
 In euerie part that tyme baith les and moir,  
 Be Scot and Pecht distroyit wes befor. 14,505

In the wall he ordanit for to be  
 Touris richt greit and turattis that wer he,  
 Quhair men nicht stand for strenth to mak defens,  
 And sparit noch[t] for travell nor expens.  
 Quhen this wes done as ze haif hard me sa, 14,510  
 With all his power passit in Cambria.

The Cambrians thair of tha tuke greit dreid,  
 Zit neuirtheles thay armit thame gude speid ;  
 With hail power agane him syne thai wend,  
 And tuke the chance that goddis wald thame 14,515  
 send.

In plane battell tha met him on ane mure ;  
 Strang wes the stour ane lang quhile did indure,  
 With greit slauchter that tyme on eurirk syde,  
 The Cambriens so baldlie did abyde.  
 Quhill at the last, as Fortoun did inelyne, 14,520  
 The victorie fell to the Romanis syne.

And quhen this battell till ane end wes brocht,  
 Lang efter that at eis zit war thai nocht.  
 The commoun pepill that duelt thair about  
 Rycht syddanelie thai gadderit in ane rout ; 14,525  
 Ane captane maid, as my author did tell,  
 Agane the Romanis baldlie did rebell,  
 Be the persuasioun of the men of gude.

Calturneus, quhen he that vnderstude,  
 And maid no tarie nother da nor nycht, 14,530  
 Bot fordward fuir with greit power and mycht,  
 And gaiff thame feild quhair tha la on a plane ;  
 On euerie syde thair wes rycht mony slane.

The Romanis wan with greit triumph and gloir  
 Col. 2. The feild that day siclike as of befor. 14,535

In this same tyme that I haif to zow tald,  
 Bayth Scot and Pecht thoct thai wer never so bald,

Tha war content to lat the Romanis be,  
 And leif at hame in greit tranquillitie.  
 Calfurneus siclike also did meyne, 15,540  
 Seand fra battell that thai did abstene,  
 And left the weir, thairof he wes content  
 To keip his awin and wes moir diligent.  
 Into that tyme he did as he culd best  
 Ouir all Britane to mak gude peice and rest. 14,545  
 In euerilk place that tyme quhair he hard tell  
 Quha that maid caus agane him to rebell,  
 Withoutin moir richt sone and suddanelie  
 Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to die.  
 In equall wecht thair wrangis he hes weyit; 14,550  
 Ouir all Britane thairfoir he wes obeyit.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE SEND FOR CALFURNEUS, AND  
 SEND ANE VTHER LEGAT IN BRITANE, CALLIT  
 TABELLIO,<sup>1</sup> THE QUHILK WES RYCHT FENZËIT.

This emprioure, callit Antonius,  
 That same tyme send for Calfurneus,  
 At his command that reddie wes till go,  
 And in Britane he send Tabellio. 14,555  
 FenzËit he wes, alss far as I haif fe[j]ll,  
 That his compaine tretit the Britis weill;  
 And Lucius, that tyme that wes thair king,  
 He honourit him aboue all other thing.  
 But his consent and all his lordis haill, 14,560  
 He did nothing that wes of greit availl;  
 Wryting to Cesar that richt oft he send,  
 In quhome this king rycht gritlie did commend;  
 Sayand he wes the Romanis freind so far,  
 In all Britane wes nane so bald that dar 14,565

<sup>1</sup> In MS., and subsequently, for *Trebellius*.

For dreid of him, of hie or law degree,  
 That durst rebell aganis his majestie.  
 Throw sic loving that he gaif to this king,  
 The emprioure he louit our all thing,  
 And all the Romanis siclike les and moir, 14,570  
 With mair fauour nor euir tha had befoir.  
 Becaus he wes so curtas and so heynd,  
 Callit he wes thairfoir the Romanis freind.  
 Sone efter that, this ilk Tribellious,  
 Quhen that he saw his tyme commodious, 14,575  
 That he had brocht all Britane into rest,  
 Trowand richt weill all perrell had bene past,  
 He left the way in quhilk he first began,  
 And changeit sone in till ane vther man.  
 Feinzeit he wes and infectit richt far 14,580  
 Till averice, the quhilk of all is war ;  
 In ony pairt quhair that he wnderstude  
 Wes for to win gold, riches or gude,  
 But ony caus with injust colorit law,  
 Sum he gart heid, and sum gart hang and 14,585  
 draw.  
 The nobill blude alhail distroyit he,  
 And all the laif maid exull for till be ;  
 Quhairfoir the Britis him haittit to the deid,  
 And suddantlie thocht for to mak remeid.  
 And had nocht bene Lucius that wes thair king, 14,590  
 Quhilk fauorit him that tyme in till all thing,  
 The Britis thocht, as my author did tell,  
 Alhaillelie agane [him] to rebell,  
 And with thair power him in feild persew.  
 Bot Lucius, that weill thair counsall knew, 14,595  
 He misit thame than als far as he ma,  
 Sua draif it our ane lang tyme da be da.

HOW ETHODEUS, HEIRAND THE DISCORD BETUIX  
THE BRITIS AND TABELLIUS, CONSIDDERIT  
WEILL THAN WES HIS TYME, AND SEND TO THE  
KING OF PECHTIS FOR HIS SUPPLIE.

Ethodeus, that wes of Scottis king,  
Rycht suddantlie quhen that he knew sic thing,  
Considerit weill that tyme in his intent, 14,600  
The greit invie, malice, and haitrent  
The Britis had at this Tabellius,  
To thame alway he wes so odious,  
Than wes the tyme of oportunitie  
Of Romanis for to revengit be. 14,605  
To the king of Pechtis ane epistill sone he send,  
Beseikand him with hartlie recommend,  
To reddie be, als gullie as he ma,  
With hail power and meit him at set da ;  
Thame to revenge withoutin ony moir, 14,610  
Of all injure wes done to thame befor.  
And so he did, the suith gif I suld tell.  
Thir kingis thus thai met vpone ane fell  
With greit power, syne forward fuir with all,  
Quhill that thai come wnto this foirsaid wall, 14,615  
Quhilk biggit wes richt stark of lyme and stane,  
With touris hie and turatis mony ane ;  
And sone thai set ane seig vnto the wall,  
In sindrie partis quhair thai gart it fall.  
Suppois it wes rycht starklie maid of stone, 14,620  
Tha kest it down, syne in our it is gone,  
And enterit sone into the Romanis land,  
With fyre and blude quhair no resist tha fand,  
Hereit and brint into that tyme our all,  
Bayth tour and toun and strenthis maid to fall. 14,625

HOW THE ORDOURE AND ENTERES OF THE GREIT  
 BATTELL BETUIX ETHODEUS KING OFF SCOTTIS  
 AND TRIBELLEUS THE LEGAT.

Tribelleus, thairof quhen he did heir,  
 Rycht haistelie he come with greit poweir.  
 By the place quhairat thir kingis la,  
 He tuke the feild, as my author did sa,  
 Besyid ane medow on ane rycht plane mure, 14,630  
 In rayit battell till his fais fuir.  
 Ethodeus, persauceand it wes sway,  
 Rycht sone he put his men in till array,  
 With pensallis proude and standartis on hycht  
 And baneris braid broderit with gold so brycht ; 14,635  
 With scheidis schynand our the semelie schaw,  
 In coit armour als quhit as ony snaw.  
 The Romanis als quhair tha stude on the mold,  
 Col. 2. In curage cleir glitterand as ony gold,  
 With baneris braid buskit on euerie syde, 14,640  
 And pynsall proude quhilk wer of mekill pryde.  
 On euerie syde the schalmes schouttand schill  
 Gart cowartis quaik thairof that lykit ill.  
 The braid arrowis, als fers as ony flint,  
 Rycht fast thai flaw with mony deidlie dynt. 14,645  
 The Scottis bowmen that da wer so bald,  
 Full mony freik of force thai maid to fald,  
 And gart thame lig rycht law vpon the land,  
 Thair steill heidis thai mycht na stuf ganestand.  
 The Romane knychtis on thair bairdit hors, 14,650  
 Into the feild tha enterit with grite force ;  
 The Albionis with stiff axis of steill  
 Maid mony knight doun of his hors to kneill :  
 Thair speiris brak and scheidis claue in schunder,  
 Bayth heid and hals war hewin that wer wnder. 14,655  
 The Britis fled, and wes fane of that fang  
 To leif the Romanis in the thickest thrang ;

At the Romanes thai had sa greit invy,  
 Tha fled fra thame than for that samin quhy.  
 The Albionis so cruell war and kene, 14,660  
 The Romanes mycht na langer weill sustene ;  
 So mekill slauchter of thame that wes maid,  
 Quhill that thair blude ran into burnis braid.  
 Tribelleus, quhen that he saw that sicht,  
 No langer baid and sone he tuke the flicht ; 14,665  
 With greit perrell out of the preis he fled,  
 On anc swyft hors out of the feild wes hed.  
 The laif also na langar that thai baid,  
 Than efter him schort tarie than thai maid.  
 Mony war tane, and mony thousand keild ; 14,670  
 Thir kingis tuo that da thai held the feild.

HOW TRIBELLEUS THOCHT TO GIFF BATTELL ON  
 THE MORNE ; THE SCOTTIS KNAWAND THAT,  
 SCLEW<sup>1</sup> ALL THE ROMANIS WAR TANE IN THE  
 FEILD.

Tribelleus so soir that tyme he dred,  
 To Eborac that samin nycht he fled.  
 Syne all his men, als gudlie as he mycht,  
 He gart convene togidder that same nycht, 14,675  
 In that beleif to gif battell agane.  
 The Albionis quhen thai knew that rycht plane,  
 The presoneris that thai had tane befor  
 That samin nycht tha sclew<sup>1</sup> baith les and moir,  
 For to revenge the cruell deid and pane 14,680  
 Of thair freindis in that feild wes slane.  
 In Westmureland, and in Candalia,  
 Baith brint and slew, and all thing tuke awa ;  
 Thair wes nothing into thair gait tha fand  
 Wes saiff that tyme, or zit mycht mak ganestand. 14,685

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *schew*.

Tribelleus, thocht he wes wa thairfore,  
 Ȝit durst he nocht gif battell ony moir;  
 Bot with his men, at greit lasar and lenth,  
 For all that tyme held him cloiss in ane strenth,  
 For dreid of thame and the Britis also, 14,690  
 With thair tressone had wrocht him so greit wo.

Lib.5.f.73b.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THE BRITIS, SEING NO HELP OF THE RO-  
 MANIS, MAID ANE CHIPTANE OF THAIR AWIN  
 AND REBELLIT AGANIS THE ROMANIS.

In this same tyme that Ȝe heir me tell,  
 Amang the Britis sic aventure befell.  
 Seand thame selfis with Scottis so ouirthrawin,  
 Without remeid of ony of thair awin, 14,695  
 And that the Romanis wald mak no supple,  
 Qubairfoir that tyme, richt sone and suddantlie,  
 Dewysit hes, as my author did tell,  
 Aganis the Romanis baldlie to rebell.  
 Ane nobill man, callit Caldor to name, 14,700  
 Amang thame than wes haldin of greit fame,  
 As for ane Brit and of the Britis blude;  
 Ane Pecht he wes quhilk thai nocht vnderstude.  
 The commonis all, that wes in that cuntrie,  
 Hes chosin him thair governour to be. 14,705  
 Aganis the Romanes, vnder speir and scheild,  
 With plane power thai schupe to tak the feild.  
 Tribelleus, quhen he hard tell of that,  
 So basit wes that he wist nocht rycht weill quhat  
 That tyme till do, he stude in sic greit dout, 14,710  
 Bot take counsall of his freindis about.  
 This wes the counsall that thai till him gaif,  
 That present was, bayth ane and all the laif:  
 To gif thame battell als sone as he mocht,  
 Rycht haistelie se that he tareit nocht, 14,715



Or dreid thair power suld grow and be ma,  
 And mix thame[self] syne efter with his fa:  
 And for sic perrell that thai saw appeir,  
 Concludit hes as I haif said zow heir.  
 At thair counsall sone efter he did so, 14,720  
 On fit and hors he went toward his fo.  
 Thairof the Britis tuke ane greit affray,  
 Seand the Romanis in so gude array,  
 In glitterand geir that flammit as the fyre,  
 And baneris bricht all brodin with gold wyre. 14,725  
 Thair captane Caldor gaif thame sic curage,  
 Bayth zyoung and ald, bayth every man and paige,  
 Tha tuke the feild that tyme be as it mycht,  
 Quhair suddantlie mony to deid wes dycht.  
 The Britis all wer nakit than but geir, 14,730  
 And the Romanis sic prattik had in weir,  
 Tha wan the feild, suppois it wes with pane,  
 For in that feild mony of thame wer slane.  
 Caldor thair captane seing so betyde,  
 He tuke his leve and wald no langar byde; 14,735  
 Lyke ony foull out of the feild he flew  
 With his freindis the quhilk his counsall knew;  
 Withoutin stop quhair he fand no ganestand,  
 Quhill he come hame agane into Pechtland.  
 With loude lauchter he maid grit ruse and vant, 14,740  
 How he had playit the Romanis *tant pro tant*;  
 And thair with all blerit the Britis ee  
 On eurilk syde sa mony he gart de.  
 Tribelleus gart tak in to that feild,  
 Bayth zyoung and ald that wald than to him 14,745  
 zeild;  
 Among the laif thai tuke of nobill blude,  
 In vyle habcit wnkend for men of gude, Col. 2.  
 Ten or tuelf, or neirby sic and certane,  
 Of the best men that wes in till all Britane,  
 Quhilk causit all the commonis to rebell. 14,750  
 Tribelleus thairof quhen he hard tell,

And in his mynd the mater did remord,  
 Knawand so weill tha maid the hail discord,  
 Rycht crueallie that tyme, without petie,  
 Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to de. 14,755  
 Thairof the Britis greit displesour tuke;  
 That samin nycht of set purpois thai woik,  
 And on the morne, rycht lang or it wes da,  
 The deid boddis thai haif tane doun awa,  
 And als mony Romanes in thair steid 14,760  
 On that gallous thai hangit to the deid.  
 Tribelleus, quhen that he hard that tald,  
 Abasit wes thocht he wer neur so bald;  
 Dreidand the Britis greit subtilitie,  
 To Scot and Pecht als enmie wes he. 14,765  
 Quhairfoir in haist ane epistill he gart write,  
 And send to Rome, conteuand this same dyle.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE TENNOUR OF TRIBULLEUS  
 EPISTILL THAT HE SEND TO ROME TO CESAR,  
 THE EMPRIOURE.

“ Tribulleus, thi seruand and thi knycht,  
 “ To Cesar aboue all vther wicht,  
 “ Rycht humelie heir I complene to the 14,770  
 “ Of the Britis full of iniquitie;  
 “ Quhilk fra thi fayth and law rycht far hes failit,  
 “ My self also with mort battell assailzeit;  
 “ And daylie so thai wait me to the deid,  
 “ Ma na man trow ane word eumis of thair heid. 14,775  
 “ Bayth Scot and Pecht, thai pepill barbarous,  
 “ Alway to me thai ar so oldeous,  
 “ Quhilk laitlie now within thi boundis braid  
 “ Bayth brint and slane, and greit heirschip hes  
 maid;  
 “ With my power quhen I come to resist, 14,780  
 “ The Britis fled rycht sone or euir I wist;

“ And in the feild thai left me all allane,  
 “ Myself wes chaist, my men wer slane and tane.  
 “ Quhairfoir, he said, “ send ze nocht sone supplie,  
 “ Now force it is rycht suddantlic to me      14,785  
 “ To leif Britane with mekle schame and lak,  
 “ Or byde and die sic aventure to tak.”

HOW THE EMPRIOURE SEND ANE LEGAT IN BRI-  
 TANE, CALLIT PERTINAX TO NAME.

The emprioure, heirand that it wes so,  
 With ane armie than <sup>1</sup> hes he maid till go  
 Ane greit nobill, hecht Pertinax to name,      14,790  
 Of greit honour withoutin ony blame.  
 In all his tyme ane man of gude wes he,  
 Curtas and heynd and full of liberalitie;  
 In greit honour he held the Britis blude,      Lib. 5, f. 74.  
 And speciallie the grittest men of gude.      14,795      Col. 1.  
 This Lucius, that wes king in thai dais,  
 Weill louit him, as that my outhour sais.  
 The Britis hartis with grit favour he wan,  
 So humelie amang thame he began;  
 The Scottis men and Pechtis als tha[t] da,      14,800  
 That duelland wer into Candalia,  
 He hes compellit that tyme ane and all  
 On force to pas hame bakwart our the wall,  
 Of quhilk befoir to zow as I haif tald,  
 And farder mair persew thame he no wald;      14,805  
 Bot haistelic he hes gart big anone  
 The wall agane rich[t] stark of lyme and stone;  
 And wes content to bruke his awin in peice,  
 Fra Scott and Pecht syne fra all weiris ceis.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.

HOW THIS ROMAN LEGAT, CALLIT PERTINAX, PASSIT  
TO ROME AGANE, AND LEFT TRIBELLIO INTO  
BRITANE.

Syne efter that, my author sais plane, 14,810  
This Romane legat passit hame agane.  
Tribelleus, evin as he wes befoir,  
To his office he did agane restoir.  
Cesar that tyme be tressoun than wes slane,  
And how it wes I can nocht tell zow plane. 14,815  
The same legat, of quhome I spak befoir,  
With haill consent of all bayth les and moir,  
Mager his will, the haill auctoritie  
Hes chosin him the emprioure to be.

HOW ANE CAPTANE COME FURTH OF THE YLIS IN  
SCOTLAND WITH ANE GREIT COMPANIE OF  
THEVIS, AND HEREIT ARGATILL.

In this same tyme that I haif to zow tald, 14,820  
Ane bellomy that busteous wes and bald,  
Borne in the Ylis within the occident se,  
In all his tyme ane strange lymmer wes he,  
I can nocht tell zow weill quhat wes his name,  
In that same tyme, the king beand fra hame, 14,825  
Ane rycht greit oist he brocht in Argatill,  
Baith brint and slew and hereit at his will;  
For to revenge thame of the deid and pane  
Of his freindis schort quhile befoir wes slane  
Be Argadus, befoir as I haif tald, 14,830  
Quhilk wes ane berne richt bellicois and bald.  
Fra fyre and blude that tyme thai sparit nocht  
Quhill all that land wes till confusioun brocht.  
Quhen this wes schawin vnto the Scottis king,  
Sone hes he send for to remeid that thing, 14,835

With greit power, my author tellis thus,  
 Of Argatill the nobill Argadus.  
 The Ylis men that weill his cuming knew,  
 As in the tyme thair spyis to thame schew.  
 That samin tyme, als ze sall vnderstand, 14,840  
 Tua thousand thevis come furth of Ireland,  
 In Argatill ane lang tyme quhair thai baid,  
 Bayth brint and slew, and rycht greit spulze maid.  
 Quhen thai hard tell Argadus wes cumand,  
 The Ylis men and thai bayth in ane band 14,845  
 Convenit thair togidder baith in ane, Col. 2.  
 And ilkane vtheris part that tyme hes tane.  
 And as [come] Argadus within the land,  
 Thir perverst pepill bayth in ane band,  
 Ane multitude thai laid within ane schaw, 14,850  
 Syne kest ane trane this Argadus to draw  
 Within the strenth, quhair that thair greit stail la.  
 Syne one the morne, rycht sone be it wes da,  
 This Argadus he follouit on the trane ;  
 The Ylis men thairof thai wer full faue, 14,855  
 Lay at the wait that tyme into the schaw,  
 And leit him pas by closlie ane and aw.  
 Syne suddantlie, as he wes passit by,  
 At onis raiss all with ane schout and cry,  
 Behind his bak come rydand in ane raice, 14,860  
 The stail befor set on into his face :  
 So with his fais than with mekle schoir  
 Inclosit wes thair baith behind and afoir.  
 This Argadus, als het as ony fyre,  
 All dreddour than hes turnit into yre, 14,865  
 And baldlie baid that tyme for all thair boist,  
 And faucht so lang quhill he the lyfe hes loist.  
 Of him this tyme I haif no moir till sa ;  
 Quhen he wes slane the laif fled all awa.  
 This Argadus, as my author me tald, 14,870  
 Efter his name so bellicois and bald,

Ay sensyne on to this same da,  
It callit is to name Argadia.

HOW ETHODEUS, EFTER THE SLAUCHTER OF ARGADUS, SEND ANE GREIT COMPANY IN ARGYLE, QUHA SLEW ALL THA THEVIS.

Ethodeus, quhen that he hes hard tell  
The aventure and greit mischief that fell 14,875  
This Argadus and all his men of weir,  
He hes gart grayth rycht guddle in thair geir  
Tuentie thousand togidder in ane will,  
With thame him self passit in Argatill.  
Of his cuming quhen it wes than tald, 14,880  
Suppois thai war bayth bellicois and bald,  
Tha left the plane and drew thame till a strenth,  
Quhair tha nicht ly at greit laser and lenth.  
And or tha doucht out of that strenth remove,  
Ethodeus, bayth wnder and aboue, 14,885  
On sic ane wyiss that thai mycht nocht wyn out,  
He held thame thair togidder in ane rout,  
And closit thame togidder thair ilkone  
Ane weill lang quhile quhill thair victuall wes gone,  
And hed<sup>1</sup> no thing thair lyvis to sustene, 14,890  
Bot drank the watter and eit the herbis grene.  
And quhen tha saw thair lyvis so in weir,  
Vnto the king thai send ane messinger,  
Sayand all haill thai wald cum in his will.  
The king agane sic ansuer send thame till, 14,895  
Throw the counsall the men of gude him gaif;  
And said he wald tua hundreht of thame haif  
Most principall that had maid that discord,  
And thair captane wes governour and lord,  
At his desyre and at his lordis will, 14,900  
To quhat torment he pleis to put thame till.

Lib.5.f.74b.  
Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *hes*.

The multitude thairof wes weill content,  
 And suddantlie thairto gair thair consent,  
 For-quhy that tyme, in storie as we reid,  
 Sic force it wes it stude thame in sic neid. 14,905  
 Out haif thai tane tua hundreth in that tyme,  
 Moist principall and caus of all that cryme,  
 And thair captane withoutin ony moir,  
 And presentit hes this nobill king befoir ;  
 And all the laif hes of thair harnes tane, 14,910  
 And in his will cuming that tyme ilkane.  
 The king thame maid than all to pas hame frie,  
 The tua hundreth gart on ane gallous de ;  
 And thair captane, quhilk caus wes of that cryme,  
 Befoir thair ene wes hangit that same tyme. 14,915  
 The laif thairof for noy and dreddour schuik,  
 So greit displesour in thair mynd tha tuke,  
 As tha war wod out of thair wit tha ran,  
 Vpoune the gist ane bikker than began,  
 And stonis kest that wounder wes to se. 14,920  
 The men of armes in greit quantitie,  
 Tha closit thame all nakit quhair tha stude,  
 And syne thair brandis baitht into thair blude.  
 Rycht cruellie thair wer thai slane ilkone,  
 Neur on of thame levand away is gone. 14,925  
 Fra this tyme furth that ze haif hard rebers,  
 The Ylis all lang levit into peice.

HOW ETHODEUS ALL HIS TYME FRA THAT FURTH  
 LEVIT IN PEAX AND REST WITH THE ROMANIS.

Tribelleus, of quhome befoir I spak,  
 He wes content for all the skaith and lak  
 That he had tane laitlie, this is no leis, 14,930  
 Of Scot and Pecht than for to leve in peice ;  
 Skantlie he nicht hald Britane into rest,  
 So oft rebellit and crest of the best.

Ethodeus efter that all his dais  
 In peax and rest, as that my author sais, 14,935  
 And greit honour all fra that tyme furth he rang,  
 But outwart weir or ony inwart wrang,  
 Efter greit pane in weir that he had tane,  
 And all his lordis, bayth 3oung and ald ilkane,  
 Dewysit hes for recreatioun, 14,940  
 To confort thame with consolatioun,  
 All kynd of pastance with gude sport and pla,  
 To dance and sing and for till hunt ilk da,  
 With all sporting of sic plesand plais,  
 But ydilnes for till put our the dais. 14,945  
 Oft with his lordis throw the realme he raid,  
 And mony lawis of the hunting maid,  
 Col. 2. And to the first he ordanit into plane  
 That na hunt beist with schutting sould be slane,  
 Nor 3it with net, with stone, or 3it with tre, 14,950  
 Vnder greit pane that sic slauchter suld be.  
 Or 3it ane beist that had forrun the hound,  
 In ony place that da quhair it wes fund,  
 It sould haif girth and respit for that tyme,  
 Vnder the pane of siclike deidlie cryme. 14,955  
 Siclyke ane beist of 3outhheid within eild,  
 Quhair it wer fund in forrest or in feild,  
 It suld be fre vnder siclike pane,  
 Within 3outhheid se that it war nocht slane.  
 Ane berand beist consaut with hir birth, 14,960  
 Siclike be frie, baith into fell and firth.  
 In winter als quhen stormes wer of snaw,  
 Tha sould abstene fra hunting ane and aw :  
 And mony ma I will nocht now rehers,  
 So langsum wer this tyme to put in vers. 14,965



OFF THE INFELICITIE OF ETHODEUS IN HIS AIGE,  
 QUHILK WAS SO NOBILL ANE KING IN HIS  
 3OUTHHEID.

Syne fals Fortoun without stabilitie,  
 Quhilk hes invy ay at prosperitie,  
 And turnis erast quhen scho hes no caus,  
 For-quhy scho is subdewit to na lawes,  
 And workis nocht by resson na by skill, 14,970  
 Bot as scho list ay efter hir awin will ;  
 Quhairfoir he sittis in ane perrelus place,  
 Intill all tyme that standis in hir grace.  
 So mycht be said of gude Ethodeus,  
 In all his tyme that wes so gratius, 14,975  
 Quhen he traistit hir freindschip for till feill,  
 Rycht suddantlie scho turnit hes hir quheill,  
 Quhilk he mycht rew and all his liegis als.  
 Ane trumpatour, that feinzeit wes and fals,  
 That in his chalmer wes maist inwart man, 14,980  
 Borne in the Ylis, and of the cursit clan  
 Of quhome befor this king rycht mony slew,  
 Bot schort quhile syne as I heir to 3ow schew,  
 Thocht he wes treittit rycht weil with the king,  
 Out of his mynd remouit neur that thing, 14,985  
 Bot ay lukand quhill he his tyme mycht se,  
 Of that same thing for to revengit be.  
 Quhen that the king ilk nycht to sleip wes laid,  
 This trumpatour in his chalmer he plaid,  
 Quhill that the king wes frelie brocht on sleip. 14,990  
 Sa on ane nycht this tratour tuke gude keip,  
 Quhen that the king on to his bed wes gone,  
 And sleipand wes and all the laif ilkone,  
 Into his bed he slew him quhair he la,  
 Syne quyetlie he schupe to pas his wa. 14,995  
 3it neurtheles be that this deid wes done,  
 The kingis men laid handis on him sone,

	Baith fit and hand in presoun quhair he la	
Lib. 5, f. 75.	Tha fetterit him quhill on the morne wes da.	
Col. 1.	Syne quhen he wes accusit of that cryme,	15,000
	To thame he maid sic ansuer in the tyme,	
	Sayand, " The king befoir in Argatill	
	" His freindis slew so deir that war him till ;	
	" The quhilk remanit in his mynd full soir	
	" Ay still sensyne, thocht he maid lytill schoir,	15,005
	" Revengit is at this tyme moir and less ;	
	" Rancor and yre throw sic fule hardines,	
	" Quhilk in my mynd ay brint like ony fyre,	
	" Now satisfeit is all malice and yre.	
	" Sen I haif wrocht efter my fatall weird,	15,010
	" Langer to leve I couet nocht in eird.	
	" Exerce 3our yre and tak of me 3our will ;	
	" To quhat vyle deid 3e pleis to put me till,	
	" With all panis that possibill ar to feill	
	" Reddie I am, for I haif seruit weill."	15,015

HOW THIS FALS TRATOURE WAS TANE AND AC-  
CUSIT, AND SYNE REVIN BETUIX Foure GREIT  
HORS.

	At the command of lordis that war thair,	
	In plane presens of all baith les and mair,	
	Tha haif festnit this cruel tratouris cors,	
	Baith fit and hand, to four vndantit hors ;	
	And syne the hors in sindrie wayis drevin,	15,020
	In four pairtis quhilk hes his bodie revin,	
	And maid ane end siclike as he had seruit,	
	For his rewaird as it wes weill deseruit.	
	Depairtit is this gude Ethodeus king,	
	The threttie 3eir and thre als of his ring ;	15,025
	Besyde Ewone, siclike as wes the laif,	
	With all honour wes put into his graue.	

In Albione wes nocht ane better king,  
 Nor zit so gude, in the tyme of his ring,  
 Na lang befor sen the weiris began, 15,030  
 Of the Romanis sic victorie that wan.

HOW THE BRITIS TUKE THE FAITH OF CHRIST  
 BE THAIR KING LUCIUS VNDER ANE PAIP  
 CALLIT ELYNTHERIUS.

Into the tyme of this Ethodeus,  
 Ane paip callit wes Elyntherius,  
 Quhilk marterit wes into the tyme and ring  
 Of Seuerius the emprioure and king, 15,035  
 The king of Britane in thai samin dais,  
 Quhilk Lucius hecht, as that my author sais,  
 Be the Romanis amang thame maid repair  
 Daylie he hard of Chrystis law and lair;  
 Into the quhilk ane greit plesour he tuke, 15,040  
 With his lordis syne ydolatrie forsuke.  
 Syne to the paip ane epistill sone wrait he,  
 Sayand thai wald into the number be  
 Of Cristin men, and tak the fayth of Christ,  
 With all his pepill for to be baptist. 15,045  
 Into Britane this paip than till him send  
 Tua nobill men of vertew to commend,  
 Fugatius the tane he hecht to name,  
 And Damean the tother of greit fame,  
 Quhilk baptist hes this ilk king Lucius 15,050  
 With Britis all, my author sais thus. Col. 2.  
 Puttand away the ryte of sacrifice,  
 Of ydolatrie and all sic wickit vice;  
 With diligence efter thai wer baptist,  
 Instructand thame into the faith of Christ, 15,055  
 Efter he borne wes of the Virgin cleir,  
 Ane hundreth auchtie and als sevin zeir.

HOW SATREHELL, THE BRUTHER GERMANE OF  
ETHODEUS, WES CROWNIT KING OF SCOTTIS,  
BECAUS ETHODEUS SONE WES THAT TYME  
RYCHT FAR WITHIN AIGE.

Ethodeus, of quhome befor I spak,  
As that my author did me mention mak,  
Ane sone he had that wes ane perfite cheild, 15,060  
Quhilk wes bot zyoung and nocht of perfite eild.  
To keip the law that thai had maid befor,  
With hail consent of all baith les and moir,  
Ane Satrehell, Ethodeus germane bruther,  
Quhilk narrest wes that tyme of ony vther 15,065  
For to succeid into his brutheris steid,  
And bruke his croun efter that he wes deid,  
With hail consent than wes he crownit king.  
Full litill grace thair wes in all his ring:  
With greit falsett infectit wes he so, 15,070  
With auerice and vther vicis mo;  
Throw greit dissait, full of subillitie,  
Full mony one syne efter ma[id] to de.  
Quhairfoir his lordis had at him greit feid,  
And da by da imaginand his deid; 15,075  
Quhill on ane nycht of his ring the fourth zeir,  
Sic viciousnes thai gart him by full deir,  
That slane he wes with seruandis of his avin;  
Bot quha it wes till all men is vnknaw[in].  
I list no moir to writ heir of his style, 15,080  
For-quhy his tyme it les[t]at so schort quhile;  
And als thairwith richt vicius wes his deid,  
The quhilk wil be richt tydeus to reid;  
Quhairfoir I leif and to my purpos pas,  
And tell zow furth the laif how that it wes. 15,085

HOW DONALDUS, THE BRUTHER GERMANE OF ETHODEUS, WITH CONSENT OF ALL THE LORDIS, WAS CROWNIT KING.

Ane nobill man, hecht Donald rycht conding,  
 The bruther germane of Ethodeus king,  
 With haill consent of all boith moir and les,  
 In rob royall that same tyme crownit wes.  
 Greit difference wes betuix him and his bruther, 15,090  
 For in his tyme he exceidit all vther  
 In vertuous lyfe and religiositie,  
 And full he wes of liberalitie.  
 Rycht sone he maid his kinrik into peice,  
 Murthure and slauchter suddanelie gart ceis ; 15,095  
 Baith thift and reif and all sic opin wrang ;  
 And puneist hes richt mony tratour strang.  
 Ane multitude dalie in armour bricht  
 Conducit hes of weirmen that wes wicht,  
 Reddie to pas quhair ony did rebell 15,100  
 In contrair him, so did my author tell.<sup>1</sup>  
 And thus he rang in rest rycht mony zeir, Lib.5,f.75b.  
 Quhill efterwart hapnit as ze sall heir. Col. 1.

HOW LUCIUS, THE KING OF BRITIS, DEPARTIT, AND THE ROMANIS DECREITTIT TO MAK NA MA KINGIS IN BRITANE.

This Lucius, of quhome befor I spak,  
 The emprioure did king of Britane mak, 15,105  
 With eild and seiknes viseit wes so soir,  
 He take his leif for he nicht leve no moir.  
 Efter his deid the Romanis did conclude  
 Na king[is] mo to mak of the Britis blude.  
 For weill thai wist it wes the speciall caus, 15,110  
 The Britis brak so oft the Romanis lawis :

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *did tell*.

And causit thame so oft for to rebell ;  
 And for that quhy, as my author did tell,  
 No king in Britane wes that mony da,  
 Quhill efterwart as I sall to zow sa. 15,115  
 Fulgentius, quhilk wes ane man of gude,  
 Ane greit nobill borne of the Britis blude,  
 Seand thai war defraudit of thair king,  
 Rycht far he wes commouit at that thing.  
 Quhairfoir richt sone amang the Britis all, 15,120  
 Richt quietlie ane counsall he gart call,  
 Quhair thair comperit mony men of gude.  
 This Fulgentius in middis of thame stude,  
 As he that wes the maist wys nobill man,  
 And of this wyis his oresoun began. 15,125

HOW FULGENTIUS MAID HIS COMPLAYNT OF THE  
 ROMANIS THAT WALD NOCHT LAT THAME MAK  
 ANE KING.

“ Lordis,” he said, “ perfittie weill ze know  
 “ How the Romanis hes distroyit oure law,  
 “ And hes defamit baith kinrik and croun,  
 “ The nobill blude put to confusioun,  
 “ And all the pepill into bondage brocht ; 15,130  
 “ Wes neur hard sic wrang as thai haif wrocht.  
 “ Defoulland dalie baith wedow and wyfe,  
 “ With sic displesour as we leid oure lyfe,  
 “ In all this warld I trow nane vther be  
 “ In sic subjeitioun and miseritie. 15,135  
 “ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ for me now that I sa,  
 “ Far better war temp[t] Fortoun on ane da,  
 “ Suppois we knew perfittie to be slane,  
 “ Na for to leif in sic distres and pane.”  
 Quhen he had said as I haif said zow till, 15,140  
 Baith zoung and ald in ane consent and will,

Applyit hes to tak that thing on hand,  
 Syne altogidder bund wer in ane band,  
 In gude and ill ay at ane pairt till byde  
 Qubhat auenture that efter may betyde. 15,145  
 Syne Fulgentius, without ony discord,  
 Then thai haif chosin to be gouernour and lord,  
 As he richt weill that same tyme mycht haif bene,  
 Syne set ane da quhen thai sould all conuene.

HOW FULGENTIUS, EFTER THE BRITIS CONSENTIT  
 TILL HIM, SEND ANE HERALD TO THE KING OF  
 SCOTTIS FOR SUPPLE.

Ane herald send with his writing in hy, 15,150 Col. 2.  
 Directit hes richt sone and suddantly,  
 Commendand him richt lawlie and bening  
 To gude Donald that wes of Scottis king.  
 Sayand to him, as ze haif hard me tell,  
 How all the Britis maid thame to rebell 15,155  
 Agane the Romanis to reskew thair richt.  
 In all Britane wes nane sa zyoung and wicht,  
 Bot he wes reddie for to suffer deid,  
 Or mak thame frie out of the Romanis feid.  
 Sayand also the tyme wes rycht ganand, 15,160  
 And speidfull als to tak sic thing on hand.  
 For-quhy, he said, that tyme in Gallia,  
 And all the pairtis of Germania,  
 Agane the Romanes mony did rebell,  
 Be richt relatioun as he hes hard tell. 15,165  
 Cesar also, quhilk wes baith waik and sueir,  
 Seiklie and ale and nicht nocht rycht weill steir,  
 Sic perrell saw in Rome appeir to be,  
 Into Britane sould send no moir supple.  
 Beseikand him, as he wes humbill wycht, 15,170  
 To rew on him and help him gif he mycht

Into that tyme, and send thame sum supple,  
 Of the fals Romanes for to revengit be ;  
 Quhilk all thair tyme hes bene ane commoun fa  
 To Scot and Pecht and the Britis alsua. 15,175  
 Rycht weill he wist, also he said him till,  
 War thai all thre togidder in ane will,  
 That the Romanis mycht mak thame no ganestand,  
 Bot fane to fle and richt sone leif the land :  
 And did thai nocht it sould be bocht full deir, 15,180  
 With Goddis grace, as he sould efter heir.

HOW DONALDUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, PROMIST  
 TO CUM TO FULGENTIUS IN ALL GUDLIE  
 HAIST.

Off that desyre this king Donald wes fane,  
 To this his herald sic ansuer maid agane.  
 Sayand he suld within ane litill space,  
 Sone reddie be to meit at tyme and place, 15,185  
 In ony part he wald assigne him till,  
 With all power at his plesour and will.  
 His leif he take this herald, and syne wend  
 To king of Pechtis siclike as he wes send,  
 And schew till him of all thing new and ald, 15,190  
 Ilk word by word as I haif to 3ow tald.  
 This king agane sic ansuer to him gaif,  
 Sayand he sould be reddie with the laif,  
 Furneist rycht weill baith vpoun hors and feit,<sup>1</sup>  
 At da and place quhair he plesit to meit. 15,195  
 With this ansuer the herald hame is gone,  
 And schawin hes of thair ansuer ilk one ;  
 Quhair of the Britis that tyme wer full blyth.  
 In gudlie haist thai dressit thame richt suyth

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *feit*.



Vnto the wall, of quhome I spak befor, 15,200  
 With trumpet, talburne, blawand with greit schoir.  
 In sindrie pairtis doun the wall tha brak,  
 That Scot and Pecht thairin passage mycht mak.  
 Be this the Scottis war cumand at thair hand,  
 And Pechtis alss togidder in ane band, 15,205  
 And brak the wall befor thame thai haif fund, Lib. 5, f. 76.  
 And fillit the fowseis evin full to the ground. Col. 1.  
 Syne efter sone enterit within the land  
 At thair plesour, quhair thai gat no ganestand,  
 With the Britis quhair at tha met togidder, 15,210  
 To Eborac syne all ar passit hidder.  
 Tribelleus as thai than vnderstude,  
 And all the nobillis of the Romane blude,  
 That grittast war and most than of renoun,  
 Remanand than war within that toun. 15,215  
 ¶ It neurtheles it wes nocht as thai wene ;  
 Tribelleus, of quhome this tyme I mene,  
 Passit in Kent his armie to renew,  
 Quhairfoir as than thai wald no moir persew  
 To seig the toun, bot lute it than alone ; 15,220  
 With hail power syne fordermair is gone,  
 In ony place quhair that thai vnderstude,  
 Quhair tha nicht find ony Romane blude,  
 Or in quhat pairt thai hapnit for to be  
 Rycht cruellie thai maid thame all to de 15,225  
 Without petie, that tyme thair wes no pley,  
 And all vther that wald thame nocht obey.  
 And so thai wrocht ay into that land,  
 Quhill symmer went and winter come to hand,  
 With frost and snaw that furious wes and fell, 15,230  
 With wynd and weit, and mony schouris snell,  
 With mist and roik, and als with mekle rane,  
 That force it was that tyme to leue the plane.  
 Baith Scot and Pecht, and all the Britis bald,  
 Ar passit hame ilkone to thair awin hald. 15,235

HOW SEUERUS, WITH HIS TUO SONNIS, COME IN  
BRITANE IN THE TYME OF TRIBELLEUS.

In that same tyme this ilk Tribelleus  
 Ane epistill wrait and send to Seuerus,  
 Quhilk emprioure of Rome was in thai dais,  
 Schawand to him, as that my author sais,  
 How als wes done, as ze half hard befor, 15,240  
 Be Scot and Pecht, and Britis les and moir.  
 Sayand without rycht sone and suddantlie,  
 He come or send with the grittar supple,  
 Without terror of travell or of coist,  
 Britane for ay fra Romanes wald be loist. 15,245  
 This emprioure herand that it wes so,  
 Without tarie he and his sonis tuo,  
 Into Britane he bownit him rycht suyth  
 Thairof him self he wes rycht glaid and blyth.  
 Alway it wes that tyme in his intent, 15,250  
 Sen he had wyn into the orient  
 Sic victorie with greit honour and gloir,  
 Into the north he thoct he wald win moir.  
 With greit power syne hes he tane the way,  
 Without tarie at that tyme nycht or day; 15,255  
 So ald he wes weill nicht he travell nocht,  
 On hors litter in to ane bed wes brocht,  
 Throw Ytalie and Lumbardie the wa,  
 Siclike that tyme throw all Gallia;  
 And syne he sett ane navin to the se, 15,260  
 Quhilk hes him brocht in Britane haistelie.  
 Fulgentius that wes befor so bald,  
 Of his cuming quhen that he hes hard tald,  
 With sic power and with sic bost and schoir,  
 The quhilk in Britane wes neur sene befor, 15,265  
 That samin tyme ane herald send him till,  
 Sayand he wald cum put him in his will,

And all the laue siclike baith les and moir,  
 And mend all faltis that wer maid befoir.  
 This Seuerus thairto wald nocht consent, 15,270  
 For-quly he wes that tyme in his intent  
 Rycht couetus of gloir and victorie,  
 That was the caus that gart [him] so deny  
 For [to] ressaue Fulgentius in his grace ;  
 Sen he fra Rome had maid so far ane raice, 15,275  
 To him he thocht it wes bayth lak and schame  
 But victorie or battell to pas hame.  
 Fulgentius, herand that it wes so,  
 To counsall than with his lordis did go ;  
 Thair in the presens of thame euerilk man, 15,280  
 Thame to perswaid of this way he began.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE TENNOUR OF FULGENTIUS  
 ORESOUN THAT HE MAID TO THE BRITIS TO  
 CAUS THAME TO [ENTER] THE FEILD.

“ Lordis,” he said, “ now gif ze list to heir,  
 “ How the Romanis neirby thre hundreth zeir  
 “ Hes occupyit oure landis as tha lest ;  
 “ The nobill blude of Britane and the best, 15,285  
 “ But ony caus hes put to confusioun,  
 “ And laithie now translaittit hes our croun ;  
 “ Excludit hes fra ws our prince and king,  
 “ Wnder thair wand in sic bondage to ring.  
 “ Syne efterwart, quhat tyme that euir tha 15,290  
   lest,  
 “ The nobill blude quhair that tha think best,  
 “ In other pairtis for till skail full wyde,  
 “ And in this land no langar for till byde,  
 “ And thus tha think the nobillis till exclude,  
 “ Syne all the laif put in vyle seruitude. 15,295  
 “ My counsall is now,” he said, “ thairfoir,  
 “ Or thai distroy our grit honour and gloir,

“ And put oure self in sic miserie,  
 “ All on ane da far erar for to de,  
 “ That efterwart to all the warld be kend, 15,300  
 “ We and oure gloir all on ane da tuke end.  
 “ **Z**it neuirtheles we haif na caus to dreid,  
 “ As weill I wait it sall preve into deid;  
 “ For-quhy I know thai ar nocht of ane mynd,  
 “ Nor of ane will, of mony sindrie kynd, 15,305  
 “ Of diuerss langage and of diuerss land,  
 “ That few of thame can vther vnderstand;  
 “ Without thai haif the moir prattik in weir,  
 “ Or of Cesar that we tak sic ane feir,  
 “ Be na ressoun that I can heir or se, 15,310  
 “ Na ma nocht weill ane pairtie till ws be,  
 “ Sen we ar all of ane vigour and will  
 “ Dreidand no chance godis will send ws till,  
 “ Lyfe or deid, and thinkis nocht to fle,  
 “ Traist weill,” he said, “ all at oure will salbe. 15,315  
 “ Also this tyme I think it is nocht gude  
 “ To gif thame feild with all the multitude,  
 “ Bot to defend oure self with jeoperdie,  
 “ Of Scot and Pecht quhill that we get supple.”  
 Throw sic persuasioun as he maid thame thair, 15,320  
 All in ane will that tyme, bayth les and mair,  
 Lib.5,f.76b. Hes vndertane vpoun ane da to de,  
 Col. 1. Or of the Romanis to revengit be.  
 This beand done as I haif said zow till,  
 Rycht suddanelie thair fordwart to fulfill, 15,325  
 Baith zyoung and ald that nicht nocht harnes weir,  
 With wyffe and barne, with gold and vther geir,  
 Cattell and corne, and vther thingis small,  
 Tha haif gart turs attour this foirsaid wall,  
 In fell and forrest and in sondrie strenth, 15,330  
 Without perrell quhair all mycht byde at lenth.  
 Him self also, and all the men of gude,  
 War neir hand by with ane greit multitude,

Gif that the Romanis come for till assaill  
 Thair self, thair gude, that thai suld nocht prevaill. 15,335  
 Richt mony Scot and Pecht in ane band  
 That samin tyme come reddie at thair hand,  
 With thair captanis the quhilk war men of gude ;  
 Syne lichtit doun besyde thame on ane flude.  
 Vpoun ane ley thair ludging syne thai maid ; 15,340  
 Ane royall oist thai war baith lang and braid,  
 Threttie thousand of nobill men of weir  
 With hors, harnes, waponis and vther geir.  
 Thairof the Britis war rycht blyth and glaid,  
 At thair meitting greit mirrines wes maid ; 15,345  
 The trumpetis blew and hornes vpone licht,  
 With baill fyris richt baldlie birnand bricht,  
 Ane hevinlie sound of all solace and sang,  
 Grit mirrines wes that tyme thame amang.  
 At thair counsall thai la that tyme stane still, 15,350  
 Ane da or tua waittand the Romanes will.

HOW SEUERUS LEFT HIS 3OUNGEST SONE TO  
 GOVERNE BRITANE, AND BROCHT HIS ELDEST  
 SONE WITH ANE ARMIE TO EBORAC.

This Seuerus, that nobill empirioure,  
 Quhilk in his tyme that wan so greit honour,  
 Richt weil he knew, as spyis till him brocht,  
 The wayis all that this Fulgentius wrocht. 15,355  
 His 3oungest sone, that Geta hecht to name,  
 With him that tyme he brocht so far fra hame,  
 Behind him left in Britane for to be  
 Thair governour baith be land and se.  
 Syne with his oist fordwaird to his fa, 15,360  
 His eldest sone Antone he gart with him ga,  
 Of his greit oist lieutennand for to be,  
 Wantoun he wes and of ane curage he,

In riche array besyid his father raid,  
 To Eborac thair first passage thai maid. 15,365  
 The citineris that war within that place  
 Ressauit hes Seuerus with solace,  
 Commendand him of his nobilitie ;  
 Thair he tuke rest lang quhile in that citie,  
 Quhill that he wes prouydit for his fais ; 15,370  
 With all his men syne to the feild he gais,  
 Without tarie other da or nycht,  
 Quhill that he come into the Britis sycht.

THE MANER OF THE BATTELL BETUIX THE EM-  
 PRIIOURE SEUERUS AND FULGENTIUS THE  
 BRIT LORD.

Col. 2. The Britis than, that wer sum thing agast,  
 Richt haistelie to counsall all tha past ; 15,375  
 For to devyis quhat thing wes best to be,  
 To byde and fecht, or leve the feild and fle.  
 So at the last to purpois all thai tuke  
 To byde and fecht, and for to fle forsuk ;  
 And erar de to keip honour and fame, 15,380  
 No leif and fle with sa greit lak and schame.  
 And baldlie sone thai blew hornis on hicht,  
 With baneris braid that browdin wer full bricht,  
 And streikit standartis hie vp in the air,  
 Flammand as fyre attour the feildis fair. 15,385  
 In thrie battellis that war baith lang and braid,  
 In gude array vpoun the bent thai baid.  
 The Romanes als vpoun the vther syid,  
 With greit power quhilk wes of mekill pryde,  
 In glitterand gold with mony baner brycht, 15,390  
 With pensallis proude and standartis vpone hycht,  
 Flammand like fyre or Phebus in the fold,  
 Rycht glorious all glitterand into gold.

Tha knychtis kene cled all in curage cleir,  
 Witht diamontis ding most dantie and most deir, 15,395  
 With rubeis reid and perle of orient,  
 Poleist, perfyte, rycht precious and potent;  
 And mony ressonne writtin all in grew,  
 Sum with fyne gold and sum with aser blew.  
 Cesar him self quhair he raid in ane rout, 15,400  
 With bernis bald wes bordorit about;  
 His bodie schene like ony lanterne lycht,  
 Or as ane sterne into the frostie nycht.  
 In curage cleir his cors wes weill cled,  
 And cot armour thairwith aboue he had 15,405  
 Of fynest gold, that burneist wes full brycht,  
 With rubeis reid and diamontis weill dycht,  
 Poudherit with perle most plesand and perfyte,  
 And goldin letteris into Latene dyte.  
 Moir plesand sicht befoir wes semdill sene 15,410  
 In Albione with ony fleschlie ene.  
 The buglis blew rycht baldlie on the bruke,  
 The schalmes schouttit quhill the schawes schuke.  
 Of Albione the bowmen les and moir,  
 With bowis big hes tane the feild befoir. 15,415  
 The flanis flew like fyre out of the flint,  
 Rycht awfull wes for till induir thair dynt.  
 The archearis schot on euerie syde a quhile,  
 Quhill ane nicht pas the pas of half a myle.  
 The bairdit hors syne enterit in the feild, 15,420  
 With speiris lang and mony targe and scheidl,  
 And fuir fordward with sic ane felloun force,  
 Quhill to the erd thai draue bayth men and hors.  
 Thair scheidlis raif and all thair speiris brak,  
 And mony berne wes laid vpon his bak; 15,425  
 Full mony schank and schulder than wes schorne,  
 And mony bald men throw the bodie borne,  
 And mony breist wes bludie maid and bla,  
 And mony heid hackit the bodie fra.

- That mad melle rycht mony men mycht mene, 15,430  
 Lib. 5, f. 77. Ane stranger stour in erd wes neur sene.  
 Col. 1. Lang so tha faucht ane da neur to the end,  
 Bot victorie of ony syde wnkend ;  
 Quhill at the last throw strenth of men and geir,  
 And greit prattik the Romanis had in weir, 15,435  
 The Albionis war maid on force to fle,  
 And threttie thousand of thair men to de ;  
 And neur as mony on the tother syde,  
 Of the Romanis that tyme for all thair pryde.  
 Cesar him self, that wan so greit honour, 15,440  
 Stude neur befor intill ane stranger stour.  
 Fulgentius, quhen he saw thame fle,  
 Sa mony als of his nobillis thair de,  
 Efter his deid that tyme he thocht full lang,  
 And wald haif enterit in the thickest throng, 15,445  
 In that purpois to purches his awin deid.  
 His men rycht sone that war into that steid,  
 Mager his will, hes put him on ane hors,  
 Out of the feild syne gart him fle on force.  
 The Scottis than and Pechtis quhen tha knew 15,450  
 Of no beleif the battell till renew,  
 And quhen thai saw Fulgentius als fle,  
 And wist rycht weill thair wes no moir supple,  
 Tha kest fra thame thair harnes and thair geir,  
 And all sic thing thai vsit into weir ; 15,455  
 Syne swyftlie swame attour the water of Tyne,  
 Heir and thair be thousand aucht or nyne,  
 And brocht with thame Fulgentius in the tyde,  
 But ony harme on to the vther syde.

HOW SEUERUS THE EMPRIOURE, SEAND SA MONY  
 OF HIS MEN SLANE IN THE FEILD, WALD  
 NOCHT FOLLOW FARDER.

- This Seuerus, of quhome befor I tald, 15,460  
 Gat nocht his will so far than as he wald.



In greit danger that da he wan the feild,  
 Quhair mony thousand of his men wer keild ;  
 Thairfoir he thocht, for perrell that mycht fall,  
 Wald nocht that tyme pas farrar no the wall, 15,465  
 Farrar to follow into Albione,  
 Bot with his oist bakwart agane is gone.  
 With greit power syne raid our all his land ;  
 In euerie place quhair he rebellouris fand,  
 Baith zung and ald, but patiens or petie, 15,470  
 Vpoun ane gallous maid thame all to de.  
 Syne all the lave that wald till him obey,  
 Evin as tha wald but counter pleid or pley,  
 Bayth gude and ill, and als bayth zung and ald,  
 To vse thair law ay as thair awin self wald. 15,475

HOW SEUERUS THAN IN WINTER PASSIT TO EBORAC,  
 AND REMANIT THAIR WITH HIS ARMIE THAT  
 WINTER.

Be this winter approchand wes rycht fast,  
 With fell flawis and mony bitter blast  
 Of frost and snaw, and mekill wynd and rane,  
 That nane for cald mycht byde vpone the plane.  
 Quhairfoir Seuerus drew him to the toun 15,480  
 Of Eborac quhilk than wes of renoun ;  
 Thair in that winter to remane and byde, Col. 2.  
 And all his lordis, quhill the symmer tyde.  
 Fulgentius with greit travell and pane  
 His men togidder gatherit hes agane ; 15,485  
 And all that winter, ze sall vnderstand,  
 Remanit hes into the Pechtis land,  
 And with the Scottis, quhair thame lykit best,  
 For all that winter thair thai tuke thair rest.  
 The Scottis send than in Ybernia, 15,490  
 The Pechtis to Denmark and Norua,

Agane symmer for thair help and supple ;  
 Bot all for nocht, that tyme it wald nocht be.  
 The Scottis war as my author did sa  
 Frustrat richt far intill Ybernia, 15,495  
 Sayand thair wer bot fuillis to contend  
 With the Romanes sic riches had to spend,  
 Of hors and harnes and all vther geir,  
 So mony men with sic prattik in weir,  
 The quhilk that wer of sic power and pryde, 15,500  
 And victoris als of all this warld wyde,  
 With sic ane captane and ane conqueroure,  
 As Seuerus the nobill emprioure,  
 That wes but peir of power so potent,  
 And victour als of all the orient ; 15,505  
 Better it wer fra sic folie to ceis,  
 And be content to bruke thair awin in pece.

HOW FULGENTIUS THE NIXT SYMMER, WITH THE  
 HELP OF SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS, PASSIT OF-  
 TYMES OUR THE WALL.

Quhen symmer come syne with his seasoun sueit,  
 And passit wes all frost with wynd and weit,  
 Fulgentius, with mony Pecht and Scot, 15,510  
 All in ane will togidder in ane knot,  
 Full mony raice attour the wall hes maid,  
 Baith brint and slew within tha boundis braid.  
 And oft thair met the Romanes into feild,  
 In plane battell quhair mony ane wes keild, 15,515  
 And tane and slane war mony nobill man ;  
 Sum quhyllis tha tynt, and vther quhyllis wan.  
 The montanis he, and mossier large of lenth,  
 To Scot and Pecht wes sic refuge and strenth,  
 For-quhy thair wer rycht abill in sic caice, 15,520  
 To clym and waid in ony perrellous place.

Waldin thai war, and wicht as ony hors,  
 Ouir craig and cleuche to clym and ryn on force,  
 In mos and montanis and in marres bayth,  
 Quhairfoir the Romanis did thame lytill skayth. 15,525

HOW SEUERUS FOR EILD AND WAIKNES MYCHT  
 NOCHT TRAVEL, BOT SEND HIS SONE ANTONIUS  
 TO KEIP THE BORDOURE.

This Seuerus so trublit wes with eild Lib.5,f.77b.  
 And greit seiknes mich[t] nocht cum to the feild, Col. 1.  
 Antone his sone, that weill the weiris kend,  
 With ane greit armie to the bordouris send.  
 Antoneus, quhen that he saw and knew 15,530  
 Sic perrell wes the Albionis till persew,  
 Within sic strenth quhair he mycht nocht preuail,  
 And saw the Romanis in thair weiris fail,  
 Turnit his mynd on to ane purpois new,  
 And wald no moir the Albionis persew. 15,535  
 Bot suddantlie than with his power all  
 Gart big agane the Adrianis wall,  
 In all partis that tyme les and moir,  
 Quhair it brokin was, as ze haif hard befoir,  
 With touris stark and turatis mony one, 15,540  
 And in the wall wyde conductis maid of stone,  
 Fra toure to toure and endlang the waw,  
 In tyme of neid thairin hornis to blaw,  
 Baith lang and wyde the quhilk war maid of  
 brass,  
 So that that sound endlang the wall mycht pas, 15,545  
 Ilkone vther to warne quhen thai had neid  
 Quhen that thai war in perrell or in dreid.  
 Watchis thai maid to walk vpoun the waw,  
 And men siclike thair hornis for till blaw.  
 Syne efter that, with all power and micht, 15,550  
 Greit diligence hes done da and nycht,

To pleis the Romanis<sup>1</sup> with fauour but feid,  
 In that beleif efter his faderis deid  
 That thai suld cheis him to the haill impyre,  
 Of dignitie he had so greit desyre, 15,555  
 That his bruther mycht haif na claim thairtill;  
 For weill he wist it wes his fatheris will,  
 And his desyre, that thai sould equale be  
 In riches, honour, and in dignitie.  
 Zit neuirtheles lordschip. hes sic ane law, 15,560  
 Quhair euir it be that it desyris aw,  
 He said full suith and neuir ane word did rave,  
 That lufe and lordschip wald na fallow have.  
 Seruandis he send the quhilk rewardis buir  
 Perswadand thame of his father had<sup>2</sup> cuir, 15,565  
 For his seiknes to se for na remeid,  
 Bot far erar to haist him to his deid.

HOW SEUERUS, HEIRAND THAT HIS SONE HAD  
 IMAGINIT HIS DEITH, DEPARTIT FOR SORROW.

Seuerus than quhilk aigit wes and ald,  
 Quhen tha tythandis had hard till him tald,  
 Throw displesour and seiknes that wes soir, 15,570  
 He tuke his leif and list to leue no moir.  
 Quhilk in his tyme that [wan] so greit honour,  
 Callit he wes of all knycthheid the flour.  
 Richt large he wes of liberalitie,  
 And full of fredome but prodigalitie; 15,575  
 Famous also in all gratius and gude,  
 Mirroure of meiknes and of mansuetude;  
 Fauour he had of euerilk man but feid.  
 Antonius, fra he knew that he wes deid,  
 With diligence perswadit da by da 15,580  
 The Romanis all als far than as he ma,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Romeis*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *heid*,

And speciallic the men of maist honour,  
 Nane bot him self for to mak emprioure. Col. 2.  
 On to the captanis also of the gaird  
 He gaif that tyme mony riche reward; 15,585  
 Beseikand thame richt anefald with his hart,  
 Agane his brother for to tak his pairt,  
 And him declair haill emprioure and king,  
 Without collige allanerlie to ring.  
 The quhilk to do that tyme thai war full layth; 15,590  
 Sa [thocht] tha wist that he wes neur so wraith,  
 Zit wald thai nocht gif thair consent thairtill,  
 Wittand so weill it wes thair fatheris will,  
 Efter his deid that thai sould equall be,  
 And ring togidder in tranquillitie. 15,595

HOW ANTONEUS, THE ELDEST SONE OF SEUERUS,  
 SEND TO THE KING OF SCOTTIS AND TO THE  
 KING OF PECHTIS FOR PEICE.

Antonius, persauand weill sic thing,  
 Ane herald send on to the Scottis king,  
 And Pechtis alss into that tyme but leis,  
 Beseikand thame for thair freindschip and peice,  
 Sen peice and weir war bayth into thair will; 15,600  
 And tha agane sic ansuer send him till,  
 That wald tha nocht at that tyme, tha maid hym  
 plane,  
 Without he wald rycht sone ressaue agane  
 Fulgentius, and also him restoir  
 To all possessioun that he had befoir, 15,605  
 And all the laif that tuke his part that tyme  
 Forgif sielyke of all malice and cryme,  
 And suddantlie thairto gaif his consent.  
 Antonius thairof wes rycht weill content;  
 Syne sone ane herald hes he send thame till, 15,610  
 All thair desyre at that tyme to fulfill,

Put into writ with seillis round and braid,  
 So of this wyiss betuix thame peis wes maid.  
 Fulgentius syne at set da and place,  
 And all the laif ressauit in his grace, 15,615  
 And syne forgaiff all feid bayth ald and new,  
 And pledgis tuke that thai sould all be trew.  
 To Loundoun syne the hieway furth tha raid,  
 Quhair that his mother and his bruther baid.

HOW THE EMPRICE, SEUERUS WYFFE, EFTER THE  
 DEID OF SEUERUS, DIUYDIT THE EMPYRE  
 EQUALIE BETUIX HIS TUA SONIS ANTONE AND  
 GETA, MAKAND THAME BAITH EQUALL IN  
 HONOUR.

That tyme his mother tuke on hir grit euir 15,620  
 To mak all thing bayth sicker, saif and suir,  
 That thair father diuysit had befoir,  
 And all the lordis sielyke les and moir,  
 Betuix thir brether to mak vnitie,  
 Baith intill honour equall for till be. 15,625  
 Antonius quhilk had so greit desyre  
 To dignitie and all the haill impyre,  
 Lib. 5, f. 78. Col. 1. With feinzeit mynd rieht sair agane his will,  
 At thair requeist he hes said ze thairtill.  
 This Antone than and als Geta his bruther, 15,630  
 With the consent of lordis and thair mother,  
 Proclomit war baith equale for to be  
 In lordschip, honour and in dignitie.  
 Thair fatheris bodie, that wes brint in as,  
 Into ane pig of cristall eleir as glas, 15,635  
 Thair it wes put for to obserue and keip;  
 Syne graithbit in gold with letters grauit deip,  
 His name and dait, and of his ring the zeir,  
 So wes the vse befoir as ze mycht heir.

Syne with the pig togidder all ar gane, 15,640  
 Thir tua brethir and thir lordis ilkane,  
 To Rome that tyme and put that pig in grave,  
 With all honour ane emprioure sould haue.

HOW ANTONIUS IN PRESENS OF HIS MODER SLEW  
 GETA HIS BRUTHER, AND SUCCEIDIT SYNE TO  
 ALL THE HAILL IMPYRE.

Syne on ane da that ilk Antonius,  
 Without fabill my author sais thus, 15,645  
 Syne efter that, in presens of his mother,  
 Ryeh cruellie he slew Geta his bruther,  
 To satisfie his lust and his desyre ;  
 Succedit syne to all the haill impyre.

HOW THE SCOTTIS FIRST TUKE THE FAITH OF  
 CHRIST IN THE TYME OF VICTORYN, DONALD  
 BEAND KING.

Efter this tyme Donald the Scottis king 15,650  
 In peice and rest ane ryeh lang quhile did ring,  
 And put his kinrik in greit policie,  
 With peice and rest, and greit tranquillitie.  
 Wes nane better in all his tyme that rang,  
 Na zit befoir nor efter him richt lang. 15,655  
 Heir will I leif and talk thairof no moir,  
 And now rebers of thingis done befoir.  
 Into the tyme of this ilk Seuerus,  
 Ane paip thair wes faithfull and famous,  
 The quhilk Victor wes callit in thai dayis, 15,660  
 The fyftenit paip, as that the legend sais,  
 Fra Sanct Peter, as it is ryeh weill kend.  
 This king Donald ane seruand to him send,

Beseikand him for lufe and cheritie,  
 Him to ressaue in Cristianitie, 15,665  
 With his lordis and liegis als ilkone.  
 This paip Victor quhen he hard that anone,  
 Rycht nobill men had lang bene at the lair,  
 That knew rycht weill the scriptour to declair,  
 He send to him with his auctoritie, 15,670  
 With mony gudmen in his companie  
 That cunnand wer and weill the scriptour knew,  
 As efterwart rycht weill in deid it schew.  
 Of thair cuming reposit wes the king  
 And lordis all, so wes bayth ald and zing, 15,675  
 Ressaueand thame with all honour and gloir;  
 Thair fatherheidis syne lawlie did imploir  
 For to ressaue thame to the faith of Crist,  
 Col. 2. Of thair handis thairfoir to be baptist.  
 And so thai did first to the king and quene, 15,680  
 And lordis all, syne to the laif bedene:  
 Schawand to thame the prophecie wes said  
 Of Jesu Christ, and als how of ane maid  
 Consauit wes than be the Halie Gaist,  
 His mother als remanand virgin chaist, 15,685  
 And sone he wes to God omnipotent,  
 Makar of man and of ilk element.  
 Syne tholit deid, for man till restoir  
 The heretage qubilk Adame tynt befoir.  
 Syne rais agane be his power and mycht 15,690  
 Fra deith to lyfe, syne to the hevin on hycht  
 Ascendit hicht, quhair he, but ony pryde,  
 Besyde his father sittis on the rycht syde.  
 Qubilk sall cum vpoune the latter day  
 Doun to this eirth withoutin ony nay, 15,695  
 Quhair all compeir mon in his presens,  
 Of ill and gude to gif ane just sentence;  
 And euirilk man, baith ill and gude vnspaird,  
 As he had wrocht sall get ane just rewarid.



And mekill moir nor I will now rehers, 15,700  
 Quhilk neidis now nocht to be put in verss.  
 This thing wes done efter tua hundreth 3eir  
 And thrie also that Marie virgin cleir  
 In Bethlem than buir the blissit birth,  
 Till all mankynd quhilk is refuge and girth. 15,705  
 Efter this king had tane the faith of Crist,  
 And his kinrik compleitlie wes baptist,  
 With haill consent of liegis les and moir  
 Hes gart distroy all tempillis maid befoir,  
 In euirilk pairt that tyme baith ane and all, 15,710  
 And brint thair goddis into poulder small.  
 Putting away all superstitioun  
 Of gentill ryit with euill condition,  
 And big kirkis of greit auctoritie,  
 Efter the vse of Cristianitie; 15,715  
 And preistis mak thairin to sing and sa.  
 The pepill als vpoune the halie da,  
 Na warldlie laibour that da for to wirk,  
 Bot honour God and pra into the kirk,  
 On sax dayes that maid all as him lest, 15,720  
 Syne on the seyvint fra all werkis tuke rest.  
 Lang efter that, as my author did sa,  
 This king Donald he leuit mony da,  
 All mammitrie fra he gart thame forsaike;  
 And wes the first into Scotland that straike 15,725  
 Gold and siluer, and sic money to gang,  
 Quhilk of befoir thai wantit had richt lang.  
 On the tane syid he gart prent Christis cors,  
 And on the tother him self vpone ane hors,  
 In sempiterne remembrance to be 15,730  
 Of Christis deith and Cristianitie.  
 Syne efter that, as that my author sais,  
 In Christis faith cloisit his latter dais,  
 And bereist wes ane litill efter that  
 Into ane place the quhilk wes consecrat, 15,735

With service sung and said solempnitlie,  
Efter the vse of Cristianitie.

HOW ETHODEUS, THE SONE OF THE FIRST ETHO-  
DEUS, WES CROWNIT EFTER THE TYME OF  
GUDE KING DONALD.

Lib.5,f.78b. Quhen passit wes this nobill king Donaldus,  
Col. 1. Than crownit wes the zyoung Ethodeus,  
That sone and air wes to the wicht and bald 15,740  
Ethodeus, of quhome before I tald ;  
Quhilk fra his father wes degenerit far,  
With auerice the langar ay the war ;  
He thoct nothing so plesand on the mold  
In kist and coffer for to gather gold. 15,745  
Solace and pla, all sic thing he forsuik,  
Justice and law also he did our luke.  
The lordis all thairfoir with haill consent  
Depryuit him of cuir and regiment,  
And lute him vse his appetyte and will 15,750  
Of auerice quhill he had gottin his fill.  
Devysit syne with haill auctoritie  
Wyss agit men thair governour to be,  
Quhilk execute the lawes hes rycht lang,  
But thift or reif or ony vther wrang ; 15,755  
Sic peice and rest wes neuir in tha dais,  
Na zit justice, as that my author sais.  
The saxtene zeir syne efter of his ring,  
Vpoune the nyct slaue wes this samin king,  
Into his bed be seruandis of his awin, 15,760  
Be quhome or quhy to me it is vknawin.  
Quhat wes the caus quha lykis tha ma luke.  
Loving to God heir endis the fyift buke.

HEIR ENDYS THE FYIFT BUKE, AND BEGYNNIS  
THE SAXT, AND OF THE CROWNYNG OF  
ETHORTON.

## LIB. 6.

Ethodeus on this way being deid,  
 No king thair wes richt lang into his steid. 15,765  
 Ane sone he had that wes ane prettie child,  
 Fettis and fair and nocht of lawfull eilde,  
 To name that tyme wes callit Ethorton,  
 Fairar in eirth zit wes thair neur none ;  
 In Yle of Mone standand into the se, 15,770  
 With Drewedes at studie that was he.  
 In greit beleif of his wit and ingyne,  
 His gentres and als his wisdome syne,  
 With hail consent than baith of ald and zing  
 Within zouthheid than wes he crownit king. 15,775  
 Plesand he wes, perfite in euirilk pla,  
 Walkryffe in weir at all tyme, nycht and da ;  
 Blyth and benyng, full of humanitie ;  
 Richt large he wes in liberalitie.  
 Ane lang da our thocht I my pen wald vse, 15,780  
 Vnsufficient I am this tyme to ruiss  
 His greit vertew and his nobilitie,  
 To euirilk man with sic humanitie ;  
 Quhairof as now I lat sic thing pas by,  
 And to my purpois now I will apply. 15,785  
 Sone efter syne into the auchtane zeir  
 Wes of his ring, as I sall schaw zow heir,  
 Quhat wes the caus I can nocht tell zow than,  
 He changit sone intill ane vther man.  
 Bot weill I wait it wes ill company 15,790  
 Of lad and loui, hurdome and harlatric.  
 Ill companie, without it get releif,  
 It bringis mony to rycht greit mischeif.  
 Full suith it is as I hard wyss men sa,  
*Et tu semper cum bonis ambula.* Col. 2.  
 15,795  
 With auerice he wes so far infeccit,  
 Quhilk causit him to be baith blind and blekit

With all vices ringand in ony man,  
 That cuir wes sen this warld began.  
 Quhair of this tyme I lyke nocht to reherss, 15,800  
 So vnplesand it is to put in verss;  
 Bot of ane falt I sall mak to zow kend,  
 Quhilk wes the caus of his vnhappie end.

HOW THE KING DEFOULLIT THE TUA DOCHTERIS  
 OF NATHOLOGUS, LORD OF ARGYLE IN THE  
 TYME.

In Argatill that tyme than wes ane lord,  
 Richt as my author did to me record; 15,805  
 Famous he wes of greit fredome and fame,  
 Nathologus this lord he hecht to name,  
 Tua dochteris had<sup>1</sup> the fairest in thair tyme,  
 Plesand, but peir, withoutin falt or cryme,  
 Tender of aige into thair zeiris grene, 15,810  
 Porterit perfite as dame Venus the quene.  
 This samin king, of quhome befor I spak,  
 On to thame baith hes done sic schame and lak,  
 Efter him self had lyne with thame baith,  
 Stanchit his lust, and of thame bayth tuke laith, 15,815  
 His court knaiffis than ran his stirrop by,  
 Mager thair will he hes gart with thame ly.  
 Quhen he had done to thame sic lak and schame,  
 Onto thair father syne he send thame hame.  
 Nathologus quhen that he knew sic thing, 15,820  
 His dochteris baith defoullit with the king,  
 In sic hurdome and in sic harlatrie,  
 Richt greit dispyte thairat had and invye;  
 Decreittit hes into his mynd to de  
 Of that injure or to revengit be. 15,825  
 Seruandis he send that tyme fra hand to hand,  
 To his freindis in mony sindrie land,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *had in*.

And lordis als, the quilk richt weill he knew  
 Tha hait the king, as sindrie to him schew;  
 Full weill he wist tha hait him to the deid, 15,830  
 And for that caus he socht at thame remeid.  
 Vntill ane counsall than he did thame call,  
 Quhen thai come thair in middis of thame all,  
 Seand also ganand wes tyme and place,  
 Exponit hes to thame that cruell caice, 15,835  
 And all the faltis als of this cruell king;  
 Sayand he wes vnabill in all thing  
 To weir ane croun, or be ane king or prince,  
 To his liegis had done sic violence.  
 Far mair he said na I will now report; 15,840  
 All that I leif becaus the tyme is schort.  
 Nathologus quhen he his taill hes endit,  
 With sair complaynt how that he wes offendit,  
 Bayth zoung and ald was present in that steid  
 Promittit hes for to tak lyfe and deid 15,845  
 In that querrell agane that cruell king,  
 Quhill that he wer revengit of that thing:  
 Syne thai wer sworne to keip counsall and lane,  
 Settand ane place quhair thai sould meit agane,  
 And mak thame reddie alss sone as tha ma. 15,850  
 Syne efter that, vponne the tuentie da,  
 Rycht suddantlie than haif thai tane the feild,  
 With mony man that waponis weill culd weild. Lib. 6. f.79.  
 Towart Ewon thai tuke the reddie wa, Col. 1.  
 Quhair that this king with his euill counsall la, 15,855  
 Into his hurdome and greit harlatrie.  
 So at the last thair come to him ane spy,  
 Quhilk schew to him, as ze haif hard befoir,  
 Nathologus with mekill bost and schoir,  
 And mony lord into his companie, 15,860  
 Onto the toun wer cumand into hy,  
 As he beleuit for na vther thing,  
 But for to be revengit of the king:

Sayand with him thair wes so greit ane oist,  
 War he nocht wyis in tyme he wald be loist. 15,865

HOW THE KING LEFT THE TOUN AND COME TO  
 THE FIELD, AND SEAND HE WAS NA PAIRTIE  
 FLED TO ANE YLE.

This Ethorton heirand that it wes so,  
 Out of the toun he dressit him till go,  
 And planelie than proclamit with ane cry  
 That euerie man sould reddie be in hy,  
 To follow him as guddie as tha micht. 15,870  
 And so tha did rycht mony worthie wicht,  
 Out of the toun and all the cuntrie by ;  
 Rycht sone thai war ane nobill cumpany.  
 The king traistit fra tyme that thai him saw,  
 Of his presens that thai sould stand sic aw, 15,875  
 Quhen he wer sene befor thame in that place,  
 That tha durst nocht agane him set thair face.  
 That tyme thair come ane man to him and schew  
 To fecht with thame his power wes our few ;  
 Sayand also of him tha stude na aw, 15,880  
 With greit dispyte sic boist that tyme tha blaw.  
 Of him thai said thai sould revengit be,  
 Or all atonis in that feild to de.  
 Quhen that the king hard him tha tydenis tell,  
 His confort culit and his curage fell ; 15,885  
 And sone he tuke haille purpois for to fle,  
 To saue him self and lat the battell be.  
 And so he did with few men of his awin,  
 In vyle habite dissemblit and vnkawin ;  
 His coit armour and harnes kest him fra, 15,890  
 Syne tuke ane boit into the Yle to ga.  
 His men that tyme quhen that tha saw him fle,  
 Tha had the feind fair in his companie ;

And said tha wer rycht lytill to commend,  
 To fecht for him durst nocht him self defend. 15,895  
 With hail consent, my author tellis thus,  
 Tha passit all syne to Nathologus,  
 And said to him that tha wald tak his part ;  
 And he agane thame thankit with his hart.  
 Syne tha wer sworne for to be trew him till, 15,900  
 And byde with him baith into gude and ill.  
 Nathologus that tyme, withoutin rest,  
 Vpone the king he hes gart follow fast,  
 Attour all quhair him for to seik and se,  
 In ony place gif he ma fundin be. 15,905

HOW THE KING, SEAND HE NICHT NOCHT ESCHAIP,  
 SLEW HIM SELF ERAR NA CUM IN HIS FAIS  
 HANDIS.

So hapnit him into this samin quhill,  
 Into ane gaila passand to ane yle,  
 Be aventure of storme fell in the se, Col. 2.  
 Drevin to the land bakwart agane wes he,  
 Quhair he arryuit in ane previe place. 15,910  
 Syne efterwart quhen that he knew the cace,  
 Into that tyme he stude in so greit dout,  
 Heirand his fais la him round about,  
 Erar that tyme or he come in thair will,  
 To heir sic schame as thai wald sa him till, 15,915  
 And byde thair boist, and for to heir sic blame,  
 The mekill scorne, the heidding and the schame,  
 The greit confusioun but ony remeid,  
 Ane thousand tymes he had levar bene deid.  
 Thairfoir rycht sone ane lang knyfe out he drew, 15,920  
 And at ane straik his awin self thair he slew.  
 Into his tyme quhen he had rung tuelf zeir,  
 He maid sic end as I haif said zow heir.  
 Sic thing as this sould greit exempill be  
 To king or prince for to keip equitie, 15,925

To enirilk man to be ane equale judge,  
 To faltour fa, to innocent refuge,  
 And vse the counsall of men of gude ;  
 And do he nocht, heirfoir I conclude,  
 Sic aventure I trow ze sall heir tell, 15,930  
 Sal happin him as to this king befell.  
 In this mater no moir I will remane,  
 Bot to my purpos pas I will agane,  
 Sen that the mater is in memorie,  
 And tell zow furth the laue of my storic. 15,935

HOW ALL THE LORDIS, EFTER THE DEITH OF THE  
 KING, PASSIT ALL TO EWON TILL ANE COUN-  
 SALL.

Nathologus, heirand the king wes slane,  
 And lordis all went to Ewon agane,  
 With grit triumph and blast of mony horne,  
 Thair to remane quhill on the vther morne.  
 Syne on the morne ane counsall he gart call ; 15,940  
 In publicc place quhair tha convenit all,  
 Wit ze that tyme thai war ane royall rout,  
 With armit men he cloisit thame about ;  
 In that beleif, as my author me tald,  
 That nane durst sa bot as him awin self wald. 15,945  
 Syne in the middis of that multitude,  
 Into ane place aboue thame all he stude,  
 Quhair all mycht heir ilk word that tyme he spak,  
 And on this wayis his oresoun did mak.

HOW NATHOLOGUS MAID HIS ORESOUN BEFOIR  
 THE LORDIS, SCHAWAND THE GREIT ENOR-  
 MITEIS OF THAIR KING, IN THAT BELEIF THAT  
 THAI SOULD CHEIS HIM KING.

“ Lordis,” he said, “louyng to God Almycht, 15,950  
 “ Hes lawleit him so far to schaw the rycht



" Of this tirrane quhilk wes oure prince and king,  
 " So cruell wes in mony sindrie thing,  
 " Puttand him self now to so vyle ane deid, Lib.6,f.79b.  
 " Thankit be God hes send ws sic remeid! 15,955 Col. 1.  
 " The hand of God it strykis with sic strentlh,  
 " Suppois it cum at greit laser and lenth,  
 " Quhair euir it lycht it smytis than so sair,  
 " Sua that thai neid to punneist be na mair.  
 " Quhilk ma be said be this vnhappie king; 15,960  
 " In sic folie thocht God sufferit him to ring,  
 " Zit at ye last, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 " God hes brocht all vnto ane richt just end,  
 " And causit him of him awin self to tak  
 " Ane greit amendis, with mair schame and lak 15,965  
 " Na we desyrit of him for till haif.  
 " The quhilk sould be exempill to the laif  
 " Of all his kin, and ze moir wyiss to be,  
 " And nocht desyre sa greit ane dignitie  
 " As to be maid ane crownit king or prince, 15,970  
 " Sen that zour father hes done sic offence.  
 " To his liegis thai ma weill traist sic thing,  
 " Tha will luif nane cumis of his offspring.  
 " Heirby," he said, "ze may richt weill consider,  
 " Ze lordis all that heir now ar togidder, 15,975  
 " Greit perrell is, and ze richt wnderstude,  
 " To cheis ane king that cuming is of the blude  
 " Of this fals king, thocht it be neur so fair,  
 " And speciallie the narrar as the war.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, "ze faill far in that thing, 15,980  
 " Tak ze his sone at this tyme to be king,  
 " Or ony vther that is of his kin;  
 " Traist weill," he said, "thair sall rycht sone begyn  
 " Of his vnkynndnes dalie for till craif,  
 " Thinkand of ws ane mendis for to haif. 15,985  
 " Thus<sup>1</sup> all oure tyme we sall leif ay in dreid  
 " Quhill thair is ony levand of that feid.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *This*.

“ Than force it is wnto ws all ilkane  
 “ To leif this land, thair is no vther wane,  
 “ Suppois that we haif seruit lytill blame, 15,990.  
 “ Or ellis de with mekill lak and schame.”

HOW THAT NATHOLOGUS, EFTER HE HAD SAID  
 HIS ORESOUN, BE THE GREIT MEN OF GUDE  
 QUHOME TO HE GAIFF REWARD WAS CHOSIN  
 KING.

Quhen this wes said ane quhile he held him still,  
 To harkin and heir quhat wes the lordis will.  
 Greit men of gude, to quhome he rewardis gaif  
 To tak his pairt, perswaidit all the laif 15,995  
 With diligence rycht far into that thing,  
 Nathologus to cheis for till be king ;  
 And ay the langar with the better will,  
 Quhill all the laif consentit hes thairtill.  
 Into that tyme as it wes force and neid, 16,000  
 Sum for lufe, and vther sum for dreid  
 Of armit men that did about thame stand,  
 Agane that mater durst mak na demand ;  
 With feinzeit mynd thai cryit all on hie,  
 “ Nathologus,” they said, “ oure king salbe.” 16,005

HOW NATHOLOGUS, WITHT HAILL CONSENT COACTIT,  
 AND NOCHT OF FRIE WILL, WAS CROWNIT  
 KING OF SCOTTIS.

Col. 2.

Syne set him down vpoun the marbell stone,  
 With hail consent of all wes thair ilkone,  
 In rob royall, with sceptour, sword and ring,  
 Nathologus thair haif tha crownit king.  
 This Athartone this tyme he had ane bruther 16,010  
 Callit Dorus, I find he had nane vther ;  
 Fra tyme he knew that his bruther wes slane,  
 He dred full sair in Scotland to reinane.

Bot suddanelie tuke purpois for to fle  
 Into Pechtland with nevoyis thre, 16,015  
 Fyndocus and Carentius hecht the vther,  
 Donald the thrid, quhilk wes his 3oungest bruther ;  
 All sonis war to Athartone the king.  
 This Dorus full soir he dred sic thing,  
 Nathologus sould do thame mekill noy, 16,020  
 Syne finallie baith him and thame distroy.  
 For that same caus, as 3e sall vnderstand,  
 With feinzeit weid he passit in Pechtland,  
 Dissimuland his birth and als his blude.  
 Quhat that he wes rycht few than wnderstude. 16,025

HOW NATHOLOGUS FEYIT ANE MAN TO FOLLOW  
 DORUS WAS FLED IN PECHTLAND FOR TO  
 SLAY HIM.

Nathologus, fra he wes crownit king,  
 Had greit desyre perpetuallie to ring,  
 And his airis, bot 3it he<sup>1</sup> wes adred  
 Quhen that<sup>2</sup> [he] knew that this Dorus wes fled  
 Into Pechtland with thir childer to byde. 16,030  
 Rycht priualie thairfoir he gart provyde  
 Ane man richt sone the quhilk hes tane [on] hand  
 To sla Dorus and he war in Pechtland.  
 Quhen he wes reddie efter on ane da  
 He tuke his leif, syne passit on awa, 16,035  
 Ay fordwart furth without ony ganestand,  
 Ilk da by da quhill he come in Pechtland.  
 So at the last it hapnit him to meit  
 Rycht quyetlie ane man vpone the streit,  
 Of figure, fassoun, and of quantitie, 16,040  
 As Dorus wes he semit for till be.  
 Into the mirk, and als he wes disgysit,  
 Thairfoir the tother that wes evill advysit,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *it*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *thai*.

Insteid of Dorus slane he hes this man ;  
 Syne tuke his leif and baid no langar than. 16,045  
 Richt sone he come hame to this king agane,  
 And schew to him how he had Dorus slane.  
 Nathologus thair of he wes full glaid,  
 And friend[ful]lie on to this man he said ;  
 " Thair is nothing at me thow will desyre, 16,050  
 " Quhat euir it be thow sall haif to thi hyre."  
 Quhat wald ze mair of this Nathologus ?  
 In all his tyme, my storie tellis thus,  
 Wes none better other prince or king,  
 For all the tyme that lestit of his ring ; 16,055  
 In Albione wes no king in his dais  
 Had mair honour, as that my author sais.  
 Lib. 6, f. 80. For warldlie honour lestit bot ane quhile,  
 Col. 1. Throw fals Fortoun sa mony dois begyle ;  
 The poet sais, as it is richt weill kend, 16,060  
 Of erthlie joy displesour is the end.  
 Efter blythnes and greit tranquillitie,  
 Succedis wo and greit miseritie.  
 Rycht mony one reprovit other sare  
 Of the same falt thame self can nocht be ware. 16,065  
 Quhilk preuit weill be this Nathologus,  
 In his sermone aganis Athartonus ;  
 Reprevit him that tyme in greit effeccc  
 Of the same thing straik him self in the necc ;  
 And quhat it wes gif ony list to speir, 16,070  
 Tak [tent] this tyme and I sall schaw zow heir.  
 Ane secreit woman of the Pechtis blude,  
 In to Scotland richt oft scho come and zude,  
 Be Dorus send to friendis of his awin,  
 Quhilk secreitlie to thame richt oft hes schawin 16,075  
 Of his weifair and brether sonis thre ;  
 How that thai war all in prosperitie,  
 And in quhat place quhair tha war all vnkend ;  
 And with this woman als richt oft hes send

Secreit writ, the quhilk that to thame schew 16,080  
 Tha thocht rycht sone thair richtis to reskew.  
 Betuix thame of[t] this woman so hes gane,  
 Quhill at the last with wryting scho wes tane  
 Rycht quietlie, and syne had to the king,  
 Quhilk schew to him the suith of all that 16,085  
 thing.  
 Secreit and cloiss he keipit [h]as that caice,  
 Quhill efterwart that he saw tyme and place.

HOW NATHOLOGUS SLEW MONY LORDIS THAT HE  
 HELD SUSPECT AGANE HIM ANENT THIS  
 DORUS.

Syne efterwart he send in greit effect  
 For thame he held in that mater suspect,  
 Beseikand thame richt sweit to cum him to, 16,090  
 For greit mater he had with thame to do.  
 And thai agane, truetand of sic thing,  
 Richt reuerentlie obeyit to thair king  
 At his bidding, and maid na tarie lang.  
 Syne quhen thai come in presoun all thame 16,095  
 flang ;  
 Rycht quyetlie thairin gart thame include  
 Thir lordis all that war men of greit gude ;  
 Lang thair ane quhile he did thame to remane,  
 Syne sone efter thir lordis all hes slane,  
 Rycht cruellie but other dome or law ; 16,100  
 Of God or man he stude so litill aw.

HOW THE FREINDIS OF THAME THAT WAR SLANE  
 TUKE FEILD AGANE THE TIRrane KING AND  
 CHAISSIT HIM IN MURRA.

This cruell cace quhen it wes efter kend  
 To thair freindis how thai had maid sic end

- So wo tha war rycht weill than wist tha nocht  
 Into that cace quhat sould be done or wrocht, 16,105  
 For wones wod and mad out of thair mynd ;  
 Syne at the last thai haif all haill defynd  
 Col. 2. Of that mischeif sone for to mak remeid,  
 Or on ane da all [for] to suffer deid.  
 Syne efter that till armor all tha drew, 16,110  
 In haill purpois this king for to persew,  
 And tuke the feild with mony man of gude,  
 In curage cleir ane rycht greit multitude ;  
 To Ewone syne thai tuke the reddie way,  
 In that same tyme quhair that this ilk king 16,115  
 lay.
- Nathologus quhen he hes hard this tald,  
 Suppois he wes baith bellicois and bald,  
 He was in dreid that tyme with thame to deill,  
 Full weill he wist rycht few war to him leill,  
 And syne wes tane into sa haistie tyme ; 16,120  
 Also he dred his querrell and his cryme  
 That he had wrocht agane the commoun law,  
 And for that caus he stude the far mair aw  
 To gif thame feild, bot tuke purpois to fle  
 In Murra land to get help and supple, 16,125  
 Thair to remane ane quhile endlang the coist,  
 Quhill that he war provydit for ane oist.  
 Sone efter syne he come in Murra land,  
 And saw no help to get in ony hand,  
 Greit diligence he hes done nycht and day 16,130  
 To fynd that tyme ane rycht vnefull way,  
 Be wichcraft his purpois to apply ;  
 Ouir all the land he hes gart speir and spy,  
 Bayth far and neir, quhair sic thing mycht fundin  
 [be].  
 Into that craft that war perqueir and sle. 16,135  
 Syne he gat wit within ane litill quhile,  
 Of ane auld wyfe that duct into ane yle,

Baith Erss and Latyne scho culd reid and wryte,  
 And in that craft wes cunnyng and perfyte ;  
 Thingis to cum perfittlie scho culd tell, 16,140  
 So hamelie wes with the angellis of the hell.  
 Ane Murra man maist inwart with the king,  
 And had counsall to him of all that thing,  
 To speik that wyse in Iona yle he send  
 Richt quyettie, to wit the finall end 16,145  
 Of his fortoun that tyme aganis his fa ;  
 Syne with his charge he tuke his leif to ga.  
 Quhill at the last, within ane lytill quhile,  
 Come to this wyfe that wes in Iona yle ;  
 Syne schew to hir his erand and his charge, 16,150  
 With fair langage and giftis als rycht large,  
 Be ony way that gif scho culd reveilld  
 Quha sould prevaill and victor be in feild,  
 And schaw to him als far as scho kend  
 Of that battell the mortall fait and end, 16,155  
 And gif the king in that battell sould die,  
 And quhen or quhow by strenth or subtilitie.

HOW THIS AULD CARLING GAIFF HIR ANSUER ON  
 THE MORNE TO THIS MESSINGER.

This ald carling, the quhilk wes rycht perqueir  
 Into that craft, as ze sall efter heir,  
 Scho tuke a terme quhill on the morn at none 16,160  
 To gif ansuer how all thing suld be done.

Lib. 6, f. 80b.  
Col. 1.

Syne on the morne with this carling he met,  
 At tyme and place quhair that the tryst wes set,  
 Waittand alway vpoune that wyffis will ;  
 This wes the ansuer that scho had him till. 16,165  
 “ Wit ze,” scho said, “ revelit is to me,  
 “ On to the king is force to him till de ;  
 “ Quhilk be na way nor wisdome he ma schaip,  
 “ Or zit prayer of patriark or paip.

“ The will of God decreittit hes in plane, 16,170  
 “ So for this tyme may nocht be brocht agane.  
 “ Als of his fais bid him tak no dreid,  
 “ Bot se alway he tak gude tent and heid  
 “ To him this tyme he giffis grittest cuir,  
 “ Trowand of him he sicker be and suir; 16,175  
 “ Without remeid decernit is to be  
 “ Of his handis this tyme for to de.”  
 Quhen that he hard the ansuer of this wyfe,  
 For crabitnes laid hand vpone his knyfe,  
 With countenance that awfull wes and sour, 16,180  
 Said, “ Hy the carling swyth in ane evill hour,  
 “ Out of my sicht with thi sorcerie,  
 “ For weill I wait thow said all for invye!”  
 And baid na mair with hir at sic demand,  
 Bot sped him hame agane in Murra land. 16,185  
 And how scho said he durst [nocht] than reveill  
 Vnto the king, for-quhy he dred sum deill,  
 Knew he so planelie as how the carling spak,  
 Of him awin self he sould suspitioun tak,  
 For caus he wes in all maner of thing 16,190  
 Most inwart ay at all tyme with this king;  
 Trowand thairof that he that man sould be,  
 Sould vse in him so greit crudelitie,  
 And for that caus he sould put him to deid,  
 Agane Fortoun gif he sould find remeid. 16,195  
 Than with the king he fenzeit mony fald,  
 And durst nocht tell how that the carling tald;  
 Bot gart him trow that scho had said him till,  
 That all sould be at his plesour and will,  
 For so the godis had at that tyme desynd. 16,200  
 ¶ It neuirtheles he dred soir in his mynd,  
 He sould get wit sone be sum vther way  
 Of other men how this carling did say,  
 And he so far had feinzeit to the king,  
 In so hie mater and so greit ane thing, 16,205



Thairfoir he dred he sould hald him suspett,  
 And all the spate to lay into his net :  
 Syne efterwart, but ony dome or law,  
 Rycht cruellie suld him baith hing and draw.  
 Lang so he wes perplexit in his mynd, 16,210  
 Syne at the last concludit and defynd,  
 For to vmschew that chance and havie caice,  
 To sla the king ma he get tyme and place.  
 And so he baid lang waittand on his tyme,  
 Adred he war accusit of sic cryme. 16,215

HOW THE KING WAS SLANE VPOUN THE CLOSAT  
 BE THE SAME MAN THAT I SPAK OF BEFOIR.

It hapnit syne sone efter on ane da,  
 This king he went, as my author did sa,  
 On to ane closat richt quyetlie him allane, Col. 2.  
 Ane lytill colick that tyme he had tane.  
 That samin man of quhome befoir I spak, 16,220  
 He followit him richt cloiss in at the bak,  
 Sayand he had sum secreitt schaw him till.  
 The king beheld to heir quhat wes his will,  
 And he agane so lawlie to him spak  
 The king of him sould no suspicioun tak. 16,225  
 Rycht mekle ill, and rycht mekle lak and schame,  
 Befoir the king that tyme he spak of thame  
 Agane his croun committit had sic cryme ;  
 Syne suddantlie, quhen that he saw his tyme,  
 Vpoun the closat that tyme quhair he sat, 16,230  
 He stickit him withoutin ony lat ;  
 In baith his armes<sup>s</sup> syne hes him claucht,  
 And flang him down rycht deip in that same draucht.  
 Syne quyetlie he passit in the tyde,  
 Be ane postrum sone furth on the bak syid, 16,235  
 Quhair that ane seruand with [ane] hors him baid,  
 Syne hand for hand togidder furth thai raid

Withouttin tarie other nicht or da,  
 Vnto the place quhair that thir lordis la,  
 War followand vpon that erwell king, 16,240  
 And schew to thame as ze haif hard all thing,  
 Ilk word by word at greit laser thame schew.  
 And quhen tha hard and wist that it wes trew,  
 Rycht glaid tha war and joyfull ald and zing,  
 Commending him that he had done sic thing, 16,245  
 In so greit forder of the commoun weill,  
 And put him self in sic danger ilk deill.  
 Nathologus efter that he wes king,  
 Maid sic ane end the ellevint zeir of his ring.  
 The wyss man sais that it is rycht oft kend, 16,250  
 Ane wickit lyfe man mak ane wickit end.  
 Quha levis full weill siclike in all his dais,  
 Man end richt weill, rycht so this same man sais.  
 No moir of this, thairfoir now I will pas  
 To my purpois and tell zow how it wes. 16,255

HOW THE LORDIS SEND IN PECHTLAND AND BROCHT  
 HAME THE THRE SONIS [OF] ATHARTO, AND  
 SYNE CROWNIT THE ELDEST OF THAME, QUHA  
 WAS CALLIT FYNDOCUS.

Quhen that thai knew Nathologus wes deid,  
 The lordis all but rest hes tane to reid,  
 Into Pechtland ane man of gude till go  
 For the thrie sonis of this Atharto,  
 That passit thair in Pechtland with Dorus, 16,260  
 Quhilk flemit than wer be Nathologus.  
 Chosin thai haif, for most secreit and trew,  
 The samin man Nathologus that slew;  
 With greit triumph, honour and dignitie,  
 Passit he hes than for thir brethir thre. 16,265  
 Quhen that he come thai maid nocht long delay;  
 Thir thrie brethir in nobill riche array,

Seruit richt weill thame baith at fit and hand,  
 With greit honour come hame into Scotland.  
 Syne but delay togidder all are gone 16,270  
 With thair bruther the lordis in till Ewone.  
 Fyndok, the eldest of thir brether thrie,  
 Rycht fresche and fair, full of formositie,  
 Worthie and wyss, rich, gudlie and conding,  
 With hail consent that tyme wes crownit king. 16,275 Lib.6, f.81.  
 His perfyte prent and plesand portrature Col. 1.  
 Exceidit far all vther creature ;  
 Fragrant, formois, and flurischand in youth,  
 Fredome and fairnes he had at all fouth,  
 Quhilk did exceid alss far all other wycht, 16,280  
 As dois the mone the sternis in the nycht.  
 The pepill syne quhen that tha did consider  
 His pulchritude and greit vertu togidder,  
 Of him that tyme thai had ane greit beleif,  
 Traistand he sould ane nobill prince preif. 16,285  
 And tha of him wer nothing than begylit,  
 Richt clene he wes, but ony vice vnfyllit ;  
 Referrand him ay to his lordis will,  
 And thair counsall in all thingis gude or ill.  
 Suppois he wes thair governour and king, 16,290  
 But thair counsall he wald do nothing.  
 With Brit and Pecht, and Romanis to also,  
 He had greit peice quhair euir he list till go.  
 And in gude peice ane lang quhile so he rang,  
 But outward weir or ony inward wrang, 16,295  
 Haiffand na fa that tyme him to persew,  
 Quhill fals Fortoun, that na tyme can be trew,  
 Hes brocht him sone vnto ane suddant end,  
 Quhilk wes greit harme quhen all the suith wes  
 kend.

HOW ANE NOBILL OF THE YLIS CALLIT DONALD  
COME IN LUGIA AND MAID GREIT HEIRSCHIP  
AND SLAUCHTER.

Ane man that tyme of greit auctoritie, 16,300  
Borne in the Ylis in the occident se,  
Amang his men of greit honour and fame,  
Quhilk callit wes than Donald to his name,  
For to revenge, my storie tellis thus,  
The deid and slauchter of Nathologus, 16,305  
Ane greit armie out of the Ylis brocht  
In Lugia, and thair greit wrangis wrocht  
With fyre and blude, and in Morauia,  
Syne passit hame with all the gude awa.  
The king Fyndock, quhen he sic thing hard tald, 16,310  
No langar byde into the tyme he wald;  
With greit power he passit on ane da  
Into ane yle quhilk callit is Yla,  
And thair he fand this Donald and his men,  
Quhair that thai war togidder in ane glen, 16,315  
As he wes led vpoun thame be ane spy,  
And gaif thame feild richt haistelie in hy;  
Syne tuke and slew als mony as tha wald.  
Donald him self, thocht he wes neur so bald,  
Rycht fane he wes out of the feild to fle 16,320  
On to ane boit wes bydand by the se.  
With him sa mony in that boit did gang,  
To saill or row tha had sa mekle thrang,  
That be scho past fra the land ane space,  
Vpoun ane sand besyid ane perrellus place, 16,325  
The boit thair sank, and to the ground is gone,  
And in that place thai drownit thair ilkone.  
And so endit this Donald and his weir:  
Fra that tyme furth he did thame no moir deir.  
Quhen this wes done, this king Fyndok is gane 16,330  
Till Albione with his armie agane,  
Efter trubill and travell he had tane,  
Passit to rest he and his men ilkane.

HOW DONALD THE SONE OF THIS FOIRSAID DONALD  
COME FURTH OF YRELAND AND HEREIT  
ALL ARGYLE.

Quhen this wes done as I haif to ȝow tald,  
 The sone and air than of this ilk Donald, 16,325  
 Quhilk Donald als to name callit wes he,  
 Ane rycht scharpe schro full of iniquitie,  
 Out of Yreland he brocht full mony cheif  
 Quhilk in Argyle hes done rycht greit mischeif.  
 Bayth brint and slew, and hereit all the land, 16,340  
 Wes nothing fre befor thame that tha fand.  
 Quhen thir tydenis on to the king wes tald,  
 He maid him boun than<sup>1</sup> baith with ȝoung and ald,  
 Syne on the nycht richt cloislie with ane spy  
 He come richt sone quhair thir theuis did ly; 16,345  
 And in the tyme he set thame round about,  
 Syne suddanelie set on thame with ane schout.  
 Richt mony thair wer slane in to that steid,  
 The laue war tane and hangit to the deid;  
 Donald him self he fled rycht fast awa 16,350  
 In ane small bark on to Ibernia;  
 To saue him self thair still he did remane,  
 Quhill that this king wes passit hame agane.  
 And sone agane he come syne of the new,  
 As of befor richt pertlie to persew, 16,355  
 To birne and sla, bot than it wald nocht be,  
 For-quhy he wantit all help and supple,  
 His men wer slane as ȝe haif hard befor,  
 His freindschip all distroyit les and moir,  
 And all his land wes waistit vp and down, 16,360  
 But come or cattell, tilthe or ony toun.  
 And quhen he saw that he culd cum na speid,  
 To do his devoir be the way of deid,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.

And of his purpos he culd nocht prevaill,  
 Ane subtill way sone efter did assail. 16,365

HOW DONALD SEND TO THE KING, BESEIKAND  
 HIM TO TAK HIM IN HIS GRACE; THE QUHILK  
 THE KING DENYIT WITHOUT HE AND ALL HIS  
 MEN COME AND PAT THAME REUERENTLIE IN  
 HIS WILL.

Ane messinger he hes send to the king,  
 Beseikand him of his gude grace benyng,  
 For to ressaue him to his grace agane,  
 As plesit him to quhat presoun or pane  
 To put him till as his grace wes content. 16,370  
 With this desire the messinger is went  
 On to the king, and word by word him schew,  
 As ze baif hard. The king syne quhen he knew,  
 How his desir proponit wes in plane,  
 This wes the ansuer that he send agane : 16,375  
 Gif plesit him and all that tuke his pairt,  
 With lawlie mynd, with meik and humbill hart,  
 Without armour richt sone to cum him till  
 Onto Ewone, and put thame in his will,  
 And to his lordis quhometo thai did sic lak, 16,380  
 At thair plesour quhat mendis thai wald tak.  
 Of this ansuer Donald wes nocht content,  
 No zit thairtill wald gif his consent.  
 Full weill he wist that he mycht nocht fulfill  
 The havie charge that wald be put him till ; 16,385  
 Quhairfoir richt sone he socht ane vther way  
 Lib.6,f.81b. That wes nocht gude, as I sall to you say.  
 Col. 1.

HOW THIS DONALD FEIT TUA 3OUNG MEN OF THE  
 YLIS FOR TO SLAY THIS KING WITH TRESSONE.

Tua fair 3oung men, suppois tha war nocht gude,  
 Borne in the Ylis and of the nobill blude,

Perswadit hes with wordis richt bening 16,390  
 And greit giftis for to betraiss the king.  
 At his plesour thai<sup>1</sup> tuke that thing on hand ;  
 Syne fenzeit thame as tha had left the land  
 For dreid of Donald, causit thame to fle  
 As he had bene thair mortall ennemie, 16,395  
 Traisting the king of sic thing sould thame trow,  
 And [of] thair flemyng greit als till allow,  
 Quhairthrow thai sould grow hamelie with his grace,  
 And syne richt sone to find ane tyme and place,  
 Richt quyetlie, other be way or streit, 16,400  
 Without perrell thair purpos to compleit.  
 Was nane in court that tyme gaif thame credence,  
 Nor zit admitt to the kingis presence ;  
 Suspectit wer lang efter thai come thair,  
 And wald haif bene the langar ay the mair, 16,405  
 Had nocht bene the kingis secund bruther  
 Carentius, the quhilk aboue all vther  
 Gaif thame sic traist and credens in all thing,  
 Acquetit thame syne efter witht the king.  
 And quhen thai come in presens of his grace, 16,410  
 With fraudfull mynd, with fals and feinzeit face,  
 Mony loud lesing richt planelie thai culd mak  
 Of this Donald of quhome befor I spak.  
 Quhairthrow thai war richt inwart with the king,  
 And greit credence had of him in all thing ; 16,415  
 And of his counsall most inwart and trew.  
 Carentius the suith quhen that he knew,  
 Tha war auctoreist with the king his bruther,  
 He traistit thame that tyme aboue all vther,  
 In word and werk to him haldin most deir, 16,420  
 To him all tyme withoutin ony peir ;  
 And throw sic traist of Carentius tha had,  
 With nane that tyme suspectit wer and dred.

---

<sup>1</sup>In MS. *that*.

Syne quhen thai knew that tha had of the king  
 So greit credence and traist into all thing, 16,425  
 Than da by da tha waittit on thair tyme,  
 For to commit that curst vnhappin cryme.  
 And so thai war ane lang tyme in to feir,  
 Qubill efterwart as I sall schaw zow heir.

HOW THIR TUA TRATOURIS SLEW THIS NOBILL  
 KING BE SYID EWONE AT THE HUNTING,  
 QUHAIR HE WAS HIM ALANE.

This king ane tyme being into Ewone, 16,430  
 Richt quyetlie in hunting he is gone,  
 With hound and horne and racchis gude aneuche,  
 To sla ane wolfe that la within ane cleuche ;  
 Quhilk had distroyit in that tyme greit stoir,  
 Spyt he wes that samin nicht befor, 16,435  
 Thair with ane hird saw him pas to his den,  
 By his gray gown richt weill he did him ken.  
 Without deley thair wes no langar let,  
 Endlang the schaw the settis sone wer set ;  
 In sindrie pairtis ilk man sat alone, 16,440  
 About the forrest all the faid is gone ;  
 Col. 2. The racchis runnand vp and doun the cleuche,  
 With beir of birdis vpone euerie beuche.  
 The nobill king richt solitar he sat  
 All him allane, thir tuo tratouris with that, 16,445  
 On to the king quhair he sat him allane,  
 Richt haistelie into that tyme is gane ;  
 And quhen thai saw that tyme so oportune,  
 So quietlie that sic thing nicht be done,  
 Ilkane of thame ane lang knyfe thai draw, 16,450  
 And out-throw the bodie of the king tha thraw ;  
 Quhilk stiekit him stark deid into that stound,  
 Syne left thair waponis stickand in the wound.



HOW THIR TUA TRATOURIS WAR TANE AND AC-  
CUSIT, CONDAMPNIT, AND SYNE HANGIT AND  
DRAWIN FOR THAIR REWARD.

Quhen this was done thir tratouris bayth did fle  
 Out-throw ane mos on till ane montane he. 16,455  
 And as God wald, for-quhy it wes bot rycht,  
 Tha war our tane or tha come to the hycht ;  
 Within ane park that stude vpoun ane plane,  
 War apprehendit and baith brocht agane.  
 And quhen thai war accusit of that thing, 16,460  
 Quhy and quhairfoir thai slew that nobill king,  
 With sie tressoun and greit erudelitie,  
 Quhilk schew to thame so greit humanitie,  
 And had thair faith and lawtie so degradit ;  
 Tha schew agane how that thai war perswadit 16,465  
 Be fals Donald, of quhome befor I tald,  
 Ane bellomy richt busteous wes and bald ;  
 And maist of all that of ouy vther,  
 Be Carentius quhilk wes the kingis bruther.  
 Zit neurtheles it wes eith to presume 16,470  
 Of thir tratouris it wes ane suspect dome,  
 And thai of him said it for invye ;  
 Quhat wes the caus I can nocht tell weill quhy :  
 Quhill efterwart previt richt weill in deid,  
 As ze sall find heir of him quhen ze reid. 16,475  
 This beand done as I haif to zow schawin,  
 Thir tua tratouris wer bayth hangit and drawin  
 With foure wieht hors, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 For that same deid this wes thair latter end.

HOW CARENTIUS, HERAND THAT HE WAS SUSPECTIT  
OF HIS BRUTHERIS DEITH, FLED INTO BRITANE,  
AND THAIR REMANIT LANG VKNKAWIN THAT  
HE WAS ATHER OF BLUDE OR NATIOUN.

Carentius of that quhen he hard tell, 16,480  
 He tuke sic dreid he durst na langer dwell ;

- Syne secreitlie into Britane he fled,  
 Waill soberlie into vyle habite cled,  
 And haldin wes at all tyme da and nycht  
 Among the Romanis for ane sempill wycht ; 16,485  
 Neur in his tyme to thame reveill wald he  
 His nobill blude and his genelogie.  
 Syne efterwart with the Romanis he zeid  
 To Italie, and throw his nobill deid,  
 That tyme in weir so greit honour he wan, 16,490  
 Lib.6, f. 82. He changit sone in till ane vther man,  
 Col. 1. As efterwart I sall mak to zow cleir,  
 At tyme and place quha lykis for till heir ;  
 For now I list no langar heir remane,  
 Bot to my purpos turne I will agane. 16,495  
 In the tent zeir of this Fyndocus ring,  
 Quhilk wes ane wyss and worthie nobill king,  
 He tuke his leif, syne passit with the laif,  
 With all honour syne grauit wes in to his graif,  
 Besyde Ewone, with sacrifice solen 16,500  
 Of Cristin wyis with mony nobill men,  
 In sanctuarie on a solempnit da,  
 Witth preist and prelat for to sing and pra ;  
 With greit murning baith of ald and zing,  
 So weill louit with thame all wes this king. 16,505

HOW DONALD THE ZOUNGEST BRUTHER OF FYN-  
 DOCIUS, EFTER HIS DEITH, WAS CROWNIT KING  
 OF SCOTTIS.

Efter the tyme this nobill king was deid,  
 No sone he had to succaid in his steid ;  
 But gude Donald that wes his zoungeist bruther,  
 Narrest to him that tyme of ony vther,  
 With haill consent that tyme of ald and zing 16,510  
 This ilk Donald wes crownit to be king.  
 Syne efter he ressauit had his croun,  
 In feir of weir richt baldlie maid him boun

On fals Donald with anger and dispyte,  
 His broderis deid for to revenge and quyte. 16,515  
 In this same tyme now that ze heir me sa,  
 Ane messinger come fra Morauia,  
 Quhilk riddin had and gone richt mony myllis,  
 And schew till him how Donald of the Ylis  
 In Murra land, and als in Lugia, 16,520  
 Had brint and slane with heirschip nycht and da.  
 So cruellie his pepill he had slane,  
 Durst nane so bald in tha boundis remane ;  
 Impotent pepill that doucht nocht for to fle,  
 Richt doggitlie he maid thame all to de. 16,525

HOW KING DONALD WES SLANE IN MURRAY BE  
 THIS FALS TIRrane, DONALD OF THE YLIS.

This king Donald, quhen he hes hard him tell  
 The greit mischeif amang his lieges fell,  
 He maid no tarie that tyme nycht nor da,  
 Bot suddanelie he passit in Murra.  
 Syne stentit palzeonis doun at the se coist, 16,530  
 With small power thair byding on his oist,  
 Endlang ane balk quhair that he gat sum beild,  
 And wes our few to gif his fais feild.  
 This ilk Donald quhen that he knew that thing,  
 So small power was that tyme with the king, 16,535  
 And weill he wist the langar ay the mair,  
 That it wald grow and his awin power pair,  
 Decernit hes thairfoir richt suddantlie  
 To gif battell or he gat moir supple.  
 That samin nycht, ane litill forrow da, 16,540  
 Come on the king that same tyme quhair he la,  
 With greit power unwittand of this king,  
 So quyetlie he gydit all this thing.  
 Syne with ane schout, ane litill forrow da,  
 Come on the king that samin tyme quhair he la. 16,545

The out watchis of thame rycht sone wes war,  
 And persanit thame rycht lang or tha come nar,  
 And schew the king in his bed quhair he la.  
 This nobill king, in all the haist he ma,  
 Arrayit hes his men vpoun the plane ; 16,550  
 Sync manfullie he passit him foirgane.  
 Ane mad melle at thair meitting wes maid,  
 Quhen speiris brak and mony scheildis braid  
 Crakit and claue, and helmis brist in schunder,  
 And all the bodie bludie that wes wnder. 16,555  
 Ane stranger stour than wes thame tuo betuene  
 With so few folk befor wes neur sene.  
 This nobill king his power wes so small  
 That day in feild tha wer confoundit all.  
 Thre thousand men that da of his wer slane, 16,560  
 Tua thousand tane that da that did remane,  
 Tha fled rycht fast wnto the hillis lie ;  
 The king wes tane and men of gud threttie.  
 The king him self that woundit wes so sair  
 In the schulder, throw cruell pane and cair, 16,565  
 And displesour mycht nocht suffer sic thing ;  
 His hart than birst the first zeir of his ring.

HOW THIS TIRrane, DONALD OF THE YLIS, WAS  
 CROWNIT KING OF SCOTTIS EFTER KING DO-  
 NALD WAS DEID.

Quhen he was deid that wes of sic renoun,  
 This fals tirrane on force hes tane the crown.  
 As king and prince he maid him self to ring, 16,570  
 For aw and dreid that tyme he wes maid king.  
 The lordis [all] of greit nobilitie,  
 That he had than in his captiuitie,  
 He menast thame ilk da with bost and schoir,  
 Quhill tha consentit till him les and moir. 16,575  
 Zit all his tyme he held thame ay suspecc,  
 Thair fayth till him wes of so lytill effeccc,

And weill he wist, and tha thair tyme mycht se,  
 Of the injure thai wald revengit be  
 That he committit the king quhen that he slew, 16,580  
 And traistit weill neur on till him wes trew.  
 Ilk man of gude he held his mortall fa,  
 In audiens durst nother byde nor ga,  
 In all his tyme he stude into sic dout,  
 But armit men that zeid him round about; 16,585  
 And da by da in greit haitrent he grew  
 Of his pepill, so that thair wes richt few  
 Or nane<sup>1</sup> that tyme that he mycht traist in till,  
 To thame he wes so wickit and so ill.  
 Full mony lord, as ze sall vnderstand, 16,590  
 But ony falt dishereist of his land:  
 Syne maid thame all, throw his iniquitie,  
 But ony grace vponne ane gallous de. Lib. 6, f. 82b.  
Col. 1.  
 Greit wrang he wrocht throw malice and invy  
 To thame of quhome he had sic jelosie; 16,595  
 And mekill mair nor I haif tald zow heir,  
 Neirby the space that tyme of threttene<sup>2</sup> zeir.  
 Syne gracious God, reformar of all thing,  
 Mich[t] nocht suffer this tirrane langar ring,  
 Knawand so weill he wes so obstinat, 16,600  
 Into ill mynd and vicis indurat,  
 Quhairfoir he did ane vengeance of him tak,  
 Quhilk lang befoir he held fra him abak;  
 Bydand alway quhill that he sould repent  
 Of his vicis and to pennance consent, 16,605  
 That men ma knaw his mercie and fauour  
 Exceidis far his justice and rigour.  
 The langar ay he suffer men to syu,  
 And planeliar to perseveir thairin,  
 Quhen he plesis for sic synnis to smyte, 16,610  
 The sword of vengeance will the sarar byte.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *man*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *threttie*.

As we ma preve weill by this tirane king,  
 Neirby the tuelf 3eir efter of his ring,  
 Sic auenture that tyme as to him fell,  
 Tak tent to me and 3e sall heir me tell. 16,615

HOW FYNDOCIUS SONE CALLIT CARTHLYNTUS WAS  
 KEIPIT QUYETLIE VNKEND WITH HIS FOSTER  
 FATHER FOR DREID OF THAT TIRANE.

Ane child thair wes, baith faltles, fair and 3ing,  
 That wes the sone of gude Fyndok the king,  
 And Crethlyntus this child he hes to name,  
 Ane barne he wes without falt or blame.  
 Quhen this tirrane, of quhome befor I tald, 16,620  
 In to battell had slane the king Donald,  
 Qubilk bruther wes to gude Fyndok the king,  
 This Carthlyntus, that wes that tyme so 3ing,  
 His foster father that weill vnderstude  
 Of this tirrane than baith the ill and gude, 16,625  
 Dreidand full soir he sould this barne distroy,  
 Full secreitlie thairfoir he did convoy  
 This prettie child vnto ane quyet place,  
 Quhair he remanit till ane weill lang space,  
 Quhat that he was wnwist of ony wicht, 16,630  
 Qubill that he grew to manheid, strenth and hycht.  
 Rycht fair he wes and fecfull als but fabill,  
 Worthie and wyss, honest and honorabill ;  
 And in his mynd rycht quyetlie he buir  
 Of this tirrane the noy and eik injure, 16,635  
 Into his tyme so lang that he had wrocht,  
 His fatheris deid also forget he nocht ;  
 And of his eme the slauchter king Donald  
 Be this tirrane that cruell wes and bald ;  
 And to him self the greit injure and wrang 16,640  
 Of his kinrik he held fra him so lang.  
 Quhairfor oft syis he soucht into his heid,  
 To that mater how he mycht mak remeid.

So at the last he hes fund ane devyiss,  
 To that tirrorane to enter into service ; 16,645  
 Quhairby he nicht quhen that him list to haif  
 His presens, ay siclike as had the laif  
 Of his famelie, quhometo that he gaif fe,  
 And thus he thocht revengit for to be  
 Of this tirrorane so mekill wrang had done, 16,650  
 Quhen euer he saw his tyme wes oportune.  
 For weill he wist thair wes na man him kend  
 For kingis sone, thairfore richt sone he wend  
 On to this king, askand him with gude will  
 To sum service that he wald put him till. 16,655  
 Rycht weill content thairof wes this king,  
 Ressaueand him richt blythlie and benyng,  
 In his service but baid or zit rebous,  
 Maist inwart man maid him of all his hous.  
 This Carthlyntus that wes bayth wer and wyss, 16,660  
 Throw his gyding to greit honour and pryss  
 The langar ay he grew aboue the laif,  
 So greit giftis amang thame that he gaif,  
 Quhairthrow he wan thair fauour our all thing ;  
 Ilk man him louit better nor the king. 16,665  
 And quhen he knew he stude so in thair grace,  
 Richt quyetlie, into ane secreit place,  
 To thame he wist the quhilk to him wes trew,  
 Rycht planelie than his secreittis all he schew,  
 Word by word as I haif said befoir. 16,670  
 Of this mater quhat sould I say zow moir ?  
 Tha war content to be at his command ;  
 Ilkane of thame syne oblist be thair hand,  
 To tak his pairt quhen thair saw tyme and place.  
 So efterwart it hapnit vpone caice, 16,675  
 This samin king into ane tyme to be  
 Into ane citie foundit be the se,  
 Into Locquhaber that worthelic wes wallit,  
 Quhilk Euwerlochtie than to name wes callit.

Thair on ane nycht quhen all wes gone to rest, 16,680  
 This Carthlyntus thoct than his tyme wes best,  
 And his fellowis thair purpois to fulfill,  
 Than suddantlie tha went his chalmer till,  
 Of that ilk king without ony demand,  
 Withoutin feir quhair tha him awin self fand. 16,685  
 This Carthlinthus that hardie wes and wicht,  
 Thoct he wes young his hart grew he on hicht;  
 Syne manfullie, with stalwart mynd and stuir,  
 Befoir this king he steppit on the fluir,  
 And drew ane knyfe that wes bayth scharp 16,690  
 and lang,  
 Syne throw the bodie of this king it thrang.  
 But ony stop he stickit him to the deid,  
 But ony reuth, wes nane to mak remeid.

HOW CARTHLYNTUS, QUHEN HE HAD SLANE THE  
 TIRANE KING DONALD, PASSIT AND SCHEW  
 THE LORDIS HOW HE HAD DONE.

Lib. 6, f. 83. Quhen this wes done in haist he did him hy  
 Col. 1. Out of the toun on to ane place neir by, 16,695  
 Quhair mony lord wes ludgit that same nycht;  
 Of barronis bald and mony curtis knycht,  
 Into the toun thair wes so greit repair,  
 And for that caus thai take thair ludging thair.  
 Expert he wes and knew richt weil that thing, 16,700  
 That all tha lordis louit nocht the king,  
 And wald full fane haif put him to the deid,  
 And thai wist how withoutin blame or feid.  
 Than all the cace he schew to thame rycht sone,  
 Ilk word by word befoir as he had done, 16,705  
 And that he wes the sone and lauchtfull air,  
 Of Fyndocus as I haif said yow air.  
 The maner als that tyme he to thame schew,  
 With his handis how he that tirane slew.



Of tha tythandis thai war rycht blyth ilkone, 16,710  
 And haistelie to harnes all ar gone,  
 And to the toum syne passit in ane rout,  
 With armit men syne set the place about,  
 Quhair that the freindis of this tirrane la,  
 And tua thousand syne slew of thame or da; 16,715  
 And all the laif that chaipit in that place,  
 Tha slew thame efter without mercie or grace;  
 Zoung and ald, baith man, barne and wyfe,  
 Tha sparit nane that tyme that buir the lyfe.  
 This wes the end syne of that tirrane strang, 16,720  
 In the tuelt zeir quhen he had rang so lang.

HOW THE LORDIS OF SCOTLAND CONVENIT ALL IN  
 BERIGONE AND, EFTER LANG PROUISIOUN AND  
 MONY ARGUMENTIS TO AND FRO, CROWNIT THE  
 SONE OF FYNDOK CALLIT CARTHLYNTUS.

Quhen this wes done as ze haif hard me sa,  
 The lordis all convenit on anc da,  
 In Berigone that tyme baith ald and zing,  
 For to devyiss quhome that thai wald mak king. 16,725  
 Amang thame all that tyme thair wes rycht few  
 The veritie or nocht perfitlie knew,  
 Or zit culd tell gif that this Carthlyntus  
 Wes carnell sone to the king Fyndocus.  
 Vnknawin also he wes to euerie wicht, 16,730  
 For he so lang had bene out of thair sicht;  
 And for that caus he wes hald in suspecc  
 That samin tyme almaist with all the fecc.  
 His foster father the suith thairof that knew,  
 Befoir thame all [be] witnes than anew 16,735  
 Wes vnsuspect, and mony vther sing,  
 He preuit him the sone of Fyndok king.  
 The pepill all thairof wes weill content,  
 And crownit him with all thair hail consent,

And thankit God that had send thame ane ayr 16,740  
 Of king Fyndok baith plesand and preclair.  
 And he agane, richt curtas and benyng,  
 Thankit thame all that had maid him thair king;  
 In presens of thame all baith les and mair,  
 This hes he said befor thame that wes thair. 16,745

HOW CARTHLYNTUS MAID HIS ORESOUN TO THE  
 LORDIS.

- Col. 2. " Lordis," he said, " to zow it is weill knawin,  
 " This land so lang wes thirlit and ourthrawin  
 " Be this tirrane that now is laitlie deid;  
 " Thankit be God we are quyte of his feid!  
 " As for him self I dar weill undertak 16,750  
 " He ma do ws now nouthur skayth no lak  
 " In tyme to cum, quhat euer efter befall,  
 " Done is his dais and his deidis all.  
 " Quhen that ane tre is hewin fra the rute,  
 " On it no moir thair will grow leif or frutt; 16,755  
 " Bot ay fra that, woddir wallow or sklyng,  
 " Zit fra the rute small wandis will vpspring  
 " Within schort quhile in so greit multitude,  
 " And heild mair erd nor the tre quhen it stude.  
 " Without the rute out of that place be changit, 16,760  
 " The ground na way thairof ma be weill clengit.  
 " Be this," he said, " ze ma exempill tak;  
 " Thocht this tirrane, of quhome befor I spak,  
 " Be deid him self, his branchis growis grene  
 " In sindrie pairtis quha lykis ma be sene. 16,765  
 " And tha be thoillit to the hycht to pas,  
 " Tha wilbe war nor euir him awin self was.  
 " My counsall is," he said, " I bid nocht roun,  
 " Draw furth the rute and hew the branchis doun;  
 " And do ze nocht," he said, " I dar la wode, 16,770  
 " Within schort quhile that tha sall spring and  
 spred

" Ouir all the land in so greit quantitie,  
 " And be far war nor euer wes the mauc tre.  
 " Be wyiss in tyme and traist that this is trew,  
 " Or dreid efter it mak zow all to rew." 16,775  
 Quhen this wes said befoir thame that wes thair,  
 Rejosit that tyme wes bayth les and mair  
 Of his wisdom, and of his hie prudence,  
 His pulchritude that wes of sic plesance.  
 Rycht zyoung he wes, full of speciositie, 16,780  
 Bayth fresche and fair with greit humilitie,  
 Quhilk ar to pryiss rycht greitlie in ane prince,  
 Zouthheid and strenth, pulchritude and prudence.  
 Thair is no king that is of gritter pryiss,  
 Nor in zouthheid quhen men ar fair and wyiss, 16,785  
 Lustie and lawlie, manlie and benyng,  
 So was that tyme this ilk Carthlyntus king.  
 Syne efter that that I haif said zow heir,  
 Bayth Eist and West he hes gart spy and speir  
 In ony pairt that thai war levand in, 16,790  
 Into that tyme wes of that tirranis kin;  
 Without discretioun, reuth, or zit remeid,  
 Bayth ald and zyoung tha haif put all to deid.  
 This being done he chesit of the best,  
 To put his kinrik into peice and rest, 16,795  
 Wyss agit men, that weill the lawis knew,  
 Of conscience clene and in all thingis trew,  
 And gaif thame cuir to execute the law  
 Into his kinrik vp and down ouir aw.

HOW ANE MESSINGER COME TO CARTHLYNTUS FRA  
 THELARGIS, THE KING OF PECHTIS, QUHAIR  
 HE WAS AT HUNTING.

Efter all this, within ane lytill space,  
 This king at hunting being in ane place  
 Of Grampione, the greit mont and the hie,  
 Into ane plauc that plesand wes to se,

16,800 Lib. 6, f. 83 b.  
 Col. 1.

Fra king of Pechtis, bald and cheualrus,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Thelargus, 16,805  
 Ane messinger of greit magnificens  
 Come to this king and gaif him thir presens,  
 With reuerence richt laulie and benyng;  
 Sayand to him that Thelargus his king  
 Was blyth and glaid of his prosperitie, 16,810  
 And thankit God of his greit grace so he,  
 That gaif him wisdome, manlines and mycht,  
 With sic honour for to reskew his richt,  
 And for to be als victour of his fa.  
 He wes content that it wes hapuit sua; 16,815  
 Desyring als he wald renew the band,  
 Wes maid afoir betuix thame and Seotland,  
 Richt lang ago be fatheris of the ald,  
 In forme and effect siclike to stand and hald;  
 And keip kyndnes as of befoir hes bene 16,820  
 Thir mony zeir thair foirfatheris betuene,  
 With lufe and fauour kyndlie with thair hart,  
 And at all poynt ilkone tak vtheris pairt.

HOW CARTHLYNTUS GAIFF ANSUEER TO THE  
HERAULD.

This beand said, as I haif said zow heir,  
 This nobill king said to this messingeir: 16,825  
 " Forsuith, gude Sir, it lykis weill to me,  
 " Zour nobill king be in prosperitie,  
 " Quhilk is so gentill, wyss, curtas and heynd,  
 " I knaw full weill he is my afald freind.  
 " Thairfoir," he said, " I am hartlie content 16,830  
 " Of his desyre that he hes to me sent,  
 " And heir promittis to the da I de,  
 " With all power his speciall friend to be."  
 The messinger, quhen he hard him sa so,  
 Thankit the king and tuke his leve to go. 16,835

The king agane, with mony riche reward,  
 Deliuerit him, baith befoir lord and laird,  
 With gay grew houndis for the fallow deir,  
 And fair falconis for foullis of reveir ;  
 And mony ratchis rynnand thame besyid, 16,840  
 With greit cursouris and pamfrayis of pryde.  
 This messinger syne tuke his leif anone,  
 In till all haist than hamewart is he gone,  
 And schew this king that tyme how he had  
 sped.  
 This Thelargus thairof greit blythnes had, 16,845  
 And lang efter, as my author did sa,  
 Greit kyndnes was betuix thir kingis tua.  
 Bot fals Fortoun, the quhilk is sa vnstabill,  
 To mony men quhen that thai ar most abill.  
 In plesour, lufe, and greit prosperitie, 16,850  
 Scho puttis syne than in miseritie,  
 Or euir he wist, in magir of his will,  
 That he ma nocht mak no remeid thairtill.  
 Quhat be the caus that garris me sa so,  
 That sall I tell zow forder or I go. 16,855  
 This Carthlyntus, of quhome befoir I spak,  
 As that my author dois me mentioun mak,  
 In Grampione ane<sup>1</sup> greit hunting hes set  
 Quhair he that tyme with mony lordis met, 16,860  
 And mony knycht with fallowschip and in feir,  
 With greit doggis for slauchter of the deir ;  
 And small houndis to bring thame to the burne,  
 Sum for the speid and vther sum to turne,  
 And mony ratche ta ryn vnder the ryss ;  
 With mony tent and palzeoun of greit pryss, 16,865 Col. 2.  
 With wyne at welth, and danteis that war deir,  
 Tha wantit nocht that langit to gude cheir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *in*.

HOW THAIR COME OUT OFF PECHTLAND MONY  
 3OUNG LORDIS TO THAT HUNTING, AND WAS  
 RYCHT WEILL RESSAUIT WITH THE KING.

In that same tyme thair come furth of Pechtland,  
 On to that game as ze sall wnderstand,  
 Mony 3oung lord that plesand war to se, 16,870  
 With greit desyre at that hunting to be.  
 To se that game thai had so greit desyre,  
 Thair wes no travell that nicht gar thame tyre,  
 Quhill that thai come to Carthlyntus the king,  
 Quhillk wes rycht blyth and joyfull of that thing, 16,875  
 And all his lordis siclyke into feir,  
 Welcumand thame than of ane gude maneir,  
 With all plesour nicht till ane prince pertene,  
 At that hunting that same tyme mycht be sene.  
 All the lang da thai huntit with grit game, 16,880  
 And syne at evin with all solace sett allsame,  
 With dansing, singing, and all danteis deir;<sup>1</sup>  
 Wyne at all will thai had withoutin want,  
 Thair wes no plesour to thame that tyme skant.  
 Tha tuke thair plesour so ane weill lang space, 16,885  
 Fra set to set in mony sindrie place,  
 Quhill of this hunting thai haif made ane end;  
 The Pechtis than hes tane thair leif to wend.  
 And for thair houndis war nocht of sic speid  
 As Scottis houndis, nor zit so gude at neid, 16,890  
 Nor in sic game thai war nocht half sa gude,  
 Na of sic plesour nor sic pulchritude,  
 The king thairfoir he gart gif euerie man  
 Of the best houndis war amang thame than,  
 At thair plesour that tyme thai war nocht 16,895  
 spaird,  
 With hors and hound and all vther rewaird.  
 Quhen that wes done and all thing dressit rycht,  
 Tha tuke thair leve and bad the king gude nycht.

---

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems to be wanting.

HOW THE ȜOUNG LORDIS OF THE PECHTIS, BEING  
AT THE HUNTING WITH THE KING OF SCOTTIS,  
EFTER THA TUKE THAIR LEIFF WITH GREIT  
REWAIRDIS, STAW THE KINGIS BEST HOUND,  
AND OFF THE GREIT MISCHEIFF THAIROF FOL-  
LOWAND HEIREFTER.

Ȝouthheid no way that can no perrell cast,  
Qubill that all thing be loissit at the last, 16,900  
And all the perrell passit and ago,  
Than all to lait repentand cryis ho :  
Nor at na leid experience will leir,  
No Ȝit wisdome qubill all be bocht full deir.  
Richt so it wes that tyme I wnderstand 16,905  
Of thir Ȝoung lordis come furth of Pechtland.  
Thocht thai war all weill treittit with this king  
And lordis all in euerie kynd of thing,  
With horsse and hound, and all thing tha wald  
haif,  
Tha wantit nocht that tyme that tha wald craif. 16,910  
For tha of ressoun culd nocht be content,  
Tha maid all Pechtland efter to repent,  
And Scotland als, lang and mony Ȝeir ;  
And how it wes tak tent and Ȝe sall heir.  
This nobill king, of quhome befoir I tald, 16,915 Lib. 6, f. 84.  
Ane hound he had baith curious and bald, Col. 1.  
Plesand, but peir, and full of pulchritude,  
Suyper and swyft, and in all game rycht gude :  
All other houndis he did exceid als far,  
As into licht the mone dois neir ilk star. 16,920  
Thir Ȝoung Pechtis to him tha take gude keip,  
Syne on the nycht, quhen all men war on sleip,  
Tha staw this hound and mony vther mo,  
Efter thai had takin thair leif till go.  
Syne on the morne, quhen that this hound wes 16,925  
mist,  
Thair wes no wicht quhair he wes gone that wist,

Except the man that had the hound in cuir,  
 Follout richt fast and efter him he fuir  
 Into that part quhen he knew tha war past,  
 Within schort quhile ouirtuke thame at the last, 16,930  
 Or thai<sup>1</sup> war passit out of Scottis ground,  
 Than soberlie askit agane the hound ;  
 Thinkand farlie tha sould be so wnwys  
 To steill the hound the king held of sie pryss,  
 Or for to do him so greit lak and schame, 16,935  
 The quhilk had done so greit plesour to thame.

HOW THE PECHTIS SLEW THE MAN THAT KEIPIT  
 THE DOG.

Thir 3 young lordis sum scorpit with greit scorne,  
 Sayand agane, suppois he had sworne,  
 That dog agane as than he sould nocht get ;  
 And he rycht weill thoct that he sould thame 16,940  
 let,  
 Richt haistelic laid handis on the hound  
 In leische and collar quhairwith he wes bound.  
 Trowand, he said, thai wald him nocht deny.  
 Ane haistie man that stude him neir hand by,  
 Drew out ane knyfe that wes of mettell gude, 16,945  
 And stiekit him that same tyme quhair he stude.  
 Ane man of his that tyme that stude neir by,  
 The coroncch [rais] with ane loud schout and cry ;  
 Sic wes thair vse ay quhen thai saw ane fray,  
 Quhilk zit is keipit to the samin day. 16,950

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE MORT BATTELL BETUOX THE  
 SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS FOR THE STEILLING  
 OF ANE HOUND.

Tha gatherit fast quhen tha hard the schout,  
 The cuntrie men that duelt neir hand about ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.



Fra hill to hill richt fast tha did thame hy,  
 And followit fast ay quhair tha hard the cry.  
 On fit and hors thai follouit on richt far, 16,955  
 Quhill that tha come quhair thir zounge lordis war ;  
 And quhen the pepill hes hard tell in plane  
 The hound wes stollin, the kingis seruand slane  
 That had the hound that tyme into his cuir,  
 Tha mycht nocht thoill na langar that injure : 16,960  
 All maid ane vow revengit for to be  
 Of that greit wrang, or all thair for to de.  
 The Pechtis als vpoune the tother syid,  
 Tha bownit baldlie in battell to byde ;  
 Zounge wantoun men, thair hartis wer so hie, 16,965  
 Greit schame tha thocht and lak that tyme [to] fle,  
 Or zit ane mendis for the skaith to mak,  
 Tha thocht to thame it wes<sup>1</sup> ouir greit ane lak.  
 The Scottis als impatient wes and proud,  
 And cloisit thame togidder in ane cloud 16,970  
 Or ever thai wist, syne with ane schout and cry,  
 Tha schot on thame richt sone and suddantly.  
 Ane bitter bargane thair begouth belyve Col. 2.  
 Of nakit men with scharpe swordis and lang knyve ;  
 Without armour into that stour thai<sup>2</sup> stude, 16,975  
 Like wode wolffis ilkane drew vtheris blude.  
 With brandis bricht that bait throw bane and brane,  
 Abundantlie sa mekle blude wes drawne,  
 That petie wes quha had bene thair and sene  
 Sa mony grume lay granand on the grene. 16,980  
 For thair wes slane, gif I rycht wnderstude,  
 Sextie Scottis that war men of gude ;  
 Ane hundretht Pechtis fechtand on that plane,  
 Into that feild that samin da wes slane ;  
 And all the laif, suppois tha lykit ill, 16,985  
 Put thame ilkone into the Scottis will.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *it is wes.*| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *than.*

OFF THE GREIT SLAUCHTER WAS MAID LANG EFTER  
 BETUIX THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS OR THA  
 NICHT BE MISIT.

Off this slauchter the rumor and the reird  
 Rycht sone it ran throw all and sindrie eird  
 Of Scotland, Pechtland, planelie in all partis,  
 With sic rancour at the ruittis of thair hartis, 16,990  
 That enirilk ane decreittit for till de  
 On euerie syde, or to revengit be.  
 Syne suddantlie ilkane assaillit vther,  
 With fyre and blude and battell oft togidder,  
 Quhair mekle blude wes sched on euerie syde, 16,995  
 And mony one buir woundis that wer wyde.  
 The Scottis than, that nich[t] not weill sustene  
 So greit injure dalie befor thair ene,  
 Vpone ane da ane rycht greit multitude,  
 Within the Pechtis boundis raisand fyre and 17,000  
 blude,  
 Tha enterit sone quhair tha did mekle skayth  
 With greit slauchter than of heirschip bayth.  
 The Pechtis than vpoun the tother syid,  
 Bundin in barrot mycht no langar byde.  
 To hors and harnes syne tha drew in haist 17,005  
 In pans and pissen lokkit and weill laist,  
 In helme and habrikis, and all vther geir,  
 And waponis als that neidfull war in weir.  
 Syne met the Scottis on ane revar syde,  
 With baner bricht and pynsall of greit pryde; 17,010  
 In brasar, birny, and in basnat bricht,  
 Syne faucht on fit quhill it wes neir the nycht;  
 On euerie syde wes sched full mekle blude.  
 The Pechtis than war of sic multitude,  
 That force it wes the Scottis for till fle 17,015  
 Out of the feild quhair thre thousand did de,  
 Of Scottis men that worthie [wer] and wicht.  
 Tua thousand Pechtis that war men of mycht,

Into the feild war slane that samin da,  
 Without fabill, as my author did sa. 17,020  
 Fra that da furth dalie with greit injure,  
 Neur ane vther in that tyme forbuir,  
 With thift and reif and all wrangus oppressicun,  
 In fyre and blude without ony discretioun,  
 Quhill waistit wes the bordour on ilk syid, 17,025  
 Wes none so bald in that boundis durst byde.  
 And thus tha wrocht richt lang and mony da, Lib. 6, f. 84b.  
 Quhill efterwart as my author did sa. Col. 1.

HOW THELARGUS, THE KING OF PECHTIS, SEND TO  
 CARTHLYNTUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, SCHAW-  
 AND HIM WYTLES, AND DESYRAND PEAX.

This Thelargus that wes of Pechtis king,  
 That innocent wes than of all sic thing, 17,030  
 Eildit he wes and of his curage blunt  
 To ryde or gang befor as he wes wont,  
 And wald full fane haif meisit all that thing,  
 Ane messinger send to the Scottis king,  
 Beseikand him sic wrangis to disuse, 17,035  
 And in that mater him for till excuiss ;  
 For all wes wrocht, he said, aganis his will,  
 And his consent wes neur ȝit thairtill,  
 In tyme to cum nor neur ȝit salbe,  
 For all wes done but his autoritie. 17,040  
 Beseikand him to gar sic weiris ceis,  
 And mak the pepill for to leve in peice,  
 And vnitie siclike to keip in one,  
 As thai haif done richt mony da bygone,  
 Agane the Romanis to defend thair richt, 17,045  
 Quhilk had sic strenth, sic power and sic nicht,  
 And dalie als wes ay thair commoun fa ;  
 For weill he wist rycht sone gif he did nocht sua,  
 And baith thair<sup>1</sup> power wald be put to nocht,  
 Without tha weiris till ane end war brocht. 17,050

<sup>1</sup> In MS. ȝour.

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS GRANTIT TO THE  
PECHTIS PEAX FOR THRE MONETH TO COM-  
MOUN FOR CONCORD.

This Carthlyntus, that tender was of age,  
Manlie and wicht and full of hie curage,  
Commouit wes, and nicht nocht weill sustene,  
This messenger of peice quhen he hard mene.  
Zit neuritheles, efter he held him still, 17,055  
Quhen that he knew quhat wes Thelargus will,  
Throw counsall than of thame he louit best,  
To him agane sic ansuer he hes drest.  
“Traist weill,” he said, “richt soir forthinkis me  
“This suddane weir, with sic crudelitie, 17,060  
“Withoutin caus hapnit betuix us heir,  
“Keipand sic kyndnes lang and mony da zeir;  
“And for to sa that I ma now mak peice,  
“And caus this weir at my command to ceis,  
“That ma I nocht, thairof I zow ardwert, 17,065  
“The rancour is so ruttit at thair hart,  
“And greit slauchter so retenit in thair mynd.  
“Zit neuritheles I grant zow in this kynd,  
“Peax for thre moneth for to lest so lang,  
“That euirilk pairt may saiffie cum and gang 17,070  
“Of wysest men that best can vndertak  
“In sic mater gude menis for to mak;  
“Perauenture or all that tyme wer gane,  
“That baith thair willis wald accord in ane.”

HOW THE HERALD COME HAME FRA THE KING  
OF SCOTTIS, AND SCHEW HIS ANSUEIR TILL  
THELARGUS, KING OF PECHTIS.

With that ansuer he take his leif anone, 17,075  
Syne to his king than hamewart is he gone,  
Col. 2. And schew till him as I haif said ilk deill.  
Of that ansuer Thelargus lykit weill,

And his lordis that tyme baith all and sum,  
 Traistand thair wes sum better for to cum. 17,080  
 Betuix thame tua than trewis was proclamit  
 For thre moneth, as heir befor is namit.  
 Than mony lord of wisdome and prudence,  
 On euerie syde hes done greit diligence,  
 With greit laubour oft syis betuix thame wend, 17,085  
 To bring that purpos to ane finall end,  
 That plesand war to baith the pairteis than.  
 ¶ It neurtheles thair wes mony man  
 Rycht euill asposit vpoun euerie pairt,  
 The rancour wes so ruttit in thair hairt, 17,090  
 And in thair mynd so recent and so grene,  
 That be no way thai wald fra weir abstene.  
 With stouth and reif richt oft syis on the nycht,  
 Of euerie syde, and also on da licht,  
 For no edict as micht be put thame till, 17,095  
 Wald nocht abstene bot ay wrocht on thair will ;  
 Quhilk causit mony for to suffer deid,  
 ¶ It neurtheles it micht mak no remeid,  
 Quhill efterwart, as ze sall heir me tell,  
 Of aventure that sic ane cace befell. 17,100

HOW CARENTIUS, THE BRUTHER OF FYNDOCUS  
 KING WAS OF SCOTTIS, THAT WAS FLEMIT OF  
 BEFOR FOR THE SLAUCHTER OF HIS BRUTHER  
 FYNDOCUS, COME AGANE IN BRITANE WITH  
 ANE GREIT ARMIE.

Ane man thair wes than hecht Carentius,  
 That bruther wes to gude Fyndocus,  
 That father was to this Carthlyntus king ;  
 Schort quhile befor I schew zow all sic thing  
 How he wes baneist throw Fyndocus deid, 17,105  
 Amang the Britis passit for remeid,  
 Syne with the Romanis efter passit he  
 In Gallia, and als in Italie.

- So mekill honour in thai weiris wan,  
 Into that tyme exceidit euerilk man ; 17,110  
 Quhairfoir with Cesar he wes haldin so,  
 In that same tyme he maid him for till go  
 With ane greit navin for to keip the se,  
 Nane sould rebell aganis his majestie.  
 Endlang the coist of Armoric he la 17,115  
 With his navin, as my author did sa,  
 And all the riches he wan in that weir :  
 Held to him self, baith gold and vther geir :  
 To Rome thairof that tyme he send richt nocht.  
 Maximian, herand that he sa wrocht, 17,120  
 Quhilk Gallia than had in governyng,  
 Richt greit dispyte he had at that ilk thing.  
 Invyit als Carentius to the deid,  
 Lib. 6, f. 85. As mortall fo haiffand at him sic feid,  
 Col. 1. Rewardis gaiff richt mony for to pleis, 17,125  
 Quhilk tuke on hand Carentius for to betreis,  
 Richt quyetlie to put him to the deid.  
 Carentius persaut richt weill his feid,  
 As secreitlie his freindis to him schew.  
 His greit falsett quhen that Carentius knew, 17,130  
 His wickitnes and malice to declyne,  
 And of him self for to be surar syne,  
 Out of that place he tuke purpois to fle  
 With all his schippis to the Ireland se.  
 Syne at the west part of Britania, 17,135  
 Thair tuke land into West Maria,  
 Quhilk at this tyme, giff I richt vnderstand,  
 With Inglismen is callit Westmureland.

HOW THE BRITIS RESSAUT CARENTIUS WITH  
 BLYTHINES QUHEN THAI KNEW QUHAT HE WAS  
 TO CARTHLYNTUS.

- The<sup>1</sup> cuntre men, fra tyme tha vnderstude  
 He wes ane nobill of the Scottis blude, 17,140

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *The tuo.*

Tha war content all of his cuming thair,  
 Ressaut him with blythnes les and mair ;  
 Traistand be him thai sould deliuerit be  
 Out of bondage agane to libertie.  
 Baith tour and toun he tuke at his awin hand, 17,145  
 The Romanis all befoir him that he fand,  
 He maid thame all to fle on force that tyde,  
 In tha boundis that durst na langar byde.  
 This beand done, as I haif maid heir kend,  
 His oratouris on gudlie wayes he send 17,150  
 To Carthlyntus, that wes his nevoy neir,  
 His bruther sone and his awin cousing deir,  
 King of Scottis, as that I schew befoir,  
 With his letteris directit les and moir,  
 And hail credence in all thing for to trow, 17,155  
 Quhill schew to him as I sall schaw to zow.  
 " With laud and gloir, and with all reuerence,  
 " Ouir all mortall to thi magnificence,  
 " Carentius, with all humilitie,  
 " Thy deir cousing rycht gudlie gretis the. 17,160  
 " Into the first, doand the wnderstand,  
 " That saikleslie he flemit wes of Scotland,  
 " For the slauchter of thi father deir,  
 " His awin bruther and of his blude sa deir.  
 " Saikles he is, as thow ma weill wit quhy 17,165  
 " Sic thing wes said of him for greit invy.  
 " At thi plesour he offeris him to preve  
 " Quhen lykis the to gif him lasar and leue ;  
 " And forder moir to schaw the of his wo  
 " Out of Scotland quhen he wes maid till go, 17,170  
 " So innocent withoutin caus or cryme,  
 " Into Britane remanit ane lang tyme,  
 " Vnknawin thair for kingis sone or knycht,  
 " Haldin alway bot for ane sempill wycht ;  
 " And so remanit till ane weill lang space 17,175  
 " Quhill efterwart it hapnit so on caice,

- “ He take waigis and with the Romanis went  
 “ On till the weiris into the Orient.  
 “ Carus that tyme the quhilk wes emprioure,  
 “ Of fredom, fame, and als of greit honour, 17,180  
 “ Rycht langsum war to me now to reherrs  
 “ So greit battell aganis the kingis of Perss,  
 “ Quhair thair was slane sua mony nobill man,  
 “ So mekill honour that the Romanis wan.  
 “ Carentius, thi tender freind and deir, 17,185  
 “ Quhome of befoir I haif rehersit heir,  
 “ In tha weiris moir honour that he wan,  
 “ In his dais na euir did levand man.  
 “ Throw wisdome, maneheid and humanitie,  
 “ All other than richt far exceidit he. 17,190  
 “ Throw sic wirschip in thai weiris he wan,  
 “ Greit honour gat of euerilk nobill man ;  
 “ And with his fais gritlie ay wes dred,  
 “ Ane hundretht knichtis fra that furth he led ;  
 “ Syne into Rome, for his nobilitie, 17,195  
 “ Wes pretor maid, with hail auctoritie  
 “ Of all the Romanis that tyme les and moir,  
 “ So grew he ay to honour and to gloir.  
 “ Syne efterwart the greit Dioclesiane  
 “ The emprioure, with mony nobill man, 17,200  
 “ And mony schip, he send him to the se,  
 “ Of all that floit greit admirall to be.  
 “ Lang by the cost of Armoric he la,  
 “ Quhilk callit is now Britane at this da,  
 “ For to defend thair baith the se and land ; 17,205  
 “ So greit honour that tyme I vnderstand,  
 “ And greit riches als in tha weiris wan.  
 “ In Gallia that tyme Maximian,  
 “ Quhilk legat wes, had him at greit invye,  
 “ And vmbeset him oft with mony spy, 17,210  
 “ With greit tressoun in mony sindrie steid,  
 “ Rycht quyetlie to put him to the deid.



- “ And quhen he saw that he myzt not prevall,  
 “ Of his purpos bot dalie maid to fail, .  
 “ Passit ane way the quhilk he thocht moir 17,215  
   abill,  
 “ To Cesar send richt mony feinzeit fabill,  
 “ Waill secretlie at mony sindrie tyme,  
 ‘ Accusand him of greit tressoun and cryme,  
 “ That he had wrocht than baith be land and se,  
 “ Agane the Romanis and his majestie ; 17,220  
 “ Quhilk causit Cesar siclyik to persew  
 “ Carentius be tressoun of the new.  
 “ Syne secretlie, syne all this thing wes schawin  
 “ To Carentius be friendis of his awin,  
 “ Than till vmschew thair malice and invy, 17,225  
 “ And greit danger that he saw thair ly,  
 “ His greit navin vpoun the se that la  
 “ Remouit hes than fra Armorica,  
 “ With all the riches in that weir he wan,  
 “ Arryuit syne at the west coist of Britane. 17,230  
 “ Syne efter that he enterit on ane da  
 “ With all his armie in West Maria,  
 “ And left his schippis furneist on the se,  
 “ With men and victuall and artalzerie.  
 “ Quhair that thai ly richt saiflie be ane sand, 17,235 Lib.6.f.85b.  
   Col. 1.  
 “ Him self also maid lord of all that land,  
 “ For all the strenthtis, castell, toun and tour,  
 “ In his awin hand he weildis at this hour,  
 “ And all the lordis duelland in that land,  
 “ And all the laif ar hail at his command. 17,240  
 “ The Romanis als that he fand thair befoir,  
 “ Dstroyit hes ilk ane baith les and moir,  
 “ And mair attouir, with trew men he hard tell,  
 “ That all Britane agane thame wald rebell ;  
 “ Quhairfoir he thocht it wes gude tyme anone, 17,245  
 “ Thame to exyle all out of Albione.  
 “ Rycht so,” he said, “ als far as he culd se,  
 “ That out of Rome thai sould get na supple,

- “ Amang thame self sic weir wes and discord.  
 “ Dioclesiane, thair emprioure and lord, 17,250  
 “ Wes disobeyit in the Orient  
 “ Be Narsaus, quhilk wes ane prince potent;  
 “ Achillaus into Egipt als,  
 “ Quingentius siclike in Affrica.  
 “ And gif sua wes, as he trowit sould be, 17,255  
 “ Throw Scot and Pecht and thair auctoritie,  
 “ Fra Albione the Romanes to expell,  
 “ Greit honour war lang efter for to tell;  
 “ Sic policie war of greit pulchritude,  
 “ Him to supple that war of thair awin blude, 17,260  
 “ Into Britane to be maid lord and king,  
 “ In greit plesour fra that tyme furtht to ring.  
 “ The Britis als of tribute be<sup>1</sup> maid fre,  
 “ For euir moir to bruke thair libertie;  
 “ Sayand also the suddane feid wes fawin, 17,265  
 “ With greit slauchter, and mekle blude wes  
     drawin,  
 “ With Scot and Pecht but mercie da and nycht,  
 “ He sould reforme als far as that he micht.  
 “ But ony stop,” he said, “ he sould stand ford,  
 “ Within schort quhile to bring thame in con- 17,270  
     cord;  
 “ And als thairwith to clenge him in that tyme  
 “ Of the slauchter and of all the cryme  
 “ Off king Fyndok quhilk wes his bruther deir,  
 “ Befoir thame all as ze sall rycht sone heir.”

HOW CARTHLYNTUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, MAID  
 AN ANSUER TO CARENTIUS HERALD.

- Carthlyntus than into ane studie stude; 17,275  
 Quhen that wes said spak nother ill no gude,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *he*.

Bot lyke ane dreme he leit all by him pas.  
 Syne efterwart remordit how it was  
 Of the honour that this Carentius wan,  
 Sic riches had and mony nobill man, 17,280  
 And syne also he wes his cousing deir,  
 To him he said as efter followis heir.  
 " Deir freind, forsuith I am hartlie content,  
 " As previs weill now be 3our argument,  
 " That my cousing is in prosperitie, 17,285  
 " Thankit be greit God in his Majestie,  
 " And dame Fortoun of fatis well and flour,  
 " That hes him send sic riches and honour,  
 " Fra his freindis far in ane vncouth land !  
 " Traist weill," he said, " quhateuer he tak in hand, 17,290 Col. 2.  
 " I salbe reddie for to cum him till,  
 " In his supple at all tyme with gude will,  
 " And all malice, gif ony wes befoir,  
 " For to remit and rancor les and moir,  
 " And tak his pairt baith into rycht and wrang." 17,295  
 With this ansuer the herald hync did gang

HOW CARENTIUS HERALD, DELIUERIT BE THE  
 KING OFF SCOTTIS, PASSIT TO THE KING OF  
 PECHTIS AND SCHEW HIM HIS CREDENS.

To king of Pechtis quhair that he him fand,  
 With all his lordis reddie at his hand,  
 That war all tyme to him secreteit and trew,  
 And word by word the same to him he schew, 17,300  
 As 3e hard sa, quhair of tha war full fane,  
 And sielyik ansuer gaif to him agane,  
 Evin word by word according in all thing,  
 As that he gat fra Carthlyntus the king ;  
 Deliuerit him with humill wordis sweit, 17,305  
 And set ane da quhair tha all thre suld meit.

Quhen so deliuerit wes this messinger,  
 He passit hame and syne, as ze nicht heir,  
 Word by word he schew thair at greit lenth.  
 Carentius than stuffit cuerie strenth, 17,310  
 Quhair he remanit in Westmawria,  
 Syne with his armie throw Candalia,  
 Richt on to Ask that flude he maid him boun,  
 Vpoun ane plane thair lugit and la doun.

HOW CARTHLYNTUS, THELARGUS, AND CARENTIUS  
 MET ALL THRE TOGIDDER, AND HOW CARENTIUS  
 CLENGIT HIM OF HIS BRUTHERIS DEITH, CARTH-  
 LYNTUS FATHER.

The king of Scottis, as my author did sa, 17,315  
 That samin tyme come thair to keip his da.  
 Thelargus als of Pechtis that wes king,  
 Come thair siclyke with all his gay gathering.  
 Carentius, quhen he come in the sycht  
 Of Carthlyntus that wes baith wyiss and wycht, 17,320  
 His bruther sone, as my author did tell,  
 On baith his kneis richt suddanelie doun fell  
 Befoir his face, syne with ane voce so cleir,  
 " O thow," he said, " my awin nevoy so deir,  
 " I the beseik all rancour and invy 17,325  
 " Now in thi mynd at this tyme lat pas by.  
 " Thow hes no caus at me to haif sic feid,  
 " Saikles I am now of thi faderis deid ;  
 " Traist weill," he said, " richt loud tha leid on me,  
 " And I sall preve my self, and neid so be, 17,330  
 " With my tua handis heir this samin da,  
 " On ony he that the contrair will sa.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " excellent king and prince,  
 " I the beseik of thy magnificence,  
 " Lat nocht be said of me sic lak and schame, 17,335  
 " That conquest hes sa greit honour and fame

" In far cuntrie quhair that I wes vnkawin ;  
 " And gif I sould at hame heir with my awin  
 " Rebuttit be with sa greit lak and schame,  
 " To the and thyne for it wer ay defame, 17,340  
 " And all the warld thair of wald sa no gude,  
 " Sen thow and I so tender is of blude."  
 With sobbing soir the salt teiris betuene  
 Down our his beird brist out of bayth his ene.

Lib 6, f. 86.  
 Col. 1.

HOW CARTHLYNTUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS, TUKE  
 HIS EME CARENTIUS IN HIS ARMIS.

Than Carthlyntus, quhair that he stude him by, 17,345  
 Vp in his armis hint him haistely,  
 And said to him, " O thow my cousing deir,  
 " I the beseik be blyth and mak gude cheir ;  
 " Of the this tyme my hart hes no greit reuth ;  
 " Traist nocht," he said, " that I gif ony treuth 17,350  
 " To na sic thing befoir was said of the ;  
 " Thairfoir be blyth and traist that it so be.  
 " Pas to thi purpos thow hes tane on hand,  
 " And I salbe all tyme at thi command."  
 This beand done, as I haif schawin heir, 17,355  
 Carentius was blyth and maid gude cheir,  
 Fra Carthlyntus hes manifest his mynd  
 To him that tyme, so eurtas wes and kynd ;  
 To king of Pechtis passit sone in hy,  
 And his lordis quhair tha war neir hand by ; 17,360

HOW CARENTIUS PASSIT TO THELARGUS, THE KING  
 OF PECHTIS, THANKAND HIM OF HIS CUMING  
 THAIR.

And hailsit him than of ane gude maneir,  
 And his lordis siclike ilkone in feir ;

Oft thankand him richt hartlie with gude will,  
 At his requeist so glaidlie come him till,  
 Of sindrie thingis speikand to and fro, 17,365  
 Part for to cum and pairt that wes ago ;  
 Quhilis of pece, and other quhilis of weir,  
 In sic stordis thai war nocht for to leir.  
 Carentius greit travell on him tuke,  
 In that mater ane weill lang quhile he woik ; 17,370  
 Than da nor nycht he schupe nocht for to ceis  
 Betuix thai princis quhill he had maid peice ;  
 For na laubour that tyme mycht mak him liddir,  
 Thir kingis tuo quhill he gart speik togidder,  
 And euirilk one tak other be the hand, 17,375  
 Sielyke the laif about thame that did stand.  
 In audience than of thame all ilkman,  
 Of this same wayes he has said to thame than.

HOW CARENTIUS MAID HIS ORESOUN TO THIR T O  
 KINGIS TO CAUS THAME TO VNITIE AND CON-  
 CORD.

Col. 2. “ O potent princes, your politie perfyte,  
 “ Your greit freindschip and fauour infinyte, 17,380  
 “ Witht peice in plesour and prosperitie,  
 “ With treuth and traist, and greit tranquillitie,  
 “ Is turnit now to dalie sturt and stryffe,  
 “ Quhairthrow richt mony loissit hes the lyffe  
 “ Of nobill men, and mony brocht in cummer, 17,385  
 “ Of commoun pepill slane ar out of number,  
 “ And mony saikles zit sall suffer deid,  
 “ Without richt sone ze se for sum remeid.  
 “ In all this warld the thing most dangerous  
 “ To hait, detaist, and hald rich[t] odeous 17,390  
 “ Amang friendis, and greitlie till effeir,  
 “ Is inwart stryffe, battell and dalie weir.

- “ In peice and rest, politie and plesour,  
 “ Ane small thing growis to ane greit valour :  
 “ Rycht so in weir quhair mekle wrang is      17,395  
     wrocht,  
 “ Riches and welth decressis all to nocht.  
 “ This same exempill heir by zow and mene,  
 “ So lang befoir in peice and rest hes bene,  
 “ And fra zour fais maid zour selfis ay frie,  
 “ With land and law and with all libertie.      17,400  
 “ Sic freindschip than was betuene zow bayth,  
 “ That euerie Scot repute ane Pechtis skaith  
 “ Als havelie as it had bene his awin,  
 “ And wes als layth he sould haif bene ouirthrawn  
 “ With ony berne, as he had bene his bruther ; 17,405  
 “ Siclyke agane the tane wes to the tother.  
 “ Witnes thair of gude Galdus I ta.  
 “ Quhen Julius, callit Agricola,  
 “ The Romane legat, conqueist Albione  
 “ Without reskew to greit Mont Grampione,      17,410  
 “ God wait or nocht gif that he sufferit pane,  
 “ For to reskew baith zouris and his agane.  
 “ Quhen all the princis into Albione  
 “ To Julius war maid subject ilkone,  
 “ Or fra his face war maid rycht far to fle,      17,415  
 “ Wes nane that durst than mak debait bot he.  
 “ Thair wes na travell that mycht gar him tyre  
 “ To walk in montanes, mos, muris and myre ;  
 “ Hungar and cald he thocht to him na pane,  
 “ Quhill he reskewit had alhaill agane.      17,420  
 “ In plane battell the Romanis thryss he wan,  
 “ Quhair that he loissit mony nobill man,  
 “ The quhilk to him war all tyme traist and trew,  
 “ And twyss als mony of the Romanis slew.  
 “ The laif he maid within ane strenth to draw, 17,425  
 “ Syne efterwart doun at his feit full law,  
 “ Vpoun their kneis sone and suddanelie,  
 “ With peteous voice on him mercie to cry ;

- “ Syne on ane buik richt planelie gart thame sweir,  
 “ In tyme to cum oure boundis to forbeir, 17,450  
 “ And 3ouris als, and we war all maid fre  
 “ Be him to bruik baith land and libertie.  
 “ And oft sensyne, in mony stalwart stour,  
 “ Ilkone for vther hes delt dyntis dour,  
 “ And baldlie biddin quhair tha bled thair blude, 17,435  
 “ Ilkane to vther in grit steid ay stude ;  
 “ Or ony Scot wald fra ane Pecht disseuer,  
 “ Or he fra him, that tyme thai had far<sup>1</sup> lever  
 “ For ony pane, or zit penuritie,  
 Lib.6,f.80b. “ Fechtand in feild ilkane for other de. 17,440  
 Col. 1. “ That wes the causs that gart thame oft prevaill,  
 “ And mak thair fais in mony feild to faill.  
 “ Had thai bene than, as ze are now, deuydit,  
 “ Rycht weill I wait as the Romanes wes gydit,  
 “ Baith Scot and Pecht or now had bene maid all 17,445  
 “ Wnto the Romanes baith subject and thrall ;  
 “ And zit salbe, thairof I dout richt nocht,  
 “ The wyslear that this mater be wrocht.  
 “ For and ze stand ocht lang at this discord,  
 “ 3our poweris baith richt sone, that I stand 17,450  
 ford,  
 “ Within schort quhile on force be maid to fail,  
 “ And all 3our valour brocht to lytill vaill.  
 “ Then sall the Romanis with rycht lytill stryfe,  
 “ At thair plesour subdew baith man and wyffe ;  
 “ And gar 3ow lois baith land and libertie, 17,455  
 “ And mak 3ow bundis now quhair ze ar fre.  
 “ As I haif said, ze ma gif traist thairtill,  
 “ In to thair<sup>2</sup> myndis remanes zit full still  
 “ The greit slauchter wes maid of thame beforne,  
 “ Be oure fatheris richt lang or we wer borne. 17,460  
 “ Thinkand to be revengit of that cryme,  
 “ So will tha be, ma tha se place and tyme.

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *for*.| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *3our*.



“ Qulhairfoir,” he said “ all rancour and invye,  
 “ My counsall is, at this tyme lat pas by,  
 “ And to convene into sic vnitie, 17,465  
 “ As of befoir, with perfyte cheritie,  
 “ And all injure and rancour to remit;  
 Lat nocht 3our will no moir exceid 3our wit.”

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS AND THE KING OFF  
 PECHTIS WAR AGGREIT AND<sup>1</sup> ACCORDIT BE  
 THIS ILK CARENTIUS.

Quhen he had said as I haif said 3ow now,  
 Ilk lord his langage greitlie did allow; 17,470  
 Baith Scot and Pecht with hail consent that tyde  
 Bundin thai war at his counsall to byde,  
 Quhen that thai hard so suir mater he<sup>2</sup> schew,  
 Traistand richt weill all that he said wes trew.  
 With his counsall than haif thai chosin sone 17,475  
 On quhome this mater alhail salbe done,  
 Of euerie syid four of the wysast men,  
 That knowledge had and in nothing to ken,  
 That thair decretit how euir it wer to stand,  
 Ilk king and lord war oblist with thair hand 17,480  
 Nocht to revoik, bot hald thame weill content:  
 The pepill all thairto gaif thair consent.  
 Carentius hes done greit diligence  
 With thir lordis that war of sic prudence,  
 In quyet counsall secretlie alone, 17,485  
 In priuat place quhair thir lordis ar gone,  
 With mony ressonne oftymes to and fro,  
 And argument for euirilk syde also;  
 With greit knowledge full of maturitie.  
 Thir aucht lordis of greit auctoritie, 17,490

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *and and.*

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *hes.*

Syne finallie concludit hes in one,  
 That all the skaith on euerie syid bygone,  
 As thift and reif, slaughter, blude and fyre,  
 Sould be forgiffin, and all rancour and ire,  
 With king and king, and als with lord and lord, 17,495  
 In vnitie siclyke and gude concord,  
 Lang of befoir as thai had wont to be.  
 Col. 2. Carentius thus hes maid thame to grie,  
 And eurilk king tak other be the hand,  
 Siclike ilk lord in ordour by did stand; 17,500  
 And so he causit all thair weir to ceis,  
 As of befoir makand als perfyte peice.  
 Quhen freindschip maid wes betuix king and king,  
 Rejosit wes thairof baith ald and zing;  
 With dansing, singing, and with sport and pla, 17,505  
 Fra end to end thai occupyit that da;  
 Quhen eurilk man most mirrie wes and glaid,  
 Carentius befoir thame all thus said;

HOW CARENTIUS SCHEW HIS DESYRE TO THIR TUA  
 KINGIS, QUHAIRTILL THAI GRANTIT BAITH  
 RICHT GLAIDLIE.

“ O potent princes, I traist it be weill knawin  
 “ To zow my mynd as of befoir wes schawin, 17,510  
 “ And now siclyke my purpois is and will,  
 “ To zour plesour at this tyme schaw zow till.  
 “ As of befoir, my asking is that ze  
 “ Wald me support with zour help and supple,  
 “ Fra Albione the Romanes to expell, 17,515  
 “ And in this land no langar lat thame dwell,  
 “ And me in Britane for to bruk the croun.  
 “ The quhilk wald be greit honour and renoun  
 “ To zow for cuir our till this warld wyde,  
 “ The riche Romanes of sic hienes and pryde, 17,520  
 “ Ouir all this warld sa mekle wrang hes wrocht,  
 “ Be zour power war to confusioun brocht;

" Richt so to 3ow war greit affinitie  
 " Of all Britane the prince quhen I sould be,  
 " With greit kyndnes of ilkman les and moir, 17,255  
 " In Albione with peice for cuir moir."  
 Quhen he had said that tyme that he wald sa,  
 The hail power than of tha princes tua  
 Tha left with him at his command to be,  
 And thair captanis haifand auctoritie, 17,530  
 To reull and gyde and be at thair command;  
 Syne passit hame baith in thair awin land,  
 Prayand to God, of his greit grace in neid,  
 Him to supple to his purpois and speid.

HOW THE ROMAN LEGAT, CALLED QUINTUS VASIA,<sup>1</sup>  
 THAT TYME IN BRITANE BROCHT ANE GREIT  
 ARMIE FRA LONDOUN TO RESIST THIS CAREN-  
 TIUS, QUHILK HAD WITH HIM BAITH SCOTTIS  
 AND PECHTIS.

Ane Romane legat thair wes in Britane, 17,535  
 Quhilk callit than wes Quintus Basian.  
 Quhen that he knew of that thing all the treuth  
 He sleipit nocht nor our slippin throw sleuth,  
 Bot suddantlie, with mony men of gude,  
 In curage cleir and rycht grit multitude, 17,540  
 With hors and harnes, and with scheild and speir,  
 With gun and ganze, and all vther geir,  
 Fra Lundoun toun he take the narrest wa,  
 Within schort quhile come to Westmawria.  
 In that same tyme thair come to him and 17,545  
 schew  
 Exploraturis, how laitlie of the new  
 Carentius, with mony cruell knight,  
 Of Scot and Pecht, that manlie war and wicht,  
 And of his awin he brocht with him fra hame,

Lib. 6, f. 87.  
 Col. 1.

<sup>1</sup> Sic in MS.

At Eborac had done him lak and schame : 17,550  
 Ressaunt had the citie at his will,  
 The citineris also baith gude and ill,  
 And all the pepill in the toun that wes,  
 But ony perrell frelie he lute pas,  
 But ony skayth that tyme without discord, 17,555  
 And tha to him obeyit as thair lord.  
 Bassianus syne on the vther morne,  
 His greit armie with blast of bugillis horne  
 Removit hes, the quhilk wes of so greit nummer,  
 Syne sped him sone hame our the water of 17,560  
 Hummer ;  
 And on ane plane neirby ane water syid,  
 Wes neir ane moss, tuke purpois thair to byde ;  
 And tuke him rest that nycht with all his rout,  
 With mos and watter wallit weill about.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE MANER AND THE ORDOURE  
 GANGAND BEFOIR THE GREIT BATELL BETUOX  
 CARENTIUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS FATHER  
 BRUTHER, AND THE ROMANE LEGAT IN BRI-  
 TANE.

Carentius into that samin quhile, 17,565  
 Neirby the space he la than of ten myle,  
 Vpoun the nycht than towart him he wend,  
 With all his oist as gude gydis him kend,  
 That he had wagit that tyme for sic thing.  
 Vpoun the morne syne as the lark did sing, 17,570  
 With gude ordour ane lytill forrow da,  
 At the entrie quhair this Bassianus la,  
 He enterit in and fand ane passage large,  
 In rayit feild with mony scheild and targe.  
 Than Bassian persauit that richt weill, 17,575  
 And armit him in clene curage of steill,  
 And put his men all in gude array,  
 Than with sad cheir sone to thame did say :

- " O bernis bald, zyoung, fragrant in zour flouris,  
 " Traist weill," he said, " the feild this da beis 17,580  
     ouris,  
 " For-quhy we fecht agane an infideill,  
 " Manesworne, forlorne, the quhilk ma neuer do  
     weill.  
 " Ane trumpour tratour to Cesar his lord,  
 " Ane scismatike and sawer of discord ;  
 " Ane rigorous rebell baith to God and man, 17,583  
 " Ane cruell cutthrot of ane cancart clan ;  
 " Forloppin lymmer of ane vncouth stuude,  
 " Mischeuous murtherar of his awin blude ;  
 " Ane fraudfull fule, full of iniquitie,  
 " Feinzeand him self ane kingis sone to be, 17,590  
 " Quhairthrow he ma to his purpos apply ;  
 " Thairof he leid, the quhilk rycht weill wait I.  
 " I ken he come of mony thair commoun theif,  
 " Him self all tyme ay reddie to mischeif,  
 " And to his clan he did sic lak and schame, 17,595  
 " Quhairfoir richt far tha flemit him fra hame ;  
 " Than to Cesar he socht attour the se,  
 " Syne with tressone come to auctoritie. Col. 2.  
 " Of his tressoun fra Cesar hes hard tell,  
 " Into that land he durst na langer duell. 17,600  
 " So for the scisma of that homiceid,  
 " Into na land with rest thai lut him byde.  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, " tak curage I requair,  
 " Dout nocht this da for all his cuming heir,  
 " Throw the vertew of oure goddis diuyne, 17,605  
 " He and all his, lang or the sone declayne,  
 " Salbe deliuerit richt frelie ws till,  
 " At oure plesour to weild at oure awin will."

HOW CARENTIUS MAID GUDE ORDOUR OF HIS  
MEN.

- Carentius, vpoun the tother syid,  
 Amang his princis that war of greit pryde, 17,610

That royall roy that wes of sic renoun,  
 He tuke na rest, bot rydand vp and doun,  
 Exhortand thame of gude confort to be,  
 And for na fray to feinzie nor to fle.  
 "Traist weill," he said, "this day or we disseuer, 17,615  
 "That Albione of Romane blude for euir,  
 "Fra this da furth sall fred be and maid fre,  
 "To leif in rest and greit tranquillitie,  
 "And perfite plesour baith with barne and wyfe;  
 "Traist weill also heir endit beis the stryfe 17,620  
 "Oure fatheris had richt mony da agone,  
 "With Romane blude sa lang in Albione."

#### HOW CARENTIUS BOWMEN DISTROYIT MONY ROMANE.

Be this was said, fra bowmen that war bald,  
 The fedderit flanis our the feild thik fald,  
 Lyke ony fyre out of the flint tha flaw, 17,625  
 Scharpar nor haill and thikkar nor the snaw.  
 Thair scharpe schottis maid mony syde full sair,  
 Quhilk mony berne out-throw the breist than bair,  
 Quhill mekill blude brist out vpoun the grene.  
 This Romane legat quhen that he hes sene 17,630  
 His folk so far than failzeit in the feild,  
 The greit battell than vnder speir and scheild,  
 In gude ordour, richt suddantlie and sone,  
 All with ane schout he causit thame to jone;  
 Syne in the feild thai enterit with ane cry. 17,635  
 The greit battell of Britis standand by,  
 Quhen that tha saw the Romanes tak the feild,  
 Traistand of thame to get supple and beild,  
 Tha fled abak in ordour and array,  
 And left the feild and wald nocht fecht that 17,640  
 day.  
 So greit malice at Romane blude tha hed,  
 That wes the caus fra thame that da tha fled.

Quhen that the Romanes saw thame tak the flycht,  
 Tha follouit mony als fast as tha micht,  
 And kest fra thame thair armour that wes cleir ; 17,645  
 The laif baid still, and that tha bocht full deir.  
 So pertinax thai war into that steid,  
 Rycht wilfullie thai faucht thair to the deid :  
 Syne mony ane that woundit war full sair,  
 Than take the flycht quhen thai mycht fecht na 17,650  
 mair.

Carentius men fast followit on the chace,  
 In mos and myre and mony sindrie place,  
 Richt mony thousand of the Romanis slew ;  
 Fra thair handis that da tha chaipit few. Lib.6,f.87b.  
Col. 1.  
 Bassianus wes slane into the feild, 17,655  
 And Hircius als deid la wnder scheild,  
 The procurator of Britane in tha dais ;  
 And mony thousand, as my author sais,  
 Into thair tyme that worthie war and wicht,  
 La deid that da for all thair strenth and 17,660  
 mycht.

HOW ALL THE BRITIS THAT FLED BEFOIR FRA THE  
 LEGAT COME TO CARENTIUS AND RESSAUIT HIM  
 AS THAIR LORD.

The greit battell of the Britis that fled,  
 Seing sa weill Carentius had sped,  
 The Romane legat in the feild als slane,  
 Than euerie freik thairof he wes full fane.  
 At the Romanis tha had so greit invye, 17,665  
 To Carentius thai come richt suddantly,  
 Subdewand thame to him into all thing,  
 Him till obey as souerane lord and king,  
 At all plesour his purpois to fulfill.  
 He thame ressauit than with hartlic will, 17,670  
 And friendfullie fair langage to thame schew ;  
 Syne plegis tuke that thai sould all be trew,

Of euerie lord, bald barroun and knycht,  
 Than euerie man said he had done bot rycht.  
 Quhen this wes done, syne in the samin tyde, 17,675  
 The haill spulze gart equallie diuyde  
 To Scot and Pecht and his awin men also.  
 To Lundoun toun syne tuke the way to go,  
 With mony lord and mony bald barroun,  
 Ressauit baith the castell and the toun; 18,680  
 In rob royall, with sceptour, sword and ring,  
 And diademe thair wes he crownit king.  
 Quhen this wes done as I haif said zow so,  
 Baith Scot and Pecht deliuerit hes till go  
 With greit riches hame in thair awin land. 17,685  
 Tua thousand that hardie wes of hand  
 Of ilk natioun, the quhilk war men of pryde,  
 With him that tyme thair still he hes gart byde.  
 To euerie king syne hes gart heraldis go,  
 With greit thanking, schawing to thame also 17,690  
 Of his weilfair and greit prosperitie,  
 That hapnit him throw thair help and supple.

HOW CARENTIUS, EFTER HE WAN THE FEILD, GAIFF  
 TO SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS ALL THE LAND  
 BETUIX HUMBER AND THE WALL.

And for that caus hes gevin to thame all,  
 Fra Humber flude to Adrianis Wall,  
 All thair landis baith of breid and lenth, 17,695  
 Evin as tha la with euerie toun and strenth,  
 In heretage to bruke for euir moir,  
 Without debait, bargane, boist or schoir.  
 And all the Britis duelt that land within,  
 Tha sould remoif and na langar thair wyn, 17,700  
 And Scot and Pecht to duell into thair steid.  
 Quhilk efterwart wes caus of mekle feid



Of all the Britis to Carentius ;  
 Ȝit neurtheles he wes so cheualrus,  
 Baith wicht and wyss, with sic wisdome in      17,705    Col. 2.  
   weir,  
 That all thair feid nicht do to him na deir.  
 Carentius, with greit wisdome and strenth,  
 He bruikit Britane sewin Ȝeir our at lenth,  
 And mony battell of the Romanis hed,  
 And victour als at all tyme and weill sped.      17,710

HOW ALLECTUS, THE ROMANE LEGATE, SEVIN  
 ȜEIR EFTER, SLEW CARENTIUS WITH TRESSOUN  
 FALS.

Syne efterwart it hapnit vpon caice,  
 Quhen passit wes of sevin winter the space,  
 Ane Romane legat callit Allectus,  
 With feinȜeit faour to Carentius,  
 And fair langage, with vennome at his hart,      17,715  
 Dissimuland as he wald tak his pairt,  
 And out of Rome sayand he wes flemit.  
 Carentius, quhilk of him no ill demit,  
 Traistand alway that he sould be till him trew,  
 Quhilk efterwart with greit tressoun him slew.      17,720  
 The sevint Ȝeir then of Carentius ring,  
 So endit he that wes of Britis king.  
 Syne this Allectus tuke on him the steir,  
 And rang in Britane crownit king thre Ȝeir ;  
 And all that tyme, as my author did tell,      17,725  
 Agaue the Romanes dalie did rebell,  
 And as ane tirrane brukit all that land.  
 Syne efterwart as Ȝe sall wnderstand,  
 Asclespiadok fra Rome that tyme wes send,  
 With ane legioum decreittit for to wend      17,730  
 Into Britane aganes this Allectus ;  
 And sone efter, my storie tellis thus,

This Allectus fechtand in feild wes slane,  
 And all Britane rediuidit syne agane  
 Vnto the Romanis frelie agane than, 17,735  
 Ten ȝeir efter that Carentius it wan.  
 Vnto my taill agane I will retour,  
 Heir will I talk of the emprioure,  
 And of caicis that in Britane befell,  
 Syne turne agane my taill than for to tell. 17,740

HOW DIOCLESIANE THE TIRrane ENDIT MISERABLE  
BILLIE.

Ane emprioure in Rome ringand wes than,  
 Quhilk to his name wes callit Dioclesian,  
 Ane tryit trucour, full of tirranie,  
 At Christis faith quhilk had greit invy. 17,745  
 Sevintene thousand in the Orient  
 Of martyris maid, and in the Occident  
 Twyss als mony in schort quhile maid he :  
 For Christis faith war causit all to de.  
 Na toung can tell, not ȝit na pen can write,  
 His tirranie compleitlie for to dyte. 17,750  
 That cokatrice, full of crudelitie,  
 To all this ward so odeous wes he,  
 As mortall fa haifand at him greit feid,  
 And as ane serpent haitit him to the deid ;  
 Quhairfoir he made ane curst and wickit end, 17,755  
 To all this ward as it wes rycht weill kend.  
 In sindrie seiknes sune efter he fell,  
 Forrow his deid, as my author did tell,  
 Throw quhois pane, in furiositie  
 He slew him self, and so than endit he. 17,760

HOW COELL, ANE GREIT NOBILL OF BRITANE, BE HIS COUNSALL CAUSIT THE BRITIS TO REBELL  
 AGANIS THE LEGAT.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell  
 Ane man of gude that callit wes Coell,  
 Into Britane of honour and renoun,  
 Of blude royall and narrest to the croun;  
 Throw his counsall, as my author did tell, 17,765  
 He causit hes all Britane to rebell  
 Agane the Romanis, to reskew their richt,  
 Greit diligence he hes done da any nycht.  
 Asclipiadok, that legat wes that tyme  
 Of the Romanes, quhen that he knew that cryme, 17,770  
 Without delay that tyme he tareit nocht,  
 With greit power this Coell he hes socht.  
 Coell siclike hes gatherit him agane;  
 With baith thair power syne met in a plane,  
 In coit armour and curell cleir of hew, 17,775  
 Quhair suddantlie Asclipiadok he slew,  
 And wan the feild, quhair mony Romane knycht  
 La deid that da in helme and birny brycht.  
 With haill consent of Britis ald and zing,  
 Crownit thai haif this Coell to be king. 17,780  
 Quhen he with peice ressaut had his croun,  
 Ouir all Britane he raid bayth vp and down,  
 With greit distructioun of the Romane blude,  
 And Britis als, the quhilk wer men of gude,  
 That fauorit thame sielyke into that tyme, 17,785  
 Quhair euir he mycht thame comprehend with cryme.

HOW CONSTANTIUS THE EMPRIOURE, IN GALLIA  
 HEIRAND HOW COELL HAD REBELLIT IN BRI-  
 TANE, COME HIM SELF WITH ANE ARMIE IN  
 BRITANE, AND WAN COELL IN FEILD.

Constantius, as that my author sais,  
 Tha[t] emprire of Rome wes in tha dais,

Gif it be suith that my author did sa,  
 That tyme remanit into Gallia, 17,790  
 Quhair suddantlie that come in till his cir,  
 Be flemit men, of Coell and his weir.  
 Than haistelie, or that this Coell knew,  
 With greit power he come him to persew  
 Into Britane, quhair he the feild hes tane, 17,795  
 With bernis bald and knichtis mony ane.  
 Coell siclike that tyme he tareit nocht,  
 Quhill all his power wes togidder brocht.  
 Syne on ane mure, neir by ane montane syde,  
 Thir princes met that mekill war of pryde. 17,800  
 Becaus thair power that tyme wes impar,  
 This Coell than wes sone put to the war ;  
 He tynt the feild, and syne wes maid to fle.  
 Syne efterwart, quhen he saw na supple,  
 Nor zit beleif to gif battell agane, 17,805  
 He tuke purpois no langar to remane  
 Into Britane, bot quyetlie to fle  
 Fra Albione richt far attour the se.

HOW CONSTANTIUS RESSAUIT COELL TO HIS GRACE.

Col. 2. Efter the battell, syne on the thrid da,  
 Constantius, as my author did sa, 17,810  
 Fra tyme he knew alhail the veritie  
 Of this Coell, and his genelogie,  
 And how that Fortoun put him to the war,  
 He had petie of him that tyme richt far.  
 Syne causit him to meit at tyme and place, 17,815  
 Quhair that he tuke him hail into his grace,  
 Restorand him agane onto his croun.  
 Syne Alena, that virgin of renoun,  
 His onlie child and eik his dochter deir,  
 In mariage he hes tane to his feir. 17,820  
 The Britis wer als blyth as tha mycht be,  
 And Romanes als of that affinitie,

In tyme to eum trowand to leve in peice,  
 Fra that tyme furth all weir and wrang suld ceis.  
 This Alena, of quhome befor I spak, 17,825  
 And that my author dois me mentioun mak,  
 Ane sone scho buir vnto this empriour syne,  
 The quhilk to name wes callit Constantyne.  
 Gif it be trew syne as my author sais,  
 This Constantyne in Sanct Siluisteris dais, 17,830  
 He wes the first sic gude werkis did wirk  
 To honour God, and to doit halie kirk.  
 In all his tyme the kirk of Crist wes fre.  
 Heir will I leif of him ane litill we,  
 And of sic talk I will hald me still, 17,835  
 And to his father turne agane I will.

HOW CONSTANTIUS PASSIT FRA BRITANE TO ROME,  
 AND SYNE WITHIN SCHORT QUHILE EFTER  
 COME IN BRITANE AGANE.

Constantius, of quhome befor I tald,  
 Into Britane no langar byde he wald.  
 With greit triumph, quhen he had tyme and tume,  
 Throw Gallia he passit hame to Rome, 17,840  
 Remanit thair at laser as him lest.  
 Quhen he had put all thingis to peice and rest,  
 And all his purposis had accomplischt plane,  
 Into Britane he come efter agane  
 For his plesour, he thocht the land sa gude, 17,845  
 To heir and se that tyme how all thing stude.  
 Coell the king with great triumph hym met,  
 Rycht reuerentlie doand to him his det.  
 Friendlie affectioun of dochter deir,  
 Fair Alena befor as ze mycht heir, 17,850  
 Quhilk wes the flour of all faminitie,  
 Hes causit thame so tender for to be.  
 Within schort quhile efter that he come thair,  
 The Brit lordis complenit hes full sair,

That Scot and Pecht, throw greit maistrie and 17,855  
 mycht,  
 Brukit the land quhome[to] tha had no rycht,  
 Incontrair thame and als the Romanes all,  
 Fra Humber flude liand to Adrianis wall.

Lib.6.f.88b.  
 Col. 1.

HOW CONSTANTIUS, AT THE REQUEIST OF THE  
 BRITIS, COME WITH ALL HIS POWER TO CAN-  
 DALIA TO RESKEW THE LANDIS THAT WAR  
 GIFFIN TO THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS BE CA-  
 RENTIUS OF BEFOIR.

Constantius thair plesour to fulfill,  
 At thair requeist to<sup>1</sup> satisfie thair will, 17,860  
 With all his power panelie on aue da,  
 He tuke the gait toward Candalia,  
 For to reskew tha landis les and moir,  
 Carentius had giffin thame befoir,  
 To Scot and Pecht, as ze haif hard me tell 17,865  
 Schort quhile befoir ze wait rycht weill 3our sell.  
 And quhen he come to Eborac that toum,  
 Quhair that he was ressaut with renoun,  
 That saunyn tyme aue come till him, and schew  
 How king of Scottis and Pechtis of the new, 17,870  
 With greit power into that same tyme la,  
 Of men of weir into Westmawria.  
 Rycht weill tha wist it wes nocht all for nocht,  
 So greit power so far fra hame tha brocht.  
 Sayand also, or thai gaif our thair richt, 17,875  
 Tha wald be keild rycht mony worthie knyght;  
 Also thai said that tyme baith les and moir,  
 He preuit thame laitlie in feild befoir.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *to to*.

HOW CONSTANTIUS, BE COUNSALL OF THE BRITIS,  
WALD NOCHT GIFF THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS  
FEILD.

Constantius this nobill emprioure,  
Suppois he was of all knyghtheid the floure, 17,880  
Quhen that he had hard that tyme how that tha  
spak,  
Bayth Brit and Romane als sic terrour tak  
Of Scot and Pecht, than he considerit how  
That he mycht best that perrell than vmschew.  
Full laith he wes, herand how that it standis, 17,885  
To put his honour in dame Fortonis handis,  
That wes all tyme vnstabill and vntrew.  
Ane vther purpos than he did persew,  
And thocht he sould thair power some mak les  
Ilk da be da the farrar to decres. 17,890  
With lang tarie trowand he sould thame tyre,  
That tha mycht nocht thair spreitis to respyre;  
Thair furneissing als he suld mak to fail;  
Syne, quhen thair victuall war consumit haille,  
No langar thair that tyme thai mycht remane, 17,895  
Na suddantlie zit sould convene agane.  
As he devysit, trowand it sould be done,  
His greit armie than hes he skaillit sone;  
Gaiff euerilk man leve for to pas hame,  
And that same tyme maid ane oppin proclame, 17,900  
All suld be reddie at set da and place,  
At his command quhen he wald call on caice.  
Than euerilk man zeid hame at his awin will,  
In Eborac him self remanit still.

HOW CONSTANTIUS SEND TO THE KING OF PECHTIS  
TO BREK HIM FRA THE KING OF SCOTTIS ;  
THE QUHILK HE WALD NOCHT DO.

- C.J. 2. Syne efter that, ane herald he hes send 17,905  
To king of Peeltis, with hartlie recommend,  
And greit reward of gold, riches and fie,  
Beseikand him of his humanitie,  
“ Sen he to him so curtas was and heind,  
“ That he agane wald be the Romanis freind, 17,910  
“ And leve the Scottis full of crudelitie,  
“ Of filth and falsset, without humanitie,  
“ Thy mortall fa sua lang wes of the ald;”  
And mony taillis that tyme he hes him tald  
With circumstance, that I will nocht reherss, 17,915  
For-quhy it is our lang to put in verss.  
Bot all for nocht that travell wes that tyme;  
For bost or sehoir, for kyndnes or for cryme,  
For gold or land, or zit riches to win,  
The Pechtis wald nocht fra the Scottis twyn. 17,920

HOW CONSTANTIUS DEPARTIT IN EBORAC THROW  
INFIRMITIE.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell,  
Constantius in sair seiknes befell,  
Without remeid the langar ay the moir.  
So at the last it handlit him so soir,  
On the sevint da without ony remeid, 17,925  
In Eborac he sufferit than the deid.  
Quhen he wes deid, syne as the maner wes,  
His bodie als tha haif gart burne in ass.  
Quhen it wes brint, the as tha gatherit syne,  
And in ane pig that was of gold so fyne, 17,930  
Tha had to Rome with greit honor and gloir,  
As thai war wont sielyke to do befor ;



And of his corce thai tuke of it sic cuir,  
 Solempnitlie put it in sepulture.  
 Als far as I can consider sic thing, 17,935  
 This Carthlyntus he wes ane nobill king,  
 And mony nobill had with him also,  
 At his command bayth for to ryde and go.  
 Plesand in peax, perfyte in policie,  
 Awfull in weir and full of cheualrie ; 17,940  
 As preuit weill be this Constantius,  
 The emprioure bald and belligerus,  
 That all this world had haill at his command,  
 Of Carthlyntus sic aw that tyme did stand,  
 Gif all be suith befor as I zow schew, 17,945  
 That he durst nocht his awin richtis persew  
 Of his landis lyand by Humber flude,  
 It semes weill to me he durst nocht dude.  
 With Scot and Pecht sic aventure to tak,  
 He knew thair wes no thing to win bot lak ; 17,950  
 And for that caus the battell he forsuik,  
 Agane his will tha landis lute thame bruke.

HOW CONSTANTIUS, ANE LITILL AFOIR HIS DEID,  
 FLEMIT THE KIRKMEN OUT OF BRITTANE INTO  
 SCOTLAND.

Constantius, ane quhile befor his deid,  
 The kirk of Christ richt lang he held at feid.  
 The kirkmen als, as my author did sa, 17,955 Lib. 6, f. 89.  
 He baneist all out of Britania. Col. 1.  
 Tha durst nocht duell, for him so soir tha dred,  
 Into that land, bot in Scotland thai fled  
 To Carthlyntus, desyrand at his grace,  
 He wald prouyde for thame sum honest place, 17,960  
 Quhair tha nicht leue but indigens or stres,  
 For to serue God and pra for his hienes.

HOW THE KING OF SCOTTIS RESSAUT THE KIRK-  
MEN WES FLEMIT OUT OF BRITANE, AND PUT  
THAME IN MONA YLE.

The king thairof richt blyth and glaid wes he,  
And thame ressaute with humanitie  
In Mona Yle, quhair Drewedes did dwell 17,965  
Schort quhile befor, as ze haif hard me tell,  
The gentill ryte thair vsit and thair law  
Wnto that tyme, as my author did schaw ;  
Quhilk ryte and law Carthlyntus did destroy,  
And brunt thair buikis that thai sould do na 17,970  
noy

To Cristin men, or zit to Christis kirk.  
Of stone and lyme ane fair tempill gart wirk ;  
Neirby that kirk syne biggit mony cell,  
That plesand war, quhair tha kirkmen sould dwell ;  
Syne ane of thame of maist auctoritie, 17,975  
Amphibalus to name callit wes he,  
He exceidit into sanctitude,  
Ane greit nobill and of the Britis blude,  
Wes consecrat be the auctoritie  
Of halie kirk ane bischop for to be. 17,980  
He wes the first bischop, I wnderstand,  
That had ane sett or kirk in[till] Scotland :  
Syne efter that, at plesour of his prince,  
That sett to name wes callit Sodorens.  
This tempill als, of quhome ze haif hard tell, 17,985  
He planeist hes with mony buke and bell,  
With chalice als of gold and siluer fyne,  
And vestiment to mak service devyne :  
Syne dottit it with greit possessioun,  
And greit fredome in all part vp and down. 17,990  
Amphibalus, of quhome befor I spak,  
Rycht greit travell dalie did on him tak,

And his brether in Scotland far and neir,  
 In Pechtland als that tyme tha war nocht sweir  
 The faith of Christ among the pepill to plant, 17,995  
 Quhilk of befoir lang tyme thai had greit want ;  
 The gentill ryte awa for to expell,  
 As sacrifice to mak to wod or well ;  
 The faith of Christ, as my author did sa,  
 In Scotland grew fra that furth da be da. 18,000  
 Carthlyntus syne, this nobill Cristin king,  
 In the fourt zeir and tuentie of his ring,  
 Quhilk in his tyme exceidit euerie wycht,  
 As dois the sone the sternis in the lycht,  
 He tuke his leif and to his graif is gone. 18,005  
 He wes the best king into Albione  
 Wes in his tyme, or zit richt lang befoir.  
 Of him this tyme heir will I say no moir.

HOW FYNORMACUS, THE PATRUELL OF CARTHLYN-  
 TUS, EFTER HIS DEID WAS CROWNIT ; QUHILK  
 WAS ANE NOBILL KING EFTERWART.

Syne Fyncormacus, efter he wes deid, Col. 2.  
 His patruell wes crownit in his steid. 18,010  
 Ane nobill prince he wes in all his dais,  
 Victorious als, as that my author sais ;  
 And in his tyme greit honour als he wan,  
 Louit he wes thairfoir with euirilk man.  
 In this same tyme now that ze heir me tell, 18,015  
 Into Britane sic auenture befell.  
 Ane Roman legat callit Herculus,  
 Wrangus he wes, wickit and rycht vicius,  
 Rycht greit oppressioun on the pepill wrocht,  
 The nobill blude distroyit all to nocht ; 18,020  
 His tirranie thair wes na toung culd tell,  
 Quhilk wes the caus the Britis did rebell.

HOW OCTAUEUS, ANE GREIT NOBILL OF BRITANE,  
GAIF BATTELL TO HERCULEUS AND SLEW HIM  
IN FEILD.

Ane nobill man callit Octaueus,  
Of Tegen lord, my author sais thus,  
On him he tuke the hail auctoritie, 18,025  
Syne to the feild with mony freik fuir he.  
Herculius, of this quhen he hard tell,  
Without delay he wald no langer dwell,  
With mony freik that forsie war in feild,  
In curage cleir with mony targe and scheid, 18,030  
Vpone ane mure Octaueus did him meit,  
Quhair that tha faucht rycht lang vpone thair feit,  
With egir will, thir worthie men and wycht,  
Quhill at the last the Romanis tuke the flycht.  
Herculius thair captane thair wes slane; 18,035  
The laif than fled, no langar wald remane.  
Octauius the feild quhen he had wyn,  
Ouir all Britane or he wald langar blyn,  
With mony rout rycht royallie he raid,  
And of the Romanes greit destructioun maid. 18,040  
Ouir all Britane in all place far and neir,  
Wes na Romane that tyme that durst appeir.  
Quhen that wes done to Loundoun maid hym boun,  
Ressaut baith the castell and the toun;  
Syne efter that, with sword, sceptour and ring, 18,045  
Octauius than haif thai crownit king.

HOW TRAHERUS, SEND IN BRITANE BE CONSTAN-  
TYNE THE EMPRIOURE, GAIFF BATTELL TO  
OCTAUEUS AND WAN HIM IN FEILD.

Off Rome that tyme the emprioure Constantyne,  
Qubilk wes ane man richt godlie and devyne,

In Britane send, my storie tellis thus,  
 Ane nobill man wes callit Traherus, 18,050  
 With mony ane that waponis weill culd weild,  
 Quhilk vincust hes Octaueus in the feild ;  
 That efter fled, he wist na vther wane,  
 Into Scotland or dreid he sould be tane. Lib.6,f.89b.  
 Traherus than, quhen he his passage knew 18,055 Col. 1.  
 Into Scotland, as sindrie to him schew,  
 To Fyncormak he hes send in that tyde,  
 With lowage langage full of pomp and pryde,  
 In haist ane herald, but ony recommend,  
 With schairp chairgis that he suld<sup>1</sup> to him send 18,060  
 Octavius bundin baith fute and hand ;  
 And wald he nocht, he did him wnderstand  
 He sould persew him baith with fyre and blude ;  
 “ Cheis him or nocht gif he plesis to dude.”

HOW FYNCORMACUS, KING OF SCOTTIS, GAIFF  
 ANSUER TO TRAHERUS HERALD, DENYAND  
 SCHORTLIE ALL HIS DESYRE.

Quhen this was [said] than Fyncormac the king 18,065  
 Sic ansuer maid richt sone wnto that thing ;  
 “ Forsuith,” he said, “ at ȝour desyre I know,  
 “ This tyme as far aganis the commoun law  
 “ Giff I with tressoun sould ane tratour be,  
 “ To fleme men seikand refuge at me, 18,070  
 “ Quhilk faillit neur to me ȝit in his tyme ;  
 “ I hald for me it war ane cruell cryme,  
 “ Knawand so weill how all the mater standis,  
 “ Ane saikles man put in his fais handis.  
 “ And he did so,” he said, “ that it wald be 18,075  
 “ Greit lak for euir vnto his majestie.  
 “ The caus also quhairfoir Octavius fled  
 “ To him that tyme, it wes becaus he dred

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *culd*

“ His deid richt soir that causit him to fle,  
 “ For to tak girth and nocht to seik supplie. 18,080  
 “ His will wes nocht, nor neuir suld with his hart,  
 “ Agane the Romanes for to tak his part ;  
 “ And for that caus he sall remane heir still,  
 “ Hald him content or nocht now gif he will.”

HOW TRAHERUS HERALD COME HAME AND SCHEW  
 SIC ANSUER FYNCORMACUS GAIF, QUHAIRAT  
 THE LEGAT WAS RICHT COMMOUT.

With this ansuer the herald hame he zeid, 18,085  
 And word by word, aboue as ze ma reid,  
 Than schew to him, at quhome he wox rycht wrayth,  
 And said and swoir with mony horribill aith,  
 With greit rancour at the rute than of his hart,  
 In spyte of him and all wald tak his part, 18,090  
 Richt mony duchtie on ane da sall de,  
 Of that injure bot he revengit be.  
 Ane greit armie syne furneist to the feild,  
 Of bernis bald, that waponis weill culd weild,  
 Withoutin tarie that tyme nycht or da, 18,095  
 Quhill that he come into Westmawria.

HOW FYNCORMACUS COME IN THE ROMANIS SYCHT  
 WITH THRETTIE THOUSAND SCOTTIS AND ALS  
 MONY PECHTIS, QUHILK SEND ANE HERALD TO  
 TRAHERUS TO WIT MAIR OF HIS WILL.

Col. 2. This Fyncormac, of Scottis that wes king,  
 Richt sone he wes aduerteist of that thing.  
 With threttie thousand into armour brycht  
 Of Scottis all, that worthie war and wycht ; 18,100  
 And threttie thousand of Pechtis also,  
 At his command reddie quhair he wald go ;

And of the Britis ten thousand siclyke  
 Of stalwart men that weill in feild durst stryke,  
 To wend with him quhat way that euir he will, 18,105  
 At all plesoure his purpois to fulfill ;  
 He maid na tarie that tyme da nor nycht,  
 Quhill that he come into the Romanes sycht.  
 The Romane legat that tyme quhair he stude,  
 No terrour tuke of all that multitude, 18,110  
 But bownit baldlie in battell to byde.  
 The king of Scottis vpoun the tother syde,  
 In haist ane herald send this legat till,  
 Or he wald fecht, to lat him heir his will ;  
 Quhilk schew till him, as I sall now rehers, 18,115  
 Ilk word by word following now in verss.

HOW THE HERALD SEND FRA FYNCORMACUS SCHEW  
 HIS CREDENS BEFOIR TRAHERUS, THE ROMAN  
 LEGAT.

“ Traherus, lord and legat in Britane,  
 “ The king of Scottis farleis in certane  
 “ Quhairfoir, but caus as he can vnderstand,  
 “ With sic power thow cumis in his land, 18,120  
 “ Quhilk faillit neuir nor zit maid falt to the ;  
 “ Quhairfoir he farleis quhat that the caus sould be,  
 “ Or quhy throw folie that tha dar presume  
 “ To auenture the greit honour of Rome  
 “ In sic perrell quhair that thair is no neid. 18,125  
 “ And thow do so in thi awin perrell beid ;  
 “ Into thi self gif thow hes sic beleiff,  
 “ Thinkand richt lang oure strenthis for to preue,  
 “ Traistand of ws to win honour and gloir,  
 “ Quhilk vincust zow sa oft syis of befoir. 18,130  
 “ And mair attouir he bad me sa the till,  
 “ That he and his is of the samin will

" That Galdus wes, quhilk wes bayth wucht and  
     wyiss,  
 " In plane battell quhen that he wan 3ow thryiss,  
 " And maid 3our fatheris at his feit to ly,      18,135  
 " Greittand full soir and askand him mercye ;  
 " And all the landis that thai had wyn befor,  
 " To Scot and Pecht he gart agane restoir,  
 " And fra that furth he maid thame to leif fre,  
 " Magir 3our will with land and libertie.      18,140  
 " And 3it he sais, as it is eith to ken,  
 " Preif quhen thow will, 3e sall find the same men  
 " That oft befor 3our power hes opprest,  
 " Giff lykis the nocht for to leif in rest."

HOW TRAHERUS GAIFF ANSUER TO THE HERALD  
 WAS SEND TO HIM FRA FYNORMACUS.

This Romane legat quhen that he did heir,      18,145  
 As he wes moneist with that messingeir,  
 Befor thame all wes present thair in plane,  
 Lib. 6, f. 90. To this herald so he hes said agane :  
 Col. 1 " Of my behalf," he said, " command thi king,  
 " That suddantlie, but ony tareing,      18,150  
 " Baith Scot and Pecht that duellis in oure land,  
 " Be north Humber without ony ganestand,  
 " He gar remoif richt sone out of that ground,  
 " Within foure dayes that nane of thame be found ;  
 " And all the gude vpoun the grund leif still,      18,155  
 " Quhen plesis me, syne after at my will,  
 " Baith corne, cattell, insicht, and vther geir,  
 " For to diuyde amang my men of weir ;  
 " And he himself and king of Pechtis alsua,  
 " Ane 3eirlie tribute to the Romanis pa,      18,160  
 " Siclyke as Britis of the auld extent,  
 " Or he sould leir him sic ane document,



" In tyme to cum it sould exempill be  
 " Till all sic vther barbour kingis as he,  
 " Agane the Romanes ony tyme rebell. 18,165  
 " As I haif said, se ze spair nocht to tell."

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE ORDOUR AND THE MANER OF  
 THE GREIT BATTELL BETUIX FYNORMACUS  
 AND TRAHERUS THE LEGAT.

Quhen this wes said befor the nobill king,  
 Lichtlie he leuch and maid na ansuering,  
 Bot put his men all that he had in cuir.  
 In gude array syne baldlie vp thai fuir 18,170  
 With baneris braid, and standertis in the air,  
 Palit with purpoir, plesand and preclair,  
 And stremaris waiffand with the wynd full wyde,  
 With glitterand gold depanetit our with pryde,  
 And basnatis bricht as ony bureall stone, 18,175  
 In curage cleir quhilk our the schawis schone.  
 The Romanes als vpoune the tother part,  
 With egir will and rancour at thair hart,  
 In birneis bricht all browdin our with gold,  
 Fra Phebus face thai flammit our the fold; 18,180  
 Thair browdin baneris of hevinlie hew  
 Agane the schyning of the sone thai schew.  
 Of thair attyre quhat sould I to zow tell?  
 On euerie [syde] thir freikis that war fell,  
 Tha tuke the feild with mekill strenth and force, 18,185  
 Quhill to the erth thai draif bayth men and hors.  
 Thair scheildis raif and speiris brak in sunder,  
 Breistis maid bla and bodeis that war wnder;  
 Richt mony steid la stickit in the feild,  
 And mony knicht out-throw the corss wes keild; 18,190  
 Mony on grouf la granand on the ground,  
 In thair bodeis buir mony werkand wound;  
 Wes nane sa stout into that stour that stude,  
 Bot all his bodie wes browdin our with blude.

Stone still thai faucht with egir will that tyde, 18,195  
 But victorie richt lang of any syde.  
 So at the last it hapnit vpoune cace,  
 Of commoun pepill standand in ane place,  
 Vpone ane hicht, ane richt greit multitude,  
 Convenit thair for to reskew thair gude, 18,200  
 Of Scot and Pecht, behind the Romanes bak,  
 Col. 2. To se quhat end that tyme the feild suld tak.

HOW THE ROMANIS FLED FOR FEIR OF THAT  
 SICHT.

The Romanes than quhen that thai saw that sycht,  
 Tha tareit nocht bot sone tha tuke the flycht,  
 Into that stryfe tha mycht na mair sustene ; 18,205  
 Trowand that tyme ane battell it had bene,  
 Behind thair bak the battell to renew,  
 Tha fled alss fast as ony foule that flew.  
 Traherus than, as my author did sa,  
 With few he fled out of the feild awa 18,210  
 To Eborac, ane quhile thair to remane,  
 Quhill all his men sould gaderit be agane  
 That levand war on lyfe that tyme vnkeild,  
 And chaipit had throw chance out of the feild.  
 That bargane wes rycht bludie to thame bayth, 18,215  
 Suppois the Romanes that tyme gat most skayth,  
 Of Scot and Pecht, and Britis als in plane,  
 Fyiftene thousand into the feild war slane ;  
 And of the Romanis, my author did sa,  
 Sixtene thousand deit thair that da. 18,220

HOW FYNCORMACUS, EFTER THE FEILD, GART  
 DEUYDE ALL THE SPULZE AMANG HIS MEN,  
 AND SYNE PASSIT TO OCTAVIUS TO EBORAC.

This Fyncormak, forder or he wald gang,  
 Diuydit hes richt equallie amang

Then all his men the spulze of that feild,  
 To euerie wicht that did ane wapon weild ;  
 Hurt men or horsis he send hame agane, 18,225  
 With all his power syne passit ouir the plane  
 To Eborac with him Octavius ;  
 Giff all be suith my author sais thus.  
 Traherus als, as my author did sa,  
 Fra Eborac into that samin da, 18,230  
 Onto Loundoun richt fast away he fled,  
 Of thair cuming so soir he wes adred.  
 Quhen that thai come to Eborac that toun,  
 Solempnitlie with greit processiou,

Thair war thai met richt far vpone the way, 18,235  
 With dansing, singing, and grit sport and play.  
 And so thai wer convoyit to the toun  
 With many lord that war of greit renoun.  
 Of Britane all the lordis far and neir,  
 Quhen this wes done as I haif said zow heir, 18,240  
 But only tarie to Octavius  
 Tha come allhail, my storie telleth thus ;  
 With the greit aith than of fidelitie,  
 Promittit hes ay trew to him to be.  
 To Fyncormac honour and reuerence 18,245  
 Tha schew that tyme, with all circumstance,  
 Oft thankand him of his greit fortitude  
 Had thame deliuerit out of seruitude. Lib.6,f.90b.  
 Octavius, with all thair hail consent Col. 1.  
 Was thair that tyme with ane will and intent, 18,250  
 Frelie gaif ouir but ony clame thai landis,  
 That Scot and Pecht that tyme had in thair  
 handis,  
 Perpetuallie to bruke for euirmoir,  
 Wes giffin thame be Carentius befoir,  
 In tyme to cum thairof gaif thame discharge. 18,255  
 And to his knichtis greit reward and large,  
 To euerie [one] that tyme as did effer,  
 Promittand als moir than I will schaw heir :

Syne sworne wes neur to revoik that thing.  
 Quhen this was done, than Fyncormac the king 18,260  
 He tuke his leif at burges and at barroun,  
 And lordis all; syne furth fuir of the toun :  
 Sone efter syne, with greit honour and gloir,  
 Come hame in Scotland quhair he was befoir.  
 Now to the Britis will I turne agane, 18,265  
 And tell of thame the laif that dois remane.

HOW TRAHERUS FLED OUT OF BRITANE, AND HOW  
 OCTAVIUS BRAK THE BAND THAT HE MAID TO  
 THE SCOTTIS AND PECHTIS IN THE GEVING  
 TO THAME THE LANDIS BETUIX HUMBER AND  
 TYNE.

Traherus, of quhome befoir I tald,  
 Thocht he that tyme wes bellicois and bald,  
 Fortoun hes maid in sic distres to be,  
 Out of Britane on force thai gart him fle 18,270  
 In Gallia, quhair he did lang remane.  
 Octavius into Britane agane,  
 As king and prince, lord and governour,  
 Ouir all Britane wes haldin in honour.  
 Syne efter this into ane litill space, 18,275  
 In Eborac at set da and at place,  
 Octavius, of quhome this tyme I mene,  
 With all his lordis thair he did convene,  
 For sindrie thingis that thai had on hand ;  
 And speciallie for to diuyde the land, 18,280  
 Of Romane blude neur ane thairin to duell.  
 Also thai swoir on mony buke and bell,  
 That no stranger, ather in tour or toun,  
 Into Britane agane sould bruke the croun ;  
 And statutis mo nor I can reckin heir, 18,285  
 The quhilk this tyme that I haif nocht perqueir.  
 Bot ane richt weill I haif into my mynd,  
 The quhilk that tyme amang thame wes desynd

To brek the band befor that thai had maid,  
 To Fyncormak with letteris seillit braid; 18,290  
 That is to say thair heretage of ald,  
 Fra Humber mouth to Tweid as I haif tald,  
 Conqueis agane, to quhome thai had grit rycht,  
 Be ony way throw maistrie or throw slycht,  
 Agane the aith that thai had maid beforne. 18,295  
 Alsua that tyme togidder than wer sworne,  
 Quhill tha micht stand into gude heill and quart,  
 In that purpos ilk ane tak vtheris part. Col. 2.

HOW OCTAVIUS SEND ANE GREIT ARMIE IN CANDALIA,  
 TO RESKEW THE LANDIS THAT HE HAD  
 GEVIN FRELIE TO SCOT AND PECHT.

Octavius syne efter that decreit  
 Proclomit hes the tuentie da to meit. 18,300  
 Ten thousand men cled into armour cleir,  
 That samin da tha did ilk man compeir,  
 With thair captane befor Octavius king.  
 And he agane, without tareing,  
 Commandit thame, in all the haist tha ma, 18,305  
 That tha sould pas into Candalia;  
 Fra fyre and blude se that thai sould nocht fail,  
 Quhill that tha landis tha had waistit hail,  
 Of corne and stoir, of scheip, nolt and horss,  
 Baith Scot and Pecht alss to gar fle on force, 18,310  
 And in that land na langar lat remane:  
 And so thai thocht to conqueis all agane.

HOW THE SCOTTIS AND THE PECHTIS WAN THE  
 FEILD AGANE THE BRITIS, AND SLEW AND  
 TUKE THAME ALL FOR THE MAIST PART.

Sone efter that, as it wes rycht weill kend,  
 Thair grit falset come till ane foull euill end.

Baith Scot and Pecht that knew thair cuming 18,315  
 weill,  
 In curage cleir wapnit stif with steill,  
 In plane battell, for all thair bost and schoir,  
 Wnwist of thame wes gadderit thame befoir ;  
 And wan the feild richt pertlie on that plane,  
 Quhair mony thousand of the Britis wer slane, 18,320  
 And many als into the feild wes tane.  
 Skaithles that da of thame thair chaipit nane,  
 And thair tha gat the scorne and als the skayth ;  
 It weill wes sett tha seruit thame to weill bayth.  
 Ouir all Britane that tyme I wnderstand, 18,325  
 Tha baneist soir the brekaris of that band,  
 And thame in quhome the falset first began ;  
 Quhairthrow tha loissit mony nobill man.  
 Fra that tyme furth thai war rycht fane to ceiss,  
 And Scot and Pecht bruik thair landis in peice. 18,330

HOW TRAHERUS COME FURTH OF GALLIA AND  
 FAUCHT THRYISS WITH OCTAVIUS, AND IN  
 THE LAST FEILD WAN HIM; QUHAIRFOIR  
 OCTAVIUS FLED TO NORROWA.

Syne quhen this thing wes cleirlye kend and knawin  
 In Gallia, and to Traherus schawin,  
 Lib. 6. f. 91. Traistand the Britis suld get na supple  
 Col. 1. Of Fyncormac thairof content wes he.  
 With greit power, with all the haist he ma, 18,335  
 He sped him sone into Britania,  
 And thryis he faucht with this Octavius ;  
 In the last feild, my authour sais thus,  
 He vincust him that da the feild and wan,  
 Quhair that he loissit richt mony nobill man, 18,340  
 And of the Romanis als out of number ;  
 Himself was chassit to the mouth of Humber,

And in ane barge, that on the watter la,  
 That samin tyme saillit in Norrowa :  
 Of Scot and Pecht, becaus he wes nocht trew, 18,345  
 He durst nocht weill thair gentreis than persew.  
 This beand done as I haif said ȝow heir,  
 The lordis all of Britane far and neir,  
 Rycht reuerentlie thai come Traherus till,  
 At his plesour puttand thame in his will; 18,350  
 And maid the aith than of fidelitie,  
 In tyme to cum ay traistand trew to be.  
 This being done thai weiris than did ceis,  
 Quhilk maid Britane lang efter leve in pece.

HOW TRAHERUS WAS SA HAITTIT WITH THE BRITIS  
 THAT HE WAS SLANE QUYETLIE, ONWITTAND  
 QUHOME BE.

Sone efter that, as my author did tell, 18,355  
 This Traherus he wox baith fals and fell,  
 And greit destructioun in the tyme he maid  
 Of nobill blude our all Britane so braid.  
 And speciallie of this Octaueus kin,  
 Of thame he sparit nother mair nor myn; 18,360  
 And mony vther that he held suspecc,  
 Sum he gart heid and vther sum hang be the nek,  
 At his awin will but ony falt or caus,  
 Without justice or ȝit ordour of lawes.  
 Sic ane tirrane, with so greit bost and schoir, 18,365  
 Wes neur sene into Britane befor.  
 Richt quietlie for that caus he wes slane,  
 Be quhome or how I cannocht tell ȝow plane.  
 For-quhy my author tald it nocht to me,  
 The circumstance thairfoir I lat it be, 18,370  
 And I am laith ane lesing for to tell;  
 With sic mater I will not intermell,  
 Or dreid that I be for ane lear kend.  
 Now to my mater thairfoir I will wend.

HOW THE BRITIS, EFTER THE DEID OF TRAHERUS,  
SEND IN NORROWA AND BROCHT HAME OCTA-  
UEUS AGANE, AND PUT HIM INTO THE SAME  
AUCTORITIE HE HAD BEFOIR.

	This beand kend how Traherus wes slane,	18,375
	The Britis all thairof tha wer full fane,	
	That tha wer fred fra bondage and maid fre,	
	Traistand agane to get thair libertie.	
	Syne secreitlie vnto Octaeus	
	His freindis send, my author sais thus,	18,380
Col. 2.	And schew to him how Traherus wes slane.	
	Octaeus no langar wald remane,	
	Fra he that knew, richt sone with grit supple	
	Of Norrowais he passit to the se,	
	Withoutin stop ay sailland nycht and da,	18,385
	Quhill that he come into Britania,	
	Quhair that he wes ressauit with greit gloir,	
	To that same stait that he wes in befoir.	
	With hail consent that tyme in Lundoun toun,	
	So wes he thuyiss ressauit to the croun.	18,390

HOW OCTAUEUS SEND ANE HERALD TO FYNCOR-  
MACUS.

	This beand done as I haif maid 3ow kend,	
	To Fyncormac ane herald he hes send ;	
	Ane vther herald also maid till go	
	In that same tyme to king of Pechtis also ;	
	Quhilk greit rewardis to thame bayth hes	18,395
	brocht,	
	Beseikand thame the greit injure wes wrocht,	
	For to remit quhair he to thame offendit,	
	At thair awin will it suld be weill amendit.	
	And als he suld quitte [el]ame for euir moir,	
	The landis all Carentius gaif befoir	18,400



To Carthlyntus in fe and heretage,  
 To Scot and Pecht discendand be lynage ;  
 Desyrand thame for to renew the bandis  
 Was maid befoir subscriuit with thair handis,  
 And he to thame, with stylis of the new, 18,405  
 Hes oblist him to thame ay till be trew.  
 Thir kingis baith thairof war weill content :  
 The heraldis als baith hamewart ar tha went,  
 And greit rewaird with thame that tyme thai had.  
 Quhen thai come hame thai schew how thai 18,410  
 had sped,  
 Ilk word by word as that thir kingis said.  
 Octaeus than wes richt blyth and glaid,  
 And all his lordis in that tyme ilkone,  
 Sic peice and rest wes maid in Albione.  
 Octaeus, as my author me schew, 18,415  
 Fra that tyme furth dalie to vertu grew,  
 And in Britane wes haldin for the best  
 In all his tyme, and for the nobillest ;  
 And ay fra that as trew as ony steill,  
 And with his nobillis louit wes rycht weill. 18,420  
 It wes richt lang or he nicht leve in rest,  
 With the Romanes lang vexit and opprest.  
 Richt mony battell oft with thame he had ;  
 In ilk battell that tyme how that he sped,  
 Bot gif I lie I can nocht tell to 3ow, 18,425  
 For-quhy my author tellis me now nocht how.  
 Thairfoir I leve and lat sic thingis be,  
 And schaw to 3ow as that he schew to me.

HOW OCTAEUS RESTORIT TO THE ROMANIS ALL  
 THE STRENTIS IN BRITANE, PAYAND TRIBUT  
 SICLYKE AS THAI WAR WONT TO THE ROMANIS.

Efter lang weir, quhen that he drew to eild, Lib.6.f.91b.  
 And wox febill and nicht nocht pas to feild, 18,430 Col. 1.

And als his power dalie wes maid les,  
 Him self siclike of strenthtis did decres ;  
 To leif in peice than hes he gart restoir  
 The strenthis all that tyme baith les and moir,  
 To the Romanis, with haille auctoritie, 18,435  
 With tribute zeirlie for to payit be,<sup>1</sup>  
 And victigall als and all vther thing,  
 And he of Britis all his tyme be king.  
 Thus wer thai bund with letteris seill[it] braid,  
 Fra that tyme furth greit peice and rest wes 18,440  
 maid  
 Among the princes into Albione,  
 And with Romanes quhill<sup>2</sup> mony da wer done.

HOW FYNCORMACUS DEPARTIT WITH GREIT HONOUR.

King Fyncormac, of quhome befor I tald,  
 Into this tyme he wox febill and ald,  
 In his youthheid quhillk wan so greit honoure, 18,445  
 For in his tyme he wes of knychtheid floure ;  
 The scheild of justice and the strang defence,  
 The touer of trewth, the well of eloquence,  
 The gem of gentres in his tyme wes he,  
 The licht lucerne of liberalitie. 18,450  
 Fredome and faith wer fermelie in him foundit,  
 Riches and rest all in his tyme aboundit.  
 I can nocht tell, without I tarie lang,  
 Sic nobillnes and vertew in him rang ;  
 Quhairfoir as now thairof I hald my toung. 18,455  
 Syne fourtie zeir and sevin quhen he had rung,  
 The zeir of Christ thrie hundreth and fiftie,  
 And aucht also compleitlie wer gone by,  
 He tuke his leif out of this lyfe allone ;  
 With all honour wnto his graif is gone. 18,460

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Le payit be.* | <sup>2</sup> In MS. *quhillk.*

HEIR FOLLOUIS THE GREIT DISCORD BETUIX THRE  
BRETHER SONNIS FOR THE RYCHT OF THE  
CROUN, THE ELDEST BRUTHER SONE CALLIT  
ROMACUS, ETHALMACUS THE SECUND, AND  
ANGUSTIANUS THE 3OUNGEST.

Quhen Fyncormac wes past as 3e hard sa,  
Levand that tyme than had he sonnys tua.  
Ewgenius, quhilk wes the eldest cheild,  
And auchtene 3eir that tyme he wes of eild ;  
Ethodeus the tother child wes cald, 18,465  
3oungar nor he, nocht be ane 3eir so ald.  
Be caus thai war of 3eirys than so 3ing,  
Nocht ane of thame that tyme thai<sup>1</sup> wald mak king.  
Then all the lordis in ane lytill quhile,  
Convenit hes togidder in Argyll ; 18,470  
And speciallie the caus wes of that thing,  
For to devyiss quhome that thai wald mak king.  
Carthlyntus king, of quhome I spak befor,  
Quhilk all his tyme his kinrik did decoir,  
Thre brether sonnys in that tyme he had 18,475  
Off thrie brether, and all of lauchfull bed. Col. 2.  
Romacus sone wes to the eldest bruther,  
And Ethalmacus sone wes to the tother,  
And Angustiane the 3oungest bruther cheild,  
The wysast man and perfytttest of his eild. 18,480  
Equale thai war in all thing mair and myn,  
In honour, riches, dignitie and kyn.  
The lordis lang contendit in that thing,  
Quhilk of thai thre wes abillest to be king.  
Romacus than alledgit thair that he 18,485  
Wes abillest of ony of the thrie,  
For to be king, erar nor ony vther,  
For-quhy he wes sone to the eldest bruther.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *that*.

Also thairwith he did thame vnderstand  
 His mother wes ane nobill of Pechtland, 18,490  
 Of blude royall; quhairfoir he said that he  
 Was maist abill that tyme to crownit be.  
 This Angustiane, with consent of the tother,  
 Acclamit sone to the zyoungest bruther,  
 Alledgit thair that tyme it suld be he, 18,495  
 Becaus he wes the eldest of the thrie,  
 And most expert he wes into all thing  
 Quhilk ganand wes for ony prince or king;  
 And had his awin, and als the totheris dail,  
 Quhairfoir he said that he aucht to prevaill. 18,500  
 Greit argumentis, amang the lordis wer than,  
 Sum for Romak, and sum for Angustiane :  
 Sum spak by richt, and vther sum by will,  
 Sum by fauour, and lukit to no skill;  
 Sum said ze, and vther sum said nay; 18,505  
 So draif thai our fra end to end that day  
 But ony speid, or zit lyke till aggrie,  
 On euirilk syde thair hartis war so bie.

HOW ROMACUS DEWYSIT TO SLA THE TOTHER TUA  
 BE TRESSOUN.

This zyoung Romac had sic ardent desyre  
 To dignitie, greit honour and impyre, 18,510  
 For na counsall that tyme wald he heir ressoun;  
 Bot secretlie he thocht rycht sone with tressoun  
 That samin tyme to sla the tother tua.  
 So had it bene vpoune the secund da,  
 Had nocht the lordis maid impediment 18,515  
 And stoppit him that tyme of his intent.  
 Of gritter skaith the lordis tuk sic dreid,  
 Of thair purpos quhen thai culd cum na speid,  
 Than finallie decreittit at the last  
 To skail the court, and ilk man hame is past. 18,520

Fra that counsall remouit euerie man,  
 And left the mater war than tha began.  
 Efter this tyme that I haif tald ȝow heir,  
 Thir tua lordis maid all the land on steir ;  
 Betuix tha tua thair wes sic stryfe and feid, 18,525  
 Ilk ane persewit vtheris to the deid,  
 For no trettie that tyme of ony lord,  
 Betuix thir tua culd nocht be maid concord ;  
 Ilkanes mynd frome vther wes so far,  
 And da by day it grew ay to the war. 18,530

HOW ROMACUS BROCHT ANE ARMIE OUT OF PECHT- Lib. 6, f. 92  
 LAND, AND GAIF ANGUSTIANE FEILD AND Col. 1.  
 VINCUST HIM, AND SYNE TUKE THE CROWN.

So at the last this ȝoung Romacus saw  
 That he culd nocht be ressoun nor [be] law  
 Vnto his purpos be no way prevaill,  
 Richt soir he dred he sould be maid to faill.  
 For-quhy he knew the most pairt of the lordis, 18,535  
 Giff it be suith that my author recordis,  
 In contrair him thai war that samin tyde ;  
 Quhairfoir he thocht that he wald sone provyde .  
 For sum remeid in all the haist he mocht ;  
 Than out of Pechtland suddanelie hes he brocht 18,540  
 Ane greit armie with him in feild to go,  
 And mony lord of Scotland than also,  
 With maistrie than he thocht him to provyde.  
 This Angustiane vppone the tother syde,  
 With plane power he met him into feild, 18,545  
 And knokkit on quhair mony ane war keild.  
 As Fortoun wald, and so all thing man be,  
 This Angustiane that tyme wes maid to fle  
 Richt far awa, as ȝe sall wnderstand,  
 Or he wald stynt, that same tyme in Yrland; 18,550

And Ethalmac his patruell also  
 Into Yrland wes maid with him till go.

#### HOW ROMACUS WAS CROWNIT KING.

The Scottis lordis that tyme without pley  
 To Romacus alhail thai did obey,  
 But contrapleid in ony kynd of thing, 18,555  
 And of that tirrane than [thai maid] thair king.  
 And how he gydit efter ze ma heir,  
 In tirranie neir be the space of thrie zeir.  
 Sone efter that saikles he slew ilk man,  
 That namit wer of kin to Angustiane, 18,560  
 Other als quhair riches war till wyn,  
 But ony caus and sparit nocht for na syn.  
 The sonnys tua of gude Fyncormak,  
 Schort quhile befoir of quhome to zow I spak,  
 For dreid of him richt haistelie ar gone 18,565  
 To Westmureland, syne to the Yle of Mone;  
 Remanit thair vnto ane weill lang space,  
 With quiet counsall in ane secreit place.

#### HOW ALL THE LORDIS CONSPYRIT AGANIS ROMACUS, AND SYNE EFTER SLEW HIM FLEAND TO PECHTLAND.

This Romacus, as I haif said befoir,  
 His tirranie the langar ay the moir, 18,570  
 Ilk da be da it grew in quantitie,  
 Fra his offence that na man mycht leve fre.  
 That euerie freik thairfoir held him at feid,  
 And as ane dragone haittit him to the deid.  
 Syne quyetlie, to him or it wes schawin, 18,575  
 The lordis all to gidder syne were drawin  
 Into ane feild, with moni worthie wicht,  
 In curage cleir and mony basnet brycht,

Towart the place quhair this Romacus la,  
 Tha come richt sone vpoun the tother da; 18,580  
 And quhen he hard that thai war at the hand,  
 To saue him self he fled into Pechtland. Col. 2.  
 So quyetlie that tyme zit fled he nocht,  
 Quhill efter him richt suddantlie tha socht;  
 And with ane chiftane maid on him ane chace, 18,585  
 Quhill tha ouirtuke him in ane quiet place.  
 In that same steid tha slew him but mercie,  
 And all the laif wes in his cumpanie.  
 Tha sparit nane, Pechtis and all the laif,  
 For it wes tha him the ill counsall gaif. 18,590  
 This Angustiane that tyme into Yrland,  
 And Ethalmac with him I wnderstand,  
 Fra tyme he knew that this tirrane wes slane,  
 In gudlie haist he sped him hame agane.  
 The lordis all thairof tha wer richt blyth, 18,595  
 Ressaut him that samin tyme full swyth,  
 With all honour and greit nobillitie,  
 So blyth thai war that cuming hame wes he;  
 But contrapleid ather of ald or zing,  
 With haill consent than wes he crownit king. 18,600

HOW ANGUSTIANE WES CROWNIT KING, AND SONE  
 EFTER HE WES CROWNIT GAIF BATTELL TO  
 THE ROMANE LEGAT AND SLEW HIM IN FEILD.

As ze haif hard, efter Romacus deid,  
 This Angustiane wes crownit in his steid.  
 As ane king he tuke on him the steir,  
 As efterwart I think to schaw zow heir.  
 Thairfoir of him heir will I leif ane quhile, 18,605  
 And to the Britis turne agane my styl.  
 Efter lang rest, throw pece that thai had tane,  
 Ouir all Britane the zyoung lordis ilkane

With insolence to hicht and pryde tha grew,  
 Desyrand so thair libertie of new, 18,610  
 Richt suddantlie, as my author did tell,  
 All in ane band togidder did rebell;  
 And mony freik hes furneist to the feild,  
 In curage cleir that waponis weill culd weild.  
 The Romane legat with ane multitude, 18,615  
 He gaif thame feild that tyme besyde a flude,  
 And all his power pertlie on ane plane.  
 The Romane legat in that feild wes slane,  
 And mony thousand of his men also,  
 The laif on force wes maid abak to go, 18,620  
 And tyne the feild for all thair pomp and pryde.  
 The Britis als vpone the tother syde,  
 Ouir all Britane tha passit vp and doun,  
 And tuke on force ilk castell, tour and toun,  
 And all the Romanes that tha fand thairin 18,625  
 He gart thame de but mercie mair or myn;  
 And syne agane, my author tellis thus,  
 Restorit than onto Octavius.  
 Syne efter that, als lang as it mycht be,  
 Tha maid Britane of Romanes to leif fre. 18,630  
 This insolence, in Rome fra it wes kend,  
 Rycht suddantlie it tuke ane full euill end.

HOW THE EMPRIOURE SEND ANE LEGAT INTO  
 BRITANE, WAS CALLIT MAXIMUS TO NAME.

Lib. 6, f. 92b. The emprioure Constantius was cald,  
 Col. 1. In Britane send ane bellomy full bald,  
 The quhilk to name was callit Maximus, 18,635  
 With greit power, my author tellis thus,  
 With mony ane that worthie war and wycht,  
 In curage cleir with helme and birnie brycht;  
 To quhome the Britis follilie gaif feild,  
 Quhair the maist pairt of thame that tyme wes 18,640  
 keild.



Throw sic folie than wer thai all confoundit ;  
 Mony war slane and mony deidlie woundit ;  
 And all the laif on force war maid to fle,  
 Syne at the will of Maximus to be.  
 Thus<sup>1</sup> throw thair folie and full hardines, 18,645  
 Tha wer distroyit that tyme mair and les,  
 And put agane in mair miseritie,  
 Rycht far befor nor tha war wont to be,

HOW OCTAUEUS, HEIRAND THA TYDENIS, DEPARTIT  
 FOR GREIT DISPLESOUR.

Octaueus, of quhome befor I tald,  
 Into that tyme wes ancient and ald, 18,650  
 Viseit he wes with greit infirmitie ;  
 And quhen he hard the infelicitie  
 Of that battell, and how sic end it tuke,  
 On the thrid day, as I fynd in my buke,  
 Throw displesour and sair seiknes also, 18,655  
 He tuke his leif and till his graif did go.  
 Ane sone that tyme and no mo childer hed,  
 For dreid that tyme to Mona Yle he fled ;  
 Thair he remanit with Eugenius,  
 And with his bruther als Ethodeus, 18,660  
 Quhilk sonnys war to the king Fyncormak,  
 Nocht lang gane syne of quhome befor I spak.

HOW THE BRITIS DID REBELL THE SECUND TYME.

In that same tyme, as my author did tell,  
 Britis agane richt baldlie did rebell.  
 Fule hardines, siclike as of befor, 18,665  
 Hes causit thame withoutin ony moir  
 To Maximus to gif battell agane ;  
 Syne tynt the feild quhair thair wes tane and slane

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *This*.

Sic multitude, and in sic bondage brocht,  
 Fra that tyme furth thair power wes at nocht. 18,670  
 Quben that wes done this Maximus for certane  
 At his plesour lang efter brukit Britane.

HOW NECTANUS, KING OF PECHTIS, FOR THE  
 SLAUGHTER OF ROMACUS, HIS COUSING, COME  
 IN SCOTLAND, MAID GREIT DISTRICTIOUN  
 BAYTH WITH BLUDE AND FYRE.

In this same tyme ane man of nobill fame,  
 The king of Pechtis, Nectanus be name;  
 For the slaughter befor as ze mycht heir 18,675  
 Of Romacus, quhilk wes his cousing deir,  
 And mony nobillis of the Pechtis also,  
 With him that tyme and sindrie vtheris mo,  
 With all the power that tyme that he can  
 He movit weir agane Angustiane. 18,680  
 And on the bordour greit heirschip he maid,  
 With fyre and blude our all tha boundis braid;  
 Col. 2. With greit power syne, as I wnderstand,  
 Sone efter that he enterit into Scotland.

HOW ANGUSTIANE SEND AN HERALD TO THE  
 KING OF PECHTIS.

This Angustiane fra tyme that he that knew, 18,685  
 His purpos wes with peax him first persew;  
 Syne synd to him ane herald into hy,  
 Beseikand him of all injure gone by  
 For to forzet, and lat all malice go,  
 And syne reforme all thingis betuix thame two; 18,690  
 And all the skaith agane for to restoir,  
 Syne leue in peice siclike as of befor  
 Thair fatheris did, and of ane bluid to be,  
 For to defend thair land and libertie

Agane the Romanes wes thair commoun fo. 18,695  
 Richt weill he wist, he said, did he nocht so,  
 For ony way that thai suld efter mak,  
 It suld thame turne bayth to grit schame and lak.

HOW ANGUSTIANE CHAISSIT NECTANUS TO CAME-  
 LIDONE.

Quhen this wes said befor thame all in plane,  
 This herald gat na answer hame agane, 18,700  
 Bot greit derisoun, with lauchter and skorne,  
 Na other ansuer hamewart hes he borne.  
 This Angustiane quhen that he knew and mynd,  
 With his freindis richt schortlie hes desynd  
 Bot ony baid to put thame of his boundis. 18,705  
 Syne with greit power towart thame he fundis,  
 And gaif him battell pertlie on ane plane,  
 Quhair all the Pechtis wes other tane or slane,  
 War all that da into the feild ilkone,  
 Thair king syne chaisit to Camelidone. 18,710

HOW NECTANUS MAID ANE COUNSALL WITH HIS  
 LORDIS, DESYRAND AT THAME TO MOVE WEIR  
 AGANE ANGUSTIANUS, THE KING OF SCOTTIS.

Sone efter this that I haif said 3ow heir,  
 This Nectanus, within les nor ane 3eir,  
 To his lordis proponit into plane,  
 Into Scotland to leid ane oist agane ;  
 Him to revenge of the injure and lak 18,715  
 Into the feild befor that he did tak ;  
 And greit perswasionun hes he maid thairtill,  
 Bydand to heir quhat wes the lordis will.  
 Richt mony lord thair wes into that tyme  
 Said as he said, without ressoune or ryme. 18,720

The wisest men that tyme amang thame war,  
 To that counsall disassentit hes rycht far,  
 Sayand it war far better till abyde,  
 Quhill efterwart that tha mycht weill prowde;  
 Lib. 6, f. 93. And quhill thair strenth war recreat agane, 18,725  
 Col. 1. And thair barnis that in the feild war slane  
 Micht harnes weir, or zit ane wapin weild,  
 For to revenge the slauchter of that feild.  
 Sayand that tyme thair power wes our puir,  
 Thame to revenge than of sa greit injure. 18,730  
 That tyme this counsall wes set all at nocht,  
 And that thair will without wisdomes hes wrocht,  
 According hail vnto the kingis will,  
 For his plesour without ressoun or skill.

HOW NECTANUS PROCLAMIT THAT ALL MAN SULD  
BE REDDIE TO FOLLOW HIM.

Sone efter that this Nectanus in hy, 18,735  
 Intill all pairt proclamit oppinly,  
 That euerie man within ane monethis space,  
 Sould reddie be to meit at da and place,  
 To follow him quhair euir he list till go.  
 Syne sone efter, my author sais so, 18,740  
 Ane multitude of weirmen that war wycht,  
 In breist plait, birny, and in basnet brycht,  
 War present all befor him one ane day,  
 To wend with him quhair euir he wald alway.  
 In gude ordour syne furth with thame is gone 18,745  
 Without delay towart than Calidone.

HOW ANGUSTIANE SEND ANE HERALD TO NEC-  
TANUS.

This Angustiane vpoune the tother syde,  
 Bownit for battell wald no langar byde,

With mony knight in curage that wes cleir,  
 Withoutin stynt ay toward thame did steir, 18,750  
 In gude array with all his power hail.  
 And, or he wald the battell first assaill,  
 To Nectanus he send ane messinger,  
 Rycht hartlie thair that tyme did him requair  
 For to mak peax, and leif in cheritie, 18,755  
 And at his will all sall amendit be.  
 Brek nocht the band thair fatheris maid<sup>1</sup> beforne  
 Richt mony zeir or ony thair wes borne.  
 "Traist weill," he said, "and we do vther now,  
 "Sone efterwart that baith to ws and zow 18,760  
 "It salbe skaith and greit damage for euer,  
 "Amang oure selffis and we so now disseuer.  
 "That war the Romanis plesour and thair will,  
 "Tha do nocht ellis bot behald thairtill,  
 "Quhill ilk of ws sould vther now distroy, 18,765  
 "And than nicht tha with litill sturt and noy,  
 "Quhen baith oure poweris war parit to nocht,  
 "And all war deid into sic weir that docht,  
 "Quhen thair wer none to mak ganestand thairtill,  
 "All Albione to weild at thair awin will." 18,770  
 And for that caus he prayit him in plane  
 To leve sic weir, and to mak pece agane.

HOW NECTANUS WALD NOCHT HEIR THE HERALD  
 ANSUER, BOT SEND DEFYDENCE AGANE TO  
 ANGVSTIANUS.

This Nectanus thairof wald heir nathing,  
 Bot send the herald hame wnto his king  
 With ane ansuer that tyme that wes nocht gude, 18,775  
 Defyand him than baith of fyre and blude.  
 This Angustiane, quhen he sic ansuer gat,  
 He tareit nocht bot haistelie with that

Col. 2.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *mand.*

With all his power, or the tother mycht,<sup>1</sup>  
 Richt suddantlie come in the Pechtis sycht 18,780  
 In rayit battell reddie for to june,  
 With mony trumpet plaiand in to tune ;  
 Exhortand thame that thair wes zyoung and ald,  
 Quhilk in that tyme wer bellicois and bald,  
 In that battell ilkane baith les and moir 18,785  
 Think on the wirschip thai had wyn befor ;  
 Sayand also, richt weill he wnderstude  
 His caus and querrell that tyme wes rycht gude ;  
 Quhairfoir, he said, thai had no caus to dreid,  
 Nor zit to fray for thai wald haif no neid. 18,790

THE ENTRES OF THE FEILD BETUIX THIR TUA  
KINGIS.

Be this wes said, withoutin ony moir,  
 The bowmen bald hes tane the feild befor.  
 On baith the sydis, bayth of Pecht and Scot,  
 Fra enerie syde wes mony arrow schot,  
 With egir will ilk one at vther than, 18,795  
 Quhair euir thai hit the reid blude efter ran.  
 The speiris syne, with mony targe and scheid,  
 And mekill force, hes enterit in the feild.  
 Into that preiss it wes na barnis play,  
 Quhen mony berne vpone thair bakis lay, 18,800  
 With brandis bricht that scherand wer and  
 scharp,  
 So cruellie togidder that tha carp,  
 Quhill mony syde rycht sowand than alsua  
 And mony breist wes bludie maid and bla ;  
 And mony leid that tyme loissit the lyfe, 18,805  
 Into that stound sa stalwart wes the stryfe.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *mycht*.

HOW ANGUSTIANE WAS SLANE THROU MIS-  
GYDING.

This Angustiane so cruell wes in hart,  
 Preissand our far that tyme to tak ane part,  
 Quhen that he saw sa mony bernis bleid,  
 Richt suddantlie kest of his kinglie weid ;           18,810  
 Amang thame syne into the thickest thrang,  
 Quhair that the stour maist stalwart wes and strang,  
 He enterit in quhair Nectanus he socht,  
 Into the feild thair find him gif he mocht,  
 And thoct on him his harmis for to wreik.           18,815  
 Into his gait full mony felloun freik  
 That war full proude he slew vponne that plane,  
 Syne faucht 'sa lang quhill that him self wes slane.  
 And quhen the Scottis saw thair king wes keild,  
 Rycht suddantlie tha fled out of the feild           18,820  
 One to ane strenth that wes neirhand by,  
 Without perrell that tyme quhair tha mycht ly.  
 The Pechtis war to sic confusioun brocht,  
 That still tha stude that tyme and followit nocht ;  
 The Scottis fled [away] fra thame so far           18,825  
 Wist no man weill that da quha gat the war ;  
 Wes none of thame that had caus for to be faue,  
 For baith thair kingis in the feild wes slane,           Lib.6,f,93b.  
 And mony prince that mekill wes of pryde.           Col. 1.  
 Far ma that tyme vponne the Pechtis syde           18,830  
 Doutles that da richt cruellie wer keild,  
 Suppois the Scottis that tyme tynt the feild.

HOW BAITH THE PAIRTEIS PASSIT HAME WITH  
GRET DISPLESOUR.

This beand done as ze haif hard me sa,  
 Than baith the sydis on the samin da,

Tha passit hame with greit dolour and cair, 18,835  
 And murning maid the langar ay the mair ;  
 With greit displesour baith of wyfe and man,  
 Wareand the wicht in quhome that weir began,  
 And thame that gaif the counsall first thair till,  
 With greit murning ilk da baith loud and still, 18,840  
 Richt mony da or thair sorrow nicht slaik.  
 Ilk lusum ladie for hir lordis saik,  
 With siching sad, [and] sobbing soir and deip,  
 Ilk wedow als did for hir husband weip,  
 And euerie barne for his father alsua, 18,845  
 Tha murnit soir lang tyme and mony da.

HEIR FOLLOWIS HOW ETHILMACUS WAS CROWNIT  
 KING OF SCOTTIS EFTER THE DEITH OF AN-  
 GUSTIANUS, AND OF SINDRIE THINGIS HE DID  
 IN HIS TYME.

Quhen Angustiane wes deid as ze mycht heir,  
 Than of his ring into the secund zeir,  
 Ethilmacus, of quhome befoir I spak,  
 His patruell, the cuir on him did tak, 18,850  
 Reule and steir and governe in all thing,  
 With haill consent that tyme was crownit king.  
 And to revenge the greit injure and lak,  
 Into the feild befoir that thai did tak,  
 With greit power sone efter on ane da, 18,855  
 He enterit hes into Orestia,  
 And sparit nother that tyme barne nor wyfe,  
 Zoung or ald, or ocht that euir buir lyfe ;  
 With fyre and bluid makand ane feloun beir,  
 That horribill wes other to se or heir. 18,860



HEIR FOLLWIS THE ORDOUR AND MANER OF  
THE BATTELL BETUIX THE SCOTTIS AND THE  
PECHTIS, AND HOW THE SCOTTIS THAT TYME  
WAN THE FEILD RICHT MANFULLIE.

The king of Pechtis, Nectanus, with greit schoir,  
Nectanus bruther of quhome I spak befor,  
Quhilk in the feild wes slane, as ze hard sa,  
With all his power planelie on ane da  
In rayit battell gaif the Scottis feild ; 18,865  
Quhair all his weirmen that mycht waponis weild  
War thair that da buskit in battellis thre,  
In gude ordour the best that tha nicht be.  
The Scottis king, vpon the tother syde,  
In thre feildis his armie did diuyde ; 18,870 Col. 2.  
The tuo wyngis first enterit in the feild,  
And knapit on quhill mony knyecht wes keild  
With mony pelt richt pertlie on the plane,  
Quhill all the Pechtis neir hand than wer slane  
In baith the wingis quhair tha faucht that da : 18,875  
This is richt trew, traist weill ze heir me sa.  
The mid feildis syne enterit at the last,  
Quhair mony grume wes maid to be agast,  
And mony scheild wer schorne all in schunder,  
Brasser and birny, and breist plait that wer 18,880  
vnder,  
In pecis brak and all in ragis raif ;  
So doggitlie ilkone on vther draif.

HOW NECTANUS WAS HURT WITH ANE ARROW,  
QUHILK WAS HIS DEITH.

Into the feild quhair that the Pechtis stude,  
Seand thame selfis that tyme so destitute  
Of baith the wingis, without ony supple, 18,885  
Turnit thair bak and suddanelie did fle

With all thair power richt fast out of that place.  
 Syne efter thame the Scottis maid ane chace,  
 And in that chace thair wes als mony slane  
 As in the feild fechtand vpone the plane. 18,890  
 Thair king Nectanus, in that stalwart stound,  
 With ane arrow buir sic ane deidlie wound,  
 Throw quhais dolour, syne on the thrid da,  
 He sufferit deith, as my author did sa.  
 The Scottis than of this greit victorie, 18,895  
 So insolent thai wer and so hardie,  
 That tyme our Tay bownit or tha wald blyn,  
 With haill power syne come in Etholyn,  
 With greit slauchter baith of men and brude.  
 So far thai thristit in the Pechtis blude, 18,900  
 Baith zoung and ald, nother man no wyfe,  
 That thai ouirgat, left name levand on lyfe.  
 The Pechtis than, quhen that thair king wes  
 slane,  
 And had na power to prevaill agane,  
 So few thai war that waponis docht to weild, 18,905  
 Decreittit hes no moir to gif thame feild ;  
 Bot with skirmische and conteryng ilk da,  
 Within thair boundis as lang as tha la,  
 So that tha sould no lasar haif to win  
 Toun or tour, or zit to ly thairin. 18,910

HOW HARGUSTUS WES CROWNIT KING OF PECHTIS  
 EFTER THE DEITH OF NECTANUS.

And for to be thair gydar of this thing,  
 That samin tyme thai haif crownit ane king,  
 Quhilk hes to name Hargustus that wes cald.  
 Ane busteous berne and bellomy full bald,  
 Ane zoungar als full of subtilitie, 18,915  
 In all his tyme rycht cruell as wes he.

And quhen he knew his power wes so small,  
 Na had na hoip bot hardines witht all  
 In plane battell the Scottis till assay,  
 Than hes he socht ane vther subtyll way. 18,920

HOW ETHALMACUS, KING OF SCOTTIS, WAS SLANE Lib. 6, f.94.  
 BE TRESSOUN OF TUA PECHTIS HALDIN FOR Col. 1.  
 SCOTTIS.

Tua fair 3young men, as that my author sais,  
 Of Pechtis blude perfite into all plais,  
 With greit rewarid, promittand far mair thing,  
 For to betrais this Ethalmacus king,  
 He hes conduit with gold, riches and fe, 18,925  
 To feinz thame as tha Scottis sould be.  
 Syne in the court to make thair sojorning,  
 Quhill that thai war acquentit with the king;  
 Syne efterwart, quhat tyme that euer it be,  
 To fynd the tyme of opportunitie, 18,930  
 Quhen it war so, be vertew of thair band,  
 Compleit the thing quhilk thai had tane on hand.  
 And so thai did; within ane lytill space  
 Tha wer richt speciall with the kingis grace,  
 And hartlie louit with him fra the spleyne, 18,935  
 Trowand so weill that thai had Scottis bene.  
 Syne efterwart, quhen that thai saw thair tyme  
 Wes opportune for to commit sick cryme,  
 Into his bed ane nycht quhair that he la,  
 Commandit hes ane harpar for to pla, 18,940  
 Quhilk in his chalmer ilk nycht la him by;  
 And so he did richt sone and suddantly,  
 Quhill that the king wes brocht rycht sound on  
 sleip.  
 Thir tratouris tua thairto thai take gude keip,  
 Come to the dur and choppit on ane pyn; 18,945  
 The harpar raiss and syne he leit thame in,

For-quhy him self wes giltie of that thing,  
 And tuke reward for to betrais the king;  
 On to the bed thai steppit quhair he la  
 And stickit him, syne went rycht fast awa. 18,950  
 Than throw the panis and [the] cairfull cry  
 In the deid thraw he maid quhair he did ly,  
 The watche men that wes the hous about,  
 Tha hard richt weill quhair that tha woik thairout.

HOW THIR TUA TRATOURIS WAR TANE, AND  
 SYNE BAITH HANGIT AND DRAWIN TO THAIR  
 REWAIRD.

Incontinent, quhen that tha knew the caice, 18,955  
 On thir tratouris richt sone tha maid ane chace,  
 Quhill at the last that tha war neirhand tane,  
 And houfit baith vpoune ane roche of stane.  
 And thair [tha] stude richt lang at thair defence,  
 Doun castand craigis, the quhilk in thair discens 18,960  
 Richt mony hurt quhair that tha did doun faw,  
 That standand war than vnder thame rycht law.  
 And with sic way ane quhile thai war defendit,  
 Quhill at the last thai war baith apprehendit,  
 And to the toun in haist wes had agane, 18,965  
 To the same place quhair that the king la slane.  
 And quhen thai wer accusit of that thing,  
 Ilk word by word withoutin tareing,  
 Tha schew agane the caice quhairfoir and quhy;  
 Rycht pertlie than ane word wald nocht deny. 18,970  
 Quhen tha thame selffis sa oppinlie had schreivin,  
 Col. 2. In four partis thair bodeis bayth wer revin  
 With four greit hors, rynnand with all thair  
 speid;  
 And thus tha baith hes endit to thair meid,  
 Traistand thairfoir sa greit reward to wyn. 18,975  
 The harpar als siclike that leit thame in,

Without delay vpone the samin da,  
He maid sic end as did the tother tua.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE CROWNYNG OF E[U]GENIUS  
THE SECUND, THE SONE OF THIS ILK FOR-  
GUDE,<sup>1</sup> AND OF HIS NOBILL DEIDIS, AS ZE  
SALL EFTER HEIR.

Efter the deith of Ethalmacus king,  
The quhilk that wes the thrid zeir of his ring, 18,980  
With haill consent of all the lordis ilkone,  
Than haif thai brocht out of the Yle of Mone  
Ewgenius, of quhome befoir I spak,  
Quhilk wes the sone of gude Fyncormak,  
And crownit him thair governour to be, 18,985  
For to the croun that tyme most rycht had he.  
Schort efter this, as ze sall wnderstand,  
Sanct Androis arme wes brocht into Scotland ;  
And how it wes, gif that ze list to speir,  
Tak tent to me and I sall tell zow heir. 18,990  
In Grece that tyme, in citie of Dacia,  
Ane monk thair wes in land of Accaya,  
Quhilk Regulus wes callit to his name ;  
Ane faithfull father he wes of greit fame.  
And for he wes of sic auctoritie, 18,995  
Be Cesar send that samin tyme wes he,  
The emprioure quhilk hecht Constantius,  
In pilgramage, my storie tellis thus,  
On to the graif quhair that Sanct Andrew lysis,  
Decreittit as wes of the samin wyiss, 19,000  
Richt mony than of devoit men also,  
In cumpanie with him that tyme till go.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sic in MS.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE MANER AND THE PROCES  
 REGULUS BROCHT THE RELICT OF SANCT  
 ANDROW IN SCOTLAND FRA THE LAND OFF  
 ACCAYA.

And quhen tha come on to the samin place  
 Quhair that he la, it hapnit vpone cace  
 Vpoun the nycht ane visioum did appeir 19,005  
 To Regulus sittand at his prayer,  
 Commanding him vpone the samin mak,  
 The richt arme bane of that apostill tak,  
 With fyngeris thre and tais thre also  
 Of the richt syde, and for to tak no mo, 19,010  
 And cloiss thame weill into ane veshell clene,  
 And keip thame cloiss that thai suld nocht be  
 sen[e].

Lib.6,f.94b. And syne richt sone withoutin ony ho,  
 Col. 1. To Albione the narrest way till go,  
 Quhilk wes ane yle of greit auctoritie, 19,015  
 Far in the north within the occident se.  
 For-quhy, he said, within ane lytill quhile,  
 That all the pepill of that samin yle  
 Sall hald that relict in sic reuerence,  
 To the apostill suld be sic plesance, 19,020  
 And honour als wnto the sett of Rome,  
 Perpetuallie wnto the da of dome.

HOW REGULUS GART GRAITH ANE SCHIP, AND  
 PASSIT WITH THIS RELICT QUIETLIE TO THE  
 SEE.

This Regulus than, as I wnderstand,  
 As biddin wes he hes keipit command.  
 Ane schip, als sone as scho nicht reddie be, 19,025  
 Richt secretlie he furneist to the se.

Syne on the nycht with his fellowis in feir,  
 He tuke the se, gaif God the schip to steir.  
 Throw the Greik se thai saillit mony da,  
 Vnto the land of Lucitania ; 19,030  
 That wes the name ane lang tyme of the ald,  
 The quhilk to name now Portingaill is calld.  
 Fra that thai salit ay on da by da,  
 Quhill that thai come till Armorica,  
 And now to name this da is callit Britane. 19,035  
 Syne throw the pais thai salit furth incertane,  
 Thre dais or foure ay by and by is gone,  
 Wnto the yle richt sone of Albione.

#### HOW REGULUS SCHIP BRAK IN OTHOLEMUM.

In Otylym that tyme into Pechtland,  
 By force of flude thair schip brak on ane sand, 19,040  
 Thair loissit thai all thing with thame tha brocht,  
 Except thame self that tyme thair chaipit nocht,  
 And the relict of quhome befoir I spak.  
 Thame self wes saif suppois that thair schip brak,  
 But ony perrell fre brocht to the land, 19,045  
 Quhair Sanct Androis that citie now dois stand  
 Besyid the se, vpoune ane plesand plane,  
 And thair ane quhile tuke purposis to remane.  
 Into that place tha had nocht restit lang,  
 Quhill that the word ouir all the land did gang, 19,050  
 That sic ane relict than, throw Godeis grace,  
 Vnto the pepill cunit wes to that place.  
 Out of all part thai come baith far and neir,  
 Onto that place sic thing to se and heir.  
 And of the seik men that war present thair, 19,055  
 Baith haill and sound thai war maid of thair  
 sair ;  
 Richt cruikit men war waldin maid and wycht,  
 And dum men spak, and blind men gat thair sycht.

HOW HARGUSTUS COME TO SE THE RELICT OF  
SANCT ANDROIS.

- Col. 2. Hargust, the king of Pechtis, on ane da  
Come thair him self, as my author did sa; 19,060  
With greit meiknes and all humilitie,  
Rycht reuerentlie law kneilland on his kne,  
With greit deuotioun in the samin place,  
In his armes that relict he did braiss,  
Oft kissand it, with sindrie sacrifice, 19,065  
Vpoune his kneis richt lang or he wald ryiss.  
Syne efterwart, within ane lytill space,  
He hes gart big into the samin place  
Ane plesand tempill, maid of lyme and stone,  
Sic of befor than saw thai neur none. 19,070  
Ane proper place syne biggit hes besyid,  
Quhair Regulus thairin nicht duell and byde,  
And all his fellowis als with him in feir;  
And so thai did richt lang and mony ȝeir.  
Syne quhen that work on to ane end was 19,075  
brocht,  
Of siluer schene richt worthelie hes wrocht  
Crowat and croce, and chandlar to beir licht,  
Chaleis and paten of birneist gold so bricht,  
Bayth buke and bell, and coistlie vestiment,  
Possessit syne witht mony riche rent, 19,080  
In honour of the Apostole Sanct Androw,  
In the same place quhair he is honorit now,  
And ay salbe, gif that I richt presume,  
With men in erth wnto the day of dome.  
The ȝeir of God thre hundreth and fourtie, 19,085  
Quhen this wes done passit and gone bye.  
In this mater I will na mair remane,  
Bot to my purpois pas I will agane.



HOW THE ROMANE LEGAT CALLIT MAXIMUS,  
HEIRAND THE DISCORD BETUIX THE SCOTTIS  
AND THE PECHTIS, TUKE THE PECHTIS PART  
AGANIS THE SCOTTIS, AND SYNE BE HIS  
POWAR AND THAIRIS PUT THE SCOTTIS OUT  
OF SCOTLAND.

This Roman legat callit Maximus,  
In that same tyme, my author tellis thus 19,090  
As I in vers sall to 3ow heir record,  
Quhen that he saw the malice and discord  
Betuix the Scottis and the Pechtis of new,  
So lang befoir to vther ay wes trew ;  
Seing also his tyme wes oportune, 19,095  
With bissie cuir greit diligence hes done  
To caus that feid for to increas and grow  
Dalie hes done the diligence he dow.  
And, for to speid his purpois to ane end,  
To king of Pechtis ane herald sone he send ; 19,100  
Gif that my author be thairof to trow,  
He said to him as I sall say to 3ow.  
“ O king of Pechtis, nobill Hargustus,  
“ The greitis weil my maister Maximus ;  
“ Lattand the wit that he forthinkis sair 19,105  
“ The greit displesour, dolour and the cair,  
“ With sic injure now dalie done to the,  
“ Be the Scottis that ar baith fals and sle ;  
“ The quhilk hes bene, sa far as thai mycht  
skaith,  
“ Ane mortall fa to ws and to 3ow baith, 19,110  
“ At this be suith that I dar hardlie say, Lib. 6, f. 95.  
“ That 3e with ws wer weilbelouit ay, Col. 1.  
“ I trow siclyke so sould we with 3ow be,  
“ War nocht the Scottis with thair subtilitie.  
“ Thair is no thing that he desyris moir 19,115  
“ Nor 3our freindschip siclike as of befoir,

“ And ze siclyke his freindschip for till haif,  
 “ With all supple, quhen lykis zow to craif,  
 “ For to subdew, quhen lykis zow to dude,  
 “ Thir fals Scottis quhilk ar baith vyle and 19,120  
     rude,  
 “ Or quhen ze pleis thame ilkone to distroy,  
 “ So lang to zow hes done greit wrang and noy.”

HOW HARGUSTUS MAID ANSUER AGANE.

Quhen this wes said befor Hargustus king,  
 Rycht sone agane he ansuerit to that thing.  
 “ Forsuith,” he said, “ I am richt blyth and 19,125  
     glaid  
 “ Of tha wordis that ze haif to me said.  
 “ Greit thank thairfor,” he said, “ ane thousand syis,  
 “ Be to thy king in quhome sic lawtie lysis,  
 “ That wald deding with his auctoritie  
 “ Ws to support in oure necessitie ; 19,130  
 “ And so greit perrell dalie we ar in  
 “ Of fyre and blude be Scottis will nocht blin,  
 “ Quhill that oure power parit be to nocht  
 “ Dalie on ws so greit injure hes wrocht,  
 “ Quhairfor,” he said, “ me pleisis weill that 19,135  
     thing,  
 “ And all the lordis sidlike of this ring ;  
 “ Of his freindschip we list nocht for to craue,  
 “ With quhat conditioun plesis him to haue,  
 “ And quhen he list to haif of ws supplie  
 “ Agane the Scottis, quhen euir that mister be.” 19,140  
 This herald than, quhen he had said him so,,  
 With that ansuer he tuke his leif to go  
 Hame to his lord, and tald him how he said,  
 Ilk word by word, quhairof he wes rycht glaid,  
 Traistand richt weill cum he his purpois till, 19,145  
 All Albione to weild at his awin will.

And sone he hes fixit ane da and place  
 At Eborac within ane lytill space,  
 Quhair king Hargust with him awin self suld meit  
 And so thai did thair purpois to compleit. 19,150  
 Syne peice and kyndnes thair betuix thame band,  
 Perpetuallie in tyme to cum to stand,  
 And neur agane for no thing to be brokin.  
 Rycht mony thing betuix thame thair wes spokin,  
 That I list nocht now at this tyme and port, 19,155  
 Bot lat thame pas becaus the tyme is schort.  
 Quhen tha had done and said that tha list sa,  
 Ilkane tuke leif and passit hame thair wa.

HOW MAXIMUS, THE ROMANE LEGAT, SEND ANE  
 HERALD TO EWGENIUS, THE SCOTTIS KING,  
 COMMANDAND HIM TO RESTOIR ALL THE SPULZE  
 WAS TANE FRA THE PECHTIS.

Sone efter, quhen this counsall hes tane end,  
 This Maximus ane herald he hes send 19,160  
 To king of Scottis, with mekill bost and schoir,  
 Commandand him that all injure befor  
 Onto the Pechtis that he and his had wrocht, Col. 2.  
 Without fabill se that he faillit nocht,  
 With all the spulze richt so les and moir, 19,165  
 Richt haistelic agane for till restoir;  
 And all that war the authouris of sic thing,  
 Deliuier thame onto Hargustus king,  
 At his fre will other to hang or heid,  
 For-quhy, he said, thai seruit weill sic deid; 19,170  
 And gif he thocht that he wald nocht do sua,  
 He him declarit for the Romanis fa.

HOW EWGENIUS MAID ANSUER AGANE.

Ewgenius, quhen he hard this report,  
 To him agane he said in this same sort :

- " Forsuith, gude freind, sen I had ony cuir 19,175  
 " Into Scotland, zit did I neuir injure  
 " To the Romanis ather in word or deid,  
 " Or to the Britis or zit na vther leid  
 " Wnder the l[e]jist levand of Romane law;  
 " Quhairfoir," he said, "richt weill that thing I 19,180  
   knew,  
 " Ze wirk richt far by law and equitie,  
 " So vnjust battell and ze move on me."  
 And als he said, "I can nocht weill wit how  
 " The Pechtis sould be so tender freindis to zow;  
 " For ony thing to zow that tha haif wrocht 19,185  
 " In word or deid, forsuith that wait I nocht,  
 " That ze so far sould feinze for thair lufe  
 " Vnjust battell aganis ws to mufe.  
 " Gif plesour be to him, this tyme but leis  
 " With the Pechtis agane we sould mak peice, 19,190  
 " I am content, siclyke as of befoir,  
 " The spulzie all agane for to restoir  
 " On cuirilk syde, and oblissing to mak  
 " In tyme to cum quhilk of ws tua dois brak  
 " In word or werk, in deid or zit in saw, 19,195  
 " He puneist be efter the commoun law.  
 " And gif ze think it be for zour behuife,  
 " Vnjust battell aganis ws to mufe,  
 " Than<sup>1</sup> I commit my caus and my defence  
 " To gracious God that knawis my innocence, 19,200  
 " Ane equale judge to ws be at this tyme,  
 " And puneis thame that caus ar of this cryme."

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE PROUISIOUN AND ORDOURE  
 OF THE WEIR BETUIX MAXIMUS THE LEGAT  
 AND EWGENIUS THE KING OF SCOTTIS.

Thir ilk ressonis quhen Maximus did heir,  
 Fra all landis that tyme, baith far and neir,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *Their*.

At the command of the Romanes stude, 19,205  
 Contraccit hes ane mervelous multitude.  
 Mony gay grume come furth of Gallia  
 To him that tyme, and of Armorica ;  
 The Britis all at his command wes boun,  
 And Pechtis als with him to fair of toun ; 19,210  
 Siclyke of Romanes mony worthie wicht.  
 Wes neur sene befor in no mannis sycht  
 Into this warld sen weiris first began Lib.6.f.95b.  
 Vpoun ane da sa mony nobill man. Col. 1.  
 Sone efter that, vpoun the auchtane da, 19,215  
 Tha enterit all into Westnawria,  
 Quhair that tha gat na stop nor 3it ganestand,  
 Distroyand all befor thame that tha<sup>1</sup> fand,  
 Baith wyffe and barne and ald men mycht nocht  
 fle,  
 And seik men viseit with infirmitie. 19,220  
 In Orduluce syne efter that tha fuir,  
 Quhair that tha sparit nother riche nor puir ;  
 Quhome thai ouirtuke that tyme in ony steid,  
 Baith 3oung and ald tha pat thame all to deid.  
 Syne efter that passit in Galdia, 19,225  
 With fyre and blude, and greit heirschip alsua  
 Of 3oung and ald, with greit slauchter betuene ;  
 Fra na injure that tyme<sup>2</sup> tha wald abstene.  
 The Scottis thocht into greit dout tha stude,  
 Seand the Romanis of sic multitude, 19,230  
 And so greit power in that tyme thai had,  
 Tha causit thame to be richt soir adred.

#### HOW EWGENIUS AND MAXIMUS MET IN FEILD.

3it neurtheles this king Eugenius  
 In that same tyme, ny author tellis ws,

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *he*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *that tyme that tyme*.

In plane battell baith with speir and scheild 19,235  
 At Cre water he gaif the Romanes feild,  
 And preuit pertlie vther on that plane,  
 Quhill mony Scot into that feild wer slane.  
 Into that stour so stalwartlie tha stude,  
 The Romanes war of so greit multitude, 19,240  
 The Scottis als so few war in that tyde,  
 In that battell tha nicht no langar byde,  
 But fled richt fast away out of that place.  
 The Romanes followit richt fast on the chace,  
 Without ordour that tyme tha tuke no cuir, 19,245  
 Trowand that Scottis nicht nocht than induir.  
 And as tha fled, the men of Argatill  
 Ane grit armie that tyme cumand thame till,  
 Knawand richt nocht how all befor wes done,  
 Hes maid the flearis for to turne full sone; 19,250  
 With baith thair power togidder on that plane,  
 The battell thair renewit hes agane.  
 The Romanes than befor that maid the chace,  
 Wes maid to fle richt sone out of that place;  
 And had no mychtis langer to remane, 19,255  
 Of thame sa mony in that feild wer slane.  
 The Scottis followit als fast as tha nicht,  
 Greit slauchter maid quhill twinit thame the nycht.

HOW MAXIMUS THE LEGAT AND ALL HIS MEN  
 STUDE ON THAIR FEIT ILK NYCHT, TROWAND  
 TO GET BATTELL ON THE MORNE.

Quhen nycht wes cumit, and passit wes the da,  
 This Maximus, as my author did sa, 19,260  
 And all his followis thair with him in feir,  
 That lang nycht our tha stude in dout and weir,  
 Gif that the Scottis that nicht sould renew  
 The feild agane, becaus of the reskew  
 That cuming wes to thame fra Argatill, 19,265  
 Or quhill the morne gif that thai wald bid still.

In rayit feild vpoun thair feit tha stude.<sup>1</sup> Col. 2.  
 That samin nycht this ilk Ewgenius king,  
 And his lordis decreittit hes this thing,  
 All feild and battell for that tyme postpone. 19,270  
 Syne he and thair passit to Carecone,  
 For to devyiss quhat best wes to be done,  
 And all the laif for to pas hame rycht sone ;  
 Syne efterwart thair suld all reddie be  
 At his command, quhen he his tyme mycht se. 19,275

HOW THAIR COME ANE MESSINGEIR TO MAXIMUS,  
 AND SCHEW TO HIM THAT KENT HAD REBELLIT  
 AGANE HIM.

This beand done as ze haif hard me sa,  
 This Maximus efter on the thrid da,  
 With all his power purposit of the new  
 In plane battell the Scottis till persew.  
 And as he wes him dressand to the way, 19,280  
 Fra Kent thair come to him that samin day  
 Ane messenger, the quhilk to him that schew  
 Of grit discord in Britane of the new,  
 Amang the captanis with sic stryfe and feid,  
 And come he nocht sone for to mak remeid, 19,285  
 Within les space, he said, na half ane zeir,  
 All wald be lost that he had bocht so deir.  
 Than Maximus, fra he tha tydenis knew,  
 Preissit no moir the Scottis till persew ;  
 Bot suddantlie he changit his intent, 19,290  
 With greit power syne on to Britane went.  
 Ane greit army he left in Galdia,  
 And euerie strenth he hes gart stof alsua,  
 With men and meit, and vther ganand geir,  
 And all waponis that neidfull wer for weir. 19,295  
 With lang travell ay da by da he past,  
 Quhill that he come in Kentschyre at the last.

---

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems to be wanting.

Richt greit trubill dalie he had and pane,  
 Or that he culd reforme all weill agane,  
 With greit laubour as it wes rycht weill kend, 19,300  
 The secund zeir all our fra end to end.

HOW THE SCOTTIS MAID MONY F[O]RAYIS IN  
 GALDIA.

That samin zeir, as my author did sa,  
 The Scottis oft syis into Galdia,  
 With mony forra richt oft that tha raid,  
 And mony carmusche on the Romanis maid. 19,305  
 On fit and horsse thair power oft did prewe,  
 Richt manfullie in that hoip and beleve,  
 All Galdia agane for to reskew,  
 Ilk dalie da preifand ane prattik new.  
 Bot all for nocht, it<sup>1</sup> vaillit thame nothing, 19,310  
 The Romanes than wer of sua gude gyding,  
 Rycht ill it wes on force thame for to wyn,  
 Or fra thair strenthis ony tyme thame twyn,  
 Quhilk biggit wer rycht weill of stane and lyme;  
 Tha come neur furth bot quhen tha saw thair 19,315  
 tyme.

And quhen the Scottis saw thair forward fail,  
 And of thair purpois thai culd nocht prevaill,  
 Lib. 5, f.96. The Romane weir tha left than at the last,  
 Col. 1. And with all power on the Pechtis past.

HOW THE SCOTTIS OPPRESSIT THE PECHTIS IN  
 SINDRIE PLACES.

In Otholyn, and als in Vicomage, 19,320  
 With fyre and blude thai haif wrocht greit  
 outrage,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *in*.



Withoutin stop quhair tha gat no ganestand,  
 Baith ȝoung and ald befor thame that tha fand,  
 Of all degre, other ill or gude,  
 Tha baitht thair brandis baldlie in thair blude. 19,325  
 Without petie that tyme thai wald nocht spair,  
 No had no rewth to heir the wyffis rair,  
 And ryfe thair hair, seand thair barnis bleid ;  
 That wes thair game and leuch thairat gude speid.  
 Thair wes no strent that tyme in all thair land, 19,330  
 Toun or tour, that nicht mak thame ganestand.  
 The starkest all that wer of lyme and stone,  
 Law to the erd tha kest thame doun ilkone ;  
 And all thair bigging brint intill ane fyre,  
 With hall and chalmer, stabill, barne and byre ; 19,335  
 Thair ȝairdis all wer full of corne and hay,  
 All other thing tha nicht nocht turs away,  
 Softar no stone, that nicht nocht with thame pas,  
 In ane baill fyre tha brint thame all in ass.  
 Qulairof the Scottis so greit curage tuke, 19,340  
 Nother to ryme nor ressoun wald tha luke :  
 Tha grew so hie thairof into thair mynd,  
 Trowand that Fortoun wes to thame so kynd,  
 Traistand hir fauour efterwart to fynd,  
 Quhilk is vnstabill as wethercok in wynd. 19,345  
 Thair is no man may lippin in hir grace,  
 Quhen plesis hir to turne away hir face,  
 Scho wryis it alway as scho war wraith,  
 To luke agane on him scho is full laith.  
 Quhen Maximus hard of thir tydenis tald, 19,350  
 How that the Scottis busteous war and bald  
 Puneist the Pechtis with so greit torment,  
 Into his mynd thairof he wes content.  
 It lykit him weil for to heir sic skaith,  
 With vtterlie destructioun to thame baith ; 19,355  
 Ȝit with his word Ȝit oft he did thame mene,  
 Feinȝeand full soir as he thair freind had bene,

With countenance as he had bene rycht kynd ;  
 Ȝit neuirtheles he leuche into his mynd,  
 Traistand richt weill, wer bayth thair poweris 19,360  
 one,  
 At his awin will to weild all Albione ;  
 Ȝit neuirtheles he feinzeit to be wraith,  
 Suppois he wes content of baith thair skaith.

HEIR FOLLOWIS THE ORDOUR AND THE MANER  
 OF THE MORT BATTELL BETUIX MAXIMUS AND  
 EWGENIUS, QUHAIR GUDE EWGENIUS AND ALL  
 THE SCOTTIS WAR SLANE.

Quhen wynter wes all gone with wynd and weit,  
 Bayth frost and snaw with haille schouris and 19,365  
 sleit,  
 And ver also quhen that the lark will sing,  
 Throw cours of kynd that grene levis will spring,  
 And symmer come hame with his schawes schene,  
 This Maximus, of quhome this tyme I mene,  
 Out of Britane with mekle schoir and boist, 19,370  
 Col. 2. In Galdia he brocht ane rycht grit oist.  
 And all the Scottis he fand him befor  
 Into that land, but lat baith les and moir  
 That nicht nocht fle, he hes gart suffer deid,  
 Baith wyfe and barne but respit or remeid. 19,375  
 Quhen that wes done, he passit on ane da  
 With all his power vnto Siluria.  
 Ewgenius, the nobill Scottis king,  
 Wes neir hand by, and quhen he knew that thing,  
 With greit power he sped him on richt sone, 19,380  
 Quhill that he come on till the water of Done.  
 Into that steid thair he remanit still,  
 Quhill all his men at laser come him till ;  
 And da by da into greit quantitie,  
 Tha grew the mo in multitude to be, 19,385

Of nobill men weill graithit in thair geir,  
 And wemen als that harnes docht to weir.  
 That wes the vse into oure eldaris dais,  
 Gif all be suith heir that my author sais.  
 Fiftie thousand that tyme in armour brycht, 19,390  
 He had with him that worthie war and wycht,  
 Of bernis bald that wer richt gude in neid,  
 Wald nocht abaiss for to se bernis bleid.  
 Ane spy thair come to him that tyme and schew,  
 Evin at thair hand the Romanes with sic glew 19,395  
 Of trumpet, talburne, and of schalmes schill,  
 Within fyve myle wer cumand fast thame till,  
 In gude array with mekle bost and schoir,  
 And sic power as thai saw neur befor;  
 Thair multitude nicht nocht weill numberit be, 19,400  
 Thair breid, thair lenth, of so greit quantitie.  
 So strang power, sen weiris first began,  
 Wes neur sene zit with na levand man.  
 The Scottis all thair of greit terror tuke,  
 And sum of thame to fecht that da forsuik; 19,405  
 And vther sum that tyme be the most pairt,  
 So cruell wer and hie into thair hart,  
 Decreittit all erar that da to de,  
 Na loiss thair land, thair law and libertie;  
 That da, tha said, or tha fra him disseuer, 19,410  
 Tha sould all de or than be fre for euer.

HOW EUGENIUS, THE SCOTTIS KING, PUT HIS MEN  
IN ORDOUR AND ARRAY.

Eugenius vpoune ane lustie le  
 Dewydit hes his ost in battellis thre;  
 To his bruther, the gude Ethodeus,  
 The wangaird gaif, my author sais thus. 19,415  
 The secund battell he commandit till  
 Ane nobill man wes lord of Argatill.

Ten thousand men, that tyme be taill weill tald,  
 In ilk battell thair war of bernis bald.  
 Threttie thousand weill tald that tyme by taill, 19,420  
 He had with him of nobill men to wail.  
 And syne him self ascendit to ane hicht,  
 Quhair euerie man micht se him in thair sicht,  
 To heir his voce and tak tent to his saw,  
 And thus he said in presens of thame aw. 19,425

HOW EUGENIUS MAID HIS ORESOUN.

Lib.6,f.96b. " Oure foir faid[er]is ane lang tyme beforen,  
 Col. 1. " Richt mony zeir or mony heir wes borne,  
 " Greit sturt and stryffe, and travell to thame tuke,  
 " In wynd and rane richt mony nycht tha woik,  
 " For to construct this kinrik and this croun, 19,430  
 " Quhilk to this day hes bene ay of renoun.  
 " Thair successouris baith counsall and command  
 " Richt oft thair gaif quhen that tha wer levand,  
 " Siclike as thair to tak on thame greit cuir  
 " For to repell all wrangis and injure 19,435  
 " Fra this kinrik, quhometo tha had sic rycht  
 " Grantit to thame be the greit God of micht ;  
 " And for na dreid or terrour tha mycht tak,  
 " In just battell ane fit to fle abak.  
 " Far erar is in just battell to de, 19,440  
 " No for to leif withoutin libertie.  
 " Oure fatheris all, that followit hes sensyne,  
 " Hes tane to thame greit travell and greit pyne,  
 " On to this da as ze ma wnderstand,  
 " For to fulfill oure ald fatheris command ; 19,445  
 " And thocht Fortoun, vnstabil in ilk steid,  
 " In sindrie feildis held thame lang at feid,  
 " Quhyllis to byde and quhyllis [for] to fle,  
 " Quhyllis to tyne and sum quhile victour be,

- “ With lang travell thai tuke on thame grit pane, 19,450  
 “ Quhill thai reskewit all thair richt agane.  
 “ O ze knychtis, quhilk cruell ar and kene,  
 “ Now ma ze se siclyke before zour ene,  
 “ Oure mortall fa to ws alway vntrew,  
 “ With vnjust battell scharplie ws persew. 19,455  
 “ Thairfoir,” he said, “ cheis zow ane of thir tua,  
 “ For weill I wait there is no vther wa,  
 “ Vther till fecht as oure fatheris befoir,  
 “ Quhairthrow we may win honour, laud and gloir,  
 “ Or schamitlie this tyme fra thame to fle, 19,460  
 “ And lois oure land, oure law and libertie ;  
 “ Syne all oure tyme to be, baith barne and wyfe,  
 “ In seruitude for terme of all our lyffe.  
 “ I say for me it is les lak and blame,  
 “ With honour de na leif with lak and schame ; 19,465  
 “ Syne one of thame most neidis for to be,  
 “ Manlie to fecht or cowartlie to fle,  
 “ Cheis zow,” he said, “ quhilk that ze had levar,  
 “ With honour byde, or fle with lak for euer.  
 “ For weill I wait, togidder and we byde, 19,470  
 “ Sic aventure this tyme sall ws betyde,  
 “ As oft hes done till our fatheris befoir,  
 “ Quhair that tha wan baith riches and grit gloir.  
 “ And sen it is ze knaw in oure defence,  
 “ Quhome in I traist, the God omnipotens 19,475  
 “ Sall us defend and mak thame for to rew,  
 “ Sen thai till ws ar baith fals and vntrew.  
 “ Thairfoir,” he said, “ sen we haif all the richt,  
 “ Exers zour strenth, hald vp zour hartis on licht ;  
 “ Think nocht this tyme with thame to be our- 19,480  
 thrawin ;  
 “ Greit God to broch that all salbe oure awin.”  
 Far mair nor this he said to thame perqueir,  
 Na I haif tume this tyme to reherss heir.

Throw sic wordis that he spak to thame than,  
 Amang thame all that tyme thair wes nocht 19,485  
 ane man  
 That chesit nocht ather to suffer to deid,  
 Or he wald flie ane fot out of that steid.

HOW EUGENIUS PUT HIS MEN IN ORDOURE.

Col. 2. This Maximus, als sone as he did ken  
 In sic ordour Eugenius put his men,  
 With hail power passit towart his fais, 19,490  
 Airlie at morne as that the sone vprais  
 Attour the bent, blenkit with bernis brycht,  
 Quhill that he come into the Scottis sycht.  
 The Scottis als on thame quhen tha did luke,  
 Of thair attyre greit terrour than tha tuke, 19,495  
 Sic multitude than saw tha neur befor;  
 Zit neurtheles that tyme, baith les and moir,  
 Chesit ilkone that da erar to de,  
 Out of the feild ane fit or thai wald fle.  
 Eugenius gart his men les and moir, 19,500  
 As he thame teichit on the nycht befor,  
 Onto the sone that tyme to turne thair bak,  
 Than all the vantage that tha mich[t] to tak,  
 And kest the sone in the Romanes sicht,  
 Quhilk blindit mony with his bemis bricht; 19,505  
 Impediment it wes to thame also,  
 For to decerne thair freind by thair fo.  
 And at thair bak tha had the water of Done,  
 But ony furd wnder or zit abune;  
 Quhairthrow the Romanes gat rycht mekle 19,510  
 skayth,  
 Of the deip watter and the brycht sone bayth.

OFF THE ORDOUR OF THE FEILD BEFOIR THE  
BATELL.

Quha had bene thair that da for till haif sene  
 Sa mony knight cled into curage clene,  
 So braid baneris wer borne on euerilk syde,  
 And pynsallis proude that mekle wer of pryde, 19,515  
 And staitlie standartis waifand with the wynd,  
 Thair bemis bricht maid mony bernis blind.  
 With basnot cleir as ony cristell stone,  
 Agane the schyning of the sone tha schone.  
 So mony knight cled into curage cleir, 19,520  
 The hornis sound wes hiddeous for till heir.  
 The clarionis clynkit with ane siluer sound,  
 Quhill that thair beir gart all the bankis rebund ;  
 The trumpettis blew with sic ane mirrie stevin,  
 Quhill that their sound ascendit to the hevin. 19,525  
 Wes neuir sene 3it with na levand leid,  
 Moir semelie sicht befoir of Adames seid.

HOW THE SCOTTIS ENTERIT IN THE FEILD WITH  
ANE CRY.

Be this the Scottis, with ane schout and cry,  
 Enterit in feild richt sone and suddantlye ;  
 And, or the Romanis war arrayit richt, 19,530  
 The Scottis bowmen, that war bald and wicht,  
 With bowis big and flanis that flew weill,  
 Richt scharpe schutting tha leit the Romanes feill,  
 Flycht efter flycht with mekle felloun feir,  
 Quhilk gart thame grane throw all thair glit- 19,535  
 terand geir,  
 And wrocht thame wo with woundis that wer  
 wyde.  
 Scharpe schutting als wes on the other syid ;

Their dyntis war richt awfull till induir,  
 With so greit force out throw the feild tha fuir,  
 And ganezeis fleand swiftlie in the tyde; 19,540  
 Richt bald he wes in that bikker durst byde.

Lib. 6, f.97.  
Col. 1.

HOW THE SPEIRIS ENTERIT IN THE FEILD.

That efter, sone quhen that the schot wes gone,  
 The speris enterit in the feild ilkone,  
 With sic ane dasche quhill that the erth did  
 dynnill,  
 And mony wicht man vpone his bak gart 19,545  
 wyndill;  
 And mony scheild all into pecis raif,  
 And mony helme all into raggis claif,  
 And mony berne maid that tyme for to bleid,  
 And mony stout man stickit on his steid,  
 Or euir ane to other wald be zoldin, 19,550  
 Quhill all the brum with blude wer our brodin.

HOW ETHODEUS, EUGENIUS BRUTHER, WAN HIS  
FEILD.

The nobill chiftane gude Ethodeus,  
 That bruther wes to king Eugenius,  
 Into the vangaird quhair he faucht that da  
 Agane the Pechtis, as my author did sa, 19,555  
 So worthelie into that feild he wrocht,  
 Or the grit battell to ane end wes brocht,  
 Richt mony thousand of the Pechtis hes slane;  
 The laif all fled na langar nicht remane.  
 Syne efter than he maid ane chace rycht sone, 19,560  
 Quhill that tha come onto the watter of Done,  
 Withoutin furd quhair thai maid our to sound,  
 Quhair in the deip richt mony ane wes dround;



And all the laif that tyme that nicht nocht waid,  
 Wer slane ilkane behind the laif that baid. 19,565

HOW ETHODEUS FOLLOWAND THE PECHTIS TYNT  
 ORDOURE.

Ethodeus, quhen he had wyn the feild,  
 And mony thousand of the Pechtis hes keild,  
 Traistand the laif had siclike done as he,  
 Becaus he saw sa mony of thame fle,  
 Without beleif agane of ony tulze, 19,570  
 Leit all his men that tyme pas to the spulze,  
 But ony ordour vp and doun the feild,  
 But speir or lance without targe or scheild,  
 Tha war so proud and pensit of thair pra.  
 Quhen Maximus persaut it wes sua, 19,575  
 Richt sone he send, the Pechtis till reskew,  
 Ane battell buskit baldlie of the new,  
 Of mony berné that durst richt weill abyde ;  
 The Scottis than vpoun the tother syid,  
 Or tha wer brocht into array agane, 19,580  
 Fechtand in feild tha war all tane or slane.

HOW DONALD, LORD OF ARGATILL, ALMAIST WAN  
 HIS FEILD.

The left wing of the tother syde,  
 The quhilk Donaldus had that tyme to gyde,  
 Of Argatill the lord and syre wes he,  
 With mony knicht into his companie, 19,585  
 Agane the Britis and men of Gallia,  
 And Germanis als he faucht that samin da ;  
 Into that feild so knichtlie he him schew,] Col. 2.  
 Had nocht Maximus sonner send reskew,  
 The Britis bald, for all thair brag and bost, 19,590  
 Into that feild that same da had bene lost.

Quhen in the feild thai wer almaist confoundit,  
 Mony war slane and mony deidlie woundit,  
 Than Maximus, the Britis to reskew,  
 Richt sone he send ane battell of the new;      19,595  
 The Scottis than that no langar micht dre,  
 Tha faucht to deid ilkone or tha wald fle.

HOW MAXIMUS, SEAND BAITH THE WYNGIS FLED,  
 WITH ALL THE HAILL STAILL ENTERIT IN THE  
 FEILD QUHAIR EUGENIUS FAUCHT.

Quhen Maximus saw bayth the wingis slane,  
 Thair with the staill no langar wald remane;  
 With all the power he had in that feild,      19,600  
 Of hurt and hail men that mich[t] waponis weild,  
 In gude array, my author sais thus,  
 In to the feild quhair that Eugenius  
 Had fouchtin lang, thair enterit with ane schout.  
 The Scottis than, that stalwert wer and stout,      19,605  
 Into that stour so stranglie that thai stude,  
 Quhill all the feild wes brodin our with blude;  
 The wemen war so big of blude and bone,  
 Tha wald nocht fle quhill thai war slane ilkone.  
 The stour it wox so stalwart and so strang,      19,610  
 The Scottis all that fouchtin had so lang,  
 And of the new tha gat so scharpe assaill.<sup>1</sup>  
 The men of gude that foucht the king besyde,  
 Gaif him counsall na langar for till byde,  
 Or he war tane and lampit in the lyne,<sup>2</sup>      19,615  
 And saif him self vnto ane better tyme.  
 For oucht tha micht the king wald nocht do sua,  
 Bot suddantlie that tyme he kest him fra  
 His coit armour, and syne with speir and scheid,  
 Amang the laif he enterit in the feild,      19,620

<sup>1</sup> Here a line seems wanting.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *lyne*.

And like ane lyoun in that feild he fuir,  
 Quhill in his bodie mony wound he buir;  
 And with sic pane that tyme he wes opprest,  
 Langar on lyfe as than he nicht nocht lest.  
 The lordis all quhen that tha saw that thing, 19,625  
 Sic exempill tha take than at thair king,  
 And all the laif that wes into that steid,  
 Neur ane wald fle bot faucht all to the deid.  
 So endit tha with gude Ewgene thair king,  
 Quhilk wes the thrid zeir that tyme of his ring. 19,630

HOW THE CARRAGE MEN, SEING THAIR KING AND  
 NOBILLIS ALL SLANE, PASSIT TO THE FEILD,  
 AND FAUCHT QUHILL THAI WAR SLANE ILK  
 MAN.

This beand done, as I haif tald this tyde,  
 The carraige men that standand war besyde,  
 That ordent<sup>1</sup> war the carage for to keip,  
 Ingrait wes into thair hartis deip,  
 Quhen that tha saw thair king and lordis slane, 19,635  
 Weill ma ze wit thairof tha war nocht fane. Lib.6, f.97b.  
 Out of thair wit likeas tha wald go wyld, Col. 1.  
 Among thame all wes nother man nor child,  
 Bot he thocht better in that tyme to de,  
 Nor for to leif, and efterwart to se 19,640  
 So greit distructione of the Scottis blude,  
 And all tyme erast of the men of gude.  
 Quhairfoir richt sone, all in till ane intent  
 Ane battell buskit baldlie on the bent,  
 For till revenge that wrang and greit injure. 19,645  
 Syne furiously wnto the feild thair fuir,  
 As rampand lyounis into thair yre and tene,  
 Syne maid ane counter cruell wes and kene;

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *ardent*.

Into that feild, that furious wes and fell,  
 With mony knok the Romanes doun tha quell. 19,650  
 So strang that tyme into that stour thai stude,  
 Baithand thair brandis in the Romane blude,  
 So disperat with furiositie,  
 That causit thame the cruellar to be,  
 And for to byde moir pertlie on that plane, 19,655  
 Greit slauchter maid that tyme or tha war slane ;  
 And wald nocht flie ane fit out of that steid,  
 Richt cruellie thai faucht all to the deid.  
 Tha bernis big, that busteous wes and bald,  
 Thair deid full deir into that tyme wes sald ; 19,660  
 And of that feild the Romanis war nocht fane,  
 Ay for ane Scot thair wes ane Romane slane.

HOW THE ROMANIS CHAISSAND THE SCOTTIS FLED  
 AGANE.

Quhen this wes done as I heir to zow schew,  
 Aproche syne ane battell of the new ;  
 Richt mony Romane followand on ane chace 19,665  
 Of few Scottis wer fled into ane place,  
 Befoir thair face into ane glen thair stude  
 Of agit men and bairnis<sup>1</sup> ane multitude,  
 And wemen alss, that tyme come thair to se,  
 Of that battell quhat auenture sould be. 19,670  
 Thairfoir the Romanes wes sum thing adred,  
 And to thair camp bakwart agane tha fled :  
 Thair lynning claithis that so brycht wes of hew,  
 Lyke brich[t] harnes into thair sicht it shew,  
 That causit thame the moir adred to be. 19,675  
 The rurall pepill, quhen tha<sup>2</sup> saw thame fle,  
 So greit curage thai tuke than in that cace,  
 That suddantlie tha follout on the chace

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *barronis*.

| <sup>2</sup> In MS. *he*.

Withoutin stop, quhill thai come to the steid,  
 Quhair king and lordis and all the laif la deid. 19,680  
 And quhen thai saw that greit calamitie,  
 With greit desyr with thame that da to de,  
 Richt haistelie ilk ane hint in his hand  
 Befoir thair face thair liand quhair tha fand,  
 Quhairfoir greit plentie wes into that feild, 19,685  
 Ilk man ane wapon as he docht to weild.  
 Baith wyfe and barne into that multitude,  
 In rayit feild towart the Romanes zude,  
 Richt furiouslie without resson or ryme,  
 To de tha had so greit desir that tyme. 19,690  
 Lyke wod wolffis rampand in ane rage,  
 So pungitiue wes euirilk man and paige,  
 Vpoune the Romanis with ane schout and cry,  
 Lyke brutell beistis, set on suddantly, Col. 2.  
 And faucht als lang as tha had strenth or 19,695  
   mycht,  
 With greit curage suppois tha war not wycht.  
 Sum with stonis hit thame on the foirstame,  
 Sum like wyld cattis in thair hair than clam ;  
 Sum by the collar raif doun all thair coittis,  
 Sum thrang thair thowmis thralie in thair 19,700  
   throttis.  
 The agit men forzet that tha war ald ;  
 The wemen als so bitter wer and bald,  
 Imaginand that tyme that tha war men,  
 Trowand in tene ilk ane for to sla ten ;  
 The zyoung childer thocht tha had mennis pith, 19,705  
 With greit curage and hardines thairwith.  
 Ilk ane forzet than baith thair eild and kynd,  
 So wode thai war and mangit out of mynd,  
 Into that stryffe stone still thai did remane,  
 Fechtand in feild quhair thai<sup>1</sup> wer ilk ane slane. 19,710

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *thair*.

HOW MAXIMUS THAT NYCHT EFTER THE FEILD  
GART ALL MAN PAS TO REST, AND OF THE  
LAMENTBILL MURNYNG THAT WAS MAID THAT  
NYCHT IN THE FEILD AMANG HURT MEN.

Quhen all war deid and endit wes the stryf,  
 Richt few or none wes left levand on lyfe.  
 Than Maximus gart ilk man that thair wes,  
 Richt suddantlie on to his rest to pas,  
 Softlie that nicht quhair tha<sup>1</sup> mycht soundlie 19,715  
 sleip,  
 Without walkning or watche than to keip.  
 For weill he wist that all weir wes done,  
 And of his fais war few levand or none ;  
 That causit him to haif the waill les dreid ;  
 Without watches than to thair bed tha zeid. 19,720  
 Quha had bene thair that nycht than for to heir  
 The schouting, crying, and the bailfull beir ;  
 So grislie grouis with mony schruikis skrill  
 Wald mak ane hart baith for to grow and grile,  
 Suppois it be als hard as ony stone, 19,725  
 That tyme to heir thair murning and thair mone,  
 Of men throw dolour drawand to the deid,  
 And woundit men richt mony in that steid ;  
 And haill men als with mony schout and cry,  
 Weipand for wo all nicht sic greittand by. 19,730  
 Cursit, tha said, wareit be the man  
 For eur moir in quhome this weir began !  
 And wareit be the Pechtis throw thair gilt,  
 And thair falset sa mikle blude hes spilt !  
 And wareit be the Romanis throw thair pryde, 19,735  
 Quhairthrow sa mony with bludie woundis wyde  
 Heir lyis deid, rycht saikles of all blame,  
 Quhilk in thair tyme zit neur faillit to thame !

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *thair*.

All this tha murnit loud and schill<sup>1</sup> that nycht,  
 Quhill on the morne the sone raiss fair and 19,740  
 bricht.

HOW MAXIMUS, ON THE MORNE EFTER, GART  
 DIUYDE THE SPULZE OF THE FEILD AMANG  
 HIS MEN.

Than Maximus the spulze of the feild,	Lib. 6, f. 98.
With bow and brand, bukler, targe and scheild,	Col. 1.
Brasar, breistplait, basnat and birnie bricht,	
Richt equallie rewardit euerie wicht,	
Efter his deid as he wes wortht to haif:	19,745
The deid bodeis syne hes gart put in graif.	
Eugenius, of quhome befor I spak,	
Out of the feild that tyme he hes gart tak,	
Of kinglie wyss with greit honour him buir,	
As did effeir, wnto his sepultuir.	19,750
This Maximus commendit him richt he	
Of manlines and of humanitie,	
Of strenth and wisdome, and of worthines,	
Of lautie, honour, and of nobilnes ;	
That for his liegis and thair libertie,	19,755
In just battell refusit nocht to de.	
Also he hes gart tak out of the feild	
The woundit men that levand wer unkeild ;	
Betaucht thame syne to lechis les and moir,	
To mak thame sound of all seiknes and soir.	19,760

HOW ETHODEUS, THE BRUTHER OF EWGENIUS, WAS  
 FUND LEVAND IN THE FEILD, AND PUT VNDER  
 CUIR OF LEICHIS QUHILL HE WAS HAILL.

In that same tyme the gude Ethodeus,  
 That bruther wes to king Eugenius,

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *still*.

Levand that tyme into the feild wes fund  
 Amang his feiris with mony deidlie wound.  
 This Maximus gart tak of him greit cuir, 19,765  
 With sindrie lechis that sicker war and suir,  
 Quhill he war haillit of his woundis wyde,  
 That eselie he nicht baith gang and ryde.  
 This Maximus syne raid vp and down,  
 Quhair that him list, in euirilk regioun 19,770  
 Within Scotland at lasar and at lenth,  
 Quhair that he hes ressauit euerie strenth  
 At his plesour, with castell, tour and toun.  
 And all the men that duelt in that regioun,  
 Baith ill and gude that thair war, greit and 19,775  
 smaw,  
 Ressauit thame all to the Romanis law,  
 In pece and rest thair gude and land to bruke ;  
 Syne gart thame sweir on mony bell and buike,  
 Ay to the Romanis all thair tyme be trew,  
 And neur agane with battell thame persew. 19,780

HOW HARGUSTUS, THE KING OF PECHTIS, AND HIS  
 LORDIS WAR RICHT DISPLESIT AT THE LEGAT  
 HAD TANE THE SCOTTIS IN HIS GRACE.

This Hargustus, quhilk wes of Pechtis king,  
 And his lordis quhen that tha knew that thing,  
 At Maximus displesit than tha war,  
 Quhy he did so commouit thame richt far ;  
 The thing in erd that tha [did] most desyre, 19,785  
 Quhilk in thair mynd brint het as ony fyre,  
 Baith da and nycht with sic cupiditie,  
 Col. 2. That all the Scottis sould destroyit be.  
 To Maximus thai come rycht sone and schew,  
 That all the conqueist he hes maid of new 19,790  
 Wald be for nocht, thai let him wnderstand,  
 And ony Scot war left on lyfe levand ;  
 So wickit war, so fickill and so fals,  
 So curst, so cankart, and so cruell als,



Be thai on lyfe but lat, that is no leis, 19,795  
 Sall neuir the Romanes leif in perfite peice,  
 Nor na vther, qubatsuneuir that thai be,  
 Haldis of ʒow or ʒour auctoritie.

## HOW THE LEGAT MADE ANSUER TO HARGUSTUS.

To thair desyr, this legat Maximus,  
 Rycht soberlie agane he ansuerit thus : 19,800  
 “ Forsuith,” he said, “ it semis nocht to me,  
 “ Nor na Romane that hes auctoritie,  
 “ New vincust men agane for to oppres  
 “ Withoutin causis outhir mair or les.  
 “ It is oure vse, as ʒe haif hard oft tell, 19,805  
 “ For to persew proude men that dois rebell ;  
 “ Richt so of thame siclike to haif petie  
 “ Subjectit ar till oure auctoritie.  
 “ It is richt far agane oure laud and gloir,  
 “ Sic vincust men that dois mercie implour, 19,810  
 “ And als richt far agane oure honestie,  
 “ To wirk on thame so greit crudelitie.  
 “ It is oure vse far erar with clemens  
 “ Landis subdew, no strenth nor violens.”

HOW HARGUSTUS GAIF GREIT REWARDIS TO THE  
LEGAT TO GRANT HIS DESYRE.

Quhen this Hargust saw he culd nocht prevaill, 19,815  
 Than subillie schupe him to assaill  
 This Maximus thairby ane vther way,  
 Greit diligence he hes done nicht and day ;  
 And greit rewardis als he gaif him till,  
 Quhilk mony brekis oft syis of thair will, 19,820  
 Richt so wes he brokin amang the laif,  
 For euirilk man is reddie to heir haif.

HOW THE KING OF PECHTIS AND HIS LORDIS  
CAUSIT THE LEGAT TO PROCLAME THAT ALL  
SCOTTIS BE ANE SET DA SULD PAS OUT OF  
ALBIONE WNDER THE PANE OF DEID.

	This wes the thing that he desyrit than, For to proclame that eurilk Scottis man At fixit da, be his auctoritie,	19,825
	All out of Scotland exull maid to be, Syne Britis and Pechtis without ony demand, In heretage for to bruke all thair land. As he dewysit richt so wes it done ;	
Lib. 6, f. 98b. Col. 1.	Proclomit wes that eurilk Scot full sone, Within ane da sould graith thame for to gone, In pane of deid, all out of Albione. Gif ony war than of the Scottis blude, In Albioun that this edict ganestude, Tha sould be all into the Pechtis will,	19,830
	Vnto quhat deid tha pleis to put thame till. At his éommand the Scottis all ar gone, With wyffe and barnis out of Albione. Ethodeus, that wes the kingis bruther, Wes baneist als that tyme amang all vther.	19,835
	Sum in the Ylis, sum intill Orkna, Sum in Denmark, sum in Ybernia ; Sum with the Romanes weirmen for to be ; And vther sum seruit for meit and fie In sindrie landis quhair that tha lykit best,	19,840
	Without petie thai wer so soir opprest.	19,845

HOW ALL THE LADEIS COME TO MAXIMUS.

	That samin tyme, as my author did sa, The ladeis all forgadderit on ane da In to the feild that had thair husbandis slane, To Maximus come all into certane,	19,850
--	---	--------

All on thair kneis humblie him beseikis,  
 With mony teiris rynnand our thair cheikis,  
 Into Scotland he wald lat thame remane,  
 Sen in the feild thair husbandis war all slane,  
 And of all riches, gold and vther gude 19,855  
 Tha spulzeit war that tyme and destituede.  
 Of all that geir thai desyre nocht agane,  
 Bot in Scotland he wald lat thame remane,  
 Obsequies and seruice for to mak  
 For thair husbandis in murnyng weid of blak, 19,860  
 And for to pra and murne vpoun thair graif;  
 At him that tyme nocht ellis wald thai craif.

HOW THE LEGAT DIRECTIT THAIR ASKING TO THE  
 KING OF PECHTIS.

Than Maximus directit hes that thing  
 To Hargustus, that wes of Pechtis king,  
 For to deliuer with his lordis sone, 19,865  
 In that mater quhat thai think sould be done.  
 And thai agane withoutin petie or reuth,  
 Haiffand no ee to conscience nor to treuth,  
 Deliuerit hes out of tha boundis braid  
 Of Albione all exull sould be maid. 19,870  
 And so it wes, quhilik wes the moir petie,  
 Tha fair ladeis so far sould flemit be.

HOW THE PECHTIS CRUELLIE SLEW ALL THE  
 SCOTTIS THAT BAID IN SCOTLAND THAIREFTER.

Syne quhen the tyme of that ediet wes gone,  
 The Scottis all that baid in Albione,  
 Wyfe or barne other zyoung or ald, 19,875  
 The Pechtis than, that busteous war and bald,  
 Without respect, but reuth or zit remeid,  
 Rich[t] peteouslic tha put thame all to deid.

Col. 2.           HOW CARTANDES, QUENE OF SCOTLAND, WAS FUND  
SITTAND ON EUGENIUS GRAIFF, AND SYNE  
WES HAD TO MAXIMUS THE ROMANE LEGAT.

In this same tyme now that ze heir me meyne,  
Ane fair ladie of Scotland that wes quene,           19,880  
Quhilk dochter wes, as my author did sa,  
To ane that tyme wes prince of Cambria;  
Cartandes alss it wes this ladeis name,  
In all hir tyme wes vnblekkit of blame,  
Bot all hir dais wes ay traist and trew,           19,885  
As be hir deidis efter weill it schew.  
Vpoun ane da scho hapnit for to be  
Fund hir allane exceptand other thre,  
With ane madyn and vther childer tuo,  
Into that tyme with hir thair wes no mo,           19,890  
Of cumpany other ald or zing,  
Vpoune the graif of gude Ewgenius king,  
In murning weid scho sat greittand full soir  
Hir mortall fait, and his deid till deplor.  
In murning weid that tyme as scho wes cled,           19,895  
Thair wes scho tane to Maximus and hed.

HOW MAXIMUS COME AND MET CARTANDES THE  
QUENE.

Quhen hir taking to Maximus wes tald,  
This nobill knicht, that hardie wes and bald,  
For hir honour, without horss, on his feit  
Richt courtaslie this quene he come to meit.           19,900

HOW CARTANDES, QUHEN SCHIO SAW THE LEGAT,  
SAT DOUN ON BAITH HIR KNEIS ASKAND HIM  
GRACE.

This Cartandes quhen scho the legat saw,  
On baith hir kneis doun scho fell full law.

This Maximus quhen he saw hir do sua,  
 He hint hir vp in till his armes tua,  
 And on hir feit he maid hir for to ryiss ; 19,905  
 To confort hir syne kissit hir twyss or thryss,  
 And prayit hir with all humanitie,  
 To leif murning and of gude confort be.  
 For he suld hir ay honour as his sister,  
 Thair wes nothing that scho wald neid or 19,910  
 mister,  
 Quhateuer it wer, quhen plesit hir to craif,  
 With all his hart glaidlie scho suld it haif.  
 Quhen euer scho pleis to Carraccoun to pas,  
 Quhair that the king his lordis palice was,  
 At hir fre will thair to remane and byde, 19,915  
 And all the landis round about besyde,  
 In hir power quhen that scho list [to] craif,  
 For hir leving at hir plesour to haif,  
 To bruke and joiss for terme of all hir lyfe,  
 In pece and rest forouttin ony stryffe. 19,920  
 Gold and siluer with hir wes nocht spard,  
 And riche clething with mony greit rewaird ;  
 Scho tuke hir leif and haneewart scho is gone,  
 The narrest way that tyme to Carrecone.

Lib.6.f.9<sup>r</sup>  
 Col. 1.

HOW CARTANDES, PASSAND HAME FRA THE LEGAT,  
 WAS SPULZEIT BE [THE] WAY WITH PECHTIS  
 AND HIR MEN SLANE.

And as scho was hame passand by the way, 19,925  
 Richt suddantlie, as my author did say,  
 Of Pechtis theuis other nyne or ten,  
 Richt quyetlie thai tuke hir in ane glen ;  
 And all hir geir and hors thai tuke hir fra,  
 Hir madynis dang, and als hir seruandis sla. 19,930  
 Quhen that this thing to Maximus wes schawin,  
 Quhill thai theuis war baith hangit and drawin

He tuke na rest into na place to remaune,  
 And syne to hir restorit all agane.  
 Still with him self syne causit hir to byde, 19,935  
 That no vther sould do hir harme that tyde.

HOW HARGUSTUS WAS DISPLESIT WITH THE LEGAT  
 FOR THE HINGING OF THE THEUIS THAT  
 SPULZEIT CARTANDES.

This Hargustus and his lordis ilkone,  
 Rycht greit displesour of that thing hes tone ;  
 To Maximus tha come richt sone and schew,  
 How he to thame had faillit of the new. 19,940  
 Sayand to thame he had nocht done his det,  
 Quhairfoir, thai said, that tha mycht think ill sett,  
 So mekle blude for him that thai had bled,  
 So lang with falset as he hes thame fed,  
 Quhilk causit thame all to be mensworne, 19,945  
 Brekand the band that thair fatheris maid beforne  
 To the Scottis for thame with speir and schield,  
 So oft befor had set battell and feild ;  
 “ Bled of thair bludeoure riches till reskew,  
 “ For thair tretie to thame we war vntrew. 19,950  
 “ In contrair thame we haif tane thair plane part,  
 “ The quhilk we may repent soir withoure hart,  
 “ Quhair neir ten thousand of our men wer slane,  
 “ Now this rewaird ze haif gevin ws agane,  
 “ But ony caus, quhilk and it war weil kend ; 19,955  
 “ Giff plesis zow thairof ws till amend  
 “ Now at this tyme, and satisfieoure will,  
 “ For that same caus we ar cuning zow to till.  
 “ Thair is no thing that we list for to craif  
 “ At zow this tyme oucht or plesis to haue, 19,960  
 “ Bot Cartandes, be zour auctoritie,  
 “ On to Britane maid exull to be,  
 “ To hir freindis the quhilk hir gat and bair,  
 “ And in this land for to remane na mair.”

HOW CARTANDES, HEIRAND HARGUSTUS DESYRAND  
 HIR TO PAS IN BRITANE, SAT DOUN ON HIR  
 KNEIS BEFOIR THE LEGAT, ASKAND HIM Col. 2.  
 GRACE, THAT PETIE WAS TILL HEIR.

This Cartandes the quhilk that thing did heir 19,965  
 Hirself that tyme, for-quhy scho wes rycht heir,  
 On kneis bair doun that scho fell in hy,  
 With pail visage syne cairfullie can cry  
 On Maximus that petie wes till heir ;  
 Beseikand him than with ane havie cheir, 19,970  
 For till haif petie of hir cruell pane,  
 And giff hir leif in Scotland to remane,  
 But gold or riches, possessioun or land,  
 For all hir tyme in povertie to stand,  
 Into Scotland ane beggar for to be, 19,975  
 No in Britane with sic miseritie,  
 For to be send quhair scho wes wont befoir,  
 To haif sic riches, honour, laud and gloir.  
 Than baith hir handis held vp to the hevin,  
 On Maximus cryis with ane loud stevin, 19,980  
 Beseikand him of his mercie and grace,  
 To lat hir leve in ony quyete place  
 Within Scotland, quhair that him lykit best,  
 Quhair scho ma be at quyete, pece and rest.  
 Gif lykis him that he will noch[t] do so, 19,985  
 Out of this warld than mak hir for till go  
 The vyleest deid men can devyiss in erd ;  
 Quhen scho is gone lat freindis wyte hir werd.

HOW ALL THE ROMANIS, HEIRAND THE LAMEN-  
 TABILL PLAYNT OF CARTANDES, MAID INTER-  
 CESSIOUN FOR HIR.

Hir playnt it wes so lamentabill to heir,  
 The Romanis all that tyme that stude hir heir, 19,990

Tha thocht thair hartis thirlit into thre,  
 Of hir complaint thai had so greit pitie,  
 And so greit reuth that tyme amang thame all,  
 At hir defence, als strang as ony wall,  
 Tha stude that tyme and for na thing wald lat, 19,995  
 At Maximus quhill thai sic grace hir gat,  
 Siclyke as he hir grantit of befoir,  
 With libertie and landis, les and moir,  
 In ony pairt quhair plesit hir to haif  
 At hir command, quhen scho lykit till craif, 20,000  
 Gold nor riches that scho sould want nane:  
 Tha pairtit so, and scho hir leif hes tane.  
 I can nocht tell to zow bot gif I lie,  
 For-quhy my author tald it nocht to me,  
 Qubat word of hir efter bot gude I trow, 20,005  
 That it war sua richt weill that I allow.

HOW ALL THE KIRKMEN OF SCOTLAND WAR  
FLEMIT.

In this same tyme that I haif said zow heir,  
 Ouir all Scotland the kirkmen far and neir;  
 No reuth nor petie of thame wald thai have,  
 Bot flemit thame to fle amang the laiff; 20,010  
 Baith preist and clerk, religious men also,  
 Into the Ylis tha maid thame all till go,  
 In Iona Yle quhair that tha did remane.  
 Lib.6,f.99b. Ane fair village syne foundit on ane plane,  
 Col. 1. Ane plesand tempill als with stone and lyme, 20,015  
 With kirk and queir, tha biggit in that tyme,  
 Thair obseruance thair for to sing and sa.  
 And so thai did richt lang and mony da  
 Remainit thair in religiositie,  
 Keipand gude law, faith, hoip and cheritie, 20,020  
 In priuat places quhair thai led thair lyve,  
 In secreit cellis richt contemplatywe;



With fasting, prayer, and with almous deid,  
 Baith men and wemen in religious weid ;  
 And quha that tyme it wes nocht eith to ken, 20,025  
 War most perfyte, the wemen or the men.  
 Ay fra that furth lang efter, da by da,  
 To greit vertew, as my author did sa,  
 Baith men and wemen of religioun,  
 Tha grew the moir ay till perfectioun ; 20,030  
 Quhilk in that place remanes thair zit still,  
 Callit is now this tyme Ecolumkill.  
 The zeir of God than thre hundreth and nyne,  
 And sevinte als for to be reknit syne ;  
 Sevin hundretht zeir and tuelf also bigane, 20,035  
 Fra the Scottis come first in Albione ;  
 That wes the dait, bot gif my author le,  
 Quhen thair wer maid all exull for to be  
 Fra Albione, ilk man baith les and moir,  
 Be Maximus, as I haif said befor. 20,040

HOW THE MEN OF THE YLIS, HEIRAND THAT  
 ETHODEUS WAS PASSIT IN DENMARK WITHOUT  
 BELEIF OF HIS [A]GANE CUMING, COME IN  
 ALBIONE WITH GREIT POWER TO RESKEW  
 THAIR RICHT.

The Ylis men quhen that tha knew that thing,  
 Ethodeus, the quhilk sould be thair king,  
 In Denmark passit thair for to remane,  
 Without beleif cuir for to cum agane  
 In Albione his kinrik to reskew, 20,045  
 Quhairfoir tha thocht tha wald thame persew,  
 With thair power other be mich[t] or trane,  
 In Albione reskew thair richt agane.  
 Than sone tha set ane navin to the se,  
 With men and meit, and with artalzerie, 20,050  
 With thame that tyme to fair attour the flude.  
 Ane callit Gillus wes ane man of gude,

Tha cheissit than quhillk wes of most honour,  
 To be thair lord, thair gyde and governour,  
 And thair ilkone at his command to byde, 20,055  
 Syne tuke thair leif but tarie in that tyde.  
 Befoir the wynd thair saillit richt on still,  
 Quhill that tha come richt sone to Argatill,  
 And left thair schippis liand by the sand ;  
 Syne with thair boittis passit all to land, 20,060  
 And heirschip maid our all part far and neir,  
 With greit slauchter that horribill wes to heir.  
 So blyth tha war ay quhen that tha drew blude,  
 That tyme thair sparit nother ill nor gude.  
 So as tha went but ordour vp and down, 20,065  
 Makand greit spulze into euerie toun,  
 Or euer tha wist the Pechtis with ane ost,  
 Quhillk cumand war that tyme to keip thair coist,  
 Col. 2. Inlusit thame quhair tha nicht nocht wyn out,  
 Into all partis closit round about. 20,070  
 And quhen thair saw that thair wes no remeid,  
 Tha chesit erar for to fecht to deid,  
 Knawand so weill how that the mater standis,  
 No for to cum into thair fais handis.  
 And so thair did into that tyme ilkane, 20,075  
 Faucht all to deid and neur ane wes tane.  
 The Pechtis than quhen tha the feild had wyn,  
 Tuke all the schippis thair fand mair and myn ;  
 In sindrie poirtis syne laid thame to rest,  
 Giff neid war efter quhen thame plesit best, 20,080  
 That Scottis hapnit to mak ony weir,  
 In tyme to cum tha sould do thame no deir ;  
 And to thame self for to mak greit supple,  
 In tyme of weir gif neid hapnit to be.  
 Fra this tyme furth now that ze heir me mene, 20,085  
 The Ylis men fra all weir did abstene ;  
 For-quhy thair war to sic confusioun brocht,  
 And all thair power narrest put till nocht.

HOW THE SCOTTIS THAT PASSIT IN YRELAND  
COME BEFOIR THE KING AND THE LORDIS,  
SCHA[WA]ND<sup>1</sup> THAN THAIR GREIT INFORTU-  
NITIE, AND ASKAND HELP TO RESKEW THAIR  
KINRIK.

Tak tent this tyme and ze sall heir me tell  
Of auenture that efterwart befell. 20,090  
Richt mony Scot, as my author did sa,  
Wer fled befoir into Ybernia,  
Befoir the king and lordis on thair kne,  
Askand at thame that tyme help and supple,  
Thair heretage for to reskew agane ; 20,095  
Schawand also how that thair king wes slaue  
In thair defence, the gude Ewgenius,  
His brother als, callit Ethodeus,  
In Denmark passit thair for to remane,  
In Albione neuir for to cum agane. 20,100  
Sen that tha war the fontane and the wall  
Of all Scottis, and eik originall,  
Sayand to thame it did all hail pertene,  
For the injure and harme that tha sustene,  
Efter thair power for to mak supple, 20,105  
Or ellis thai fail of liberalitie.

HOW THE KING OF YRELAND, WITH CONSENT OF  
HIS LORDIS, SEND TEN THOUSAND MEN WITH  
THE SCOTTIS IN THAIR SUPPLIE.

Quhen this was said that nobill king befoir,  
Hiberniens that thair war, les and moir,  
With the consent than of thair prince and king,  
Richt glaidlie than hes grantit thame that 20,110  
thing.

---

<sup>1</sup> In MS. *schand*.

Ten thousand men weill tald in thair supple,  
 In curage cleir thai haif send to the se,  
 With mony schip, syne furth thair way ar gone,  
 And saillit syne richt sone to Albione.  
 Syne in the land callit Saluria, 20,115  
 With all thair power enterit on ane da ;  
 Lib.6.f.100. And all the land tha spulzeit vp and down,  
 Col. 1. With greit slauchter in eurilk place and town.  
 Zyoung nor ald as than tha sparit nane  
 In ony steid quhair cuir tha war ouirtane ; 20,120  
 And brint and slew our all, baith far and neir,  
 So crewellie that awfull wes till heir.

HOW HARDRUSTAN, THE BRUTHER OF HARGUSTUS,  
 TYNT THE FEILD AND WAS CHAISSIT WITH THE  
 SCOTTIS.

Hargustus bruther with [a] nobill man,  
 Quhilk to his name wes callit Hardrustan,  
 Fra Hergustus the king of Pechtis send, 20,125  
 With greit power thai partis to defend ;  
 Bot all that power did him nocht availl.  
 Sone efter that, quhen he did thame assaill,  
 His folk in fecht tha wer richt soune confoundit,  
 Mony war slane and mony els ill woundit, 20,130  
 And all the laif with him self maid to fle ;  
 Richt few chaipit out of that mad melle.  
 Quhen tha had gottin sic presoneris and pra  
 Of men and beist, said it was tyme to ga ;  
 Sum of thame thair wald na langar remane, 20,135  
 And nocht to temp Fortoun lang into vane ;  
 And in maist welth than erast to be war,  
 And nocht agane to temp Fortoun so far.  
 Full weill tha wist sic thing wes fund oft trew,  
 Quha cuir did so it maid thame efter rew. 20,140

Also tha said thair langar for to hyde,  
 Quhill the Romanes of sic power and pryde  
 Sould thame assaill, quhilk sone mycht thame oppres,  
 Tha said it was bot folie and wodnes.  
 And vther sum thair was among the laue, 20,145  
 The contrair to that counsall that [thai] gaif,  
 Still to remane sen Fortoun on thame leuch,  
 Tha wist richt weill all wald be weill aneuche ;  
 And counsall gaif all fordwart for till ga  
 To Vicomage or than to Galdia, 20,150  
 Of thame agane haill conqueis for to mak,  
 And in that tyme no tarie for to tak.  
 Richt oft befor, thai said, it hes bene sene,  
 In mony feild quhair far fewar hes bene,  
 We haif prevaillit of oure eunnimie, 20,155  
 Of grittar power nor tha dow to be.  
 Quhairfoir, thai said, that tyme tha thoelt it best,  
 Sen tha wist nocht how lang that tha wald lest,  
 To vse the grace that Fortoun had thame lent.  
 To that counsall than gaif tha all consent ; 20,160  
 Syne with all power on the secund da,  
 Tha maid greit heirschip into Galdia.

HOW THE ROMANIS WITH THE BRITIS AND PECHITIS  
 GAIF THE SCOTTIS AND YBERNIENS FEILD  
 AND DISTROYIT THAME.

Wittand full lytel that tyme how it stude,  
 Or euir thai wist, ane richt greit multitude  
 Of Brit and Pech[t], and mony Romane knycht, 20,165  
 With bow and brand, with brasar that wes brycht,  
 With mony wicht that waponis weill culd weild,  
 On fit and hors befor thame tuke the feild.  
 Yberniens and Scottis quhen tha saw,  
 That force it wes other lang down or draw, 20,170  
 Tha tuke the feild richt fraklie thame agane,  
 And gaif thame feild richt pertlie on that plane.

- Col. 2. To be so pert it wes no barnis pla,  
 And tha sa few, that dar I hardlie sa,  
 Agane sic power for to tak the feild. 20,175  
 At the first counter mony ane wer keild;  
 On euerilk syde, that worthie war and wicht,  
 That da thair deit mony nobill knicht.  
 Yberniens thair power wes so small,  
 And Scottis als, tha wer confoundit all; 20,180  
 Out of the feild richt few war fled away,  
 The laif ilkone deit that samin da.  
 Quha hes na wit to hald the ballanes evin,  
 Bot settis all his thrift on sax and sevin,  
 In ald storeis richt oft syis as I reid, 20,185  
 Quha dois sua cumis bot hulie speid.  
 So nicht be said that tyme in verrament  
 Of the Scottis that culd nocht be content,  
 Quhen thai war weill preissand to huif our hie,  
 Quhill that the spail fell into thair ee. 20,190

HOW THE MEN OF YRELAND, HEIRAND THE DIS-  
 TRUCTION OF THAIR MEN IN ALBIONE, TUKE  
 GREIT DREID OF THE ROMANES.

Quhen this wes schawin syne in Ybernia,  
 Be thame that fled out of the feild awa,  
 Greit dreid and terrour in the tyme hes tane  
 Bayth king and lord, and all the laif ilkane,  
 Or dreid the Romanes sould thame sone persew, 20,195  
 Fra tha to Scottis had maid sic reskew.  
 The men war slane that sould be thair defence,  
 Quhairfoir richt sair tha dred thair violence.  
 Ambassadouris thairfoir richt sone tha send  
 To Maximus, with hartlie recommend, 20,200  
 Beseikand him of his faour and peice,  
 Gif thai that tyme had done ocht that wes leis,  
 In tyme to cum with[out] ony offend,  
 At his plesour tha sould all weill amend.

This Maximus first ansuerit in tene, 20,205  
 With greit mervell, quhat is it tha did mene  
 To brek to him with so greit boist and schoir,  
 Quhilk neur failzeit to thame of befoir?  
 Sen that the warld all our of breid and lenth,  
 Had feld befoir the Romanis mich[t] and 20,210  
 strentth,

Quhilk had subdewit all landis that da,  
 Our all the warld except Ybernia.

“ Syne ze agane ar nother kynd nor trew,

“ Aganis ws now laillie of the new,

“ Oure ennimeis hes fortifeit in feild, 20,215

“ Quhair ze and tha baith for zour cryme ar keild.

“ Quhairfoir,” he said, “ it war bot littill rak,

“ Gif pleis so zow with ws peice for to tak,

“ Of this conditioun peice now sall ze haif,

“ In tyme to cum no moir for till ressaue 20,220

“ Oure ennimeis amang zow to remane,

“ In contrair ws neur for to cum agane.

“ Na zit no vther, quhair that euir tha be,

“ Quhilk ar subdewit to oure royaltie ;

“ Also and ze requyrit be thairtill, 20,225

“ To tak our pairt baith in gude or ill,

“ And but oure leif fra all this tyme bygone,

“ Neur ane of zow to cum in Albione.”

On this same wyss amang thame pece wes maid,

And seillit syne with mony seillis braid. 20,230

Quhen that wes done tha take thair leif to wend ;

Fra that tyme furth all weiris hes tane end.

Lib. 6, f. 100 b.  
Col. 1.

In Albione and in Ybernia,

Wes pece and rest richt lang and mony da ;

In all that tyme durst no mau weir pretend. 20,235

Loving to God the sax[t] buik takkis end.

LONDON:  
Printed by GEORGE E. EYRE and WILLIAM SPOTTISWOODE,  
Printers to the Queen's most Excellent Majesty.  
For Her Majesty's Stationery Office.









